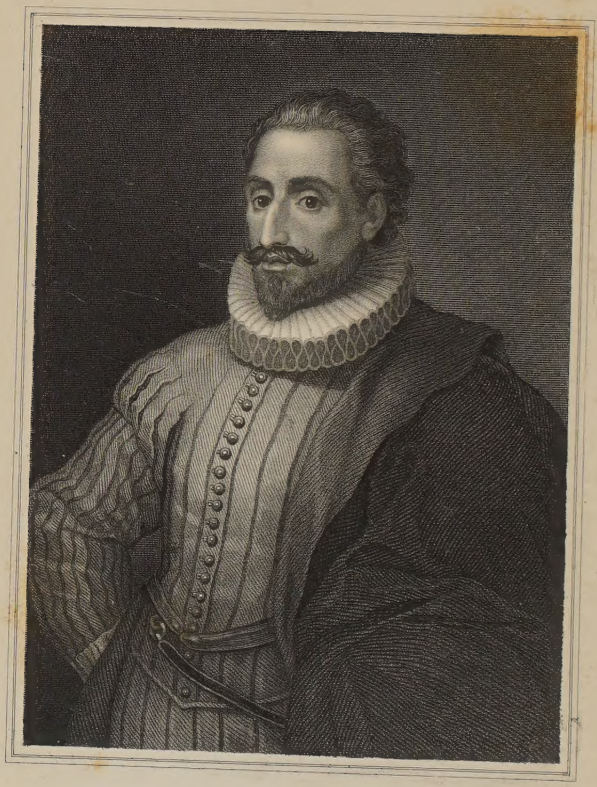
Frances Hill
Aug 1879

BOHN'S STANDARD LIBRARY.

CERVANTES' DON QUIXOTE.

PART I.



Cervantes

Engraved by Dean from the Spanish Print by Selma.

THE ACHIEVEMENTS OF

THE INGENIOUS GENTLEMAN

DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

BY

MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA.

A TRANSLATION BASED ON THAT OF PETER ANTHONY MOTTEUX,

WITH THE MEMOIR AND NOTES OF

JOHN GIBSON LOCKHART.

NEW EDITION.

VOLUME I.

LONDON: GEORGE BELL AND SONS, YORK STREET,
COVENT GARDEN.
1891.

LONDON:
REPRINTED FROM THE STEREOTYPE PLATES BY WM. CLOWES & SONS, LTD.,
STAMFORD STREET AND CHARING CROSS.

EDITOR'S PREFACE.

So many different English editions of Don Quixote have appeared between 1612, when Shelton's translation (of the first part only) was published, and 1881, the date of Mr. Duffield's, that the translator who attempts a new one has need of considerable self-confidence. This is all the more certain from the fact that Shelton's is universally admitted to have very great merit, not only in being much more literally faithful than old translations are wont to be, but also in showing in a marked degree appreciation of the simplicity and dignity that characterize the style of the original. Importance may also be attached to the fact that Shelton was a contemporary of Cervantes, whence it may be inferred that his language is the most fitting equivalent for the somewhat antiquated Spanish of Cervantes.

The publishers of the "Standard Library" might therefore with good reason have chosen to reproduce Shelton's in their series, rather than put forth a new translation or reprint any other of the older ones. That they have not done so, but have preferred to issue a revised edition of a somewhat later English version, is due to the following facts.

Great as Shelton's merits are, it is not to be denied that his language is very archaic. Mr. Duffield, who praises

his translation, and is a notable champion of antique phraseology, declares it to be "out of date." The language is far too old for modern readers, and has, moreover, a crudeness arising from a too close adherence to the original forms of expression which secures literalness at the expense of idiom. The golden rule for a translator is: be as literal as possible consistently with an idiomatic rendering; and Shelton errs occasionally on both sides of the rule, though far less on the side of license than most of his followers.

The next translator, Philips (1687), was a flagrant sinner in this respect and in others; but as his version made no pretence to literalness, and aimed at gratifying the degraded English taste of the day at the expense of the Spanish masterpiece, it has fallen into deserved oblivion.

But just a hundred years after Shelton's, another translation appeared, which was described as "by various hands," and was issued by Peter Anthony Motteux,[1] a character of some notoriety in his day. It had something in common both with Shelton and Philips, but though far from literal, it avoided the excessive extravagance and indecency of the latter. It must be confessed that it often shows the same tendency to paraphrase in deference to English popular taste rather than to preserve the "local colouring," but it varies so much in this respect that it is evident that different hands have taken part in the work; on the other hand a certain uniformity in diction and style shows that it was skilfully revised by a single editor, who was with little doubt Motteux himself. Its chief faults, therefore, are a want of strict adherence to the

[1] Motteux was a Frenchman, born at Rouen in 1660. At the age of twenty-five he came to England, and mastered the language so well as to become a prolific writer of theatrical pieces, poems, and other works. He also translated Rabelais, and, in addition to his literary labours, carried on business as a merchant and retail dealer. In the translation of 'Don Quixote' he was probably aided by his friend J. Ozell, who is best known by his translation of 'Molière.'

letter of the text, and a frequent exaggeration of the humorous passages, notably in those referring to Sancho Panza, whereby an air of burlesque is given to the unobtrusive and seemingly unconscious humour which is one of the most admirable characteristics of the original. On the other hand there are passages dealing with the hero himself which are rendered with excellent taste, and in which the gentility and solemn courtesy that never fail him throughout his intellectual aberrations are in no wise disparaged. Moreover it is often surprising how conscientiously even in the more freely translated passages the sense of the original is preserved, so that on the whole the reader obtains as fair an equivalent for it as in the more precise but dull and spiritless version of Jarvis, published thirty years later. With regard to his language, too, Motteux may be held to have an advantage even over Shelton. It is not so certain that the English of Cervantes' contemporary is the best equivalent for his Spanish. The English language—composite as it is—had not acquired at that time the same degree of finish as the Latin tongues. Cervantes' Spanish is in parts obscure and obsolete to a Spaniard of to-day, but scarcely so antiquated in sound as Shelton's rugged periods are to a modern English ear.[1] It is more fitly represented, it may be maintained, by the much richer, though now old-fashioned prose of the early Georgian era. This, as a question of art, is not to be disregarded. The matter of a translation is undoubtedly of first importance, but the manner also is to be considered when a comparison is being drawn; and if ever an ideal translation of Cervantes' masterpiece appears—for this has not yet come to pass—

[1] For instance, in chapter i. we read, "But Mr. Nicholas the Barber of the same town would affirm, that none of both arrived in worth to the Knight of the Sun." And again, in reference to the patched-up helmet, "the facility wherewithall it was dissolved liked him nothing." This would be quaint English even to Elizabethans.

it is probable that it will be clothed not in the English of his contemporaries, nor in any such pseudo-antique tongue as that by which Mr. Duffield has sadly marred his otherwise praiseworthy labours, but in the free, fluent, and expressive language that Steele, Defoe, and Fielding used; and of this, Motteux's is the best representative.[1]

For this reason Motteux's translation, though often censured for its freedom, has been more often commended. The fact that Lockhart, who was well qualified to judge, selected it as a text for his annotations and Spanish ballads is strong testimony in its favour, and in the first instance suggested its republication in the present form.

In the revision of this version the aim has been to

[1] Motteux's translation appeared in 1712, two years before the accession of George I., and more than thirty years before 'Tom Jones' was published, whilst Jarvis's was almost contemporary with the latter; but there can be no question as to the superiority of Motteux's style and diction over Jarvis's. A comparison of a single passage will enable readers to judge of the respective merits of the translations. It is part of the poetical invocation of the Age of Gold, in Part I., chap. xi., which Cervantes himself derived from Tasso.

CERVANTES: Los valientes alcornoques despedian de sí, sin otro artificio que el de su cortesia, sus anchas y livianas cortezas, con que se comenzaron á cubrir las casas, sobre rusticas estacas sustentadas, no mas que para defensa de las inclemencias del cielo.

SHELTON: The loftie cork-trees did dismisse of themselves, without any art than that of their native liberality, their broad and light rindes. Wherewithall houses were at first covered, being susteined by rusticall stakes, to none other end, but for to keep back the inclemencies of the ayre.

MOTTEUX: The tough and strenuous cork-trees did of themselves, and without other art than their native liberality, dismiss and impart their broad light bark, which served to cover those lowly huts, propped up with rough-hewn stakes, that were first built as a shelter against the inclemencies of the air.

JARVIS: The stout cork-trees, without any other inducement than that of their own courtesy, divested themselves of their light and expanded bark, with which men began to cover their houses, supported by rough poles, only for a defence against the inclemency of the seasons.

Here we see how Motteux is given to amplification, but the superior force of his language is equally evident.

preserve the merits of Motteux and to get rid of his faults. That this has been done with complete success or that the translation is in any sense an ideal one is not pretended, but it is hoped that it may be, in some small degree, a contribution towards a satisfactory rendering of the original. The exuberance of humour, and the familiar English "slang" which appears in many passages, has been conscientiously curtailed, abbreviated sentences made complete, and amplified ones reduced to their proper brevity. It is true that as the work progressed a stricter standard was adopted, and consequently the revision of the later portion is more complete than that of the first part. But a great deal of labour has been expended on every part, and, in completing what has been no easy task, the editor must acknowledge the help he has received in interpreting the text from Mr. Duffield's translation, which, whatever its faults may be, is by far the most carefully executed one that has appeared, and is a great assistance to a reviser who does not pretend to accurate Spanish scholarship. One excellent feature of his volumes are the metrical pieces translated by Mr. J. Y. Gibson, which are very freely rendered by Motteux. As literalness, however, is scarcely looked for in verse, Motteux's translations have generally been retained in this edition with slight corrections, but in those cases where he omits verses altogether a new translation has been attempted. Mr. Duffield's edition and the present one are the only English translations in which the difficult introductory stanzas and sonnets are given in a complete form.

With regard to the notes, Mr. Lockhart's, many of which are derived from the Spanish editions, are reprinted with a few obvious corrections, or such alterations as were made necessary by the transposition of most of them to a more convenient position at the foot of the

page instead of at the end of the volumes. The ballads, also, have been corrected in accordance with the later form in which they were published as a separate volume. A few other notes have been added from Pellicer, Jarvis' translation and other sources, a considerable proportion being devoted to a literal rendering of the Spanish proverbs which form so interesting a feature amongst the minor excellencies of the work. All these fresh notes are enclosed in brackets.

Lockhart's memoir of Cervantes, on the style of which it would not be easy to improve, has been revised by the aid of footnotes and a few alterations, which are also distinguished by brackets.

The portrait prefixed to this edition is taken from a Spanish print engraved by D. F. Selma, from a drawing by D. T. Ferro. As to its authenticity it is impossible to say anything more than that it bears a great resemblance to the portrait published in the edition of the R. Spanish Academy in 1780. This portrait was derived from a painting supposed to be by Alonzo del Arco, in the possession of the Conde de Aguila of Seville. It is known that Cervantes had his portrait painted twice, namely by Don Juan de Jáuregui and Francisco Pachecho, both of which paintings are lost. But it is possible that the Aguila portrait, which was attributed by experts to even older painters than del Arco, was copied from one of these original portraits, and consequently that the engraving of the Spanish Academy, and the print above referred to, give a truer likeness than the frontispiece of Lord Carteret's Spanish edition published in London in 1738, which is avowedly composed from Cervantes' description of himself in the preface of the "Exemplary Novels," in the translation of which the engraving now appears.

E. B.

A List of Previous English Versions of Don Quixote.

"The History of the Valorous and Witty Knight errant Don Quixote of the Mancha," translated by T. Shelton, Part I., 1612. Part II. published in 1620 does not bear Shelton's name but that of Ed. Blount.

"The History of the most renowned Don Quixote of Mancha and his trusty squire Sancho Pancha, now made English according to the humour of our modern language." By J. Philips, 1687.

"The History of the most ingenious Knight Don Quixote de la Mancha. Formerly made into English by Thomas Shelton: now revised, corrected, and partly new translated from the original." By Capt. John Stevens, 1706.

"The History of the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, . . . translated from the original by several hands, and published by Peter Motteux" about 1712. Of this translation, which has been reprinted at various times, the chief editions are one revised by Ozell in 1766, and that published in Edinburgh in 1822, to which Lockhart's notes were first appended.

"The Life and Exploits of Don Quixote de la Mancha," translated by Charles Jarvis, 1742. This version also has been reprinted many times: notably in 1820 with illustrations by Westall.

"The History and Adventures of the renowned Don Quixote, translated by T. S. Smollet, M.D," 1755. Reprinted in 1799.

"Don Quixote de la Mancha," edited by Mary Smirke, 1818. This is a careful revision of Jarvis's translation, and was issued in a very handsome form with 74 steel engravings by R. Smirke, R.A., the father of the editor. It was reissued anonymously in 1842, in one volume, and is still in print.

"The History of Don Quixote," edited by J. W.

Clark, M.A., 1867. The text is described as that of Jarvis, with corrections from Motteux; but it is substantially Motteux's, with corrections from Jarvis and occasional omissions to adapt the book for the use of young people, for which it is well suited. The chief feature of this edition are the elaborate illustrations by Gustave Doré.

"The Ingenious Knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, . . . a new translation from the originals of 1605 and 1608," by A. J. Duffield, 1881. In this almost literal rendering it is to be noted that the poetics are for the first time given complete. Even Shelton omitted some of the more difficult preliminary stanzas, and most of his successors omitted them all.

Of the older translations succeeding Shelton's, Stevens's is perhaps the best, while Philips's is undoubtedly the worst, and many of its faults are shared by Smollett's. Jarvis's version has the merit of being fairly literal, but is deficient in spirit and appreciation. Miss Smirke's revision of it is a manifest improvement, and is one of the most faithful renderings of the original.

The above are the most important English versions of Don Quixote, besides which, numerous reprints, abridgments, or adaptations, either in the form of chapbook, poem or drama, testify to the unbounded popularity which the work has enjoyed in England from the year 1612 (only seven years after its appearance in Spain) until the present time.

CONTENTS OF VOL. I.

PAGE

LIFE OF CERVANTES xvii
DEDICATION 1
PROLOGUE 3
PRELIMINARY STANZAS AND SONNETS 11

PART I.

CHAPTER I.—*The quality and way of living of the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha* 19

CHAPTER II.—*Of Don Quixote's first sally* 28

CHAPTER III.—*An account of the pleasant method taken by Don Quixote to be dubbed a knight* 35

CHAPTER IV.—*What befel the Knight after he had left the Inn* . 44

CHAPTER V.—*A further account of our Knight's misfortunes* . 52

CHAPTER VI.—*Of the pleasant and curious scrutiny which the Curate and the Barber made of the library of our ingenious Gentleman* 58

CHAPTER VII.—*Don Quixote's second sally in quest of adventures* 71

CHAPTER VIII.—*Of the good success which the valorous Don Quixote had in the most terrifying and never-to-be-imagined adventure of the Windmills, with other transactions worthy to be transmitted to posterity* 77

CHAPTER IX.—*The event of the most stupendous combat between the brave Biscayan and the valorous Don Quixote* . . 87

PAGE

CHAPTER X.—*Of the pleasant discourse which took place between Don Quixote and his squire, Sancho Panza* 93

CHAPTER XI.—*What passed between Don Quixote and the Goatherds* 100

CHAPTER XII.—*The Story which a young Goatherd told to those that were with Don Quixote* 106

CHAPTER XIII.—*A continuation of the Story of Marcella* . . 112

CHAPTER XIV.—*The unfortunate Shepherd's despairing Verses, and other unexpected matters* 123

CHAPTER XV.—*Giving an account of Don Quixote's unfortunate rencounter with certain bloody-minded and wicked Yanguesian carriers* 130

CHAPTER XVI.—*What happened to Don Quixote in the Inn which he took for a Castle* 138

CHAPTER XVII.—*A further account of the innumerable hardships which the brave Don Quixote, and his worthy squire, Sancho Panza, underwent in the Inn, which the Knight unluckily took for a Castle* 146

CHAPTER XVIII.—*Of the discourse between the Knight and the Squire, with other matters worthy to be related* . . . 155

CHAPTER XIX.—*Of the wise discourse between Sancho and his Master; as also of the adventure of the dead Corpse, and other famous occurrences* 166

CHAPTER XX.—*Of a wonderful Adventure achieved by the valorous Don Quixote de la Mancha; the like never compassed with less danger by any of the most famous Knights in the world* . 174

CHAPTER XXI.—*Of the high Adventure and Conquest of Mambrino's Helmet, with other Events relating to our invincible Knight* 187

CHAPTER XXII.—*How Don Quixote set free many miserable creatures, who were betaking themselves, much against their wills, to a place they did not like* 200

CHAPTER XXIII.—*What befell the renowned Don Quixote in the Sierra Morena (black mountains), being one of the rarest adventures in this authentic history* 212

CHAPTER XXIV.—*The Adventure in the Sierra Morena continued* 224

PAGE

CHAPTER XXV.—*Of the strange things that happened to the valiant Knight of La Mancha in the Black Mountain; and of the penance he did there, in imitation of Beltenebros, or the Lovely Obscure* 234

CHAPTER XXVI.—*A continuation of the refined extravagancies by which the gallant Knight of La Mancha chose to express his love in the Sierra Morena* 254

CHAPTER XXVII.—*How the Curate and Barber put their design in execution; with other things worthy to be recorded in this important History* 263

CHAPTER XXVIII.—*The pleasant new Adventure the Curate and Barber met with in the Sierra Morena, or Black Mountain* . 281

CHAPTER XXIX.—*Which treats of the pleasant stratagem used to free our enamoured Knight from the rigorous penance which he had undertaken* 296

CHAPTER XXX.—*Treating of the beautiful Dorothea's discretion, with other pleasant passages* 308

CHAPTER XXXI.—*The pleasant Dialogue between Don Quixote and his Squire continued, with other Adventures* . . 321

CHAPTER XXXII.—*What befell Don Quixote and his Company at the Inn* 329

CHAPTER XXXIII.—*In which is narrated the Tale of the Foolish Doubter* 336

CHAPTER XXXIV.—*In which the History of the Foolish Doubter is pursued* 354

CHAPTER XXXV.—*The conclusion of the Tale of the Foolish Doubter; with the dreadful Battle betwixt Don Quixote and certain Wine-skins* 373

CHAPTER XXXVI.—*Containing an Account of other surprising Accidents in the Inn* 382

CHAPTER XXXVII.—*In which the History of the famous Princess Micomicona is continued, with other pleasant Adventures* . 390

CHAPTER XXXVIII.—*Which continues Don Quixote's curious Discourse upon Arms and Learning* 399

CHAPTER XXXIX.—*Wherein the Captive relates his Life and Adventures* 404

CHAPTER XL.—*The Story of the Captive continued* . . . 414

PAGE

CHAPTER XLI.—*The Adventures of the Captive continued* . . 426

CHAPTER XLII.—*Which treats of what happened in the Inn, with several other Occurrences worthy of being known* . . . 444

CHAPTER XLIII.—*The pleasant Story of the young Muleteer, with other strange Adventures that happened in the Inn* . . 450

CHAPTER XLIV.—*A Continuation of the unheard-of Adventures in the Inn* 461

CHAPTER XLV.—*In which is decided the doubt about Mambrino's Helmet and the Pack-saddle; with other Adventures that happened in all truth* 469

CHAPTER XLVI.—*Of the notable Adventure with the Troopers, and the great ferocity of our good Don Quixote* . . . 477

CHAPTER XLVII.—*Of the strange manner of Don Quixote's Enchantment, with other memorable Occurrences* . . . 484

CHAPTER XLVIII.—*In continuation of the Canon's Discourse upon Books of Knight-errantry, and other matter worthy of his ability* 495

CHAPTER XLIX.—*Which treats of the wise Conference between Sancho Panza and his Master, Don Quixote* . . . 502

CHAPTER L.—*The notable Dispute between the Canon and Don Quixote; with other matters* 512

CHAPTER LI.—*What the Goatherd told to Don Quixote's Escort* . 519

CHAPTER LII.—*Of the Combat between Don Quixote and the Goatherd; with the rare Adventure of the Penitents, which the Knight happily accomplished with the sweat of his brow* . 524

ADDITIONAL NOTES 539

LIFE OF CERVANTES.[1]

BY

JOHN GIBSON LOCKHART, LL.D.

ALTHOUGH Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra was not only the brightest genius of his age and country, but also a man of active life and open manners, and engaged personally in many interesting transactions of his time, there are, nevertheless, few distinguished men of letters who have left behind them more scanty materials of biography. His literary reputation was not of the highest order till *Don Quixote* made it so; and ere then he had outlived the friends and companions of his youthful adventures and withdrawn into a life of comparative privacy and retirement. In the age immediately succeeding his own, abundant exertions were made to discover the scattered and faded traces of his career; but with what very indifferent success is well known to all acquainted with the literary history of Spain. More recently, the life of Cervantes has been elaborately written, both by the best of his commentators, Juan Pellicer, and by Vincente de los Rios, editor of the Spanish Academy's superb edition of *Don Quixote;* but neither of these has, after all, been able to add much to the original naked outline which guided their researches.

Cervantes was by birth a gentleman, being descended from an ancient family, originally of Galicia, many branches of which were,

[1] [The passages and footnotes which are included in brackets are not by the original writer; they are taken from various sources of later date, especially Ticknor's *History of Spanish Literature*, the article on Cervantes in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, and Mrs. Oliphant's careful study published in the series of Foreign Classics.]

at the beginning of the sixteenth century, honourably settled in Toledo, Seville and Alcarria.[1] Rodrigo de Cervantes, his father, seems to have resided for the most part at Alcalá de Henares,[2] where, thirty years before the death of his son, the second university of Spain was founded by the munificent Cardinal Ximenes. His mother, Donna Leonora de Corteñas, was also a lady of gentle birth. The parish register shows that he was baptised on the 9th of October, 1547.[3]

His parents, whose circumstances were the reverse of affluent, designed their son for one of the learned professions; and, being most probably of opinion that his education would proceed better were it conducted at some distance from their own residence, they sent him early to Madrid, where he spent several years under the direction of a philologer and theologian (famous in his day), by name Juan Lopez de Hoyos. This erudite person superintended

[1] [Some late writers have claimed for the ancestors of Cervantes that they were of the blood-royal of Castile. But, whether this claim is well founded or not, it is known that some members of the family took part in Ferdinand III.'s expedition against the Moors of Seville, where they obtained a share of the conquered territory. Moreover, it is known beyond doubt that Juan de Cervantes, the grandfather of the illustrious Miguel, was a knight holding the office of *corregidor* or chief magistrate of Ossuña.]

[2] [The place of birth of the author of *Don Quixote* was long doubtful: seven cities, Madrid, Seville, Lucena, Toledo, Esquivias, Alcazar de San Juan and Consuegra having each claimed the honour. But the question was finally set at rest by the discovery that in Cervantes' own petition for an enquiry into his conduct at Algiers, addressed to the Government in 1580, Alcalá de Henares is mentioned as his birthplace.

Mrs. Oliphant says:—"Curiously enough, the question as to Cervantes' birthplace is complicated by the fact that two other Miguels de Cervantes, one of them bearing the surname of Saavedra, appear in the baptismal registers of the period, though a few years later; one born at Alcazar de San Juan, in La Mancha—the other at Consuegra. In both places a marginal note, 'in distinct letters,' is inscribed upon the record. 'This was the author of *Don Quixote*,' says one: 'The author of the Quixotes,' says the other. Both, however, seem to have been quite obscure persons, and never re-appear in history; and there is no doubt that the real Cervantes was he of Alcalá de Henares."]

[3] [Miguel seems to have been the youngest of the four children of the marriage. Some writers have suggested that as he was baptized so soon after St. Michael's day, and was named Miguel, it is likely he was born on the Saint's day, viz., Sept. 29. It was common in Spain to name children after the saint on whose festival they were born.]

early in 1569[1] the publication of certain academical *Luctus* on occasion of the death of the Queen[2]; and among the rest there appear an elegy and a ballad, both written, as the editor expresses it, by his "dear and beloved disciple Miguel de Cervantes." Dr. Lopez de Hoyos seems to have been in the custom of putting forth now and then little volumes of poetical miscellanies, chiefly composed by himself; and we have Cervantes' own authority[3] for the fact that the doctor's "dear disciple" contributed to these publications *Filena*, a pastoral poem of some length, besides a great variety of sonnets, canzonets, ballads and other juvenile essays of versification.

These attempts, in themselves sufficiently trifling, had probably excited some little attention, for Cervantes, in the summer of 1569, accompanied the Cardinal Julio Acquaviva from Madrid to Rome, where he resided for more than twelve months as chamberlain to his eminence.[4] This situation, which, according to the manners of those days, would have been coveted by persons much his superiors both in birth and in fortune, may in reality have been serviceable to the development of young Cervantes' genius, as affording him early and easy introduction to the company both of the polite and of the learned; for among the first of both of these classes the Cardinal Acquaviva lived. But the uniformity and stately repose of a great ecclesiastic's establishment was probably little suited to the inclinations of the young and ardent Spaniard, for he seems to have embraced without hesitation the first opportunity of quitting the cardinal's mansion for scenes of a more stirring character. [Early in 1570 he enlisted in the regiment of Don Diego de Urbina, and took part in the expedition under the Papal General Colonna, which in the same year attempted unsuccessfully to relieve the island of Cyprus. The capture of the island by the Turks, which, to the consternation of Christendom, speedily followed, shortly led to a more memorable action.]

In May, 1571, there was signed at Rome the famous treaty between Philip II., the Papal See, and the Venetian Senate, in

[1] [Prescott says 1568.]
[2] [Isabel de Valois, wife of Philip II., who died Oct. 3, 1568.]
[3] In the *Viage del Parnaso*.
[4] [Or rather gentleman of the chamber—*camarero*.]

consequence of which the naval forces of those three Powers were immediately combined into one fleet, for the purpose of checking the progress of the Turkish navies in the Mediterranean. Don Juan of Austria, natural son of Charles V. and brother to Philip II., King of Spain, was entrusted with the supreme command of the Christian armament, and the young gentlemen both of Spain and of Italy flocked in multitudes to act as volunteers under his already famous standard. [Cervantes, under de Urbina, was present at the battle of Lepanto,[1] "the Trafalgar of the sixteenth century," as it has been called. Though it is said that when his galley was going into action he lay in his cabin sick with fever, his ardour was not to be restrained, and he bore himself so gallantly in the fight as to attract the notice even of Don Juan himself, and gained a reputation for valour which clung to him till it was overshadowed by his greater literary renown. As he himself says (in the preface to the Second Part of *Don Quixote*), he considered the loss of his left hand (which was struck in the course of the fight) as a "trifling price to pay for the honour of partaking in the first great action in which the naval supremacy of the Ottoman was successfully disputed by Christian arms."]

The season being far advanced, the victorious fleet withdrew immediately after this action to Messina, where Cervantes' wound compelled him to spend some weeks in the hospital. Although his hand was cut off close by the wrist, the whole of that arm remained ever after quite stiff and useless—partly, it is most probable, in consequence of the unskilfulness of the surgeons who attended on him.

This very serious misfortune did not, however, extinguish his military ardour, for he sailed with the same fleet in the following summer, and was present at several descents on the coast of the Morea—one of which he has described in *Don Quixote* in the person of the Captain de Viedma.[2] [From the end of 1572, when the great naval armament in which he had hitherto served was dispersed, he remained in the regular service of his own sovereign; and under Don Juan took part in the expedition against Tunis. The two following years he served successively in Sardinia, Lom-

[1] [Oct. 7, 1571.] [2] [See Part I., ch. xxxix.–xli.]

bardy, Messina and Naples, without rising, or perhaps hoping to rise, above the condition of a private soldier.] It must be had in mind, however, that this rank was in those days so far from being held dishonourable or degrading, that men of the very highest birth and fortune were, almost without exception, accustomed to spend some time in it ere they presumed to expect any situation of authority. Thus, for example, the Anne de Montmorencies, the Lautrecs, the Tremouilles and the Chabannes had all distinguished themselves as simple men-at-arms ere they rose to any office of command in the army of France; and in that of Spain, it is well known that the wise policy of Charles V. had, long before Cervantes' time, elevated the halberdier and musketeer to be nearly on the same footing with the mounted soldier. It is, therefore, a matter of no great importance that we are left altogether ignorant whether Cervantes served in the infantry or the cavalry during his residence in Italy.

[In 1575 he obtained leave to visit Spain, and when on his way thither, during the month of September, the galley in which he sailed was surrounded by some Moorish corsairs, and after a desperate resistance, he and his elder brother Rodrigo, who appears to have been with him, and all the rest of the Christian crew, were carried as prisoners to Algiers.] He fell to the share of the corsair captain who had taken him, an Albanian, or Arnaut renegade, known by the name of Déli Mami *the lame;* a mean and cruel creature, who seems to have used Cervantes with the utmost possible harshness. Having a great number of slaves in his possession, he employed the most of them in his galleys, but kept always on shore such as were likely to be ransomed by their friends in Europe—confining them within the walls of his baths,[1] and occasionally compelling them to labour in his gardens. Cervantes, whose consequence was increased in the eyes of his captors by the fact that he was the bearer of letters from Don Juan and the Viceroy of Naples, was regarded as being good for a considerable

[1] In the notes to this edition of *Don Quixote* may be found some curious particulars concerning these *Baths*, and the manner in which the Christian captives of Cervantes' age were treated at Algiers and Tunis. See the Notes on the story of Viedma.

ransom. He was therefore kept on shore, and spent the greater part of five years of servitude among this latter class of the slaves of Mami,—undergoing, however, as he himself intimates, even greater hardships than fell to the lot of his companions, on account of the pertinacity and skill with which he was continually forming plans of escape. The last of these, at once the boldest and most deliberate of them all, was deficient of complete success only because Cervantes had admitted a traitor to his counsels.

[Déli Mami, the Arnaut, had for his friend a brother renegade, by birth a Venetian, who had risen high in the favour of the Sultan, and was now the Viceroy or virtual "king" of Algiers,[1] being in fact the same Hassan Aga of whose ferocious character a full picture is drawn in *Don Quixote* by the Captain de Viedma.] Mami sometimes made Cervantes the bearer of messages to this man's villa, which was situated on the sea-shore, about three miles from Algiers. The gardens of this villa were under the management of one of Hassan's Christian slaves, a native of Navarre, with whom Cervantes speedily formed acquaintance, and whom he ere long persuaded to undertake the formation of a secret cave beneath the garden, capable of sheltering himself and as many as fifteen of his brother captives, on whose patience and resolution he had every reason to place perfect reliance. The excavation being completed in the utmost secrecy, Cervantes and his associates made their escape by night from Algiers, and took possession of their retreat, where, being supplied with provisions by the gardener and another Christian slave of Hassan, named or nicknamed *El Dorador*, they remained for several months undiscovered, in spite of the most minute and anxious researches on the part of their masters.

They had, in the meantime, used all their exertions to procure a sum of money sufficient for purchasing the freedom of one of their companions, who had stayed behind them in the city—a gentleman of Minorca, by name Viana. This gentleman at length obtained his liberty in the month of September, 1577, and embarked for his

[1] [He is called "Asan Bajá, Rey de Argel," in the *Historia y Topografia de Argel*. This work, by Don Diego Haedo, Archbishop of Palermo, and his nephew of the same name, is the principal authority on the condition of Algiers at this period.]

native island—from whence, according to the plan concerted, he was to return immediately with a Spanish brigantine, and so coming close under shore, at a certain hour of a certain night, furnish Cervantes and his friends (including the gardener and El Dorador), with the means of completing their escape. Viana reached Minorca in safety, procured without difficulty a sufficient vessel from the Spanish viceroy, and came off the coast of Barbary, according to his agreement; but ere he could effect his landing, the alarm was given by a Moorish sentinel, and he wisely put out to sea again, being afraid of attracting any more particular attention to the place of Cervantes' concealment. He and the unfortunate gentlemen, his companions, were aware of Viana's attempt, and of the cause of its failure; but they knew Viana would not be altogether discouraged by one such accident, and had good hope of ere long seeing his brigantine again under more happy auspices. But Hassan's slave, El Dorador, who had hitherto been, next to the gardener, the most effectual instrument of their safety, happened, just at this juncture, to think proper to renounce his Christianity—and it not unnaturally occurred to him that he could not better commence the career of a renegade than by betraying the retreat of Cervantes and his companions. Hassan consequently surrounded the entrance to their cave with such a force as put all resistance out of the question, and the whole fifteen were conducted in fetters to Algiers. The others were immediately delivered into the possession of their former masters; but Cervantes, whose previous attempts at once fixed on him the suspicion of having headed the whole enterprize, was retained by the king, in the hope of extracting information, and perhaps of discovering some accomplices among the wealthier renegades. It is probable that Cervantes had no such information to give; but, at all events, he was one of the last men in the world to give it had he had it in his power. He underwent various examinations, declared himself on every occasion the sole author and contriver of the discovered plot; and, at last, effectually exhausted the patience of the tyrant by the firmness of his behaviour. The savage Hassan exerted all his influence to have Cervantes strangled *in terrorem*; but the representations of Déli Mami, concerning the value of his private property, could not be altogether disregarded—

and the future author of *Don Quixote* escaped the bowstring, because an Arnaut renegade told an Algerine tyrant that he considered him to be worth something better than two hundred crowns.[1] The whole of these particulars, let it be observed, are not gathered from Cervantes himself,[2] but from the contemporary author of a history of Barbary, Father Haedo. The words in which this ecclesiastic concludes his narrative are worthy of being given as they stand. "Most marvellous thing!" says he, "that some of these gentlemen remained shut up in the cave for five, six, even for seven months, without even so much as beholding the light of day, sustained all that time by Miguel de Cervantes—and this at the great and continual risk of his own life, for no less than four times did he incur the nearest peril of being strangled, impaled or burnt alive, by reason of the bold things on which he adventured, in the hope of bestowing liberty upon many. Had fortune been correspondent to his spirit, industry and skill, at this day Algiers would have been in the safe possession of the Christians, for to no less lofty consummation did his designs aspire. In the end, the whole was treasonously discovered, and the gardener, after being tortured and picketed, perished miserably. But, indeed, of the things which happened in that cave, during the seven months that it was inhabited by these Christians, and altogether of the captivity and various enterprizes of Miguel de Cervantes, a particular history might easily be formed. Hassan was accustomed to say that he should consider captives, and barks, and the whole city of Algiers in perfect safety, *could he but be sure of that handless Spaniard.*"

In effect it appears that the King of Algiers did not consider it possible to make sure of Cervantes, so long as he remained in the

[1] [Some alteration of the original text of this memoir has been made here to rectify an apparent misconception as to the position of Hassan in the Algerine community.]

[2] It has been very commonly supposed that Cervantes tells his own Algerine history in the person of the captive in *Don Quixote*. But the reader will find, in the notes to this edition, sufficient reasons for discrediting this notion, in itself certainly a very natural one. There can be no doubt, however, that Cervantes' own experience furnished him with all that knowledge of Algerine affairs and manners which he has displayed in the story of the Captive, as well as in his less known pieces, the drama *Trato de Argel* and the *Española Inglesa* [which forms one of the "Exemplary Novels"].

possession of a private individual; for shortly after he purchased him from Déli Mami, and kept him shut up with the utmost severity in the dungeon of his own palace. The hardships thus inflicted on Cervantes were, however, in all probability, the means of restoring to him his liberty much sooner than he would otherwise have obtained it. The noble exertions he had made, and the brilliant talents he had exhibited, had excited the strongest interest in his favour; and the knowledge of his harsh treatment in the Haram determined the public functionary for the redemption of Spanish captives then resident at Algiers to make an extraordinary effort in his behalf. In fine, this person, by name Father Juan Gil, declared his willingness to advance whatever might be necessary, along with the contributions already received from his family in Spain, to procure the liberty of Cervantes; and, although the king forthwith raised his demand to five hundred crowns, the ransom was paid, and Cervantes recovered his freedom. The records of the Redeeming Commission show that Cervantes' mother (now a widow) contributed two hundred and fifty crowns; his sister (married to a Florentine gentleman, Ambrosio), fifty; and a friend of the family, one Franciso Caramambel, a similar sum. It was thus Cervantes at length returned to Spain.[1]

He returned at the age of thirty-three, after having spent more than ten years of manhood amidst such varieties of travel, adventure, enterprize and suffering as must have sufficed to sober very considerably the lively temperament, and at the same time to mature, enlarge and strengthen the powerful understanding with which he had been gifted by nature. He returned, however, under circumstances of but little promise, so far as his personal fortune and advancement were concerned. His wound had disabled him as a soldier, and, besides, the long period of his captivity had thrown him out in the course of his military profession.

[Yet in the next year he appears again in the ranks of his old regiment, serving as a common soldier with his brother Rodrigo. And later on in the same year (1581) he took part in the expedition to the Azores. On the failure of that enterprize he

[1] [It is generally agreed that the date of his return was towards the close of the year 1580.]

again took ship under the famous Santa Cruz, and was on board the Admiral's galleon at the brilliant victory of Terceira, on the 25th of July, 1582. An episode of these concluding years of his life as a soldier was his passing attachment to the nameless Portuguese lady, who was the mother of his only and much loved child, Isabel. A year or two later he seems to have abandoned the military career which had so unworthily denied him the advancement he had so well deserved.]

With all his variety of accomplishments, and all his brilliancy of talents, there was no other profession for the exercise of which he felt himself prepared. His family was poor, his friends few and powerless; and, after some months spent in fruitless solicitation, Cervantes seems to have made up his mind that no path remained open for him but that of literature; in one point of view, indeed, the path most worthy of his genius, and therefore the best he could have selected, had greater choice been afforded; but one which, according to the then manners and customs of Spain, was not likely to prove, in any remarkable degree, conducive to the improvement of his worldly fortunes. He shut himself up, however, and proceeded to labour in his new vocation at once with all the natural fervour of his disposition, and with all the seriousness of a man sensible how much the whole career of life is often affected by the good or ill success of a first effort. As such, he, without doubt, regarded the work in which he had now engaged himself; for he could not, after the lapse of so many years, attach any importance to the juvenile and by this time forgotten productions which had gone forth under his name ere he quitted Spain in the suite of Cardinal Acquaviva. The reader, who has compared the different Lives of Cervantes written by Spanish authors, will, from what I have now said, perceive that I am inclined to follow the opinion of those who think the pastoral romance of *Galatea* was the first work published by him after his return from captivity. The authority of Pellicer, indeed, favours the contrary opinion; but although he says that Cervantes *immediately* commenced writing for the stage, I can find no authentic record of any dramatic effort of his until some time after the appearance of the *Galatea*, or indeed until after his marriage, which took place in 1584.

The *Galatea*, like all the lesser works of Cervantes, has been thrown into the shade by the pre-eminent merit and success of his *Don Quixote*. Yet there can be no question, that, had Cervantes never written anything but the *Galatea*, it must have sufficed to give him a high and a permanent place in the literary history of Spain. The grace and beauty of its composition entitle the romance to be talked of in this manner; but it must be confessed that it exhibits very few traces of that originality of invention, and none at all of that felicitous exposition of human character in which the genius of Cervantes afterwards shone forth with its brightest and most peculiar lustre. It is, at the best, a happy imitation of the *Diana* of Montemayor, and of the continuation of that performance by Gil Polo. Like these works, it is deficient in fable (but indeed the fable of *Galatea*, such as it is, was never completed); like them, it abounds in beautiful description and graceful declamation; and like them, it is continually diversified with the introduction of lyrical pieces, sonnets, canzonets and ballads—some of these exquisite in merit. The metrical effusions of the *Galatea* are, indeed, so numerous that Bouterwek[1] says he has little doubt Cervantes wrote the prose narrative expressly for the purpose of embodying the miscellaneous contents of a poetical common-place book, to whose stores he had probably been making continual additions throughout the whole period of his absence from Spain; and, above all, during the many weary and idle hours of his captivity. It is certain that many of the poems introduced in the *Galatea* have little apparent relation to the story of the romance; and, therefore, there may be some foundation for Bouterwek's conjecture. But, on the other hand, it cannot be denied that the finest strains in the book are filled with allusions which imply their having been composed subsequent to the termination of the author's residence in Barbary.—On the whole, the *Galatea* exhibited abundantly the defects of the false and unnatural species of composition to which it belongs; but it displayed, at the same time, a masterly command of Spanish style, and in general a richness and energy, both of thought and of language, enough at the least to excite the highest expectations in regard to the future literary career of Cervantes.

[1] [In his history of Spanish and Portuguese literature.]

It might have been fortunate had he gone on to exert himself in the walk of fiction, in which this first and, on the whole, successful effort had been made, and by returning to which long afterwards he secured his literary immortality, instead of betaking himself, as he soon did, to the dramatic field, in which he had to contend with the most formidable competitors, and for which the event has shown his own talents were less splendidly adapted.[1]

Very shortly after the *Galatea* was published,[2] Cervantes married a young lady whose charms were supposed to have furnished the chief inspiration of its numerous amatory effusions—Donna Catalina de Palacios Salazar y Vozmediano. This lady's dowry was not indeed quite so ample as might be augured from the magnificence of her style; but she brought Cervantes enough to furnish him with the means of subsistence, and it is probable of idleness, for a considerable number of months. After the lady's portion was exhausted, he seems to have plunged himself at once into the full career of dramatic composition. In this he laboured incessantly, but with little success, for about three years. His plays, as was the fashion of the day, he sold as fast as they were written to the managers of different theatres in Madrid and elsewhere, receiving, it is probable, but very trifling and inadequate remuneration. For Lope de Vega received at the highest about eighty reals for a comedy; and we may be sure his less successful rival was content with somewhat smaller payment.[3]

That the author of *Don Quixote* should have been unsuccessful in writing for the stage is a circumstance which cannot but excite considerable astonishment at first sight; nor has all the ingenuity of the celebrated historian of Spanish literature been able to throw much light upon the causes of his failure. "That mass of intrigues, adventures and prodigies," says he,[4] "of which the Spanish drama was chiefly composed, was altogether in opposition to the particular

[1] [A criticism of the *Galatea*, by Cervantes himself, will be found in the library scene in *Don Quixote*, Part. I. chap. vi.]

[2] [The *Galatea* was published in Dec. 1584. His marriage took place on the 12th of that month.]

[3] [Some authorities express a more favourable estimate of Cervantes success as a dramatist at this period.]

[4] Bouterwek, Sect. II. chap. [illegible]

character of Cervantes' genius. His manner of thinking and of writing was too nervous and accurate to be accomodated to a species of composition, fantastic, destitute of any plain purpose and of any durable interest. As a spectator, he enjoyed pieces which, as a poet, he could not imitate; and he believed himself to be capable of imitating the Spanish dramatists, because he felt within himself the power and the capacity of doing better things." But when we reflect that the very best of Cervantes' followers and imitators in the field of comic romance, Le Sage, Fielding and Smollett, attempted, like him, the drama, and, like him, attempted it with indifferent success, we shall most probably be constrained to conclude that the two kinds of composition, which we might at first sight imagine to require very much the same sort of talents, do in fact require talents of totally different kinds; and so to attribute the ill success of Cervantes to causes much more general than are to be deduced from any examination of the particular system of the Spanish stage. Had Calderon, or Shakespeare, or Molière, written admirable romances, it certainly would have been much more difficult to account for the dramatic failures of Cervantes; but even then it would not have followed that, because great dramatists could write excellent romances, great romance-writers should also be able to write excellent dramas. In a word, there is no doubt that powers may be exhibited in a romance as high and as varied as ever adorned either a tragedy or a comedy; but it seems no less certain that a man may possess all the talents requisite for giving interest and beauty to a romance—in the total absence of those faculties of concentrating interest and condensing expression, without a perfect command of which, neither in Spain nor any other country, has the genius of the drama ever achieved any of its wonders.

Cervantes himself informs us that he wrote during this period of his life between twenty and thirty plays;[1] but not more than a

[1] [Of these early plays by Cervantes—the group written before *Don Quixote*—there now exist only the drama *El Trato de Argel* (The Traffic of Algiers), a gloomy romance of slavery which was afterwards recast with considerable alterations under the name of the *Baños de Argel*, and the tragedy of *La Numancia*, pronounced by August Schlegel to be one of the most striking and original of modern tragedies.]

third part of these have ever been published, although, says, Bouterwek, there might yet be some hope of recovering the whole, were the theatrical records of Spain sufficiently examined. Of those which have been given to the world, the *Numancia Vengada*, a tragedy in four acts, is universally esteemed the most favourable specimen. The mixture in the fable, and even in the dialogue, of such personages as the Genius of Spain, the God of the river Douro, &c., along with Roman soldiers and Spanish ladies, is a defect too gross and palpable either to admit excuse or to require commentary. But, even in spite of this and of other scarcely less glaring defects, the fine story of Numantian heroism and devotion is certainly told in this drama with a power quite worthy of the genius of its author. The dark superstitions of heathenism are introduced with masterly and chastened skill; and the whole of the last act in particular is worked up with a sustained and fearless vigour, both of imagination and of diction, such as no one can survey without saying to himself, *O si sic omnia!* The comic humour of Cervantes, again, rarely appears in his comedies, but shines out with infinite ease and effect in several of his little interludes and afterpieces—more than one of which have been of late years translated, and represented with much success upon the German stage. And here, by the way, is another coincidence that may be worth remarking; for Fielding, whose regular plays were all damned, still lives upon our own theatre as the author of *Tom Thumb*.

On the whole, imperfect as are even the best of Cervantes' theatrical pieces, there occur, nevertheless, in the very worst of them, continual indications of the fervid genius of the author. The circumstance which, in all probability, will be most immediately remarked, and most feelingly regretted by the reader who turns from *Don Quixote* to the comedies of Cervantes, is the absence of that joyous and easy vein which constitutes, throughout the whole of the first of romances, the principal charm of its composition. I have little doubt that Cervantes began to write for the stage in the hope of rivalling Lope de Vega; and that, after the first failure, he was continually depressed with the more and more forcible conviction of his own inferiority to that great and inexhaustible master of the dramatic art. He might afterwards derive some consolation

from reading Lope de Vega's two very ordinary romances and his still more ordinary novels.

While Cervantes was occupied in this way, his residence seems to have been chiefly at Madrid, but occasionally at Esquivias,[1] where the family of his wife were settled. He removed in 1588 to Seville, "having," as he himself expresses it, "found something better to do than writing comedies." What this *something* was we have no means of ascertaining; but we know that one of the principal branches of his own family had long been established at Seville in great mercantile opulence, and it is therefore highly probable that through their means he had procured some office or appointment which furnished him with means of subsistence less precarious than could be afforded by the feverish drudgery in which he had spent the last three or four years of his life. Not less than two of the Cervantes-Saavedras of Seville had written and published poems; so that we may easily imagine some interest to have been excited among this wealthy family in behalf of their poor cousin of Alcalá de Henares; and it is far from being unlikely that they entrusted to his management some subordinate department of their own mercantile concerns.[2] In 1595, the Dominicans of Zaragoza proposed certain prizes for poems to be recited at the festival of St. Hyacinthus; and one of these was adjudged to "Miguel Cervantes Saavedra of Seville." In 1596, the Earl of Essex made the second of his famous descents upon the Spanish coast, and having surprised Cadiz, rifled the town and destroyed the shipping of the harbour, including the whole of a second armada, designed, like that of 1588, for the invasion of England. While the earl kept possession of Cadiz, the gentlemen of Seville hastened to take arms, and prepare themselves to assist in delivering that city from the English yoke; and, amidst other memorials of their zeal, there are preserved two short poetical effusions of Cervantes. In 1598, Philip II.

[1] [A village near Madrid.]

[2] [Of this, however, there is no evidence; but it is known that he obtained a small government appointment under the commissary-general, who was charged, amongst other duties, with the provisioning of the Invincible Armada, a position which he occupied for several years. That his circumstances were still needy is proved by a petition in which he begged the king for a small office in the Indies, which however had no result.]

died at Seville; and Cervantes' name appears among the list of poets who wrote verses on the occasion of the royal obsequies. A serious quarrel took place on the day of the funeral between the civil and ecclesiastical authorities of Seville, and Cervantes was exposed to some trouble for having ventured to hiss at some part, we know not what, of their proceedings.—Such are all the traces that have been discovered of Cervantes' occupations and amusements during his residence at Seville, which extended from 1588 to 1603, or perhaps the beginning of 1604. The name of the branch of his family settled there being well known, it is not wonderful that, after a residence of so many years, Cervantes should have been often talked of by his contemporaries as "one of the Saavedras of Seville."

"It cannot be doubted," says Bouterwek, "although no Spanish author has said so, that the death of Philip II. must have had a favourable effect on the genius of Cervantes. When the indolent Philip III. ascended the throne, the Spanish people began to breathe more freely. The nation recovered at least the courage to sport with those chains which they could not break, and satire was winked at, provided only it were delicate." I know not how much foundation of truth there may be for this conjecture, but it is certainly not the less likely, because we find Cervantes so soon after the accession of the new king transferring his habitation to Valladolid—where, during the first years of his reign, Philip III. was chiefly accustomed to hold his court. We are almost entirely without information how Cervantes spent the two or three years immediately preceding his appearance at Valladolid; and this is the more to be regretted, because it is certain that the first part of *Don Quixote* was written during this period. A vague tradition has always prevailed that Cervantes had been sent into La Mancha for the purpose of recovering some debts due to a mercantile house in Seville, that he was maltreated by the people of La Mancha, and on some pretence confined for several months in the jail of Argasamilla, and that during this imprisonment the first part of *Don Quixote* was both planned and executed. We know from Cervantes himself,[1] that the first part of *Don Quixote* was written

[1] [This at least may be inferred from the Prologue to *Don Quixote*, Part I.]

in a *prison*; but have no means of ascertaining in how far the circumstances of Cervantes' confinement actually corresponded with those of the tradition.[1]

It is, in any case, extremely probable that Cervantes employed a considerable part of the time during which his family were settled in Seville in travelling, for purposes of business, over various districts of Spain, which, in the earlier periods of his life, he could have had small opportunities of examining. The minute knowledge displayed in *Don Quixote* not only of the soil, but of the provincial manners of La Mancha, can scarcely be supposed to have been gathered otherwise than from personal inspection, and that none of the most hasty. In his *novels*, most of which are generally supposed to have been composed about the same period, although they were not published for several years afterwards, a similar acquaintance is manifested with the manners of Cordova, Toledo and many other cities and districts of Spain. Whatever the nature of Cervantes' occupation at Seville might have been, there is, therefore, every reason to believe that excursions of considerable extent formed a part either of his duty or of his relaxation.

However all these things might be, it is certain that Cervantes was resident in Valladolid, in the summer of 1604, and there is reason to think he had removed to that city at least a year earlier. *Don Quixote* was published at Madrid either in the end of 1604, or at latest in 1605.[2] Some curious particulars of his mode of life,

[1] [Ticknor gives the story as follows:—"A uniform tradition, however, declares that he was employed by the Grand Prior of the Order of St. John, in La Mancha, to collect rents due to his monastery in the village of Argamasilla; and that he went there on this humble agency and made the attempt, but that the debtors refused payment, and, after persecuting him in different ways, ended by throwing him into prison, where, in a spirit of indignation, he began to write the *Don Quixote*, making his hero a native of the village that treated him so ill, and laying the scene of most of the knight's earlier adventures in La Mancha."—*Hist. Spanish Literature*, 1872 edit., Vol. II. p. 135. Mrs. Oliphant, in her *Cervantes*, notes the fact that he was employed to collect the royal taxes in Granada, and that, apparently for some small irregularity in his accounts, he was imprisoned for a short period in Seville.]

[2] [Cervantes sold the book for ten years to its first publisher, Francisco de Robles: this fact may account for the carelessness with which the early editions were revised for the press.]

about the time of its appearance, have been gathered from the records of the magistracy of Valladolid—before whom he was brought in the month of June 1605, on suspicion of having been concerned in a nocturnal brawl and homicide, with which, in reality, he had no manner of concern. A gentleman, by name Don Gaspar Garibay, was assassinated about midnight, close to the house where Cervantes lived. The alarm being given, Cervantes was the first to run out and offer every assistance to the wounded man. It is clear that the neighbourhood was none of the most respectable, for it was instantly suspected that the women of Cervantes' family were ladies of easy virtue, and that he himself, having acted as their bully, had, in the course of some infamous scuffle, dealt the deadly blow with his own hand. He and all his household were forthwith arrested, and did not recover their liberty until they had undergone very strict and minute examinations. From the records of the court we gather that Cervantes professed himself to be resident at Valladolid, for purposes of *business*; that, on account of his literary reputation, he was in the custom of receiving frequent visits both from gentlemen of the court and the learned men of the university; and, lastly, that he was living in a style of great penury;—for he, his wife, his two sisters (one of them a nun) and his niece are represented as occupying a scanty lodging, on the fourth floor of a mean-looking house, and as entertaining among them all no domestic but a single girl. Cervantes, in his declaration, states his own age at *upwards of fifty*, but he had, in fact, completed his fifty-seventh year before this transaction took place. With such obscurity were both the person and the character of Cervantes surrounded, according to some, immediately *before*, according to others, immediately *after*, the publication of the First Part of *Don Quixote*. But from these very circumstances, I am inclined to agree with those who deny that *Don Quixote* appeared before the summer of 1605.

It was dedicated to Don Alonzo Lopez de Zuniga, seventh Duke of Béjar, a nobleman who much affected the character of a Mecænas, but who does not appear to have requited the homage of Cervantes by any very useful marks of his favour. The book, however, stood in no need of patronage, whatever might be the necessities of its

author: it was read immediately in court and city, by young and old, learned and unlearned, with equal delight; or, as the Duchess in the second part expresses it, "went forth into the world with the universal applause of the nations." Four editions, published and sold within the year, furnish the best proof of its wide and instant popularity; and if any further proof be wanting, the well-known story (first told by Barrano Porreno, in his *Life and Deeds of Philip III.*) may supply it. "The king standing one day," says this chronicler, "on the balcony of the palace of Madrid, observed a certain student, with a book in his hand, on the opposite banks of the Manzanares. He was reading, but every now and then he interrupted his reading, and gave himself violent blows upon the forehead, accompanied with innumerable motions of ecstacy and mirthfulness. That student, said the king, is either out of his wits, or reading the history of *Don Quixote*." This must have happened in the beginning of 1606, after the court had removed from Valladolid to the capital. Cervantes himself followed the court, and resided in Madrid almost all the rest of his life.

In the midst of general approbation, the author of *Don Quixote* was assailed, on his arrival in the capital, by all the unwearied arts of individual spleen, envy and detraction. He had irritated, by his inimitable satire, a great number of contemporary authors, some of them men of high rank, whose fame depended on books of the very species which he had for ever destroyed. Another numerous and active class, the writers for the theatre, were not less seriously offended by the freedom with which Cervantes had criticized, in the person of the Canon of Toledo, many of the most popular pieces which had at that time possession of the Spanish stage. Among the rest, it is said, and probably not without some foundation, that the great Lope de Vega himself was excessively displeased with the terms in which his plays were talked of—and a sonnet against Cervantes and his book, still extant, is generally attributed to his pen. Cervantes endured all this very calmly; and, with that noble retention of the thirst for fame which he had already so well exemplified, shut himself up in his study to compose works worthy of himself, instead of hastening to take the more vulgar revenge he might so easily have obtained against his adver-

saries. The two brothers, Lupercio and Bartholomeo D'Argensola, after himself and Lope de Vega, the first men of letters in Spain, lived with him on terms of intimacy, which might easily console him under the assaults of his inferiors; and through them he was introduced to the Conde de Lemos, and the Cardinal of Toledo, two enlightened and high-spirited noblemen, who, throughout all the the rest of his life, never failed to afford him their protection and support. Count Lemos being appointed Viceroy of Naples shortly after, Cervantes solicited and expected some appointment in his suite; but it is painful to add that he seems to have been disappointed in this particular, in consequence of the coldness, or perhaps the jealousy, of the very friends by whom he had been first introduced to that nobleman's notice. He resented, it is certain, the behaviour of the Argensolas, but the dedications of almost all the works he subsequently put forth attest that he acquitted Lemos himself of any unkindness to his person, or coldness to his interests.

The remains of his patrimony, with the profits of *Don Quixote*, and it is probable some allowances from Lemos and the cardinal, were sufficient to support Cervantes in the humble style of life to which his habits were formed; for he allowed nearly ten years to elapse before he sent any new work to the press. In 1613, he published his *Novelas Exemplares*, most of which had been written many years before, and of which he had already given a specimen in the story of El Curioso Impertinente, introduced in *Don Quixote*. These tales were received with great and deserved applause, although they have never been placed on a level with the great work which had preceded them. They have been translated into English, and are well known to most readers, so that it were needless to enlarge upon their character and merits. They are, for the most part, felicitous imitations of the manner of Boccacio, whose Italian popularity, as a writer of short romances and anecdotes, it was no doubt Cervantes' ambition to rival in his own country. They are written in a style of manly ease and simplicity; and, when compared with the *Galatea* (for, as I have already said, they were chiefly written before *Don Quixote*), afford abundant evidence of the progressive enlargement of the author's powers and improve-

ment of his taste. Their morality is uniformly pure, and many of them are full of interest; so that it is no wonder the novels of Cervantes should to this hour keep their place among the favourite reading of the Spanish youth.[1] In 1614, Cervantes published another work highly creditable to his genius, but of a very different description. This is the *Viage del Parnaso*, his celebrated picture of the state of Spanish literature in his time, and, without question, the most original and energetic of his own poetical performances. It is, as might be expected, full of satire; but the satire of Cervantes was always gentle and playful; and among the men of true genius, then alive in Spain, there was not one (not even of those that had shown personal hostility to Cervantes) who had the smallest reason to complain of his treatment. Cervantes introduces himself as "the oldest and the poorest" of all the brotherhood—"the naked Adam of Spanish poets;" but he describes his poverty without complaining of it; and, indeed, throughout the whole work, never for a moment loses sight of that high feeling of self-respect which became him both as an author and as a gentleman. The vessel, in which the imaginary voyage of Parnassus is performed, is described in a strain worthy of Cervantes. "From the keel to the topmast," says he, "it was all of verse; there was not a single foot of prose in it. The deck was all fenced with an airy railwork of double-rhymes. The rowing benches were chiefly occupied by Ballads, an impudent but necessary race; for there is nothing to which they cannot be turned. The poop was grand and gay, but a little outlandish in its style, being stuck all over with sonnets of the richest workmanship. Two vigorous Triplets had the stroke-oars on either side, and regulated the motion of the vessel in a manner at once easy and powerful. The gangway appeared to be one long and most melancholy elegy, from which tears were continually distilling," &c.

During the same year, while Cervantes was preparing for the press the Second Part of *Don Quixote*, there was published at Tar-

[1] [A story called *La Tia Fingida* (The Pretended Aunt) was formerly included in the English translation of the *Novelas Exemplares*. It is by no means so exemplary as the authentic tales, and as it was not published by Cervantes (if it was written by him) it should not be included amongst them.]

ragona a continuation of the same story, written chiefly for the purpose of abusing Cervantes, by a person who assumed the name of Alonzo Fernandez de Avellaneda,[1] and who appears to have been successful in keeping his true name entirely concealed. The greater part of this Continuation is made up of very humble imitation, or rather of very open plagiarism, from the First Part of *Don Quixote*; and towards its conclusion it contains some incidents which leave little doubt but that its writer must have found access to the MS. of Cervantes' Second Part. In the Notes to this edition[2] the reader will find such further particulars as have appeared worthy of being preserved. Cervantes, whose own Continuation had already in all probability begun to be printed, took his revenge[3] by interweaving in the thread of his story a variety of the most bitter sarcasms upon the vulgarity, obscenity and coarseness of his anonymous enemy—a revenge but for which, in all likelihood, the memory of Avellaneda's performance would not have survived the year in which it was published. The Second Part of *Don Quixote* made its appearance towards the end of 1615; and is inscribed to the Conde de Lemos, in a strain well worthy of the imitation of all future dedicators. It was received with applause not inferior to that with which the First Part had been greeted ten years before, and no doubt lightened the pecuniary circumstances of the author during the few remaining months of his life. His fame was now established far above the reach of all calumny and detraction. Lope de Vega was dead, and there was no one to divide with Cervantes the literary empire of his country. He was caressed by the great; strangers who came to Madrid made the author of *Don Quixote* the first object of their researches; he enjoyed all his honours in the midst of his family; and was continually exercising his mind in labours worthy of himself. In short, Cervantes had at last obtained all the objects of his honourable ambition, when his health began to fail, and he felt within himself the daily strengthening conviction that his career drew near its close.

[1] [The writer is conjectured to have been Luis de Aliaga, the King's confessor.]

[2] [Vol. II. p. 3.]

[3] [See Part II. chap. lix. to end.]

In 1616,[1] he superintended the publication of eight of his comedies, and as many of his interludes, and prefixed to them a dissertation which is extremely valuable and curious, as containing the only authentic account of the early history of the Spanish drama. He also finished and prepared for the press his romance of *Persiles and Sigismunda*. This performance is an elegant and elaborate imitation of the style and manner of Heliodorus. It displays felicity of invention and power of description, and has always been considered as one of the purest specimens of Castilian writing; nevertheless, it has not preserved any very distinguished popularity, nor been classed (except in regard to style) by any intelligent critic of more recent times with the best of Cervantes' works.

The prologue and dedication of the *Persiles* must always be read with attention, on account of the interesting circumstances under which they were composed, and of which they themselves furnish some account.

Cervantes, after concluding his romance, had gone for a few days to Esquivias for the benefit of country air. He tells us that as he was riding back to Madrid, in company with two of his friends, they were overtaken by a young student on horseback, who came on pricking violently, and complaining that they went at such a pace as gave him little chance of keeping up with them. One of the party made answer that the blame lay with the horse of Señor Miguel de Cervantes, whose trot was of the speediest. He had scarcely pronounced the name when the student dismounted, and touching the hem of Cervantes' left sleeve, said, "Yes, yes, it is indeed the maimed perfection, the all-famous, the delightful writer, the joy and darling of the Muses." Cervantes returned the young man's academic salutation with his natural modesty, and they performed the rest of the journey in company with the student. "We drew up a little," says he, "and rode on at a measured pace; and as we rode there was much talk about my illness. The good student knocked away all my hopes by telling me my disease was the dropsy, and that I could not cure it by drinking all the water of the ocean.—'Be chary of drinking, Señor Cervantes,' said he; 'but eat, and eat plentifully, for that is the only medicine that will do

[1] [The date, according to Ticknor, was 1615.]

you any good.'—I replied that many had told me the same story; but that, as for giving over drinking, they might as well desire a man to give up the sole purpose of his being. My pulse, I said, was becoming daily more and more feeble, and that if it continued to decline as it had been doing, I scarcely expected to outlive next Sunday; so that I feared there was but little chance of my being able to profit much further by the acquaintance that had so fortunately been made. With that we found ourselves at the bridge of Toledo, by which we entered the city; and the student took leave of us, having to go round by the bridge of Segovia." This is the only notice we have of the nature of Cervantes' malady. It proceeded so rapidly that a very few days after (on the 18th of April),[1] it was thought proper for him to receive extreme unction, which he did with all the devotion of a true Catholic. The day following he dictated the dedication of *Persiles* to the Conde de Lemos, one of the most graceful pieces of writing he ever produced;[2] and, wasting gradually away, expired on the 23rd of the same month. He had made his will a day or two before, in which he appointed his wife and his friend the licentiate Francisco Numez his executors; and desired that he might be buried in the Monastery of the Holy Trinity[3] at Madrid. Some time before his death he had, after a fashion not unfrequent in these times, enrolled himself in the third class of the Franciscans. He was, therefore, carried forth in the sanctified dress, and interred with all the simplicity prescribed by the statutes of this order. It has not been thought unworthy of notice that the mortal career of CERVANTES terminated on the same day with that of SHAKESPEARE.[4]

Cervantes was a man of ordinary stature, and of a complexion unusually fair in his country; for his eyes were of bright blue, and his hair auburn. His countenance was, in his youth, handsome and

[1] [1616.]

[2] [It was published by his widow six months after his death.]

[3] [Or, as some authorities have it, the burial ground of the Trinitarian nuns, which sisterhood his daughter Isabel had lately entered. But, as Ticknor says, "a few years afterwards this convent was removed to another part of the city, and what became of the ashes of the greatest genius of his country is, from that time, wholly unknown."]

[4] [Nominally, that is to say, for the new style which then prevailed in Spain, was not introduced into England until 1752.]

spirited, and his frame capable of undergoing every species of fatigue. His manners were light and cheerful; and there seems to be not the least reason for doubting that, in every relation of life, he exhibited all the virtues of an amiable, upright and manly character. Loyalty, bravery and religion were in those days supposed to be inherent in the breast of every Castilian gentleman; and Cervantes was in these, as in all other particulars, an honour and an ornament to the generous race from which he sprang.[1]

In regard to the literary character and merits of Cervantes, the first thing which must strike every one acquainted with Spanish literature is that the genius, whose appearance forms an epoch so very remarkable in the general history of European intellect, can scarcely be said to have formed any epoch in the literature of his own country. In Spain, the age in which *Don Quixote* was written is not the age of Cervantes, but the age of Lope de Vega. Out of Spain, the writings of Lope de Vega have scarcely been known, and certainly have never been popular; while the masterpiece of Cervantes, under all the disadvantages of translation, has taken and preserved, in every country in Europe, a place hardly inferior to the most admired productions of native talent. Had Cervantes written nothing but his plays, there could have been nothing to excite wonder in the superior Spanish popularity of Lope de Vega; for, in spite of greater correctness of execution, and perhaps even of greater felicity in delineating human character, it is not to be questioned that Cervantes, as a dramatist, is quite inferior to his contemporary. But when *Don Quixote* is thrown into the scale, the result must indeed appear as difficult to be accounted for, as it is incapable of being denied. The stage, no doubt, was in those days the delight

[1] [In the preface to his novels Cervantes has thus described a portrait of himself:—"He whom you see here with an aquiline visage, chestnut hair, his forehead high and open, with lively animated eyes, his nose curved though well proportioned, a silver beard (though not twenty years ago it was all golden), large moustaches, a small mouth, but few teeth, and those so bad and ill-assorted that they don t care to preserve harmony with each other, a body neither fat nor lean, neither tall nor short, a clear complexion, rather light than brown, a little stooping in the shoulders, and not light of foot; that is the author of the *Galatea* and of *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and of other works which run through the streets as if they had lost their way, and perhaps without the name of their master."]

and the study of the Spanish public throughout all its classes; but even the universal predilection, or rather passion, for a particular form of composition will scarcely be sufficient to explain the comparative neglect of genius at least equal, exerted with infinitely more perfect skill, in a form which possessed at that period, in addition to all its essential merits, the great merit of originality and charm of novelty.

Even had Cervantes died without writing *Don Quixote*, his plays (above all, his *Interludes* and his *Numancia*); his *Galatea*, the beautiful dream of his youth; his *Persiles*, the last effort of his chastened and purified taste; and his fine poem of the *Voyage of Parnassus*, must have given him at least the second place in the most productive age of Spanish genius. In regard to all the graces of Castilian composition, even these must have left him without a rival either in that or in any other age of the literature of his country. For, while all the other great Spanish authors of the brilliant *century* of Spain (from 1560 to 1656) either deformed their writings by utter carelessness, or weakened them by a too studious imitation of foreign models, Cervantes alone seized the happy medium, and was, almost from the beginning of his career, Spanish without rudeness, and graceful without stiffness or affectation. As a master of Spanish style, he is *now*, both in and out of Spain, acknowledged to be first without a second; but this, which might have secured the immortality and satisfied the ambition of any man, is, after all, scarcely worthy of being mentioned in regard to the great creator of the only species of writing which can be considered as the peculiar property of modern genius. In that spacious field, of which Cervantes must be honoured as the first discoverer, the finest spirits of his own, and of every other European country, have since been happily and successfully employed. The whole body of modern romance and novel writers must be considered as his followers and imitators; but among them all, howsoever varied and splendid have been their merits, it is, perhaps, not going too far to say that as yet Cervantes has found but one *rival*.[1]

The learned editor of the Spanish Academy's edition of 1781 has

[1] [Lockhart no doubt refers, with well-founded pride, to his illustrious father-in-law, Sir Walter Scott.]

thought fit to occupy the space of a very considerable volume with an inquiry into the particular merits of *Don Quixote*. I refer to his laborious dissertation all those who are unwilling to admire anything without knowing why they admire it—or rather, why an erudite Doctor of Madrid deemed it worthy of his admiration.[1] In our own country, almost everything that any sensible man would wish to hear said about *Don Quixote* has been said over and over again by writers whose sentiments I should be sorry to repeat without their words, and whose words I should scarcely be pardoned for repeating.

Mr. Spence, the author of a late ingenious tour in Spain, seems to believe, what I should have supposed was entirely exploded, that Cervantes wrote his books for the purpose of ridiculing knight-errantry; and that, unfortunately for his country, his satire put out of fashion, not merely the absurd misdirection of the spirit of heroism, but that sacred spirit itself. But the practice of knight-errantry, if ever there was such a thing, had, it is well known, been out of date long before the age in which Don Quixote appeared; and as for the spirit of heroism, I think few will sympathise with the critic who deems it possible that an individual, to say nothing of a nation, should have imbibed any contempt, either for that or any other elevating principle of our nature, from the manly page of Cervantes. One of the greatest triumphs of his skill is the success with which he continually prevents us from confounding the absurdities of the knight-errant with the generous aspirations of the cavalier. For the last, even in the midst of madness, we respect Don Quixote himself. We pity the delusion, we laugh at the situation, but we revere, in spite of every ludicrous accompaniment, and of every insane exertion, the noble spirit of the Castilian gentleman; and we feel, in every page, that we are perusing the work, not of a heartless scoffer, a cold-blooded satirist, but of a calm and enlightened mind, in which true wisdom had grown up by the side

[1] As a specimen of the style of his criticisms take this: he approves of the introduction of a *Roque Guinart* in *Don Quixote*, because in the *Odyssey* there is a *Polyphemus*, and in the *Æneid* there is a *Cacus*. And yet this man must have at least read Cervantes' own preface to his work, in which that pedantic species of criticism is so powerfully ridiculed, "If thou namest any giant in the book, forget not Goliath of Gath," &c.

of true experience,—of one whose genius moved in a sphere too lofty for mere derision—of one who knew human nature too well not to respect it—of one, finally, who, beneath a mask of apparent levity, aspired to commune with the noblest principles of humanity; and, above all, to give form and expression to the noblest feelings of the national character of Spain. The idea of giving a ludicrous picture of an imaginary personage, conceiving himself to be called upon, in the midst of modern manners and institutions, to exercise the perilous vocation of an Amadis or a Belianis, might perhaps have occurred to a hundred men as easily as to Cervantes. The same general idea has been at the root of many subsequent works, written in derision of real or imaginary follies; but Cervantes is distinguished from the authors of all these works, not merely by the originality of his general conception and plan, but as strongly, and far more admirably, by the nature of the superstructure he has reared upon the basis of his initiatory fiction.

Others have been content with the display of wit, satire, eloquence—and some of them have displayed all these with the most admirable skill and power; but he who rises from the perusal of *Don Quixote* thinks of the wit, the satire, the eloquence of Cervantes but as the accessories and lesser ornaments of a picture of national life and manners by far the most perfect and glowing that was ever embodied in one piece of composition,—a picture, the possession of which alone will be sufficient to preserve, in freshness and honour, the Spanish name and character, even after the last traces of that once noble character may have been obliterated, and perhaps that name itself forgotten among the fantastic innovations of a degenerated people. *Don Quixote* is thus the peculiar property as well as the peculiar pride of the Spaniards. In another, and in a yet larger point of view, it is the property and pride of the whole of the cultivated world—for *Don Quixote* is not merely to be regarded as a Spanish Cavalier, filled with a Spanish madness, and exhibiting that madness in the eyes of Spaniards of every condition and rank of life, from the peasant to the grandee,—he is also the type of a more universal madness—he is the symbol of Imagination, continually struggling and contrasted with Reality—he represents the eternal warfare between Enthusiasm and Necessity—the eternal

discrepancy between the aspirations and the occupations of man —the omnipotence and the vanity of human dreams. And thus, perhaps, it is not too much to say that *Don Quixote*, the wittiest and the most laughable of all books—a book which has made many a one, besides the young student on the banks of the Manzanares, look as if he were *out of himself*—is a book, upon the whole, calculated to produce something very different from a merely mirthful impression.

The serious style of *Don Quixote*, in the original language, preserves the most perfect harmony with this seriousness of purpose. The solemn, eloquent, impassioned Don Quixote, the shrewd, earth-seeking, yet affectionate Sancho, do not fill us with mirth because they seem to be mirthful themselves. From the beginning of the book to the end they are both intensely serious characters—the one never loses sight of the high destinies to which he has devoted himself—the other wanders amidst sierras and moonlight forests, and glides on the beautiful stream of the Ebro, without forgetting for a moment the hope of pelf that has drawn him from his village—the *insula*[1] which has been promised by his master to him—and which he does not think of the less because he does not know what it is, and because he does know that it has been promised by a madman. The contrasts perpetually afforded by the characters of Quixote and Sancho,—the contrasts not less remarkable between the secondary objects and individuals introduced—as these are in reality and as they appear to the hero,—all the contrasts in a work where, more successfully than in any other, the art of contrast has been exhibited,—would be comparatively feeble and ineffectual, but for the never-failing contrast between the *idea* of the book and the *style* in which it is written. Never was the fleeting essence of wit so richly embalmed for eternity.

In our time, it is certain, almost all readers must be contented to lose a great part of the delight with which *Don Quixote* was read on its first appearance. The class of works, to parody and ridicule which it was Cervantes' first and most evident purpose, has long since passed into almost total oblivion; and therefore a thousand traits of felicitous satire must needs escape the notice even of those best able to seize the general scope and appreciate the general

[1] [See Notes, Vol. I. pp. 238 and 489.]

merits of the history of The Ingenious Hidalgo. Mr. Southey's admirable editions of *Amadis de Gaul* and *Palmerin of England* have indeed revived among us something of the once universal taste for the old and stately prose romance of chivalry;—but it must be had in mind that Cervantes wrote his book for the purpose not of satirising these works—which are among the most interesting relics of the rich, fanciful and lofty genius of the middle ages—but of extirpating the race of slavish imitators, who, in his day, were deluging all Europe, and more particularly Spain, with eternal caricatures of the venerable old romance. Of the *Amadis* (the plan and outline of which he for the most part parodied merely because it was the best known work of its order), Cervantes has been especially careful to record his own high admiration; and if the Canon of Toledo be introduced, as is generally supposed, to express the opinions of Cervantes himself, the author of *Don Quixote* had certainly, at one period of his life, entertained some thoughts of writing, not a humorous parody, but a serious imitation, of the *Amadis*.

I shall conclude what I have to say of the author of *Don Quixote* with one remark—namely, that Cervantes was an old man when he wrote his masterpiece of comic romance; that nobody has ever written successful novels when young but Smollett; and that *Humphrey Clinker*, written in the last year of Smollett's life, is, in every particular of conception, execution and purpose, as much superior to *Roderick Random* as *Don Quixote* is to the *Galatea*.

It remains to say a few words concerning this new edition of the first of modern romances. The translation is that of Motteux—and this has been preferred, simply because, in spite of many defects and inaccuracies, it is by far the most spirited. Shelton, the oldest of all our translators, is the only one entitled to be compared with Motteux. Perhaps he is even more successful in imitating the "serious air" of Cervantes; but it is much to be doubted whether the English reader of our time would not be more wearied with the obsolete turns of his phraseology than delighted with its occasional felicities.[1]

[1] [The above paragraph applied more particularly to the text with which this memoir was first published. It is retained as shewing Lockhart's opinion as to translations then existing.]

In the Notes appended to these volumes an attempt has been made to furnish a complete explanation of the numerous historical allusions in *Don Quixote*, as well as of the particular traits in romantic writing which it was Cervantes' purpose to ridicule in the person of his hero. Without having access to such information as has now been thrown together, it may be doubted whether any English reader has ever been able thoroughly to seize and command the meaning of Cervantes throughout his inimitable fiction. From the Spanish editions of Bowle, Pellicer and the Academy the greater part of the materials has been extracted; but a very considerable portion, and perhaps not the least interesting, has been sought for in the old histories and chronicles with which the Spaniards of the 16th century were familiar. Of the many old Spanish ballads, quoted or alluded to by Don Quixote and Sancho Panza, metrical translations have uniformly been inserted in the Notes; and, as by far the greater part of these compositions are altogether new to the English public, it is hoped this part of the work may afford some pleasure to those who delight in comparing the early literatures of the different nations of Christendom.

ERRATUM.

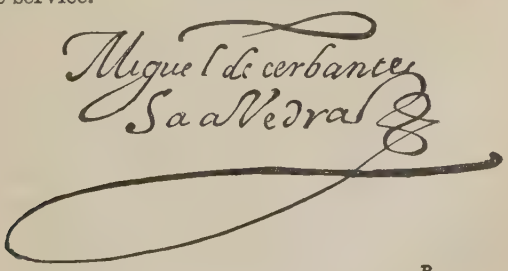
P. 21, last line of text : *for* Giguenza, *read* Siguenza.

DEDICATION

TO THE DUKE OF BÉJAR

MARQUIS OF GIBRALEON, COUNT OF BENALCÁZAR AND BAÑARES, VISCOUNT OF THE TOWN OF ALCOCER, LORD OF THE BURGHS OF CAPILLA, CURIEL, AND BURGUILLOS.

TRUSTING to the good reception and honour which your Excellency manifests towards every sort of book, as a Prince so disposed to favour the humane arts,—more especially those which by virtue of their nobleness do not humble themselves to the service and the profit of the vulgar,—I have determined to produce to light the *Ingenious Gentleman Don Quixote de la Mancha* under cover of your Excellency's most noble name; whom, with the respect which I owe to so much greatness, I pray to receive it favourably beneath your protection, to the end that in the shadow thereof, although destitute of that precious adornment of elegance and erudition which works composed in the houses of men of learning are wont to wear, it may dare to appear safely under the judgment of any who, not confining themselves within the limits of their own ignorance, are accustomed to condemn works that are strange with the more rigour and less justice; so that, your Excellency's wisdom having regard to my worthy desires, I trust that you will not disdain the scantiness of such humble service.



PROLOGUE

You may depend upon my word, leisurely reader, without asseveration, that I could wish this offspring of my brain were as ingenious, sprightly, and accomplished, as yourself could desire; but the mischief of it is, nature will have its course. Every production must resemble its author, and my barren and unpolished understanding can produce nothing but what is very dry, dull, fantastic, and full of unheard-of conceits. You may suppose it the child of disturbance, engendered in some prison, where wretchedness keeps its residence, and every dismal sound its habitation. Rest and ease, a convenient place, pleasant fields and groves, murmuring springs, and a sweet repose of mind, are helps that raise the fancy, and impregnate even the most barren muses with conceptions that fill the world with admiration and delight. Some parents are so blinded by a fatherly fondness, that they mistake the very imperfections of their children for so many beauties; and the folly and impertinence of the brave boy must pass upon their friends and acquaintance for wit and sense. But I, who am only a step-father, disavow the authority of this modern and prevalent custom; nor will I earnestly beseech you with tears in my eyes, which is many a poor author's case, dear reader, to pardon or dissemble my child's faults; for what favour can I expect from you, who are neither his friend nor relation? You have a soul of your own, and the privilege of free-will, whoever you be, as well as the proudest that struts in a gaudy outside; you are a king by your own fireside, as much as any monarch on his throne; you have

liberty and property, which set you above favour or affection, and may therefore freely like or dislike this history, according to your humour.

I had a great mind to have exposed it as naked as it was born, without the addition of a preface, or the endless file of commendatory sonnets, epigrams, and other poems that usually usher in the conceptions of authors; for I dare boldly say, that though I bestowed some time in writing the book, yet it cost me not half so much labour as this very preface. I very often took up my pen, and as often laid it down, and could not for my life think of anything to the purpose. Sitting once in a very studious posture, with my paper before me, my pen in my ear, my elbow on the table, and my cheek on my hand, considering how I should begin, a certain friend of mine, of a merry disposition, and good understanding, came in and surprised me. He asked me what I was so very intent and thoughtful upon, and I, not mincing the matter, told him plainly I had been puzzling my brain for a preface to Don Quixote, and had made myself so uneasy about it, that I was now resolved to trouble my head no further either with preface or book, and even to let the achievements of that noble knight remain unpublished; for, continued I, why should I expose myself to the lash of the old legislator, the vulgar herd? They will say, I have spent my youthful days very finely to have nothing to recommend my grey hairs to the world, but a dry, insipid legend, not worth a rush, wanting good language as well as invention, barren of wit, and without either quotations in the margin, or annotations at the end, which other books, though never so fabulous and profane, have to set them off. Other authors can pass upon the public by stuffing their books from Aristotle, Plato, and the whole company of ancient philosophers, thus amusing their readers into a great opinion of their prodigious reading; and then they quote the Holy Scriptures, so that one would say they were no less than St. Thomases and other doctors of the Church; and with a method so wonderfully agreeable and full of variety, that they cannot fail to please. In one line they will describe you a whining amorous cox-

comb, and the next shall be some Christian homily, such as it is a pleasure and a treat to hear and read. Now I lack all these embellishments and graces; I have neither marginal notes nor critical remarks; I do not so much as know what authors I follow, and consequently can have no formal index, as is the fashion now, methodically strung on the letters of the alphabet, beginning with Aristotle, and ending with Xenophon, or Zoilus, or Zeuxis, which last two are commonly crammed into the same piece, though one of them was a critic and the other a painter. I shall lack also the preliminaries of commendatory verses sent to me, at least, by dukes, marquesses, counts, bishops, ladies, and the most celebrated poets; though I know I might have them at an easy rate from two or three brothers of the quill of my acquaintance, and better, I am sure, than the best quality in Spain can compose.

In short, my friend, said I, the great Don Quixote may lie buried in the musty records of La Mancha, until Providence has ordered some better hand to fit him out as he ought to be; for I must own myself altogether incapable of the task. Besides, I am naturally lazy, and love my ease too well to take the pains of turning over authors for those things which I can express as well without. And these are the considerations that made me so doubtful and distraught when you came in.

The gentleman, after a long and loud fit of laughing, rubbing his forehead, On my conscience, friend, said he, your discourse has freed me from a mistake that has a great while imposed upon me. I always took you for a man of sense, but now I am sufficiently convinced of the contrary! What! puzzled at so inconsiderable a trifle! a business of so little difficulty confound a man of such mature sense and so skilled in expedients, as once you seemed to be! I am sorry, sir, that your lazy humour and poor understanding should need the advice I am about to give you, which will presently solve all your objections and fears concerning the publishing of the renowned Don Quixote, the luminary and mirror of all knight-errantry. Pray, sir, said I, be pleased to instruct me in whatever you think may remove my fears, or solve my doubts. The first thing

you object, replied he, is your want of commendatory copies from persons of figure and quality. There is nothing sooner helped; it is but taking a little pains in writing them yourself, and clapping whose name you please to them. You may father them on Prester John of the Indies, or on the emperor of Trebizond, whom I know to be most celebrated poets. But suppose they were not, and that some presuming pedantic critics might snarl, and deny this notorious truth, value it not two farthings; and though they should convict you of forgery, you are in no danger of losing the hand with which you wrote them.

As to marginal notes and quotations from authors for your history, it is but dropping here and there some scattered Latin sentences that you have already by rote, or may have with little or no pains. For example, in treating of liberty and slavery, you will put in,

"Non bene pro toto libertas venditur auro;"

and, at the same time, make Horace, or whatsoever other author said it, vouch it in the margin. If you treat of the power of death, come round with this close,

"Pallida mors æquo pulsat pede pauperum tabernas
Regumque turres."

If of loving our enemies, as heaven enjoins, you may, if you have the least curiosity, presently turn to the divine precept, and say, *Ego autem dico vobis, diligite inimicos vestros;* or if you discourse of bad thoughts, bring in this passage, *De corde exeunt cogitationes malæ.* If the uncertainty of friendship be your theme, Cato offers you his couplet,

"Donec eris felix multos numerabis amicos,
Tempora si fuerint nubila, solus eris."

These scraps of Latin will at least gain you the credit of a grammarian, which, I'll assure you, is no small accomplishment in this age. As to annotations or remarks at the end of your book, you may safely take this course. If you have occasion for a giant in your piece, be sure you bring in Goliath, and on this very

Goliath (who will not cost you one farthing) you may spin out a grand annotation. You may say, The Giant Goliath, or Goliat, was a Philistine, whom David the shepherd slew with the thundering stroke of a pebble in the valley of Terebinthus; *vide* Kings, in such a chapter, and such a verse, where you may find it written. If, not satisfied with this, you would appear a great humanist, and would show your knowledge in geography, take some occasion to draw the river Tagus into your discourse, out of which you may fish a most notable remark. The river Tagus, say you, was so called from a certain king of Spain. It takes its rise from such a place, and buries its waters in the ocean, kissing first the walls of the famous city of Lisbon; and some are of opinion that the sands of this river are gold, &c. If you have occasion to talk of robbers, I can presently give you the history of Cacus, for I have it by heart. If you would descant upon whores, or women of the town, there is the Bishop of Mondoñedo,[1] who can furnish you with Lamia, Lais, and Flora, courtesans, whose acquaintance will be very much to your reputation. Ovid's Medea can afford you a good example of cruelty. Calypso from Homer, and Circe out of Virgil, are famous instances of witchcraft or enchantment. Would you treat of valiant commanders, Julius Cæsar has writ his commentaries on purpose; and Plutarch can furnish you with a thousand Alexanders. If you would mention love, and have but two grains of Italian, you may find Leon the Jew[2] ready to serve you most abundantly. But if you would keep nearer home, it is but examining Fonseca, *Of Divine Love*, which you have here in your study, and you need go no farther for all that can be said on that copious subject. In short, it is but quoting these authors in your book, and let me alone to make large annotations. I'll engage to crowd your margin sufficiently, and scribble you four sheets to boot at the end of your book.

For the citation of other authors, it is the easiest thing in nature. Find out one of these books with an

[1] [Apparently a satirical allusion to Antonio Guevara, preacher and historiographer to Charles V., and Bishop successively of Guadix and Mondoñedo.]

[2] [A native of Lisbon, author of *The Dialogues of Love*, circa 1500.]

alphabetical index, and without any farther ceremony, remove it *verbatim* into your own; and though the world may see the cheat, the little occasion for such lumber will make it of no importance; and there are fools enough to be thus drawn into an opinion of the work; at least, such a flourishing train of attendants will give your book a fashionable air, and recommend it to sale; for few chapmen will stand to examine it, and compare the authorities, since they can expect nothing but their labour for their pains. But, after all, sir, if I know anything of the matter, you have no occasion for any of these things; for your subject being a satire on knight-errantry, is so absolutely new, that neither Aristotle, St. Basil, nor Cicero, ever dreamt or heard of it. Those fabulous extravagances have nothing to do with the impartial punctuality of true history; nor do I find any business you can have either with astrology, geometry, or rhetoric, and I hope you are too good a man to mix sacred things with profane. You have only to be careful in the imitation of that which has been written, for the more perfect your model, the better is your picture. And since this writing of yours aims at no more than to destroy the authority and acceptance the books of chivalry have had in the world, and among the vulgar, you have no need to go begging sentences of philosophers, passages out of holy writ, poetical fables, rhetorical orations, or miracles of saints. Do but take care to express yourself in a plain, easy manner, in well-chosen, significant, and decent terms, and to give an harmonious and pleasing turn to your periods; study to explain your thoughts, and set them in the truest light, labouring, as much as possible, not to leave them dark nor intricate, but clear and intelligible. Let your diverting stories be expressed in diverting terms, to kindle mirth in the melancholic, and heighten it in the gay. Let mirth and humour be your superficial design, though laid on a solid foundation, to challenge attention from the ignorant, and admiration from the judicious; to secure your work from the contempt of the graver sort, and deserve the praises of men of sense; keeping your eye still fixed on the principal end of your project, the fall and destruction of that ill-contrived heap of romances, which, though ab-

horred by many, have so strangely infatuated the greater number. Do this, and you will have done not a little.

I listened very attentively to my friend's discourse, and found it so reasonable and convincing, that, without any reply, I took his advice and have told you the story by way of prologue; wherein you may see, gentle reader, how happy I am in so ingenious a friend, to whose seasonable counsel you are all obliged for the possession of so true and simple a history of the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, whose character among all the neighbours about Montiel is, that he was the most chaste lover, and the most valiant knight, that has been known in those parts these many years. I will not urge the service I have done you by introducing you into so renowned and noble a knight's acquaintance, but only beg the favour of some small acknowledgment for recommending to you famous Sancho Panza, his squire, in whom, in my opinion, you will find united and described all the squire-like graces which are scattered up and down in the whole bead-roll of these vain books of chivalry. And herewith God bless you and forget me not. VALE.

URGANDA THE UNKNOWN, TO THE BOOK OF DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.[1]

O BOOK, if thou shalt be dispo-
Amongst the good to take thy sta-
No simpleton will e'er complai-
That deftness thou dost not disclo-
But if thou dost not bake thy lo-
To satisfy the wants of foo-
Their hands unto their mouths will mo-
While still they fail in their desi-
E'en though their fingers they must bi-
The niceness of their tastes to pro-
And since experience brings to li-
That who a goodly tree shall rea-
May rest a goodly shade benea-
In Béjar then thy star beni-
A regal tree for thee provi-
Which Princes bears in place of fru-
Wherein there flourishes a Du-
A modern Alexander grea-[2]
Come to its shadow! To the bra-
Good fortune ne'er may be refu-

[1] [The following stanzas, and the similar lines on p. 15, present some difficulties to the translator, in consequence of the peculiar device used, and in fact invented by Cervantes (though afterwards imitated by others), which consists in cutting off the last syllable or syllables of every line and making the rhyme fall on the penultimate. The object was perhaps to give the lines a sort of magical or oracular mystery, which is certainly in some sense attained. The above is a very inadequate representation of the original—which may be partly excused by the difference in form and accentuation between English and Spanish words,—but the construction of the stanzas has been exactly followed.

The character of Urganda, a sort of witch, enchantress, or false prophetess, occurs in *Amadis de Gaul*. She appears in various shapes and disappears suddenly, whence the epithet *Desconocida*—Unknown, or disguised—there applied to her, see note 2, p. 56.]

[2] [The Duke of Béjar, to whom the work is dedicated, is said to have been descended from the royal house of Navarre.]

So of a gentleman of wor-
Who in La Mancha did abi-
Thou shalt recount the deeds and li-
Whose head by idle lore was tur-
Of dames and knights and war's appur-
Which him in such wise did provo-
That like Orlando Furio-
Subdued into a love-sick vei-
He strove by valour to obtai-
His Dulcinea del Tobo-
With hieroglyphs of meaning voi-
Forbear to decorate thy shie-
For they who only pictures wie-
But chalk their score with worthless poi-
If thou a humble style employ-
No scoffing wit will make allu-
To how Don Alvaro de Lu-
Or Hannibal the Carthagin-
Or France's king [1] in Spain confin-
Bewails his fate inopportu-
Since Heaven it pleased not to ordai-
That thou should be as erudi-
As swarthy Juan [2] call'd Lati-
From use of Latin speech abstai-
No subtle weapons at me ai-
Nor philosophic argumen-
Lest one who does not comprehen-
The tongue, when but a hand's breadth dis-
Should grumble with contorted vis-
"What do these flowers to me porten-?"

[1] [Francis I. of France was imprisoned some time at Madrid by Charles V. Alvaro or Alvarez de Luna was beheaded by John II. of Castile after serving him as minister for thirty years; and Hannibal committed suicide to avoid being given up to the Romans. The meaning seems to be that these ill-starred heroes owed their misfortunes to their own rashness, which fault should therefore be avoided. The obvious intention of the whole is to deprecate an ostentatious subject and treatment.]

[2] [An Ethiopian who was brought to Spain at an early age. He was a slave of the Duke of Sesa; but his proficiency, especially in Latin, gained him the surname *Latino*, and caused him to be advanced to a chair in the University of Granada, at which place he died in 1573.]

Seek not to picture or make kno-
Aught of the lives of other per-
Matters which do not you concer-
It is but wise to let alo-
And they who are to jesting pro-
May find their jests paid back agai-
But do thou only rack thy brai-
Fair fame to gain and to deser-
For he who prints what is absur-
Consigns it to perpetual bla-
And bear in mind that any o-
Would surely for a madman pa-
Who, living in a house of gla-
Should at his neighbour hurl a sto-
But in the works that thou compo-
Take heed that he of judgment wi-
May slowly ponder every li-
But he that brings to light his wor-
For sake of damosel's diver-
All vain and foolish things may wri-

AMADIS OF GAUL TO DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.[1]

SONNET.

THOU that my doleful life didst imitate,
When, far away and by mankind disdain'd,
From joys aloof, in a repentant state
I lived, and on the Barren Rock remain'd.
Thou who for water often drankest in
The abundant stream of tears' distasteful brine,
And lacking silver, copper eke, and tin,
Wast on and from the earth constrain'd to dine.
Live of one thing secure eternally,
That whilst bright Phœbus shall his horses spur
Through the fourth sphere's extended monarchy
Thy name shall be renowned near and far;
And as of countries thine is first alone,
So shall thine author peers on earth have none.

[1] [This and the other *Sonnets* were translated by Shelton, whose versions, with various alterations, have in the main been followed.]

DON BELIANIS OF GREECE TO DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

Sonnet.

I tore, I hack'd, abolish'd, said and did
More than knight-errant ere on earth had done,
I, dexterous, valiant, masterful beside,
Have thousand wrongs revenged, myriads undone.
Deeds wrought I that my name eternalize;
In love I courteous was and scrupulous,
All giants as but dwarfs I did despise,
In Honour's lists I was punctilious.
So held I Fortune prostrate at my feet,
And by my wit seized on Occasion's top,
Whose wandering steps I led where I thought meet:
And though beyond the moon aspired my hope,
I crowned my ventures with felicity,—
Yet still, great Quixote, do I envy thee!

THE LADY ORIANA TO DULCINEA DEL TOBOSO.

Sonnet.

Fair Dulcinea, an it could come to pass
That I, for ease and more conveniency,
Might at Toboso Miraflores see,
And London brought to where thy village was![1]
Could I my body and my soul so grace
With aspiration high and rich attire,
And see the famous knight thou dost inspire
To rashness, some unequal contest face!
Oh! could I with such chastity go free
Of Amadis, as thou hast whilom done
Of thy Don Quixote, champion good and true,

[1] [In *Amadis de Gaul* the castle of Miraflores is said to be distant two leagues from London. There Oriana was visited by Amadis too frequently for her fair fame, which she laments in this sonnet.]

Then, envying none, how envied would I be!
And glad I had been when I most did moan,
And tasted joys without the payment due.

GANDALIN, SQUIRE OF AMADIS OF GAUL, TO SANCHO PANZA, DON QUIXOTE'S SQUIRE.

SONNET.

HAIL, famous man! whom Fortune so hath blest,
When first in squirely trade she thee did place,
That led by her in mild and prudent ways
Thou wast by no discomfiture oppress.
The spade and reaping-hook no more contest
With errant services; and simple grace
Now rules in squireship; such as doth outface
Pride that defies the moon with threatening fist.
Thine ass I envy and no less thy name,
Thy useful wallet too I fain would own
Which testifies to thy great providence.
Once more, O Sancho, hail; so fair thy fame
Our Spanish Ovid[1] deigns to thee alone
With grace burlesque to make his reverence.

FROM DONOSO,[2] A DIVERSIFIED POET, TO SANCHO PANZA AND ROZINANTE.

SANCHO PANZA is my na-
Squire of the Manchegan Kni-
I left my home, and took to fli-
That I might live as free from bla-
As Tacitus Villadie-

[1] [Cervantes so calls himself, says Pellicer, in allusion to the various metamorphoses or transformations that take place in the work, viz., the conversion of a gentleman into a knight, a peasant woman into a princess, a country bumpkin into a governor, windmills into giants, &c.]
[2] [Lit. *Gay.*]

Whose principles in this alo-
Were summed, to live from all remo-
As set forth in the "Celesti-"[1]
A book I'd reckon as divi-
If human life it less expo-

To Rozinante.

I'm Rozinante the renow-
Scion of Babieca[2] grea-
For sins of lean and poor esta-
I was in one Don Quixote's pow-
I ran my heats, 'tis true, but slow-
But ne'er by hoof of any stee-
Was I deprived of barley-fee-
From Lazarillo[3] that I sto-
When I the straw on him besto-
Wherewith the blind man's wine to thie-

ORLANDO FURIOSO TO DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

Sonnet.

If thou art not a peer, no peer thou hast,
Who mightst amid a thousand peers be one:
Nor wouldst thou have one, wheresoever placed;
Thou victor ever, vanquish'd yet of none!
Orlando am I, Quixote, who forlorn
Did cross far seas for Angelica's sake,
And on Fame's altars did oblation make
Of valour that compell'd respect of Scorn

[1] [The *Celestina* or *Tragicomedia de Calisto y Melibea* was a drama written in the sixteenth century, the authorship of which is to some extent doubtful. It has great literary merit, though its subject is objectionable.]

[2] [Babieca or Bavieca was the name of the famous horse of the Cid, Ruy Diaz.]

[3] [Lazarillo de Tormes, the hero of the novel of the same name, by Diego Hurtado de Mendoza. See note, p. 206.]

Nor can I be thine equal in such grace
As falls to thy great prowess and thy fame,
Though situate like me thy reason fled:
Yet mine thou canst be: if the haughty race
Of Moors and Scythians proud 'tis thine to tame,
Who own us equals now in love ill-sped.

THE KNIGHT OF THE SUN[1] TO DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

Sonnet.

My sword was not to be compared with thine,
O Sun of Spain, complete in courtesy;
Nor was thy lofty glory match'd by mine
That flash'd from where the day doth spring and die.
Empires I scorn'd, and the vast monarchy
That rosy Orient offered me in vain,
I left, that I the sovereign face might see
Of my Aurora, fair Claridiane.
I loved her as by miracle most rare,
And when remote, disgraced, e'en very hell
Quaked at mine arm that did its fury quell.
But thou, Goth Quixote, bright illustrious star,
Through Dulcinea, to all eternity,
As she through you, wise, good, and famed shall be.

SOLISDAN[2] TO DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

Sonnet.

Despite the follies that are set abroach,
And rumble up and down thy troubled brain,
No one, Don Quixote, can thy name reproach,
Or tax thy character as vile or vain.

[1] [A character in the romance of Palmerin de Oliva. Comp. p. 134, and note 3, p. 64 below.]

[2] [Probably a printer's error for Solinan, a knight of London mentioned in *Amadis de Gaul.*]

Thy doughty feats good recompense shall yield,
Since wrongs to set aright thou wentst about,
Though many a time belabour'd in the field
By thankless miscreant or captive rout.
And if thy pretty Dulcinea discover
Dislike against thy fairer expectation,
And to thy woes will show no leniency,
For such mishap let this thy comfort be,
That Sancho fail'd in Pandarus' vocation,
He foolish, cruel she, and thou no lover.

DIALOGUE BETWEEN BABIECA AND ROZINANTE.

Sonnet.

B. How haps it, Rozinant, thou art so lean?
R. Because I work so hard and never eat.
B. This lack of corn and straw, what doth it mean?
R. That from my lord a bite I cannot get.
B. Away! Sir Jade, thou art ill-mannered,
Whose ass's tongue doth thus your lord abase.
R. Wert thou to see how he's enamoured
Thou'dst write him down a most inveterate ass.
B. Is love a folly? *R.* I' faith tis no great wit.
B. Thou'rt metaphysical. *R.* For lack of meat.
B. Complain against the squire? *R.* What profits it?
Or how shall I my doleful plaints repeat?
For both the master and his adjutant
Are just as beggarly as Rozinant.

THE

LIFE AND ACHIEVEMENTS

OF THE INGENIOUS GENTLEMAN

DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

PART I.

FIRST BOOK.

CHAPTER I.

The quality and way of living of the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha.

At a certain village in La Mancha,[1] of which I cannot remember the name, there lived not long ago one of those old-fashioned gentlemen, who are never without a lance upon a rack,[2] an old target, a lean horse, and a greyhound. His diet consisted more of beef than mutton; and with minced meat on most nights, lentils on Fridays, griefs and groans[3] on Saturdays, and a pigeon extraordinary on

[1] [A small territory partly in the kingdom of Arragon, and partly in Castile; it is a liberty within itself, distinct from all the country about.] It is clear that the author meant to assign no special locality to the Aldea, or village of the renowned Hidalgo. But in this, as in other cases, commentators became desirous of seeing farther into the millstone, and have assigned to Argasamilla de Alba the honour of being Don Quixote's habitation. Avellanada first named it as such, in his spurious Continuation of Don Quixote.

[2] In Spain, as in the other parts of Europe, the country gentlemen, when called on to discharge military duty, used the lance, which was usually deposited upon a rack, in the hall or porch of their habitations.

[3] *Duelos y quebrantos.* This dish has puzzled the critics, having been termed by Stevens, eggs and collops; by Audin, eggs and beer;

Sundays, he consumed three-quarters of his revenue; the rest was laid out in a plush coat, velvet breeches, with slippers of the same, for holidays; and a suit of the very best home-spun cloth, which he bestowed on himself for working days. His whole family was a housekeeper something turned of forty, a niece not twenty, and a man that served him in the house and in the field, and could saddle a horse, and handle the pruning-hook. The master himself was nigh fifty years of age, of a hale and strong complexion, lean-bodied and thin-faced, an early riser, and a lover of hunting. Some say his surname was Quixada,[1] or Quesada (for authors differ in this particular); however, we may reasonably conjecture he was called Quixana; though this concerns us but little, provided we keep strictly to the truth in every point of this history.

You must know then, that when our gentleman had nothing to do (which was almost all the year round), he passed his time in reading books of knight-errantry, which he did with that application and delight, that at last he in a manner wholly left off his country sports, and even the care of his estate; nay, he grew so strangely besotted with these amusements that he sold many acres of arable land to purchase books of that kind, by which means he collected as many of them as were to be had; but, among them all, none pleased him like the works of the famous Feliciano de Sylva;[2] for the clearness of his prose and those intricate expressions with which it is interlaced, seemed to him so many pearls of eloquence, especially when he came to read the challenges, and the amorous

---

by Jarvis, an amlet (omlette); by others, fried hams; by others, pease, herbs, or such other diet, likely to cause colic; while Ozell hints, it means a dish of nothing at all. Pellicer explains the dish to be composed of sausages, made of sheep which had died during the week, without the butcher's assistance—taking its name, therefore, from the sentiment which the loss excited in the farmer or owner.

[1] [*Quixada* means jaw-bone. See also below, p. 26.]

[2] This learned and eloquent Castilian composed (or, according to the title-page, emended and edited from the ancient version of Zerfea, Queen of the Argines) the history of the two valiant knights, Don Florisel de Niquea, and the brave Anaxartes, printed at Saragossa, in 1584. The author was the son of Tristan de Sylva, the historian of Charles V.

addresses, many of them in this extraordinary style: "The reason of your unreasonable usage of my reason does so enfeeble my reason that I have reason to expostulate with your beauty." And this: "The sublime heavens, which with your divinity divinely fortify you with the stars, and fix you the deserver of the desert that is deserved by your grandeur." These, and such-like expressions, strangely puzzled the poor gentleman's understanding, while he was breaking his brain to unravel their meaning, which Aristotle himself could never have found, though he should have been raised from the dead for that very purpose.

He did not so well like those dreadful wounds which Don Belianis[1] gave and received; for he considered that all the art of surgery could never secure his face and body from being strangely disfigured with scars. However, he highly commended the author for concluding his book with a promise to finish that unfinishable adventure; and many times he had a desire to put pen to paper, and faithfully and literally finish it himself; which he had certainly done, and doubtless with good success, had not his thoughts been wholly engrossed in much more important designs.

He would often dispute with the curate[2] of the parish, a man of learning, that had taken his degrees at Giguenza,[3]

[1] *Don Belianis of Greece.* A romance of chivalry, formed on the model of the Amadis, but with infinitely less art and interest, and on a much coarser plan. It seems to have had a great share of popularity, however, in its day; and made its appearance in all the languages in which romances were written. There is, among others, an English abridgment (in quarto), entitled, "The Honour of Chivalry, or the Famous and Delectable History of Don Belianis of Greece, containing the valiant Exploits of that magnanimous and heroic Prince, son unto the Emperor Don Belianis, of Greece, wherein are described the strange and dangerous adventures that befel him, with his love towards the Princess Florisbella, daughter to the Suldan of Babyloun, &c. &c. London, at the Three Bibles, in London Bridge, 1683."

The allusion in the text is to these words, at the end of the original Don Belianis, "Suplir yo con fingimientos historia tan estimada seria aggravio," &c. &c.

[2] [In Spain, *cura* denotes the priest in charge of the parish, like the French *curé*.]

[3] A Spanish university of minor note.

who was the better knight, Palmerin of England, or Amadis de Gaul;[1] but Master Nicholas, the barber[2] of the same town, would say, that none of them could compare with the Knight of the Sun; and that if any one came near him, it was certainly Don Galaor, the brother of Amadis de Gaul; for he was a man of a most commodious temper, neither was he so finical, nor such a puling whining lover as his brother; and as for courage, he was not a jot behind him.

In fine, he gave himself up so wholly to the reading of romances, that at nights he would pore on until it was day, and by day he would read on until it was night; and thus by sleeping little and reading much, the moisture of his brain was exhausted to that degree, that at last he lost the use of his reason. A world of disorderly notions, picked out of his books, crowded into his imagination; and now his head was full of nothing but enchantments, quarrels, battles, challenges, wounds, complaints, amours, torments, and abundance of stuff and impossibilities; insomuch, that all the fables and fantastical tales which he read, seemed to him now as true as the most authentic histories. He would say, that the Cid Ruy Diaz[3] was a very brave knight, but not worthy to stand in competition with the Knight of the Burning-sword, who, with a single back-stroke, had cut in sunder two fierce and mighty giants. He liked yet better Bernardo del Carpio,[4] who, at

[1] These knights have been made so well known to the British public, by the excellent abridgments which Mr. Southey has made of their adventures, that it is only necessary to refer to books in the hands of every lover of ancient literature. It is no small debt we owe to the author of Thalaba, Kehama, and Don Roderick, that he could stoop from his own lofty sphere of original composition, to the task of presenting to us, in an intelligible and pleasing form, whatever was characteristic and interesting in the ancient romance.

[2] The barber was, of course, the surgeon also.

[3] A romantic champion, well known by Corneille's tragedy of *The Cid*, as well as by Southey's curious version of the Chronicle of his exploits. He was, like most popular heroes, an ill-requited chief, banished from Castile by his sovereign, and reduced to live the life of an outlaw, and support himself and his followers by warring upon the Moors on his own account. The real history of this remarkable personage is lost in a cloud of romantic fiction. He is said to have conquered Valencia from the Moors.—See Additional Note I. at end.

[4] Of this personage, we find little or nothing in the French

Roncesvalles, deprived of life the enchanted Orlando, having lifted him from the ground, and choked him in the air, as Hercules did Antæus, the son of the Earth.

As for the giant Morgante,[1] he always spoke very civil things of him; for though he was one of that monstrous brood, who ever were intolerably proud and brutish, he still behaved himself like a civil and well-bred person.

But of all men in the world he admired Rinaldo of

---

romances of Charlemagne. He belongs exclusively to Spanish history, or rather to Spanish romance: in which the honour is claimed for him of slaying the famous Orlando, or Roland, the nephew of Charlemagne, in the fatal field of Roncesvalles. His history is as follows:

The continence which procured for Alphonso, who succeeded to the precarious throne of the Christians, in the Asturias, about 795, the epithet of The Chaste, was not universal in his family. By an intrigue with Sancho, Count of Saldanha, Donna Ximena, sister of this virtuous prince, bore a son. Some historians attempt to gloss over this incident by alleging that a private marriage had taken place betwixt the lovers; but King Alphonso, who was well-nigh sainted for living only in platonic union with his own wife Bertha, took the scandal greatly to heart. He shut the peccant princess up in a cloister, and imprisoned her gallant in the castle of Luna, where he caused him to be deprived of sight. Fortunately, his wrath did not extend to the offspring of their stolen affections, the famous Bernardo del Carpio. When the youth had grown up to manhood, Alphonso, according to the Spanish historians, invited the Emperor Charles the Great into Spain, and having neglected to raise up heirs for the kingdom of the Goths in the ordinary manner, he proposed the inheritance of his throne as the price of the alliance of Charles. But the nobility, headed by Bernardo del Carpio, remonstrated against the king's choice of a successor, and would on no account consent to receive a Frenchman as heir of their crown. Alphonso himself repented of the invitation he had given to Charles, and when that champion of Christendom came to expel the Moors from Spain, he found the conscientious and chaste Alphonso had united with the infidels against him. An engagement took place in the renowned pass of Roncesvalles, in which the French were defeated, and the celebrated Roland, or Orlando, was slain. The victory was ascribed chiefly to the prowess of Bernardo del Carpio. —For further legends of the same hero, see Additional Note II.

[1] *The giant Morgante.* This giant was for some time esquire to Orlando.

> Dimmi a Carlo diceva ancora Orlando
> Io pel mondo vo peregrinando,
> E di ch' i' ho con meco un gigante
> Ch' è battezzato, appellato Morgante.
>
> PULCI, *Morgante Magg.* cc. 48–9.

Montalban,[1] and particularly his sallying out of his castle to rob all he met; and then again when abroad he carried away the idol of Mahomet,[2] which was all massy gold, as the history says; but he so hated that traitor Galalon,[3] that for the pleasure of kicking him handsomely, he would have given up his housekeeper; nay, and his niece into the bargain.

Having thus lost his understanding, he unluckily stumbled upon the oddest fancy that ever entered into a madman's brain; for now he thought it convenient and necessary, as well for the increase of his own honour, as the service of the public, to turn knight-errant, and roam through the whole world, armed cap-a-pie, and mounted on his steed, in quest of adventures; that thus imitating

[1] The name of this redoubted knight, son of the Great Duke Aymon, is familiar to all readers of romance, as being one of the most renowned Paladins, as they were called, who were alleged to compose the cycle of heroes around the throne of Charlemagne. He was bold, stout, and gallant; but although one of the most redoubted champions of Christendom, he was as frequently at war as in league with his liege lord Charlemagne. When he was in disgrace with the emperor, he was wont to retreat to his strong fortress of Montalban, where, with his three brothers, he maintained himself by pillage. Orlando and he were cousins-german, but often fought together, divided either by Rinaldo's quarrels with the Emperor Charles, to whom his nephew Orlando was dutifully attached, or, as represented in Ariosto, by their rivalry for the love of the fair Angelica.—In the *Espejo de Cavallerias*, these two famous cavaliers are introduced as holding the following somewhat rough colloquy. The names by which they address each other are pretty much in the same taste with those which Homer puts into the mouths of Agamemnon and Achilles, at the opening of the Iliad.

"*El conde Roldan dixo, su falso cavaliero, &c. No le responde el buen Renaldo corteses palabras, antes con bravo semblante le dixo.* O Bastardo, hijo de mala Hembra, *mientes* en todo lo que has dicho, que robar á los paganos de España no es robo, pues yo solo, á pesar de quarenta mil Moros, y mas, les quite *un Mahomet de oro que ove menester para pagar mis Soldados.*"—P. 1. c. 46.

[2] "Est Lapis antiquus altissimus, super quem elevatur *Imago illa de auro optimo* in Effigiem hominis fusa, super pedes suos."—Turpinus, L. 1. c. 28.

[3] Galalon or Ganalon, of Mayence, was one of the best soldiers Charlemagne had, but he afterwards became a practised traitor, and being at length convicted of betraying Orlando to his fate at Roncesvalles, was condemned to be torn in pieces by "four most fierce horses."—Turpin, Book 1. c. 26.—See Additional Note III.

those knights-errant of whom he had read, and following their course of life, redressing all manner of grievances, and exposing himself to danger on all occasions, at last, after a happy conclusion of his enterprises, he might purchase everlasting honour and renown. Transported with these agreeable delusions, the poor gentleman already grasped in imagination the imperial sceptre of Trebizond, and, hurried away by his mighty expectations, he prepares with all expedition to take the field.

The first thing he did was to scour a suit of armour that had belonged to his great-grandfather, and had lain time out of mind carelessly rusting in a corner; but when he had cleaned and repaired it as well as he could, he perceived there was a material piece wanting; for, instead of a complete helmet, there was only a single head-piece. However, his industry supplied that defect; for with some pasteboard he made a kind of half-beaver, or vizor, which, being fitted to the head-piece, made it look like an entire helmet. Then, to know whether it were cutlass-proof, he drew his sword, and tried its edge upon the pasteboard vizor; but with the very first stroke he unluckily undid in a moment what he had been a whole week a-doing. He did not like its being broke with so much ease, and therefore, to secure it from the like accident, he made it anew, and fenced it with thin plates of iron, which he fixed on the inside of it so artificially, that at last he had reason to be satisfied with the solidity of the work; and so, without any farther experiment, he resolved it should pass to all intents and purposes for a full and sufficient helmet.

It was time to look to his horse, who had more false-quarter than real,[1] being a worse jade than Gonela's,[2] *qui tantum pellis et ossa fuit;* however, his master thought, that

[1] [The original is *mas cuartos que un real: cuarto* denoting a disease of the horse's hoof—false-quarter, sandcrack, or perhaps quittor—as well as a piece of four *maravidis*, the eighth part of a Spanish real.]

[2] Gonnella was an Italian buffoon of great celebrity. Several of his jokes are recorded in Poggio's *Facetiæ;* but they were thought worthy of occupying a separate volume; viz. the *Buffonerie di Gonnella;* published at Florence in the year 1568. He was domestic jester to a nobleman of Ferrara, the Marchese Borso: and boasted one day, in his master's presence, of a miserable horse he commonly rode upon. The Marquis inspected the animal, and quoted the line from Plautus, which

neither Alexander's Bucephalus, nor the Cid's Babieca,[1] could be compared with him. He was four days considering what name to give him; for, as he argued with himself, there was no reason that a horse bestrid by so famous a knight, and withal so excellent in himself, should not be distinguished by a particular name; and therefore he studied to give him such a one as should demonstrate as well what kind of horse he had been before his master was a knight-errant, as what he was now; thinking it but just, since the owner changed his profession, that the horse should also change his title, and be dignified with another; a good big word, such a one as should fill the mouth, and seem consonant with the quality and profession of his master. And thus after many names which he devised, rejected, changed, liked, disliked, and pitched upon again, he concluded to call him Rozinante;[2] a name, in his opinion, lofty, sounding, and significant of what he had been before, and also of what he was now; in a word, a horse before, or above, all the vulgar breed of horses in the world.

When he had thus given his horse a name so much to his satisfaction, he thought of choosing one for himself; and having seriously pondered on the matter eight whole days more, at last he determined to call himself Don Quixote.[3] Whence the author of this most authentic

---

is here quoted by Cervantes: *Ossa atque pellis totus est*, &c. (Aulularia, Act 3, Sc. 6.) The jester, nothing dismayed, wagered his steed would take a leap which no horse in the Marquis's own stud would venture upon; viz. from a certain balcony many feet high, to the pavement; and he won his wager.

[1] Montaigne, in his curious Essay, entitled "Des Destriers," says that all the world knows everything about Bucephalus. The name of the favourite charger of the Cid Ruy Diaz is scarcely less celebrated. Notice is taken of him in almost every one of the hundred ballads concerning the history of his master,—and there are one or two of these, of which the horse is more truly the hero than his rider.—See Add. Note IV.

[2] [*Rozin* or *Rocin* means an ordinary horse; *ante* signifies before and formerly. Thus the word Rozinante may imply, that he was formerly an ordinary horse, and also, that he is now a horse that claims the precedence from all other ordinary horses.]

[3] [*Quixote* literally means a cuish or piece of armour for the thigh. The termination *ote* is often associated in Spanish with a ludicrous or disparaging sense, e.g., *matalote*, jade; *capote*, frown; *cascote*, rubbish, &c.]

history draws this inference, that his right name was Quixada, and not Quesada, as others would maintain. And observing, that the valiant Amadis, not satisfied with the bare appellation of Amadis, added to it the name of his country, that it might grow more famous by his exploits, and so styled himself Amadis de Gaul; so he, like a true lover of his native soil, resolved to call himself Don Quixote de la Mancha; which addition, to his thinking, denoted very plainly his parentage and country, and consequently would fix a lasting honour on that part of the world.

And now, his armour being scoured, his head-piece improved to a helmet, his horse and himself new named, he perceived he wanted nothing but a lady, on whom he might bestow the empire of his heart; for he was sensible that a knight-errant without a mistress,[1] was a tree without either fruit or leaves, and a body without a soul. Should I, said he to himself, by good or ill fortune, chance to encounter some giant, as is common in knight-errantry, and happen to lay him prostrate on the ground, transfixed with my lance, or cleft in two, or, in short, overcome him, and have him at my mercy, would it not be proper to have some lady, to whom I may send him as a trophy of my valour? Then when he comes into her presence, throwing himself at her feet, he may thus make his humble submission: "Lady, I am the giant Caraculiambro,[2] lord

[1] Ora ti prego,
Se mai fosti ancora inamorato,
Perche *ogni cavalier ch' è senza amore*
Sen vista è vivo e vivo senza cuore.
Rispose il conte "quell' Orlando sono,
Amor m' ha posto tutto in abandono;
Voglio che sappi che 'l mio cor è in mano
De la figliola del Re Galafrone
Che ad Albracca dimora nel girone."
BOIARDO, L. I. 18. 467.

[2] Speeches of this kind occur *passim* in the Romances; *e.g.* in *Perceforest*, chapter 46, the title of which runs thus: "Comment le roy Perceforest envoya deux chevaliers prisonniers devers la Royne d'Angleterre sa femme. A la qual un de ceux dit, Il me conquit par force d'armes et me fit jurer que je viendroye en vostre prison de par luy que est mon Seigneur."—And again in the text, "Quant il eut ce

of the island of Malindrania, vanquished in single combat by that never-deservedly-enough-extolled knight-errant Don Quixote de la Mancha, who has commanded me to cast myself most humbly at your feet, that it may please your honour to dispose of me according to your will." Oh! how elevated was the knight with the conceit of this imaginary submission of the giant; especially having withal bethought himself of a person, on whom he might confer the title of his mistress! which, it is believed happened thus: Near the place where he lived dwelt a good likely country lass, for whom he had formerly had a sort of an inclination, though, it is believed, she never heard of it, nor regarded it in the least. Her name was Aldonza Lorenzo, and this was she whom he thought he might entitle to the sovereignty of his heart; upon which he studied to find her out a new name, that might have some affinity with her old one, and yet at the same time sound somewhat like that of a princess or lady of quality; so at last he resolved to call her Dulcinea, with the addition of del Toboso, from the place where she was born; a name, in his opinion, sweet, harmonious, extraordinary, and no less significative than the others which he had devised.

CHAPTER II.

Of Don Quixote's first sally.

These preparations being made, he found his designs ripe for action, and thought it now a crime to deny himself any longer to the injured world, that wanted such a deliverer; the more when he considered what grievances he was to redress, what wrongs and injuries to remove, what abuses to correct, and what duties to discharge. So

dit prent son espee per la poynte et saginouille devant la Royne et dist: Dame je me presente de mon cher seigneur le Roy d'Angleterre vostre prisonnier, *ainsi que le vouldrez ordonner* soit de mort ou de vie," &c.—Perhaps the name *Caraculiambro* may be in allusion to that of *Calaucolocon*, one of the many huge men who figure in the Merlin.

one morning before day, in the greatest heat of July, without acquainting any one with his design, with all the secrecy imaginable, he armed himself cap-a-pie, laced on his ill-contrived helmet, braced on his target, grasped his lance, mounted Rozinante, and at the private door of his back-yard sallied out into the fields, wonderfully pleased to see with how much ease he had succeeded in the beginning of his enterprise. But he had not gone far ere a terrible thought alarmed him, a thought that had like to have made him renounce his great undertaking; for now it came into his mind, that the honour of knighthood had not yet been conferred upon him, and therefore, according to the laws of chivalry, he neither could, nor ought to appear in arms against any professed knight; nay, he also considered, that though he were already knighted, it would become him to wear white armour, and not to adorn his shield with any device, until he had deserved one by some extraordinary demonstration of his valour.

These thoughts staggered his resolution; but his folly prevailing more than any reason, he resolved to be dubbed a knight by the first he should meet, after the example of several others, who, as his distracting romances informed him, had formally done the like. As for the other difficulty, about wearing white armour, he proposed to overcome it, by scouring his own at leisure until it should look whiter than ermine. And having thus dismissed these busy scruples, he very calmly rode on, leaving it to his horse's discretion to go which way he pleased; firmly believing, that in this consisted the very being of adventures. And as he thus went on, I cannot but believe, said he to himself, that when the history of my famous achievements shall be given to the world, the learned author will begin it in this very manner, when he comes to give an account of this my early setting out: "Scarce had the ruddy-coloured Phœbus begun to spread the golden tresses of his lovely hair over the vast surface of the earthly globe, and scarce had those feathered poets of the grove, the pretty painted birds, tuned their little pipes, to sing their early welcomes in soft melodious strains to the beautiful Aurora, who, having left her jealous

husband's bed, displayed her rosy graces to mortal eyes from the gates and balconies of the Manchegan horizon, when the renowned knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, disdaining soft repose, forsook the voluptuous down, and, mounting his famous steed Rozinante, entered the ancient and celebrated plains of Montiel."[1] This was indeed the very road he took; and then proceeding, "O happy age! O fortunate times!" cried he, "decreed to usher into the world my famous achievements; achievements worthy to be engraven on brass, carved on marble, and delineated in some masterpiece of painting, as monuments of my glory, and examples for posterity! And thou, venerable sage, wise enchanter, whatever be thy name; thou whom fate has ordained to be the compiler of this rare history, forget not, I beseech thee, my trusty Rozinante, the eternal companion of all my adventures." After this, as if he had been really in love; "O Princess Dulcinea," cried he, "lady of this captive heart, much sorrow and woe you have doomed me to in banishing me thus, and imposing on me your rigorous commands, never to appear before your beauteous face! Remember, lady, that loyal heart your slave, who for your love submits to so many miseries." To these extravagant conceits, he added a world of others, all in imitation, and in the very style of those which the reading of romances had furnished him with; and all this while he rode so far, and the sun's heat increased so fast, and was so violent, that it would have been sufficient to have melted his brains, had he had any left.

He travelled almost all that day without meeting any adventure worth the trouble of relating, which put him into a kind of despair; for he desired nothing more than to encounter immediately some person on whom he might try the vigour of his arm.

Some authors say, that his first adventure was that of the pass called Puerto Lapice; others, that of the Windmills; but all that I could discover of certainty in this

[1] [Montiel, a proper field to inspire courage, being the ground upon which Henry the Bastard slew his legitimate brother Don Pedro, whom our brave Black Prince Edward had set upon the throne of Spain.—Jarvis.]—See Additional Note V.

matter, and that I meet with in the annals of La Mancha, is, that he travelled all that day; and towards the evening, he and his horse being heartily tired, and almost famished, Don Quixote looking about him, in hopes to discover some castle, or at least some shepherd's cottage, there to repose and refresh himself, at last near the road which he kept, espied an inn, as welcome a sight to his longing eyes as if he had discovered a star directing him to the gate, nay, to the palace of his redemption. Thereupon hastening towards the inn with all the speed he could, he got thither just at the close of the evening. There stood by chance at the inn-door two young female adventurers, otherwise common wenches, who were going to Seville with some carriers that happened to take up their lodging there that very evening; and, as whatever our knight-errant saw, thought, or imagined, was all of a romantic cast, and appeared to him altogether after the manner of the books that had perverted his imagination, he no sooner saw the inn, but he fancied it to be a castle fenced with four towers, and lofty pinnacles glittering with silver, together with a deep moat, drawbridge, and all those other appurtenances peculiar to such kind of places.

Therefore when he came near it, he stopped a while at a distance from the gate, expecting that some dwarf would appear on the battlements,[1] and sound his trumpet to give notice of the arrival of a knight; but finding that nobody came, and that Rozinante was for making the best of his way to the stable, he advanced to the inn-door, where spying the two young doxies, they seemed to him two beautiful damsels, or graceful ladies, taking the benefit of the fresh air at the gate of the castle. It happened also at the very moment, that a swineherd getting together his hogs (for, without begging pardon, so they are called[2]) from the stubble-field, wound his horn; and Don Quixote presently imagined this was the wished-for signal, which some dwarf gave to notify his approach; therefore, with

[1] See Additional Note VI.

[2] [In the original (*que sin perdon assi se llaman*). The author ridicules the affected delicacy of the Spaniards and Italians, who look upon it as bad manners to name the word hog or swine.]

the greatest joy in the world, he rode up to the inn. The wenches, affrighted at the approach of a man cased in iron, and armed with a lance and target, were for running into their lodging; but Don Quixote perceiving their fear by their flight, lifted up the pasteboard beaver of his helmet, and discovering his withered dusty face, with comely grace and grave delivery accosted them in this manner: "I beseech ye, ladies, do not fly, nor fear the least offence; the order of knighthood, which I profess, does not permit me to countenance or offer injuries to any one in the universe, and, least of all, to virgins of such high rank as your presence denotes." The wenches looked earnestly upon him, endeavouring to get a glimpse of his face, which his ill-contrived beaver partly hid; but when they heard themselves styled virgins, a thing so out of the way of their profession, they could not forbear laughing outright, which Don Quixote resented as a great affront. "Give me leave to tell ye, ladies," cried he, "that modesty and civility are very becoming in the fair sex; whereas laughter without ground is the highest piece of indiscretion; however," added he, "I do not presume to say this to offend you, or incur your displeasure; no, ladies, I assure you, I have no other design but to do you service."

This uncommon way of expression, joined to the knight's scurvy figure, increased their mirth, which incensed him to that degree, that this might have carried things to an extremity, had not the innkeeper luckily appeared at that juncture. He was a man whose burden of fat inclined him to peace and quietness, yet when he had observed such a strange disguise of human shape in his old armour and equipage, he could hardly forbear keeping the wenches company in their laughter; but having the fear of such a warlike appearance before his eyes, he resolved to give him good words, and therefore accosted him civilly: "Sir Knight," said he, "if your worship be disposed to alight, you will fail of nothing here but of a bed; as for all other accommodations, you may be supplied to your mind." Don Quixote observing the humility of the governor of the castle (for such the inn-keeper and inn seemed to him), "Senior Castellano," said he, "the least thing in

the world suffices me; for arms are the only things I value, and combat is my bed of repose." The inn-keeper thought he had called him Castellano, as taking him to be one of the true Castilians, whereas he was in fact of Andalusia, nay, of the neighbourhood of St. Lucar, no less thievish than Cacus, or less mischievous than a truant-scholar, or court-page, and therefore he made him this reply: "At this rate, Sir Knight, your bed might be a pavement, and your rest to be still awake; you may then safely alight, and I dare assure you, you can hardly miss being kept awake all the year long in this house, much less one single night." With that he went and held Don Quixote's stirrup, who, not having broke his fast that day, dismounted with no small trouble or difficulty. He immediately desired the governor (that is, the inn-keeper) to have special care of his steed, assuring him that there was not a better in the universe; upon which the inn-keeper viewed him narrowly, but could not think him to be half so good as Don Quixote said. However, having set him up in the stable, he came back to the knight to see what he wanted, and found him pulling off his armour by the help of the good-natured wenches, who had already reconciled themselves to him; but though they had eased him of his corslet and back-plate, they could by no means undo his gorget, nor take off his ill-contrived beaver, which he had tied so fast with green ribbons, that it was impossible to get it off without cutting them; now he would by no means permit that, and so was forced to keep on his helmet all night, which was one of the most pleasant sights in the world; and while his armour was taking off by the two kind lasses, imagining them to be persons of quality, and ladies of that castle, he very gratefully made them the following compliment (in imitation of an old romance),[1]

> "There never was on earth a knight
> So waited on by ladies fair,

[1] The lines which the Don here applies to himself form the opening of one of the innumerable ballads, with which the romantic story of Launcelot of the Lake has furnished the Spanish minstrels.—See Additional Note VII. [and comp. p. 114].

As once was he, Don Quixote hight,
When first he left his village dear:
Damsels to undress him ran with speed,
And princesses to dress his steed.

O Rozinante! for that is my horse's name, ladies, and mine Don Quixote de la Mancha. I never thought to have discovered it, until some feats of arms, achieved by me in your service, had made me better known to your ladyships; but necessity forcing me to apply to present purpose that passage of the ancient romance of Sir Lancelot, which I now repeat, has extorted the secret from me before its time; yet a day will come, when you shall command, and I obey, and then the valour of my arm shall evince the reality of my zeal to serve your ladyships."

The two females, who were not used to such rhetorical speeches, could make no answer to this; they only asked him whether he would eat anything? "That I will with all my heart," cried Don Quixote, "whatever it be, for I am of opinion nothing can come to me more seasonably." Now, as ill-luck would have it, it happened to be Friday, and there was nothing to be had at the inn but some pieces of fish, which is called abadexo in Castile, bacallao in Andalusia, curadillo in some places, and in others truchuela or little trout, though after all it is but poor jack; so they asked him, whether he could eat any of that truchuela, because they had no other fish to give him. Don Quixote, imagining they meant a small trout, told them, "That, provided there were more than one, it was the same thing to him, they would serve him as well as a great one; for," continued he, "it is all one to me whether I am paid a piece of eight in one single piece, or in eight small reals, which are worth as much. Besides, it is probable these small trouts may be like veal, which is finer meat than beef; or like the kid, which is better than the goat. In short, let it be what it will, so it comes quickly; for the weight of armour and the fatigue of travel are not to be supported without recruiting food." Thereupon they laid the cloth at the inn-door, for the benefit of the fresh air, and the landlord brought him a piece of that salt fish, but ill-watered, and as ill-dressed; and as for the bread, it was as mouldy and brown as the knight's armour. But it

would have made one laugh to have seen him eat; for having his helmet on, with his beaver lifted up, it was impossible for him to feed himself without help, so that one of those ladies had that office; but there was no giving him drink that way, and he must have gone without it, had not the inn-keeper bored a cane, and setting one end of it to his mouth, poured the wine in at the other; all which the knight suffered patiently because he would not cut the ribbons that fastened his helmet.

While he was at supper, a sow-gelder happened to sound his cane-trumpet, or whistle of reeds, four or five times as he came near the inn, which made Don Quixote the more positive of his being in a famous castle, where he was entertained with music at supper, that the poor jack was young trout, the bread of the finest flour, the wenches great ladies, and the inn-keeper the governor of the castle, which made him applaud himself for his resolution, and his setting out on such an account. The only thing that vexed him was, that he was not yet dubbed a knight; for he fancied he could not lawfully undertake any adventure till he had received the order of knighthood.

CHAPTER III.

An account of the pleasant method taken by Don Quixote to be dubbed a knight.

DON QUIXOTE'S mind being disturbed with that thought, he abridged even this short supper; and as soon as he had done, he called his host, then shut him and himself up in the stable, and falling at his feet, "I will never rise from this place," cried he, "most valorous knight, till you have graciously vouchsafed to grant me a boon, which I will now beg of you, and which will redound to your honour and the good of mankind." The inn-keeper, strangely at a loss to find his guest at his feet, and talking at this rate, endeavoured to make him rise; but all in vain, till he had promised to grant him what he asked. "I expected no less from your great magnificence, noble sir,"

replied Don Quixote; "and therefore I make bold to tell you, that the boon which I beg, and you generously condescend to grant me, is, that to-morrow you will be pleased to bestow the honour of knighthood upon me. This night I will watch my armour in the chapel of your castle,[1] and then in the morning you shall gratify me, as I passionately desire that I may be duly qualified to seek out adventures in every corner of the universe, to relieve the distressed, according to the laws of chivalry, and the inclinations of knights-errant like myself." The inn-keeper, who, as I said, was a sharp fellow, and had already a shrewd suspicion of the disorder in his guest's understanding, was fully convinced of it when he heard him talk after this manner; and, to make sport that night, resolved to humour him in his desires, telling him he was highly to be commended for his choice of such an employment, which was altogether worthy a knight of the first order, such as his gallant deportment discovered him to be: that he himself had in his youth followed that honourable profession, ranging through many parts of the world in

[1] This was invariably a part of the ceremonial described on all such occasions in the romances; thus, "aveys de saber," &c., *Santiago*, 4.—"You must know that anciently it was after this fashion the order of knighthood was conferred: the night before any one was to assume the spurs, it behoved him to be armed cap-a-pie, and so armed to repair unto the church, and to stand there on his feet all that night in prayer."

"Venuta la *vigilia*, tutti quei Giovani che intendeano di *esser cavalieri novelli* tornavano alla chiesa, ove devotamente vigliavano infino che di buon mattino fusse la messe celebrata."—*Gyrone*, Ded.

The posture seems, however, to have been indifferently either that of standing or of kneeling. Thus, in the Amadis, c. 4. "Oriana came before the king, and said, 'Now dub me this young man knight;' and in so saying, he pointed towards Amadis, where (armed at all points, save only the head and the hands) he was kneeling before the altar."

St. Ignatius of Loyola conformed on a very different occasion to the same ceremonial. Ribadeneira, in his Life of the saint, says that "Ignatius, as he had read in his books of chivalry, how the knights were accustomed to watch their arms; so, to imitate as a new knight of Christ this knightly fashion, he also watched the whole of that night before the image of Our Lady, sometimes standing on foot, and sometimes kneeling on the marble." *Vida*, L. 1. c. 5.—The reader must remember the very coarse caricature of all this adventure, in Smollett's 'Sir Launcelot Greaves,' where Captain Crowe's noviciate is described.

search of adventures, without so much as forgetting to visit the Percheles[1] of Malaga, the Isles of Riaran, the Compass of Seville, the Market-place of Segovia, the Olive field of Valencia, the Circle of Granada, the Wharf of St. Lucar, the Potro of Cordova,[2] the hedge-taverns of Toledo, and divers other places, where he had exercised the nimbleness of his feet, and the subtilty of his hands, doing wrongs in abundance, soliciting many widows, undoing some damsels, bubbling young heirs, and in a word making himself famous in most of the courts of judicature in Spain, till at length he retired to this castle, where he lived on his own estate and those of others, entertaining all knights-errant of what quality or condition soever, purely for the great affection he bore them, and to partake of what they had in recompense of his good-will. He added, that his castle at present had no chapel where the knight might keep the vigil of his arms, it being pulled down in order to be new built; but that he knew they might lawfully be watched in any other place in a case of necessity, and therefore he might do it that night

[1] These were all places noted for rogueries and disorderly doings. The Percheles of Malaga form a sort of suburb of that town, where the fish-market is held. Don Luis Zapata, in treating of the great plague which raged in the city of Malaga, in the year 1582, says, "it was supposed to have been brought thither by a stranger, who died of his illness, and whose foul linen was forthwith sold to some of those of the Percheles." The "Isles of Riaran" are not to be found in any map; but the place where the custom-house stands, still goes by that name. See Carter's Journey from Gibraltar to Malaga, London, 1780. It would appear that there had been a few small islets of sand close to the shore, some of which had shifted their station, while the space between others of them and the mainland had gradually become filled up. "The Compass of Seville" was (or is) the name of an open space before one of the churches of that city, the scene of fairs, shows, auctions, &c. The "Azoguejo de Segovia," translated in former editions "Quicksilver-house," is said by Bowles to mean a certain small *place*, or square,—at once the Monmouth Street and Exeter Change of Segovia. The "Potro" of Cordova—so called from a fountain, the water of which gushes from a horse's mouth—was another place of the same species. They had all become proverbial before the days of Cervantes; thus—"I say not that I was born in the Potro of Cordova, nor refined in the Azoguejo of Segovia," &c.—*Rojas*, 282, 3.

[2] [The word *Potro* signifies a colt or young horse. Near this horse-shaped fountain stood a whipping-post].

in the court-yard of the castle; and in the morning (God willing) all the necessary ceremonies should be performed, so that he might assure himself he should be dubbed a knight, nay, as much a knight as any one in the world could be. He then asked Don Quixote whether he had any money. "Not a cross," replied the knight, "for I never read in any history of chivalry that any knight-errant ever carried money about him."—"You are mistaken," cried the inn-keeper; "for admit that histories are silent in this matter, the authors thinking it needless to mention things so evidently necessary as money and clean shirts, yet there is no reason to believe the knights went without either; and you may rest assured, that all the knights-errant, of whom so many histories are full, had their purses well lined to supply themselves with necessaries, and carried also with them some shirts, and a small box of salves to heal their wounds; for they had not the conveniency of surgeons to cure them every time they fought in fields and deserts, unless they were so happy as to have some sage or magician for their friend to give them present assistance, sending them some damsel or dwarf through the air in a cloud,[1] with a small bottle of water of so

[1] An instance of this species of cure may be found in Amadis de Grecia. "Now Amadis felt from the sword such heat, that it seemed to him he was burning with living flames. But forthwith there appeared a cloud, which covered both him, and Urganda, and Lisuarte, which in an instant opened, and they perceived themselves to be surrounded with a company of four-and-twenty damsels, and in the midst of them was that honoured old Alquife, who held in his hand a large glass phial of water; with which when he had smitten upon the helmet, the phial broke, and the water rushing down immediately, there passed from him all that burning glow of the sword."—P. 2. c. 62.

The fair Jewess in Ivanhoe has her medical skill in common with almost all the damsels of romance; thus,

"Bernardo de su llaga fue curado.
Per manos de la ya libra Donzella"—
GARRIDO, C. 7. 78.

"Una fanciulla che il lor oste aveva,
Medicava Rinaldo."
PULCI, *M. M.* C. 20. 79, &c. &c.

I need scarcely refer the reader to the story of the pretty *Beguine*, in Tristram Shandy, for the best account of this species of clinical practice.

great a virtue, that they no sooner tasted a drop of it, but their wounds were as perfectly cured as if they had never received any. But when they wanted such a friend in former ages, the knights thought themselves obliged to take care that their squires should be provided with money and other necessaries, as lint and salves to dress their wounds; and if those knights ever happened to have no squires, which was but very seldom, then they carried those things behind them in a little bag,[1] as if it had been something of greater value, and so neatly fitted to their saddle, that it was hardly seen; for had it not been upon such an account, the carrying of wallets was not much allowed among knights-errant. I must therefore advise you," continued he, "nay, I might even charge and command you, as you are shortly to be my son in chivalry, never from this time forwards to ride without money, nor without the other necessaries of which I spoke to you, which you will find very beneficial when you least expect it." Don Quixote promised to perform very punctually all his injunctions; and so they disposed everything in order to his watching his arms in a great yard that adjoined to the inn. To which purpose the knight, having got them all together, laid them in a horse-trough close by a well in that yard; then bracing his target, and grasping his lance, just as it grew dark, he began to walk about by the horse-trough with a graceful deportment. In the meanwhile the inn-keeper acquainted all those that were in the house with the extravagances of his guest, his watching his arms, and his hopes of being made a knight. They all admired very much at so strange a kind of folly, and went on to observe him at a distance; where they saw him sometimes walk about with a great deal of gravity, and sometimes lean on his lance, with his eyes all the while fixed upon his arms. It was now undoubted night, but yet did the moon shine with such a brightness, as might almost have vied with that of the luminary which lent it her; so that the knight was wholly exposed to the spectators' view. While he was thus employed, one of the carriers who lodged in the

[1] Of striped stuff, which every one carries, in Spain, when they are travelling.

inn came out to water his mules, which he could not do without removing the arms out of the trough. With that, Don Quixote, who saw him make towards him, cried out to him aloud, "O thou, whoever thou art, rash knight, that prepares to lay thy hands on the arms of the most valorous knight-errant that ever wore a sword, take heed; do not audaciously attempt to profane them with a touch, lest instant death be the too sure reward of thy temerity." But the carrier never regarded these dreadful threats; and laying hold on the armour by the straps, without any more ado threw it a good way from him; though it had been better for him to have let it alone; for Don Quixote no sooner saw this, but lifting up his eyes to heaven, and addressing his thoughts, as it seemed, to his lady Dulcinea; "Assist me, lady," cried he, "in the first opportunity that offers itself to your faithful slave; nor let your favour and protection be denied me in this first trial of my valour!" Repeating such like ejaculations, he let slip his target, and lifting up his lance with both his hands, he gave the carrier such a terrible knock on his inconsiderate head with his lance, that he laid him at his feet in a woeful condition; and had he backed that blow with another, the fellow would certainly have had no need of a surgeon. This done, Don Quixote took up his armour, laid it again in the horse-trough, and then walked on backwards and forwards with as great unconcern as he did at first.

Soon after another carrier, not knowing what had happened, came also to water his mules, while the first yet lay on the ground in a trance; but as he offered to clear the trough of the armour, Don Quixote, without speaking a word, or imploring any one's assistance, once more dropped his target, lifted up his lance, and then let it fall so heavily on the fellow's pate, that without damaging his lance, he broke the carrier's head in three or four places. His outcry soon alarmed and brought thither all the people in the inn, and the landlord among the rest; which Don Quixote perceiving, "Thou Queen of Beauty," cried he,[1] bracing on his shield, and drawing

[1] This invocation to Dulcinea is copied almost literatim from one in Olivante. "Ay, soberana Señora," &c.—"O, sovereign lady, grant me

his sword, "thou courage and vigour of my weakened heart, now is the time when thou must enliven thy adventurous slave with the beams of thy greatness, while this moment he is engaging in so terrible an adventure!" With this, in his opinion, he found himself supplied with such an addition of courage, that had all the carriers in the world at once attacked him, he would undoubtedly have faced them all. On the other side, the carriers, enraged to see their comrades thus used, though they were afraid to come near, gave the knight such a volley of stones, that he was forced to shelter himself as well as he could under the cover of his target, without daring to go far from the horse-trough, lest he should seem to abandon his arms. The inn-keeper called to the carriers as loud as he could to let him alone; that he had told them already he was mad, and consequently the law would acquit him, though he should kill them.[1] Don Quixote also made yet more noise, calling them false and treacherous villains, and the lord of the castle base and unhospitable, and a discourteous knight, for suffering a knight-errant to be so abused. "I would make thee know," cried he, "what a perfidious wretch thou art, had

---

thy favour in this battle. Help me, fairest lady, and desert me not utterly." See L. 2. c. 4.—The efficacy of this species of prayer is thus noticed in Amadis of Gaul. See L. 2. c. 55.—"Beltenebros descended against the giant, and, before he came close to him, looking towards the place where Miraflores was, 'O, my Lady Oriana,' said he, 'never do I begin any deed of arms, trusting in any strength of mine own, whatsoever it may be, but in thee only; therefore, oh now, my dear lady, succour me, seeing how great is the necessity.' And with this, it seemed that there came to him so much Vigour, that all Fear was forthwith fain to fly away."

[1] The technical description, in the civil law, of "the madman not to be punished," viz. "Absurda et tristia sibi dicens atque fingens," could most certainly fit no one more exactly than the guest of whom the good inn-keeper spoke thus. In the tragical story of Lord Ferrers, (see the *State Trials*,) we have the very striking example of a man proceeding deliberately and calmly to the perpetration of an atrocious murder, under the belief, that the plea of hereditary insanity would be available to save himself from the last severity of the law. Hence, the obvious propriety of limiting, as narrowly as possible, the application of the doctrine laid down by the innkeeper.

I but received the order of knighthood; but for you, base, ignominious rabble! fling on, do your worst; come on, draw nearer if you dare, and receive the reward of your indiscretion and insolence." This he spoke with so much spirit and undauntedness, that he struck a terror into all his assailants; so that partly through fear, and partly through the inn-keeper's persuasions, they gave over flinging stones at him; and he, on his side, permitted the enemy to carry off their wounded, and then returned to the guard of his arms as calm and composed as before.

The inn-keeper, who began somewhat to disrelish these mad tricks of his guest, resolved to despatch him forthwith, and bestow on him that unlucky knighthood, to prevent further mischief; so coming to him, he excused himself for the insolence of those base scoundrels, as being done without his privity or consent; but their audaciousness, he said, was sufficiently punished. He added, that he had already told him there was no chapel in his castle; and that indeed there was no need of one to finish the rest of the ceremony of knighthood, which consisted only in the application of the sword to the neck and shoulders, as he had read in the register of the ceremonies of the order; and that this might be performed as well in a field as anywhere else: that he had already fulfilled the obligation of watching his arms, which required no more than two hours' watch, whereas he had been four hours upon the guard. Don Quixote, who easily believed him, told him he was ready to obey him, and desired him to make an end of the business as soon as possible, for if he were but knighted, and should see himself once attacked, he believed he should not leave a man alive in the castle, except those whom he should desire him to spare for his sake.

Upon this the inn-keeper, lest the knight should proceed to such extremities, fetched the book in which he used to set down the carriers' accounts for straw and barley; and having brought with him the two kind females, already mentioned, and a boy that held a piece of lighted candle in his hand, he ordered Don Quixote to kneel: then reading in his manual, as if he had been repeating some pious oration, in the midst of his devotion he lifted up his

hand, and gave him a good blow on the neck,[1] and then a gentle slap on the back with the flat of his sword, still mumbling some words between his teeth in the tone of a prayer. After this he ordered one of the wenches to gird the sword about the knight's waist; which she did with much solemnity, and I may add, discretion, considering how hard a thing it was to forbear laughing at every circumstance of the ceremony: it is true, the thoughts of the knight's late prowess did not a little contribute to the suppression of her mirth. As she girded on his sword, "Heaven," cried the kind lady, "make your worship a lucky knight, and prosper you wherever you go." Don Quixote desired to know her name, that he might understand to whom he was indebted for the favour she had bestowed upon him, and also make her partaker of the honour he was to acquire by the strength of his arm. To which the lady answered with all humility, that her name was Tolosa, a cobbler's daughter, that kept a stall among the little shops of Sanchobienaya at Toledo; and that whenever he pleased to command her, she would be his humble servant. Don Quixote begged of her to do him the favour to add hereafter the title of lady to her name, and for his sake to be called from that time Donna Tolosa; which she promised to do. Her companion having buckled on his spurs, occasioned a like conference between them; and when he had asked her name, she told him she went by the name of Molinera, being the daughter of an honest miller of Antequera. Our new knight entreated her also to style herself the Donna Molinera, making her new offers of service. These extraordinary ceremonies (the like never seen before) being thus hurried over in a kind of post-haste, Don Quixote could not

[1] The practical joke seems to have occurred to other conferrers of knighthood, besides mine host of the castle.

Thus, "Franc chevalier donnez moi la collée de chevalerie. Certes Passellion, dit Lionnel, je le feray voulontiers, a tant il haulse la main dextre et l'enfant baisse le col, et le chevalier ferit dessus *complement* en disant. Certes, Gentil Passellion, Chevalier Soyes. Quand Passellion eut receu la collée *que luy fit douloir le col par sa grandeur*," &c.—*Perceforest*, V. 4. c. 14.

Queen Elizabeth is introduced in *Kenilworth*, as giving a *collée* of malicious sincerity on a similar occasion.—See Ducange, sub voce *Alapa Militaris*.

rest till he had taken the field in quest of adventures; therefore having immediately saddled his Rozinante, and being mounted, he embraced the inn-keeper, and returned him so many thanks at so extravagant a rate, for the obligation he had laid upon him in dubbing him a knight, that it is impossible to give a true relation of them all: to which the inn-keeper, in haste to get rid of him, returned as rhetorical though shorter answers; and without stopping his horse for the reckoning, was glad with all his heart to see him go.

CHAPTER IV.

What befel the Knight after he had left the Inn.

Aurora began to usher in the morn, when Don Quixote sallied out of the inn, so well pleased, so gay, and so overjoyed to find himself knighted, that he infused the same satisfaction into his horse, who seemed ready to burst his girths for joy. But calling to mind the admonitions which the inn-keeper had given him, concerning the provision of necessary accommodation in his travels, particularly money and clean shirts, he resolved to return home to furnish himself with them, and likewise get him a squire, designing to entertain as such a labouring man, his neighbour, who was poor and had a charge of children, but yet was very fit for the office. With this resolution he took the road which led to his own village; and Rozinante, who seemed to know his will by instinct, began to carry him at a round trot so briskly that his heels seemed scarcely to touch the ground. The knight had not travelled far, when he fancied he heard an effeminate voice complaining in a thicket on his right hand. "I thank Heaven," said he, when he heard the cries, "for favouring me so soon with an opportunity to perform the duty of my profession, and reap the fruits of my desire! for these complaints are certainly the moans of some distressed creature who wants my present help." Then turning to that side with all the speed which Rozinante could make, he no sooner came into the wood but he found a mare tied to an oak, and to

another a young lad about fifteen years of age, naked from the waist upwards. This was he who made such a lamentable outcry; and not without cause, for a lusty country-fellow was strapping him soundly with a girdle, at every stripe putting him in mind of a proverb, *Keep your mouth shut, and your eyes open, sirrah.* "Good master," cried the boy, "I'll do so no more; as I hope to be saved, I'll never do so again! indeed, master, hereafter I'll take more care of your goods." Don Quixote seeing this, cried in an angry tone, "Discourteous knight, 'tis an unworthy act to strike a person who is not able to defend himself: come, bestride thy steed, and take thy lance" (for the farmer had something that looked like one leaning to the same tree to which his mare was tied), "then I'll make thee know thou hast acted the part of a coward." The country-fellow, who gave himself for lost at the sight of an apparition in armour brandishing his lance at his face, answered him in mild and submissive words: "Sir knight," cried he, "this boy, whom I am chastising, is my servant, employed by me to look after a flock of sheep, which I have not far off; but he is so heedless, that I lose some of them every day. Now, because I correct him for his carelessness or his knavery, he says I do it out of covetousness, to defraud him of his wages; but upon my life and soul, he belies me."—"What! the lie in my presence, you saucy clown," cried Don Quixote; "by the sun that shines, I have a good mind to run thee through the body with my lance. Pay the boy this instant, without any more words, or by the power that rules us all, I'll immediately despatch, and annihilate thee: come, unbind him this moment." The countryman hung down his head, and without any further reply unbound the boy; who being asked by Don Quixote what his master owed him, told him it was nine months' wages, at seven reals a month. The knight having cast it up, found it came to sixty-three reals in all; which he ordered the farmer to pay the fellow immediately, unless he intended to lose his life that very moment. The poor countryman, trembling for fear, told him, that, as he was on the brink of death, by the oath he had sworn (by the bye he had not sworn at all) he did not owe the lad so much: for there was to be

deducted for three pair of shoes which he had bought him, and a real for his being let blood twice when he was sick. —"That may be," replied Don Quixote; "but set the price of the shoes and the bleeding against the stripes which you have given him without cause: for if he has used the shoe-leather which you paid for, you have in return misused and impaired his skin sufficiently; and if the surgeon let him blood when he was sick, you have drawn blood from him now he is in health; so that he owes you nothing on that account."—"The worst is, sir knight," cried the farmer, "that I have no money about me; but let Andrew go home with me, and I'll pay him every piece out of hand."—"What! I go home with him," cried the youngster; "the devil a bit, sir! not I, truly, I know better things; for he'd no sooner have me by himself, but he'd flay me alive like another St. Bartholomew." —"He will never dare to do it," replied Don Quixote; "I command him, and that's sufficient to restrain him: therefore, provided he will swear by the order of knighthood which has been conferred upon him, that he will duly observe this regulation, I will freely let him go, and then thou art secure of thy money."—"Good sir, take heed what you say," cried the boy; "for my master is no knight, nor ever was of any order in his life; he's John Haldudo, the rich farmer of Quintinar."—"This signifies little," answered Don Quixote, "for there may be knights among the Haldudo's; besides, the brave man carves out his fortune, and every man is the son of his own works."[1] —"That's true, sir," quoth Andrew; "but of what works can this master of mine be the son, who denies me my wages, which I have earned with the sweat of my brows?" —"I do not deny to pay thee thy wages, honest Andrew," cried the master; "be but so kind as go along with me, and by all the orders of knighthood in the world, I swear I'll pay thee every piece, as I said, nay, and per-

[1] There is no country in the world that has suffered more from the excessive respect allowed to the pretension of birth, than Spain; and none, by whose authors the same pretension is more severely ridiculed. There is something of amusement in the gravity with which Villadiego speaks: "*Hidalgo* igitur ille solus dicetur qui Christiana virtute pollet. *Fidalgo*, id est filius bonorum operum et virtutum; et inde vulgo dicitur *cada uno es hijo de sus obras*."—Vill. F. 25.

fumed to boot."[1]—"You may spare your perfume," said Don Quixote; "do but pay him in reals, and I am satisfied; but be sure you perform your oath; for if you fail, I myself swear by the same oath to return and find you out, and punish you, though you should hide yourself as close as a lizard. And if you will be informed who it is that lays these injunctions on you, that you may understand how highly it concerns you to observe them, know, I am the valorous Don Quixote de la Mancha, the righter of wrongs, the revenger and redresser of grievances; and so farewell: but remember what you have promised and sworn, as you will answer the contrary at your peril." This said, he clapped spurs to Rozinante, and quickly left the master and the man a good way behind him.

The countryman, who followed him with both his eyes, no sooner perceived that he was past the woods, and quite out of sight, but he went back to his boy Andrew. "Come, child," said he, "I will pay thee what I owe thee, as that righter of wrongs and redresser of grievances has ordered me."—"Ay," quoth Andrew, "on my word you will do well to fulfil the commands of that good knight, who Heaven grant long to live: for he is so brave a man, and so just a judge, that adad if you don't pay me he'll come back and make his words good." "I dare swear as much," answered the master; "and to show thee how much I love thee, I am willing to increase the debt, that I may enlarge the payment." With that he caught the youngster by the arm, and tied him again to the tree; where he handled him so unmercifully, that scarce any signs of life were left in him. "Now call your righter of wrongs, Mr. Andrew," cried the farmer, "and you shall see he will never be able to undo what I have done; though I think it is but a part of what I ought to do, for I have a good mind to flay you alive, as you said I would, you rascal!" However, he untied him at last, and gave him leave to go and seek out his judge, in order to have his decree put in execution. Andrew went his ways, not very well pleased, you may be sure, yet fully resolved to

[1] ['To pay or return a thing perfumed,' is, according to Jarvis, a Spanish expression, signifying that it is done to the satisfaction of, or with advantage to, the receiver.]

find out the valorous Don Quixote de la Mancha, and give him an exact account of the whole transaction, that he might pay the abuse with sevenfold usury: in short, he crept off sobbing and weeping, while his master stayed behind laughing. And in this manner was this wrong redressed by the valorous Don Quixote de la Mancha.

In the meantime, being highly pleased with himself and what had happened, imagining he had given a most fortunate and noble beginning to his feats of arms, as he went on towards his village, "O most beautiful of beauties," said he with a low voice, "Dulcinea del Toboso! well may'st thou deem thyself most happy, since it was thy good fortune to captivate and hold a willing slave to thy pleasure so valorous and renowned a knight as is, and ever shall be, Don Quixote de la Mancha; who, as all the world knows, had the honour of knighthood bestowed on him but yesterday, and this day redressed the greatest wrong and grievance that ever injustice could design, or cruelty commit: this day has he wrested the scourge out of the hands of that tormentor, who so unmercifully treated a tender infant without the least occasion given." Just as he had said this, he found himself at a place where four roads met; and this made him presently bethink of those crossways which often used to put knights-errant to a stand, to consult with themselves which way they should take: and that he might follow their example, he stopped a while, and after he had seriously reflected on the matter, gave Rozinante the reins, subjecting his own will to that of his horse, who pursuing his first intent, took the way that led to his own stable.

Don Quixote had not gone above two miles, when he discovered a company of people riding towards him, who proved to be merchants of Toledo, that were going to buy silks in Murcia. They were six in all, every one screened with an umbrella, besides four servants on horseback, and three muleteers on foot. The knight no sooner perceived them, than he imagined this to be some new adventure; and because he was resolved to imitate as much as possible the passages which he read in his books, he was pleased to represent this to himself as such a particular adventure as he had a singular desire to meet with; and so, with a

dreadful grace and assurance, fixing himself in his stirrups, couching his lance, and covering his breast with his target, he posted himself in the middle of the road, expecting the coming up of the supposed knights-errant. As soon as they came within hearing, with a loud voice and haughty tone, "Hold," cried he, "let all mankind stand, nor hope to pass on further, unless all mankind acknowledge and confess, that there is not in the universe a more beautiful damsel than the empress of La Mancha, the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso."[1] At those words the merchants made a halt, to view the unaccountable figure of their opponent; and easily conjecturing, both by his

[1] The terms here proposed by Don Quixote are, after all, modest, compared with what we find in some of the romances by whose light he walked. In the Amadis de Grecia (P. 1. c. 64), there is the following passage, which may serve for an example: "The Duke said, Sir Knight, it is now time you should be made to know that the beauty of Infaliana *surpasses* in worth that which so greatly you prize. Brimartes made answer, Sir Knight, for certain no such knowledge can I possess, for in those who have never seen nor known Infaliana, how can knowledge of such a thing be found? But what are arguments, since we stand here at the proof?—The proof fain would I see, quoth the Duke. And when he had said so, they couched their lances, and at the full career of their horses they encountered, being well covered with their shields. . . . The Duke fell so heavily, that he could stir neither foot nor hand. Brimartes stooped and unlaced his vizor. The Duke slowly recovered himself; and then said Brimartes, Sir Knight, you are a dead knight, if you do not on the instant acknowledge that your lady in nothing equals the beauty of Honoria. The Duke said not a word," &c. &c.

If the reader wishes to be amused with an excellent account of a more splendid and authentic specimen of the *Combats pour l'honneur des dames*, I refer him to the fifth volume of the *Mélanges tirés d'une Grande Bibliothèque*, where, among other French MSS. of the 15th century, a very singular one is described, containing the history of a famous festival of gallantry, celebrated A.D. 1493, at the Castle and by the Lord of Sandricourt, near Pontoise, and therefore known by the name of *Le pas de Sandricourt*. It appears, that the scheme was first started by some young lords of the court of Charles VIII., and that their plan was put into execution under the immediate patronage of the Duke of Orleans. After mentioning the names of the young knights who were "to defend against all comers, for the honour of their ladies, the Castle of Sandricourt" (amongst whom we find those of the Sire de Saint-Vallier, father to the famous Diana de Poitiers—of Bernardin de Clermont, Viscount of Tallard—of Louis de Hedouille—of Georges de Sully, &c. &c.) the author proceeds to his chivalrous relation at great length. Vide *Mélanges*, vol. v. p. 33.

expression and disguise, that the poor gentleman had lost his senses, they were willing to understand the meaning of that strange confession which he would force from them; and therefore one of the company, who loved and understood raillery, having discretion to manage it, undertook to talk to him. "Signor cavalier," cried he, "we do not know this worthy lady you talk of; but be pleased to let us see her, and then if we find her possessed of those matchless charms, of which you assert her to be the mistress, we will freely, and without the least compulsion, own the truth which you would extort from us."—"Had I once shown you that beauty," replied Don Quixote, "what wonder would it be to acknowledge so notorious a truth? the importance of the thing lies in obliging you to believe it, confess it, affirm it, swear it, and maintain it, without seeing her; and therefore make this acknowledgment this very moment, or know, that it is with me you must join in battle, ye proud and unreasonable mortals. Come one by one, as the laws of chivalry require, or all at once, according to the dishonourable practice of men of your stamp; here I expect you all my single self, and will stand the encounter, confiding in the justice of my cause."—"Sir knight," replied the merchant, "I beseech you in the name of all the princes here present, that for the discharge of our consciences, which will not permit us to affirm a thing we never heard or saw, and which, besides, tends so much to the dishonour of the empresses and queens of Alcaria and Estremadura, your worship will vouchsafe to let us see some portraiture of that lady, though it were no bigger than a grain of wheat; for by a small sample we may judge of the whole piece, and by that means rest secure and satisfied, and you contented and appeased. Nay, I verily believe, that we all find ourselves already so inclinable to comply with you, that though her picture should represent her to be blind of one eye, and distilling vermilion and brimstone at the other, yet to oblige you, we shall be ready to say in her favour whatever your worship desires."—"Distil, ye infamous scoundrels," replied Don Quixote in a burning rage, "distil, say you? know, that nothing distils from her but amber and civet: neither is she defective in her make or

shape, but more straight than a Guadarramian spindle.[1] But you shall all severely pay for the horrid blasphemy which thou hast uttered against the transcendent beauty of my incomparable lady." Saying this, with his lance couched, he ran so furiously at the merchant who thus provoked him, that had not good fortune so ordered it, that Rozinante should stumble and fall in the midst of his career, the audacious trifler had paid dear for his raillery: but as Rozinante fell, he threw down his master, who rolled and tumbled a good way on the ground, without being able to get upon his legs, though he used all his skill and strength to effect it, so encumbered he was with his lance, target, spurs, helmet, and the weight of his rusty armour. However, in this helpless condition he played the hero with his tongue; "Stay," cried he, "cowards, rascals, do not fly! it is not through my fault that I lie here, but through that of my horse, ye poltroons!"

One of the grooms, who was none of the best natured creatures, hearing the overthrown knight thus insolently treat his master, could not bear it without returning him an answer on his ribs; and therefore coming up to him as he lay wallowing, he snatched his lance, and having broke it to pieces, he so belaboured Don Quixote's sides with one of them, that, in spite of his arms, he thrashed him like a wheat-sheaf. His master indeed called to him not to lay on him so vigorously, and to let him alone; but the fellow, whose hand was in, would not give over rib-roasting the knight, till he had tired out his passion and himself; and therefore running to the other pieces of the broken lance, he fell to it again without ceasing, till he had splintered them all on the knight's iron enclosure. He, on his side, notwithstanding all this storm of bastinadoes, lay all the while bellowing, threatening heaven and earth, and those villainous ruffians, as he took them to be. At last the mule-driver was tired, and the merchants pursued their journey, sufficiently furnished with matter of discourse at the poor knight's expense. When he found himself alone, he tried once more to get on his feet; but if he could not do it when he had the use of his limbs, how should he do

[1] [An allusion to certain peaks in the Sierra de Guadarrama known as "the Spindles."]

it now, bruised and battered as he was? But yet for all this, he esteemed himself a happy man, being still persuaded, that his misfortune was one of those accidents common in knight-errantry, and such a one as he could wholly attribute to the falling of his horse; nor could he possibly get up, so sore and mortified as his body was all over.

CHAPTER V.

A further account of our Knight's misfortunes.

Don Quixote perceiving that he was not able to stir, resolved to have recourse to his usual remedy, which was to bethink himself what passage in his books might afford him some comfort; and presently his folly brought to his remembrance the story of Baldwin and the Marquis of Mantua,[1] when Charlot left the former wounded on the

[1] Cervantes is here evidently amusing himself at the expense of one Geronimo Trevino, whose ballad or romance of Baldwin (in three parts) had been printed in Alcala, anno 1598. The story of the romance is, that Charlot (or Carloto), son of Charlemagne, came unawares upon Baldwin (or Baldovinos) in the Floresta sin Ventura; his purpose being no other than to kill Baldwin, and then marry his widow. He gave him, it appears, no less than two-and-twenty mortal wounds (we can scarcely imagine the Don to have made as exact a computation of the blows he himself had just received from the muleteer), and then left him for dead in the forest. By good fortune, however, Baldwin's uncle, the Marquis of Mantua, happened to be passing at the moment through the wood, and hearing the wounded knight's lamentations, was soon drawn to the spot where he lay. He sent a message to the emperor, who resided at Paris, by the "Count Dirlos, Viceroy beyond the Sea," demanding justice; and Charlemagne immediately pronounced sentence of death upon his son Charlot. Such is the story. The passage of the romance, which Cervantes alludes to, is that which contains the lamentations of the wounded man, after he had received all his wounds. It would be too much to quote the whole of the verses which Cervantes says the Don applied to his own case; but these may serve as a sufficient specimen of a very flat and unprofitable composition.

"O my princely Infant Marian! O my cousin Montesin!
O my Reynold! and Orlando! O thou knightly Paladin!
* * * * *
"O my noble Lord of Mantua, thy soldier true and sister's son
Lies here wounded in the forest—hears nor helps him never one!

mountain; a story learned and known by little children, not unknown to young men and women, celebrated, and even believed, by the old, and yet not a jot more authentic than the miracles of Mahomet. This seemed to him as if made on purpose for his present circumstances, and therefore he fell a-rolling and tumbling up and down, expressing the greatest pain and resentment, and breathing out, with a languishing voice, the same complaints which the wounded Knight of the Wood is said to have made:

"Alas! where are you, lady dear,
That for my woe you do not moan?
You little know what ails me here,
Or are to me disloyal grown!"

Thus he went on with the lamentations in that romance till he came to these verses:—

"O thou, my uncle and my prince,
Marquis of Mantua, noble lord!"—

when kind fortune so ordered it, that a ploughman, who lived in the same village, and near his house, happened to pass by, as he came from the mill with a sack of wheat. The fellow seeing a man lie at his full length on the ground, asked him who he was, and why he made such a sad complaint. Don Quixote, whose distempered brain presently represented to him the countryman for the Marquis of Mantua, his imaginary uncle, made him no answer, but went on with the romance, giving him an account of his misfortunes, and of the loves of his wife and the emperor's son, just as the book relates them. The fellow stared, much amazed to hear a man talk such unaccountable stuff; and taking off the vizor of his helmet, broken all to pieces with blows bestowed upon it

---

Baldwin was my christen'd name—"The Frank," they call'd me too;
I am the king of Dacia's son, from him my blood I drew.
He was my father and my lord, and I was belted knight,
To eat bread at his table, and for his banner fight.
* * * * *
"The beautiful Sevilla, she pledged her troth to me;
She was my wedded wife, but my widow soon she'll be.
Charlot, it was no other, this wicked deed hath done;
I lie here slain by Charlot, the good King Charles's son.
He coveted my wife, and full well I know that I
Lie here, that with my widow my murderer may lie."

by the mule-driver, he wiped off the dust that covered his face, and presently knew the gentleman. "Master Quixada!" cried he, (for so he was properly called when he had the right use of his senses, and had not yet from a sober gentleman transformed himself into a wandering knight) "how came you in this condition?" But the other continued his romance, and made no answers to all the questions the countryman put to him, but what followed in course in the book: which the good man perceiving, he took off the battered adventurer's armour, as well as he could, and fell a-searching for his wounds; but finding no sign of blood, or any other hurt, he endeavoured to set him upon his legs; and at last with a great deal of trouble, he heaved him upon his own ass, as being the more easy and gentle carriage: he also got all the knight's arms together, not leaving behind so much as the splinters of his lance; and having tied them up, and laid them on Rozinante, which he took by the bridle, and his ass by the halter, he led them all towards the village, and trudged a-foot himself very pensive, while he reflected on the extravagances which he heard Don Quixote utter. Nor was Don Quixote himself less melancholy; for he felt himself so bruised and battered that he could hardly sit on the ass; and now and then he breathed such grievous sighs, as seemed to pierce the very skies, which moved his compassionate neighbour once more to entreat him to declare to him the cause of his grief: but one would have imagined the devil prompted him with stories, that had some resemblance to his circumstances; for in that instant, wholly forgetting Baldwin, he bethought himself of the Moor Abindarraez,[1] whom Rodrigo de Narvaez, Alcayde of Antequera, took and carried prisoner to his castle; so that when the husbandman asked him how he did, and what ailed him, he answered word for word as the prisoner Abindarraez replied to Rodrigo de Narvaez, in the *Diana* of George di Montemayor, where that adventure is

[1] The loves of the Moor Abindarraez and of the beautiful Xarifa, were a favourite subject of song amongst the Moorish, as well as the Christian minstrels of Spain; and Montemayor has introduced them into his celebrated pastoral called *Diana*.—The tale will be found in Additional Note VIII.

related; applying it so properly to his purpose, that the countryman wished himself at the devil rather than within the hearing of such strange nonsense: and being now fully convinced that his neighbour's brains were turned, he made all the haste he could to the village, to be rid of his troublesome impertinencies. Don Quixote in the mean time thus went on; "You must know, Don Rodrigo de Narvaez, that this beautiful Xerifa, of whom I gave you an account, is at present the most lovely Dulcinea del Toboso, for whose sake I have done, still do, and will achieve the most famous deeds of chivalry that ever were, are, or ever shall be seen in the universe."—"Good sir," replied the husbandman, "as I am a sinner, I am not Don Rodrigo de Narvaez, nor the Marquis of Mantua, but Pedro Alonzo by name, your worship's neighbour; nor are you Baldwin, nor Abindarraez, but only that worthy gentleman Senior Quixada."—"I know very well who I am," answered Don Quixote; "and what's more, I know that I may not only be the persons I have named, but also the twelve peers of France, nay, and the nine worthies all in one;[1] since my achievements will outrival not only the famous exploits which made any of them singly illustrious, but all their mighty deeds accumulated together."

Thus discoursing, they at last got near their village about sunset; but the countryman stayed at some distance till it was dark, that the distressed gentleman might not be seen so scurvily mounted, and then he led him home to his own house, which he found in great confusion. The curate and the barber of the village, both of them Don Quixote's intimate acquaintance, happened to be there at that juncture, as also the housekeeper, who was arguing with them: "What do you think, pray, good doctor Perez," said she (for this was the curate's name), "what do you think of my master's mischance? neither he, nor

[1] The twelve peers of France were, it need scarcely be said, Charlemagne's famous Paladins. It is not quite so well known, that the nine worthies in the language of romance (los nueve de la fama) were, three of them Hebrews, viz., Joshua, David, and Judas Maccabæus; three Gentiles, viz., Hector of Troy, Alexander of Macedon, and Julius Cæsar; and three Christians, King Arthur, Charlemagne, and Godfrey of Bouillon.—See *Carranza*, F. 255.

his horse, nor his target, lance, nor armour, have been seen these six days. What shall I do, wretch that I am! I dare lay my life, and it is as sure as I am a living creature, that those cursed books of errantry, which he used to be always poring upon, have set him beside his senses; for now I remember, I have heard him often mutter to himself, that he had a mind to turn knight-errant, and jaunt up and down the world to find out adventures. May Satan and Barabbas e'en take all such books that have thus cracked the best headpiece in all La Mancha!" His niece said as much, addressing herself to the barber; "You must know, Mr. Nicholas," quoth she (for that was his name), "that many times my uncle would read you those unconscionable books of disventures for eight-and-forty hours together; then away he would throw you his book, and drawing his sword, he would fall a fencing against the walls; and when he had tired himself with cutting and slashing, he would cry he had killed four giants as big as any steeples;[1] and the sweat which he put himself into, he would say was the blood of the wounds he had received in the fight: then would he swallow a huge jug of cold water, and presently he would be as quiet and as well as ever he was in his life; and he said, that this same water was a sort of precious drink brought him by the sage Esquife,[2] a great magician, and his special friend. Now, it is I who am the cause of all this mischief, for not giving you timely notice of my uncle's raving, that you might have put a stop to it, ere it was too late, and have burnt all these excommunicated books; for there are I do not know how many of them

[1] "The beautiful Brandamante, and Aquilante, and Grifon, and Malgesi, encountered then those four fierce giants, who stood like four towers waiting for them," &c.—*Espejo*, L. ii. c. ix.

[2] This personage and the enchantress Urganda, mentioned on the next page, occur in almost all the books of the lineage of Amadis. We have had occasion already (p. 38, Note 1) to observe one wonderful cure performed by Alquife (corrupted into *Esquife* by the niece of Don Quixote) in the *Amadis de Grecia*. Urganda, witch, enchantress, prophetess, &c. &c., appears in the original Amadis sometimes in the likeness of a young damsel, sometimes as the most venerable of crones; but in the later volumes of Esplandian, &c., she is invested with all the more serious terrors of a Medea. Her final departure is very mysterious; whence her appellation of *la desconoscida*.

that deserve as much to be burned as those of the rankest heretics."—"I am of your mind," said the curate; "and verily to-morrow shall not pass over before I have fairly brought them to a trial, and condemned them to the flames, that they may not minister occasion to such as would read them, to be perverted after the example of my good friend."

The countryman, who, with Don Quixote, stood without, listening to all this discourse, now perfectly understood by this the cause of his neighbour's disorder; and therefore, without any more ado, he called out aloud, "Here! house; open the gates there, for the Lord Baldwin, and the Lord Marquis of Mantua, who is coming sadly wounded; and for the Moorish Lord Abindarraez, whom the valorous Don Rodrigo de Narvaez, Alcayde of Antequera, brings prisoner." At which words they all got out of doors; and the one finding it to be her uncle, and the other to be her master, and the rest their friend, who had not yet alighted from the ass, because indeed he was not able, they all ran to embrace him; to whom Don Quixote: "Forbear," said he, "for I am sorely hurt, by reason that my horse failed me; carry me to bed, and if it be possible let the enchantress Urganda be sent for to cure my wounds." "Now, in the name of mischief," quoth the housekeeper, "see whether I did not guess right, on which foot my master halted?—Come, get you to bed, I beseech you; and, my life for yours, we will take care to cure you without sending for that same Urganda. A hearty curse, and the curse of curses, I say it again and again a hundred times, light upon those books of chivalry that have put you in this pickle!" Thereupon they carried him to his bed, and searched for his wounds, but could find none; and then he told them he was only bruised, having had a dreadful fall from his horse Rozinante while he was fighting ten giants, the most outrageous and audacious that ever could be found upon the face of the earth. "How!" cried the curate, "have we giants too in the dance? nay then, by the holy sign of the cross, I will burn them all by to-morrow night." Then did they ask the Don a thousand questions, but to every one he made no other answer, but that they should

give him something to eat, and then leave him to his repose, a thing which was to him of the greatest importance. They complied with his desires; and then the curate informed himself at large in what condition the countryman had found him; and having had a full account of every particular, as also of the knight's extravagant talk, both when the fellow found him, and as he brought him home, this increased the curate's desire of effecting what he had resolved to do the next morning: at which time he called upon his friend, Mr. Nicholas the barber, and went with him to Don Quixote's house.

CHAPTER VI.

Of the pleasant and curious scrutiny which the Curate and the Barber made of the library of our ingenious Gentleman.

The knight was yet asleep, when the curate came attended by the barber, and desired his niece to let him have the key of the room where her uncle kept his books, the author of his woes; she readily consented; and so in they went, and the housekeeper with them. There they found above a hundred large volumes neatly bound, and a good number of small ones; as soon as the housekeeper had spied them out, she ran out of the study, and returned immediately with a holy-water pot and a sprinkler; "Here, doctor," cried she, "pray sprinkle every creek and corner in the room, lest there should lurk in it some one of the many sorcerers these books swarm with, who might chance to bewitch us, for the ill-will we bear them, in going about to send them out of the world." The curate could not forbear smiling at the good woman's simplicity; and desired the barber to reach him the books one by one, that he might peruse the title-pages, for perhaps he might find some among them, that might not deserve to be committed to the flames. "Oh, by no means," cried the niece, "spare none of them, they all help somehow or other to crack my uncle's brain. I fancy we had best throw them all out at the window into the yard, and lay them together

in a heap, and then set them o' fire, or else carry them into the back-yard, and there make a pile of them, and burn them, and so the smoke will offend nobody." The housekeeper joined with her, so eagerly bent were both upon the destruction of those poor innocents; but the curate would not condescend to those irregular proceedings, and resolved first to read at least the title-page of every book.

The first that Mr. Nicholas put into his hands was Amadis de Gaul, in four volumes.[1] "There seems to be some mystery in this book's being the first taken down," cried the curate, as soon as he had looked upon it, "for I have heard it is the first book of knight-errantry that ever was printed in Spain, and the model of all the rest; and therefore I am of opinion, that, as the first teacher and author of so pernicious a sect, it ought to be condemned to the fire without mercy."—"I beg a reprieve for him," cried the barber, "for I have been told 'tis the best book that has been written in that kind; and therefore, as the only good thing of that sort, it may deserve a pardon." —"Well then," replied the curate, "for this time let him have it. Let's see that other, which lies next to him."— "These," said the barber, "are the exploits of Esplandian,[2] the lawfully begotten son of Amadis de Gaul."—"Verily," said the curate, "the father's goodness shall not excuse the want of it in the son. Here, good mistress housekeeper, open the window, and throw it into the yard, and let it serve as a foundation to that pile we are to set a blazing presently." She was not slack in her obedience; and thus poor Don Esplandian was sent headlong into the yard, there patiently to wait the time of his fiery trial. "To the next," cried the curate.—"This," said the barber, "is

[1] [See *note* [1] next page.]

[2] "El Ramo que de los quatre libros de Amadis de Gaula sale llamado las Sergas del muy esforzado Cavallero Esplandian, hijo del exelente Rey Amadis de Gaula," Alcala, 1588. Such is the title-page of a continuation of the Amadis, by one Garci Ordonez de Montalvo, who, having edited the original romance, thought it necessary, it would seem, *invita Minerva*, to try his hand at something original. In the preface, he pretends that the "deeds" (ἔργα) of Esplandian had been originally narrated in Greek "del Mano del Maestro Helizabad.' Helizabad is frequently mentioned by Cervantes. He was the well-employed surgeon who commonly cured the wounds of Amadis de Gaul, &c.

Amadis of Greece;[1] and I'm of opinion, that all those that stand on this side are of the same family."—"Then let them all be sent packing into the yard," replied the curate; "for rather than lose the pleasure of burning Queen Pintiquiniestra, and the shepherd Darinel with his eclogues, and the confounded unintelligible discourses of the author, I think I should burn my own father along with them, if I met him in the disguise of a knight-errant."—"I am of your mind," cried the barber.—"And I too," said the niece.—"Nay, then," quoth the old female, "let them come, and down with them all into the yard." They were delivered to her accordingly, and many they were; so that to save herself the labour of carrying them down stairs, she fairly sent them flying out at the window.

"What overgrown piece of lumber have we here?" cried the curate.—"Olivante de Laura," returned the barber. "The same author wrote the Garden of Flowers;[2] and, to

[1] The first four books of Amadis of Gaul alone are considered by Cervantes as worthy of being preserved from the flames. The other twenty-one books, filled with the exploits of the Amadis family, were for the most part composed originally, not in Spanish or Portuguese (like those which Cervantes preserves), but by French imitators of very inferior genius. [Books 22-25, which conclude the series, appear to have been printed only in 1615, at Paris. They contain the adventures of the "young princes Saferaman and Hercules d'Astre" and of many others, "notably the valiant Fulgoran"—purporting, though falsely, to be translated from the Spanish.] Vicente Placcio, in his *Theatrum Anonymorum et Pseudonymorum*, characterises the whole collection as "a most pernicious library, engendered or composed by Spanish fathers, although mightily augmented by the French," p. 673, § 2731, Amadis of Greece occupies the ninth book of the collection. He was the son of Lisuarte of Greece, who was the son of Amadis of Gaul. The huge folio which Cervantes places in his hero's library, was printed at Lisbon in 1596. The title runs thus: "Chronica del muy valiente y esforzado Principe y Cavallero de la ardienta Espada, Amadis de Grecia." The history is divided into two parts, and at the beginning of the second there is a notice, that "Esta Chronica fue sacada de Grieco en Latin y de Latin en Romance, segun lo escrivio el gran sabio Alquife en las Magicas." The whole ends with these words: "Aqui hace fin el noveno libro de Amadis de Gaula: que es la chronica del cavalliero de la ardiente Espada, Amadis de Grecia, hijo de Lisuarte de Grecia." The Queen Pintiquiniestra, and the shepherd Darinel, are both of them personages that figure in the Amadis de Grecia. The former is a giantess of most formidable appearance.

[2] Both the stupid romance of *Olivante* and the *Jardin de Flores*, were productions of one Antonio de Torquemada. The title of the second of

deal ingenuously with you, I cannot tell which of the two books has most truth in it, or, to speak more properly, less lies; but this I know for certain, that he shall march into the back-yard, like a nonsensical arrogant blockhead as he is."

"The next," cried the barber, "is Florismart of

---

them conveys no very perfect notion of its character: for, in fact, it is nothing but one fearful mass of *diablerie*, interspersed with a few, probably more authentic, *blossoms* of murder, rape, &c. Torquemada was a popular author in his day; but his popularity was not so much founded on either of the works satirised by Cervantes, as on his *Hexameron*, which was translated into French, soon after it was written, by Chapuis. This very curious work consists of six dialogues, professedly on subjects of natural history and physics; but Torquemada takes occasion to introduce in the course of his discussions an infinity of curious stories and anecdotes, which, no doubt, the readers of his time must have found much more interesting than his philosophy: For example, he fills a great many pages with the natural history of giants, and, among other things, tells us, he had frequently seen with his own eyes a well-authenticated tooth of St. Christopher, in the cathedral of Coria; and a fragment of his jaw-bone, in the church of Astorga. These must have been tremendous relics, for the philosophic Torquemada states, that he had made an exact computation, and found, that if St. Christopher was formed in due proportion, he must have stood exactly as tall as the great tower of Segovia. He states also, that the bones of the Paladins, preserved in the abbey of Roncesvalles, were quite of gigantic dimensions. In truth, Torquemada seems to have been a fortunate person, for many are the strange things and persons he gravely tells us he had seen. *Inter alia*, he speaks at much length of a certain lady of his acquaintance, abbess of a convent at Monviedra, who, having lived on to the age of a hundred, with all the appearance of other old women, began of a sudden to manifest many grateful symptoms, external and internal, of returning youth; she became to all men's view, says he, a comely young religieuse of eighteen years; she was excessively admired, and liked admiration too; but, he adds, was, after a little reflection, somewhat ashamed both of her looks and her sensations, and was never seen to trip across the cloisters without holding a handkerchief to her face. She enjoyed this second bloom for several merry years, and expired with the brownest of curls, and the brightest of eyes, being cut off by a sudden and most unexpected access of fever, at the age of 110. With sorcerers and magicians of the most terrific power, but all of them most amiably communicative, Antonio de Torquemada appears to have cracked many a bottle. From his accounts of these personages, one would imagine them to have been just as fond of telling all the horrors they had ever perpetrated, as the most respectable "Señor soldado de Carlos quinto" could have been of fighting his battles over again.

Hyrcania."[1]—"How! my Lord Florismart, is he here?" replied the curate; "nay, then truly, he shall e'en follow the rest to the yard, in spite of his wonderful birth and incredible adventures; for his rough, dull, and insipid style deserves no better usage. Come, toss him into the yard, and this other too, good mistress."—"With all my heart," quoth the governess; and straight she was as good as her word.

"Here's the noble Don Platir,"[2] cried the barber.—"'Tis an old book," replied the curate, "and I can think of nothing in him that deserves a grain of pity: away with him, without any more words;" and down he went accordingly.

Another book was opened, and it proved to be the Knight of the Cross.[3] "The holy title," cried the curate, "might in some measure atone for the badness of the book; but then, as the saying is, *The devil lurks behind the cross!* To the flames with him."

Then the barber taking down another book, cried, "Here's

[1] Another dull and affected folio, written by "Melchior de Orteza Caballero de Ubeda;" and printed at Valladolid in the year 1566. The "wonderful birth" of the hero alluded to by the curate in the text, is narrated at great length in the tenth chapter of the romance. His mother was brought to bed in a desert place, and he saw the light under the auspices of a certain *sage-femme*, by name *Belsagina*. His father's name being *Florisan* (of Misia), and his mother's *Martedina*—this dame suggested that the boy should take part of both of these fine names, and be called *Florismarte*. The mother, however, preferred *Felixmarte*, for reasons of which Mr. Shandy would have approved.

[2] An edition of "O cronico del muy valiente y esforzado Caballero Platir, hijo del Emperador Primaleon," was printed at Valladolid in 1533. This, like most of the same sort of books, was anonymous.

[3] The "Book of the invincible knight Lepolemo, called from his achievements the Knight of the Cross," forms the twelfth part of the Amadis library. The "Chronicle of Leandro the Beautiful, as it was composed by the sage King Artidorus, in the Greek tongue," is the thirteenth; they are both from the pen of one Pedro de Luxan. The preliminary fiction concerning the adventures of the Knight of the Cross, is, that they were "originally written in Arabic, by a Moor named Xarton, at the command of the Sultan Zulema, and translated into Castilian by a captive of Tunis." Then follow two dedications, one by Xarton to Zulema, and another by the Tunisian captive, addressed to the Conde de Saldana. Luxan was author of another work equally stupid, entitled "Colloquios Matrimoniales."

the Mirror of Knighthood."[1]—"Oh, I have the honour to know him," replied the curate. "There you will find the Lord Rinaldo of Montalban, with his friends and companions, all of them greater thieves than Cacus, together with the Twelve Peers of France,[2] and that faithful historian Turpin. Truly I must needs say, I am only for condemning them to perpetual banishment, at least, because their story contains something of the famous Boiardo's invention, out of which the Christian poet Ariosto also spun his web; yet, if I happen to meet with him in this bad company, and speaking in any other language than his own, I'll show him no manner of favour; but if he talks in his own native tongue, I'll treat him with all the respect imaginable."—"I have him at home in Italian," said the barber, "but I cannot understand him."—"Neither is it any great matter, whether you do or not," replied the curate;[3] "and I could willingly have

[1] The *Espejo de Caballerias* is frequently alluded to by all the Spanish commentators on Cervantes. It is a huge collection of all manner of romantic stories, in four parts, formed by as many different writers. The first part (which is alluded to in the text) appeared in 1562, and was dedicated by its author, Diego Ordonez de Calahorra, to Martin Cortes, son of the great Hernando Cortes.

[2] The achievements of the twelve peers fill a mighty proportion of the *Espejo de Caballerias*, and, of course, the venerable Turpin is throughout cited as the most unquestioned of authorities. Thus, in P. 1. c. 1. we are informed, that "En las Historias Antiguas de Francia una mas verdadera por mano de Arzobizbo Don Turpin se halla." Such is the character uniformly given of Turpin by the grateful bards, who, as Cervantes expresses it, "spun their webs" out of his history. In Boiardo, Pulci, Ariosto, one meets at every turn,

"Turpin che mai non mente in alcun loco."

—See Additional Note IX.

[3] Jarvis supposes, from the style of the conversation here, that Cervantes had no great relish for Ariosto. But Pellicer very justly laughs at Jarvis for this remark. The curate's contempt is evidently not of Ariosto (whose "graces" he has just been praising), but of the poor barber, whom he does not think capable of reading, or at least of relishing, anything so beautiful as the *Orlando Furioso*. Don Geronimo Ximenes de Urrea is the "good captain," whose Spanish version of the Orlando, Cervantes in the next sentence satirises. Don Diego de Mendoza is equally severe upon this gallant translator. "He hath gained," quoth Mendoza, "not only fame, but, what is much better, many a good dinner by translating the *Orlando Furioso*; i.e. by having said "*Ca-*

excused the good captain who translated it that trouble of attempting to make him speak Spanish, for he has deprived him of a great deal of his primitive graces; a misfortune incident to all those who presume to translate verses, since their utmost wit and industry can never enable them to preserve the native beauties and genius that shine in the original. For this reason I am for having not only this book, but likewise all those which we shall find here, treating of French affairs,[1] laid up and deposited in some dry vault, till we have maturely determined what ought to be done with them; yet give me leave to except one Bernardo del Carpio,[2] that must be somewhere here among the rest, and another called Roncesvalles; for whenever I meet with them I will certainly deliver them up into the hands of the housekeeper, who shall toss them into the fire." The barber gave his approbation to every particular, well knowing that the curate was so good a Christian, and so great a lover of truth, that he would not have uttered a falsity for all the world.

Then opening another volume, he found it to be Palmerin de Oliva, and the next to that Palmerin of England.[3] "Ha, have I found you!" cried the curate.

---

valleros for *cavaglieri*, *armas* for *arme*, *amores* for *amori*." He adds, *Puez de esta arte yo me haria mas libros que hizo Matuzalen*." But perhaps, after all, even that might be no very laborious undertaking.

[1] [Meaning those romances which related to the Franks under Charlemagne and the Paladins.]

[2] This condemned book is a long and dull poem on the exploits of the hero, of whom enough has already been said, written in the *rima ottava*, and published at Toledo in 1585. The author's name was Augustin Alonzo.

[3] "Libro del famoso Caballero Palmerin de Oliva, que por el mundo grandes hechos en armas hizo, sin saber cuyo hijo fuese. Toledo, 1580." It was probably this edition of this well-known romance that figured in Don Quixote's library. The hero, the secretly produced offspring of Angricona, daughter to the emperor of Constantinople, is carried off as soon as he is born, and concealed beneath a palm-tree on the Mount of Olives. He is there discovered by a rustic, who names him from the place where he is found. As to the very superior romance of Palmerin of England, the reader is once more referred to Mr. Southey's admirable abridgment. I may mention, however, in passing, that the royal parentage of that fine romance, although

"Here, take that Oliva, let him be torn to pieces, then burnt, and his ashes scattered in the air; but let Palmerin of England be preserved as a singular relic of antiquity; and let such a costly box be made for him as Alexander found among the spoils of Darius, which he devoted to inclose Homer's works; for I must tell you, neighbour, that book deserves particular respect for two things; first, for its own excellences; and secondly, for the sake of its author, who is said to have been a learned king of Portugal; then all the adventures of the castle of Miraguarda are well and artfully managed, the dialogue very courtly and clear, and the decorum strictly observed in equal character, with equal propriety and judgment. Therefore, Master Nicholas," continued he, "with submission to your better advice, this and Amadis de Gaul shall be exempted from the fire; and let all the rest be condemned without any further inquiry or examination."—"By no means, I beseech you," returned the barber, "for this which I have in my hands is the famous Don Belianis."—"Truly," cried the curate, "he, with his second, third, and fourth parts, had need of a dose of rhubarb to purge his excessive choler: besides, his Castle of Fame should be demolished, and a heap of other rubbish removed;[1] in order to which I give my vote to grant them the benefit of a reprieve; and as they show signs of amendment, so shall mercy or justice be used towards them: in the meantime, neighbour, take them into custody, and keep them safe at home; but let none be permitted to converse with them."—"Content," cried the barber; and to save himself the labour of looking on any more books of that kind, he bade the housekeeper take all

---

Cervantes would seem to have believed in it, is much more than doubtful; and that it is even far from being certain that Sir Palmerin made his first appearance in the language of Portugal.

[1] "There appeared a castle as beautiful and as rich as ever mortal beheld. It was so large, that with ease one might imagine two thousand knights to be its garrison, and it was drawn along by forty elephants of incredible hugeness. From this castle there came forth nine knights, each one having painted on his shield the image of Fame, by which device they signified that they were the Knights of Fame."—*Belianis*, L. iii. c. 19.

the great volumes, and throw them into the yard. This was not spoken to one stupid or deaf, but to one who had a greater mind to be burning them, than weaving the finest and largest web: so that laying hold of no less than eight volumes at once, she presently made them leap towards the place of execution: but as she went too eagerly to work, taking more books than she could conveniently carry, she happened to drop one at the barber's feet, which he took up out of curiosity to see what it was, and found it to be the History of the Famous Knight Tirante the White.[1] "Good-lack-a-day," cried the curate, "is Tirante the White here? oh! pray good neighbour, give it me by all means, for I promise myself to find in it a treasure of delight, and a mine of recreation. There we have that valorous knight Don Kyrie-Eleison of Montalban, with his brother Thomas of Montalban, and the knight Fonseca; the combat between the valorous De Tirante and Alano; the dainty and witty conceits of the damsel Plazerdemivida, with the loves and guiles of the widow Reposada; together with the lady empress that was in love with Hippolito her gentleman-usher. I vow and protest to you, neighbour," continued he, "that in its

[1] The hero of this fine old romance (for Cervantes is far too severe on its merits) derives his name partly from his father, partly from his mother; the former being "Lord of the Seigniory of Tiranía, on the borders of England," the latter, Blanca, daughter of the Duke of Brittany. The common opinion is, that this romance was originally composed in the Valencian dialect about the year 1460. The Dons Kyrie-Eleison (i.e. *Lord have mercy upon us*), and Thomas of Montalban, the Knight Fonseca, &c., are personages who appear in the story of *Tirant lo Blanch*. The most interesting of them all, are the empress and her lover, the gentleman-usher Hippolyto. To please her swain, the empress sings to him on one occasion, "Un romance de Tristan co se planya de la lancada del Rey March"—"A song of Tristram, in which he laments over a blow he had received from the lance of King Mark." This song is represented to have excessively moved the tender-hearted gentleman-usher; insomuch, that "Ab la dolçor del cant destillaren dels seus ulls vives lagremes."—(Cap. 264.) The first edition of *Tirant* was published at Valencia in 1490. A Castilian version appeared at Valladolid in 1511; and from this was executed the Italian translation of Lelio Manfredi, which was printed at Venice in 1538. *De Tirante*, a few lines lower in the text, in former editions has always been printed *Detriante*, a printer's error, which seems to have passed from edition to edition, ever since Don Quixote was first published.

way there is not a better book in the world: why, here you have knights that eat and drink, sleep, and die natural deaths in their beds, nay, and make their last wills and testaments; with a world of other things of which all the rest of this sort of books don't say one syllable. Yet after all, I must tell you, that for wilfully taking the pains to write so many foolish things, the worthy author fairly deserves to be sent to the galleys for all the days of his life. Take it home with you and read it, and then tell me whether I have told you the truth or no."—"I believe you," replied the barber; "but what shall we do with all these smaller books that are left?"—"Certainly," replied the curate, "these cannot be books of knight-errantry, they are too small; you'll find they are only poets." And so opening one, it happened to be the Diana of Montemayor; which made him say (believing all the rest to be of that stamp), "These do not deserve to be punished like the others, for they neither have done, nor can do, that mischief which those stories of chivalry have done, being generally ingenious books, that can do nobody any prejudice."—"Oh! good sir," cried the niece, "burn them with the rest, I beseech you; for should my uncle get cured of his knight-errant frenzy, and betake himself to the reading of these books, we should have him turn shepherd, and so wander through the woods and fields; nay, and what would be worse yet, turn poet, which they say is a catching and an uncurable disease."—"The gentlewoman is in the right," said the curate, "and it will not be amiss to remove that stumbling-block out of our friend's way; and since we began with the Diana of Montemayor, I am of opinion we ought not to burn it, but only take out that part of it which treats of the magician Felicia, and the enchanted water, as also all the longer poems; and let the work escape with its prose, and the honour of being the first of that kind."—"Here's another Diana," quoth the barber, "the second of that name, by Salmantino (of Salamanca), nay, and a third too, by Gil Polo."[1]—

[1] Cervantes does not seem to have been aware that the Diana, who gives name to the celebrated performance of Jorge de Montemayor, was a real personage. Pellicer, however, has collected abundant evidence that such was the fact; *inter alia*, he cites from a MS., in

"Pray," said the curate, "let Salmantino increase the number of the criminals in the yard; but as for that by Gil Polo, preserve it as charily as if Apollo himself had wrote it; and go on as fast as you can, I beseech you, good neighbour, for it grows late."—"Here," quoth the barber, "I've a book called the Ten Books of the Fortunes of Love, by Anthony de Lofraco,[1] a Sardinian poet."—"Now, by my holy orders," cried the curate, "I do not think since Apollo was Apollo, the muses muses, and the poets poets, there ever was a more comical, more

---

the Royal Library at Madrid, a passage which I shall translate *literatim*, because the story it tells is in itself interesting.—See Additional Note X. (The writer is the same Father Sepulveda, whose "History of Charles V." and other historical works are well known.)

Montemayor himself was not distinguished by his writings alone; for he was both a great musician and a gallant soldier. His *Diana* was the most popular work of its day, and gave rise to as many *Dianas*, as Lord Byron's Harold, in our own time, has to *Childes*. Gil Polo, whom Cervantes rather commends, wrote a professed continuation of the original performance of Montemayor, which was reprinted in Madrid so lately as 1778. M. Florian ventures, in spite of the authority of Cervantes, to express a great contempt for Gil Polo; but Pellicer, more likely to be a good judge, talks of him as "Insigne Poeta Valenciano." The second Diana, that of Alonzo Perez, a physician of Salamanca (the *Salmantino* of the text) was published at Alcala in 1564. For very elegant abstracts of all these pastorals, see Mr. Dunlop's *History of Fiction*.

[1] The true name of this author was Antonio de lo Frasso. He was a native of Llaguer, a town in Sardinia, but wrote good Castilian. His work, entitled "Los diez libros de Fortuna d'Amor, donde hallaran los honestos y apacibles amores del pastor Frexano et de la hermosa pastora Fortuna," was published at Barcelona by one Pedro Malo, in 1573. It is a pastoral written partly in prose, partly in verse, like its prototype (the *Diana*). There is every reason for thinking that Cervantes by no means intended to identify himself with the curate as to the opinion expressed concerning this work. Nevertheless, entirely on the strength of such an idea, an edition of these wretched "diez libros de fortuna" was actually printed in London, not a great many years ago, under the auspices of Pineda, the lexicographer—of course, without the smallest success. The other pastoral productions mentioned in the text are all utterly contemptible, with the exception of the *Shepherd of Filida*, which Lope de Vega praises in his Dorotea (p. 52), asserting that its author also, like Montemayor, had been inspired by the charms of a real mistress. This book appeared in 1582. It was written by Luis Galvez de Montalvo, who is designed as "Criado de Don Enrique de Mendoza y Aragon, nieto de los Duques del Infantado."

whimsical book! Of all the works of the kind, commend me to this, for in its way 'tis certainly the best and most singular that ever was published, and he that never read it, may safely think he never in his life read anything that was pleasant. Give it me, neighbour," continued he, "for I am more glad to have found it, than if any one had given me a cassock of the best Florence serge." With that he laid it aside with extraordinary satisfaction, and the barber went on: "These that follow," cried he, "are the Shepherd of Iberia, the Nymphs of Enares, and the Cure of Jealousy."—"Take them, jailor," quoth the curate, "and never ask me why, for then we shall ne'er have done."—"The next," said the barber, "is the Shepherd of Filida."—"He's no shepherd," returned the curate, "but a very discreet courtier; keep him as a precious jewel."—"Here's a bigger," cried the barber, "called, The Treasure of divers Poems."[1]—"Had there been fewer of them," said the curate, "they would have been more esteemed. 'Tis fit the book should be pruned and cleared of several trifles that disgrace the rest: keep it, however, because the author is my friend, and for the sake of his other more heroic and lofty productions."—"Here's a book of songs by Lopez Maldonardo,"[2] cried the barber."—"He's also my particular friend," said the curate: "his verses are very well liked when he reads them himself; and his voice is so excellent, that they charm us whenever he sings them. He seems indeed to be somewhat too long in his eclogues; but can we ever have too much of a good thing? Let him be preserved among the best. What's the next book?" "The Galatea of Miguel de Cervantes,"[3] replied the barber.

[1] This is a collection of the same class with the *Sylvæ*, *Deliciæ*, &c. formed by Don Pedro Padilla; a gentleman who, after spending an active life in military service, assumed in his latter days the garb of a Carmelite Friar, and died in that sanctified, and, as he probably thought, all-atoning garb, at Madrid, in 1595. Gayton, in his *Festive Notes*, talks boldly of this book, as if it had been a dictionary, and as if he had himself turned over its leaves. He had evidently not imagined there could be any *Thesauri* except of the same class with his Stephanus.

[2] "The Cancionero, o Coleccion de varias poesias" of this author was first published by Droy, in Madrid, in 1586, in quarto.

[3] [The *Galatea* of Cervantes has been translated by G. W. J. Gyll, and published in Bohn's Standard Library.]

—"That Cervantes has been my intimate acquaintance these many years," cried the curate; "and I know he has been more conversant with misfortunes than with poetry. His book indeed has I don't know what that looks like a good design; he aims at something, but concludes nothing; therefore we must stay for the second part, which he has promised us;[1] perhaps he may make us amends, and obtain a full pardon, which is denied him for the present; till that time, keep him close prisoner at your house."—"I will," quoth the barber: "but see, I have here three more for you, the Araucana of Don Alonso de Ercilla, the Austirada of Juan Ruffo, a magistrate of Cordova, and the Monserrato of Christopher de Virves, a Valentian poet."—"These," cried the curate, "are the best heroic poems we have in Spanish, and may vie with the most celebrated of Italy: reserve them as the most valuable performance which Spain has to boast of in poetry."

At last the curate grew so tired with prying into so many volumes, that he ordered all the rest to be burnt at a venture. But the barber showed him one which he had opened by chance ere the dreadful sentence was passed. "Truly," said the curate, who saw by the title it was the Tears of Angelica,[2] "I should have wept myself, had I caused such a book to share the condemnation of the rest; for the author was not only one of the best poets in Spain, but in the whole world, and translated some of Ovid's fables with extraordinary success."

[1] [Cervantes never fulfilled this promise.]

[2] The author so highly commended by Cervantes, is Luis Baratrona de Soto, who, like Cervantes himself, was a soldier as well as a poet. Nay, Baratrona was a physician to boot. His *Lagremas de Angelica*, in twelve cantos, appeared in 1586.

CHAPTER VII.

Don Quixote's second sally in quest of adventures.

WHILE they were thus employed, Don Quixote in a raving fit began to talk aloud to himself. "Here, here, valorous knights," cried he, "now's the time that you must exert the strength of your mighty arms; for lo, the courtiers bear away the honour of the tournament." This amazing outcry called away the inquisitors from any further examination of the library; and therefore the housekeeper and the niece being left to their own discretion, it is thought the Carolea and Leo of Spain, with the Deeds of the Emperor, written by Don Luis d'Avila,[1] which to be sure were part of the collection, were committed to the flames unseen and unheard, without any legal trial; a fate which perhaps they might have escaped, had the curate been there to have weighed what might have been urged in their defence.

When they came into Don Quixote's chamber, they found him risen out of his bed as mad as ever he was, tearing his throat, and making a heavy bustle, laying about him with his sword, back-stroke and fore-stroke, as broad awake as if he had never slept. They ran in upon him, caught him in their arms, and carried him to bed

[1] The *Carolea* is a poem treating of the victories of Charles V., printed in Valencia in 1560. Its author was *Geronimo de San Pedro*, or *Sempere*. The *Leon de España* is a poem in twenty-nine cantos, treating of the martial glories of the Leoneze. It was written by Pedro de la Vecilla, and published at Salamanca in 1586. Pellicer contends, that Cervantes is wrong in attributing "the deeds of the Emperor" to Don Luis d'Avila; and is at great pains to convince us that he must have meant Don Luis Zapata. Avila was author of the *Guerra de Almania*, and therefore entitled to be talked of as having celebrated "the deeds of the Emperor;" but Zapata's work, on the other hand, bore the very title of "Hechos del Emperador." The same person published a long *poem* on the same subject, the *Carlo Famoso*; of which he himself relates that it cost him 4000 maravedis to print it, and that he had no return whatever, but what he calls the "alongamiento de mi voluntad"—a species of profit with which Don Luis Zapata professes himself to have been by no means satisfied.

again by main force; where, after he was somewhat quiet and settled, turning himself to the curate, "Certainly," cried he, "my Lord Archbishop Turpin, 'tis a great dishonour to us who are called the twelve peers, to suffer the knights of the court to bear away the honour of the tournament without any further opposition, after we the knight adventurers had carried it for three days before." —"Be pacified, my good friend," replied the curate; "fortune may have yet a better success in reserve for you, and they who lose to-day may win to-morrow: at present think on your health, for doubtless you must needs be now extremely tired, if not very much wounded."— "Wounded!" replied Don Quixote, "no; but as for being bruised, I will not deny it, for that base-born knight Don Orlando has battered all my limbs with the trunk of an oak, out of mere envy, because he sees that I only dare rival his exploits: but may I no more be called Rinaldo of Montalban, if, in spite of his enchantments, I do not make him severely pay for this as soon as I can leave my bed; and therefore let my dinner be brought in, for 'tis what I want most at this juncture, and then let me alone to revenge this abuse." Accordingly they brought him some victuals, which when he had eaten, he fell asleep again, and they left him, all of them strangely amazed at his uncommon madness. That night the housekeeper burnt all the books, not only those in the yard, but all those that were in the house; and several suffered in the general calamity, that deserved to have been treasured up in everlasting archives, had not their fate and the remissness of the inquisitors ordered it otherwise. And thus they verified the proverb, *That the good often fare the worse for the bad.*

One of the expedients which the curate and the barber thought themselves of in order to their friend's recovery, was to stop up the door of the room where his books lay, that he might not find it, nor miss them when he rose; for they hoped the effect would cease when they had taken away the cause; and they ordered, that if he inquired about it, they should tell him, that a certain enchanter had carried away study, books and all. Two days after, Don Quixote being got up, the first thing he did was to

go visit his darling books; and as he could not find the study in the place where he had left it, he went up and down, and looked for it in every room. Sometimes he came to the place where the door used to stand, and then stood feeling and groping about a good while, then cast his eyes, and stared on every side, without speaking a word. At last, after a long deliberation, he thought fit to ask his housekeeper which was the way to his study. "What study," answered the woman, according to her instructions, "or rather, what nothing is it you look for? Alas! here's neither study nor books in the house now, for the devil is run away with them all."—"No, 'twas not the devil," said the niece, "but a conjuror, or an enchanter, as they call them, who, since you went, came hither one night mounted on a dragon on the top of a cloud, and then alighting, went into your study, where what he did, he and the devil best can tell, for a while after, he flew out at the roof of the house, leaving it all full of smoke; and when we went to see what he had done, we could neither find the books, nor so much as the very study; only the housekeeper and I very well remember, that when the old thief went away, he cried out aloud, that out of a private grudge which he bore in his mind to the owner of those books he had done the house a mischief, as we should soon perceive; and then I think he called himself the sage Muniaton."—"Not Muniaton, but Freston,[1] you should have said," cried Don Quixote.—"Truly," quoth the niece, "I can't tell whether it was Freston or Friston, but sure I am that his name ended with a ton."—"It is so," returned Don Quixote, "for he is a famous necromancer, and my mortal enemy, and bears me a great deal of malice; for seeing by his art, that in spite of all his spells, in process of time I shall fight and vanquish in single combat a knight whose interests he espouses, therefore he endeavours to do me all manner of mischief; but I dare assure him, that he strives against the stream, nor can his power reverse the first decrees of fate."—"Who doubts of that?" cried the niece: "but, dear uncle, what makes you run yourself into these quarrels? had not you better stay at home, and live in peace and quietness, than go rambling

[1] This personage figures in many terrible scenes of the Belianis.

up and down like a vagabond, and seeking for better bread than is made of wheat, without once so much as considering that many go to seek wool, and come home shorn themselves."—"Oh, good niece," replied Don Quixote, "how ill thou understandest these matters! know, that before I will suffer myself to be shorn, I will tear and pluck off the beards of all those audacious mortals, that shall attempt to profane the tip of one single hair within the verge of these mustachios." To this neither the niece nor the governess thought fit to make any reply, for they perceived the knight to grow angry.

Full fifteen days did our knight remain quietly at home, without betraying the least sign of his desire to renew his rambling; during which time there passed a great deal of pleasant discourse between him and his two friends the curate and the barber; while he maintained that there was nothing the world stood so much in need of as knights-errant; wherefore he was resolved to revive the order: in which disputes Mr. Curate sometimes contradicted him, and sometimes submitted; for had he not now and then given way to his fancies, there would have been no conversing with him.

In the mean time Don Quixote earnestly solicited one of his neighbours, a country labourer, and a good honest fellow, if we may call a poor man honest, for he was poor indeed, poor in purse, and poor in brains; and, in short, the knight talked so long to him, plied him with so many arguments, and made him so many fair promises, that at last the poor clown consented to go along with him, and become his squire. Among other inducements to entice him to do it willingly, Don Quixote forgot not to tell him, that it was likely such an adventure would present itself, as might secure him the conquest of some island in the time that he might be picking up a straw or two, and then the squire might promise himself to be made governor of the place. Allured with these large promises, and many others, Sancho Panza[1] (for that was the name of the fellow) forsook his wife and children to be his neighbour's squire.

This done, Don Quixote made it his business to furnish

[1] [i. e. Paunch.]

himself with money; to which purpose, selling one house, mortgaging another, and losing by all, he at last got a pretty good sum together. He also borrowed a target of a friend, and having patched up his head-piece and beaver as well as he could, he gave his squire notice of the day and hour when he intended to set out, that he might also furnish himself with what he thought necessary; but above all he charged him to provide himself with a wallet; which Sancho promised to do, telling him he would also take his ass along with him, which being a very good one, might be a great ease to him, for he was not used to travel much a-foot. The mentioning of the ass made the noble knight pause a while; he mused and pondered whether he had ever read of any knight-errant, whose squire used to ride upon an ass; but he could not remember any precedent for it: however, he gave him leave at last to bring his ass, hoping to mount him more honourably with the first opportunity, by unhorsing the next discourteous knight he should meet. He also furnished himself with shirts, and as many other necessaries as he could conveniently carry, according to the inn-keeper's injunctions. Which being done, Sancho Panza, without bidding either his wife or children goodbye; and Don Quixote, without taking any more notice of his housekeeper or of his niece, stole out of the village one night, not so much as suspected by anybody, and made such haste, that by break of day they thought themselves out of reach, should they happen to be pursued. As for Sancho Panza, he rode like a patriarch, with his canvas knapsack, or wallet, and his leathern bottle, having a huge desire to see himself governor of the island, which his master had promised him.

Don Quixote happened to strike into the same road which he took the time before, that is, the plains of Montiel, over which he travelled with less inconveniency than when he went alone, by reason it was yet early in the morning; at which time the rays of the sun striking obliquely upon them, did not prove so offensive.

As they jogged on, "I beseech your worship, Sir Knight-errant," quoth Sancho to his master, "be sure you don't forget what you promised me about the island; for I dare

say I shall make shift to govern it, let it be never so big." —"You must know, friend Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "that it has been the constant practice of knights-errant in former ages, to make their squires governors of the islands or kingdoms they conquered: now I am not only resolved to keep up that laudable custom, but even to improve it, and outdo my predecessors in generosity; for whereas sometimes, or rather most commonly, other knights delayed rewarding their squires till they were grown old, and worn out with services, bad days, worse nights, and all manner of hard duty, and then put them off with some title, either of count, or at least marquis of some valley or province, of great or small extent; now, if thou and I do but live, it may happen, that before we have passed six days together, I may conquer some kingdom, having many other kingdoms annexed to its imperial crown; and this would fall out most luckily for thee; for then would I presently crown thee king of one of them. Nor do thou imagine this to be a mighty matter; for so strange accidents and revolutions, so sudden and so unforeseen, attend the profession of chivalry, that I might easily give thee a great deal more than I have promised."—"Why, should this come to pass," quoth Sancho Panza, "and I be made a king by some such miracle, as your worship says, then Joan Gutierez (my mis'ess) would be at least a queen, and my children infantas."—"Who doubts of that?" cried Don Quixote. "I doubt of it," replied Sancho Panza; "for I cannot help believing, that though it should rain kingdoms down upon the face of the earth, not one of them would sit well upon Mary Gutierez's[1] head; for I must needs tell you, she's not worth two brass jacks to make a queen of: no, countess would be better for her, an't please you; and that too, God help her, will be as much as she can handsomely manage."—"Recommend the matter to Providence," returned Don Quixote, "'twill be sure to give what is most expedient for thee; but yet disdain to entertain inferior thoughts, and be not tempted to accept less than the dignity of a viceroy."—"No more I won't, sir," quoth Sancho, "especially since I have so

[1] [Sancho's wife appears under various names In Part II. she is called *Teresa Cascajo.*]

rare a master as your worship, who will take care to give me whatever may be fit for me, and what I may be able to deal with."

CHAPTER VIII.

Of the good success which the valorous Don Quixote had in the most terrifying and never-to-be-imagined adventure of the Windmills, with other transactions worthy to be transmitted to posterity.

As they were thus discoursing, they discovered some thirty or forty windmills, that are in that plain; and as soon as the knight had spied them, "Fortune," cried he, "directs our affairs better than we ourselves could have wished: look yonder, friend Sancho, there are at least thirty outrageous giants, whom I intend to encounter; and having deprived them of life, we will begin to enrich ourselves with their spoils; for they are lawful prize; and the extirpation of that cursed brood will be an acceptable service to Heaven."—"What giants?" quoth Sancho Panza. "Those whom thou see'st yonder," answered Don Quixote, "with their long extended arms; some of that detested race have arms of so immense a size, that sometimes they reach two leagues in length."—"Pray look better, sir," quoth Sancho; "those things yonder are no giants, but windmills, and the arms you fancy, are their sails, which being whirled about by the wind, make the mill go." "'Tis a sign," cried Don Quixote, "thou art but little acquainted with adventures! I tell thee, they are giants; and therefore if thou art afraid, go aside and say thy prayers, for I am resolved to engage in a dreadful unequal combat against them all." This said, he clapt spurs to his horse Rozinante, without giving ear to his squire Sancho, who bawled out to him, and assured him, that they were windmills, and no giants. But he was so fully possessed with a strong conceit of the contrary, that he did not so much as hear his squire's outcry, nor was he sensible of what they were, although he was already very near them; far from that, "Stand, cowards," cried he as loud

as he could; "stand your ground, ignoble creatures, and fly not basely from a single knight, who dares encounter you all!" At the same time the wind rising, the mill-sails began to move, which when Don Quixote spied, "Base miscreants," cried he, "though you move more arms than the giant Briareus, you shall pay for your arrogance." He most devoutly recommended himself to his Lady Dulcinea, imploring her assistance in this perilous adventure; and so covering himself with his shield, and couching his lance, he rushed with Rozinante's utmost speed upon the first windmill he could come at, and running his lance into the sail, the wind whirled it about with such swiftness, that the rapidity of the motion presently broke the lance into shivers, and hurled away both knight and horse along with it, till down he fell, rolling a good way off in the field. Sancho Panza ran as fast as his ass could drive to help his master, whom he found lying, and not able to stir, such a blow had he and Rozinante received. "Mercy o' me!" cried Sancho, "did not I give your worship fair warning? did not I tell you they were windmills, and that nobody could think otherwise, unless he had also windmills in his head?"—"Peace, friend Sancho," replied Don Quixote: "there is nothing so subject to the inconstancy of fortune as war. I am verily persuaded, that cursed necromancer Freston, who carried away my study and my books, has transformed these giants into windmills, to deprive me of the honour of the victory; such is his inveterate malice against me: but in the end, all his pernicious wiles and stratagems shall prove ineffectual against the prevailing edge of my sword."—"Amen, say I," replied Sancho. And so heaving him up again upon his legs, once more the knight mounted poor Rozinante, that was half shoulder-slipped with his fall.

This adventure was the subject of their discourse, as they made the best of their way towards the pass of Lapice, for Don Quixote took that road, believing he could not miss of adventure in one so mightily frequented. However, the loss of his lance was no small affliction to him; and as he was making his complaint about it to his squire, "I have read," said he, "friend Sancho, that a certain Spanish knight, whose name was Diego Perez de

Vargas,[1] having broke his sword in the heat of an engagement, pulled up by the roots a huge oak-tree, or at least tore down a massy branch, and did such wonderful execution, crushing and grinding so many Moors with it that day, that he won himself and his posterity the surname of The Pounder or Bruiser. I tell thee this, because I intend to tear up the next oak, or holm-tree we meet; with the trunk whereof I hope to perform such wondrous deeds, that thou wilt esteem thyself particularly happy in having had the honour to behold them, and been the ocular witness of achievements which posterity will scarce be able to believe."—"Heaven grant you may," cried Sancho: "I believe it all, because your worship says it. But, an't please you, sit a little more upright in your saddle; you ride sideling methinks; but that, I suppose, proceeds from your being bruised by the fall."—"It does so," replied Don Quixote; "and if I do not complain of the pain, it is because a knight-errant must never complain of his wounds, though his bowels were dropping out through them."[2]—"Then I have no more to say," quoth Sancho; "and yet Heaven knows my heart, I should be glad to hear your worship hone a little now and then when something ails you: for my part, I shall not fail to bemoan myself when I suffer the smallest pain, unless indeed it can be proved, that the rule of not complaining extends to the squires as well as knights."

Don Quixote could not forbear smiling at the simplicity of his squire; and told him he gave him leave to complain not only when he pleased, but as much as he pleased, whether he had any cause or no; for he had never yet read anything to the contrary in any books of chivalry. Sancho desired him, however, to consider that it was high time to go to dinner; but his master answered him, that

[1] The name of this Castilian gentleman occurs frequently both in the ballads and other records of the Moorish wars. He acquired, or was said to have acquired, the name of *Machuca* (i.e. Bruiser, or Pounder), from an incident which I find related in one of the ballads published by Sepulveda.—See Additional Note XI.

[2] The Don's doctrine is here, as it generally is, quite correct. *Marquez*, in recounting the statutes of the order de la Banda (an order instituted by Alphonzo XI.), says, its ninth law was "Que ningun caballero se quexasse de alguna herida que tuviesse," F. 50.

he might eat whenever he pleased; as for himself, he was not yet disposed to do it. Sancho having thus obtained leave, fixed himself as orderly as he could upon his ass; and taking some victuals out of his wallet, fell to munching lustily as he rode behind his master; and ever and anon he lifted his bottle to his nose, and fetched such hearty pulls, that it would have made the best-pampered vintner in Malaga dry to have seen him. While he thus went on stuffing and swilling, he did not think in the least of all his master's great promises; and was so far from esteeming it a trouble to travel in quest of adventures, that he fancied it to be the greatest pleasure in the world, though they were never so dreadful.

In fine, they passed that night under some trees; from one of which Don Quixote tore a withered branch which in some sort was able to serve him for a lance, and to this he fixed the head or spear of his broken lance. But he did not sleep all that night, keeping his thoughts intent on his dear Dulcinea, in imitation of what he had read in books of chivalry where the knights pass their time, without sleep, in forests and deserts, wholly taken up with the entertaining thoughts of their absent mistresses. As for Sancho, he did not spend the night at that idle rate; for, having his paunch well stuffed with something more substantial than dandelion-water, he made but one nap of it; and had not his master waked him, neither the sprightly beams which the sun darted on his face, nor the melody of the birds that cheerfully on every branch welcomed the smiling morn, would have been able to have made him stir. As he got up, to clear his eyesight, he took two or three long-winded swigs at his friendly bottle for a morning's draught: but he found it somewhat lighter than it was the night before; which misfortune went to his very heart, for he shrewdly mistrusted that he was not in a way to cure it of that distemper as soon as he could have wished. On the other side, Don Quixote would not break fast, having been feasting all night on the more delicate and savoury thoughts of his mistress; and therefore they went on directly towards the pass of Lapice, which they discovered about three o'clock. When they came near it, "Here it is, brother Sancho," said Don Quixote,

"that we may wanton, and, as it were, thrust our arms up to the very elbows, in that which we call adventures. But let me give thee one necessary caution; know, that though thou should'st see me in the greatest extremity of danger, thou must not offer to draw thy sword in my defence, unless thou findest me assaulted by base plebeians, and vile scoundrels; for in such a case thou may'st assist thy master: but if those with whom I am fighting are knights, thou must not do it; for the laws of chivalry do not allow thee to encounter a knight, till thou art one thyself."—"Never fear," quoth Sancho; "I'll be sure to obey your worship in that, I'll warrant you; for I have ever loved peace and quietness, and never cared to thrust myself into frays and quarrels: and yet I don't care to take blows at any one's hands neither; and should any knight offer to set upon me first, I fancy I should hardly mind your laws; for all laws, whether of God or man, allow one to stand in his own defence, if any offer to do him a mischief."—"I agree to that," replied Don Quixote; "but as for helping me against any knights, thou must set bounds to thy natural impulses."—"I'll be sure to do it," quoth Sancho; "never trust me if I don't keep your commandments as well as I do the Sabbath."

As they were talking, they spied coming towards them two friars of the order of St. Benedict mounted on two dromedaries, for the mules on which they rode were so high and stately, that they seemed little less. They wore riding-masks, with glasses at the eyes, against the dust, and umbrellas to shelter them from the sun.[1] After them came a coach, with four or five men on horseback, and two muleteers on foot. There proved to be in the coach a

[1] The Benedictines being the most wealthy religious order in Spain, at the period when Cervantes wrote, furnished, of course, the most common subjects for this species of satire; but it should never be forgotten, that, unlike many of their brethren, the Benedictines were, in general, both the followers and the liberal patrons of literature. The princely style of their literary speculations—their edition of the French historians, &c., &c., will be sufficient to preserve their memory in honour, even should they be deprived in Spain, as they have been elsewhere, of all their great possessions. They have still many magnificent establishments of education under their control at Vienna, Ratisbon, and other places of the Austrian dominion.

Biscayan lady, who was going to Seville to meet her husband, who was there in order to embark for the Indies, to take possession of a considerable post. Scarce had Don Quixote perceived the monks, who were not of the same company, though they went the same way, but he cried to his squire, "Either I am deceived, or this will prove the most famous adventure that ever was known; for without all question those two black things that move towards us must be some necromancers, that are carrying away by force some princess in that coach; and 'tis my duty to prevent so great an injury."—"I fear me this will prove a worse job than the wind-mills," quoth Sancho.—"'Slife, sir, don't you see these are Benedictine friars, and 'tis likely the coach belongs to some travellers that are in it: therefore once more take warning, and don't you be led away by the devil."—"I have already told thee, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "thou art miserably ignorant in matters of adventures: what I say is true, and thou shalt find it so presently." This said, he spurred on his horse, and posted himself just in the midst of the road where the monks were to pass. And when they came within hearing, "Cursed implements of hell," cried he in a loud and haughty tone, "immediately release those high-born princesses whom you are violently conveying away in the coach, or else prepare to meet with instant death, as the just punishment of your pernicious deeds." The monks stopped their mules, no less astonished at the figure, than at the expression of the speaker. "Sir Knight," cried they, "we are no such persons as you are pleased to term us, but religious men, of the order of St. Benedict, that travel about our affairs, and are wholly ignorant whether or no there are any princesses carried away by force in that coach."—"I am not to be deceived with fair words," replied Don Quixote; "I know you well enough, perfidious caitiffs;" and immediately, without expecting their reply, he set spurs to Rozinante, and ran so furiously, with his lance couched, against the first monk, that if he had not prudently flung himself off to the ground, the knight would certainly have laid him either dead, or grievously wounded. The other observing the discourteous usage of his companion, clapped his heels

to his overgrown mule's flanks, and scoured over the plain as if he had been running a race with the wind. Sancho Panza no sooner saw the monk fall, than he nimbly skipped off his ass, and running to him, began to strip him immediately; but then the two muleteers, who waited on the monks, came up to him, and asked why he offered to strip him? Sancho told them, that this belonged to him as lawful plunder, being the spoils won in battle by his lord and master Don Quixote. The fellows, with whom there was no jesting, not knowing what he meant by his spoils and battle, and seeing Don Quixote at a good distance in deep discourse by the side of the coach, fell both upon poor Sancho, threw him down, tore his beard from his chin, trampled on his guts, thumped and mauled him in every part of his carcase, and there left him sprawling without breath or motion. In the meanwhile the monk, scared out of his wits, and as pale as a ghost, got upon his mule again as fast as he could, and spurred after his friend, who stayed for him at a distance, expecting the issue of this strange adventure; but being unwilling to stay to see the end of it, they made the best of their way, making more signs of the cross than if the devil had been posting after them.

Don Quixote, as I said, was all that while engaged with the lady in the coach. "Lady," cried he, "your discretion is now at liberty to dispose of your beautiful self as you please; for the presumptuous arrogance of those who attempted to enslave your person lies prostrate in the dust, overthrown by this my strenuous arm: and that you may not be at a loss for the name of your deliverer, know I am called Don Quixote de la Mancha, by profession a knight-errant and adventurer, captive to that peerless beauty Donna Dulcinea del Toboso: nor do I desire any other recompense for the service I have done you, but that you return to Toboso to present yourselves to that lady, and let her know what I have done to purchase your deliverance." To this strange talk, a certain Biscayan, one of the lady's squires, who rode along with the coach, listened with great attention; and perceiving that Don Quixote not only stopped the coach, but would have it presently go back to Toboso, he bore briskly up to him, and laying

hold or his lance, "Get gone," cried he to him in bad Biscayan and worse Spanish.[1] "Get gone, thou knight, and devil go with thou; or by he who create me, if thou do not leave the coach, me kill thee now so sure as me be a Biscayan." Don Quixote, who made shift to understand him well enough, very calmly made him this answer: "Wert thou a cavalier,[2] as thou art not, ere this I would

[1] [The Biscayans, or Basques as they are now usually called, are here supposed to speak broken Spanish, the English is therefore so rendered.]

To understand fully the frequent allusions which Cervantes makes to the provincial dialects in Spain, one must of course be a Spaniard, and a learned Spaniard to boot. In general, it may be sufficient to observe, that the Latin language was gradually corrupted all over the peninsula, after the invasion of the Goths; and that out of this corruption three main dialects were by degrees formed. One of these, the Catalonian (for the Valencian was nearly the same thing), partook very much of the character of that spoken all over Provence, and the southern districts of France. In it several books were written (particularly the fine romance of Tyrant lo Blanch), but like the sister Provençal, the soft and beautiful language of the Troubadours, it never received the last finish of cultivation. In Portugal and Galicia a second dialect was formed, which the Castilians complain of as being effeminate in comparison with their own, but which can never perish, since the Lusiad has been written in it. The Castilian, finally (the third great branch), is much more near of kin to the Portuguese than to the Catalonian, and bears the same sort of relation to it which the Swedish does to the Danish, or which the English (but for political events) might have done to the Scotch. All the other provinces of the peninsula, except Portugal, being by degrees consolidated into one empire under a Castilian dynasty, the language of the court became the language of Spain,—as the modern High-Dutch has supplanted, under somewhat different circumstances, the multifarious dialects of Germany. The Castilian, however, did not assume this pre-eminence until about the middle of the 16th century.

The language of the original inhabitants of Spain previous to the Carthaginian and Roman conquests, found early and secure refuge among the Pyrenees, and in the mountainous province of Spanish Biscay. It is undoubtedly a Celtic dialect, of the same parentage with those which still survive in Wales, Brittany, Ireland, and the Highlands of Scotland. It never altered its main characteristics, nor borrowed anything more than vocables from the language of any of the nations who successively conquered the peninsula. The *Spanish* spoken by the Biscayan in the text of Cervantes, is therefore about the same sort of thing as the *English* spoken by the Highland personages who figure in *Waverley, The Legend of Montrose, &c.*

[2] [Cavallero signifies a gentleman as well as a knight; and its use in these different senses causes the quarrel between Don Quixote and the Biscayan.]

have chastised thy insolence and temerity, thou inconsiderable mortal."—"What! me no gentleman?" replied the Biscayan; "I swear thou be a liar, as me be Christian. If thou throw away lance, and draw sword, me will make no more of thee than cat does of mouse; me will show thee me be Biscayan, and gentleman by land, gentleman by sea, gentleman in spite of devil; and thou lie if thou say contrary."—"I'll try titles with you, as they said,"[1] replied Don Quixote: and with that throwing away his lance, he drew his sword, grasped his target, and attacked the Biscayan, fully bent on his destruction. The Biscayan seeing him come on so furiously, would gladly have alighted, not trusting to his mule, which was one of those scurvy jades that are let out to hire; but all he had time to do was only to draw his sword, and snatch a cushion out of the coach to serve him instead of a shield; and immediately they assaulted one another with all the fury of mortal enemies. The bystanders did all they could to prevent their fighting; but it was in vain, for the Biscayan swore in his gibberish he would kill his very lady, and all those who presumed to hinder him, if they would not let him fight. The lady in the coach being extremely affrighted at these passages, made her coachman drive out of harm's way, and at a distance was an eye-witness of the furious combat. At the same time the Biscayan let fall such a mighty blow on Don Quixote's shoulder over his target that had not his armour been sword-proof, he would have cleft him down to the very waist. The knight feeling the weight of that unmeasurable blow, cried out aloud, "Oh! lady of my soul, Dulcinea! flower of all beauty, vouchsafe to succour your champion in this dangerous combat, undertaken to set forth your worth!" The breathing out of this short prayer, the griping fast of his sword, the covering of himself with his shield, and the charging of his enemy, was but the work of a moment;

[1] The original is, "*Aora lo veredes diro Agrajes.*" Agrajes is one of the champions who figure in the Amadis, and one of the most quarrelsome of them all. This phrase, part of which is always in his mouth at the beginning of a fray, seems to have been passed into a sort of bye-word; for it occurs just in the same sort of way in Quevedo's visions, &c.

for Don Quixote was resolved to venture the fortune of the combat all upon one blow. The Biscayan, who read his design in his dreadful countenance, resolved to face him with equal bravery, and stand the terrible shock, with uplifted sword, and covered with the cushion, but was not able to manage his jaded mule, who, defying the spur, and not being cut out for such pranks, would move neither to the right nor to the left. While Don Quixote, with his sword aloft, was rushing upon the wary Biscayan, with a full resolution to cleave him asunder, all the spectators stood trembling with terror and amazement, expecting the dreadful event of those prodigious blows which threatened the two desperate combatants: the lady in the coach, with her women, making a thousand vows and offerings to all the images and places of devotion in Spain, that Providence might deliver them and the squire out of the great danger that threatened them.

But here we must deplore the abrupt end of this history, which the author leaves off just at the very point when the fortune of the battle is going to be decided, pretending he could find nothing more recorded of Don Quixote's wondrous achievements than what he had already related. However, the second undertaker of this work could not believe, that so curious a history could lie for ever inevitably buried in oblivion; or that the learned of La Mancha were so regardless of their country's glory, as not to preserve in their archives, or at least in their closets, some memoirs, as monuments of this famous knight; and therefore he would not give over inquiring after the continuation of this pleasant history, till at last he happily found it, as the next Book will inform the reader.

SECOND BOOK.

CHAPTER IX.

The event of the most stupendous combat between the brave Biscayan and the valorous Don Quixote.

IN the First Book of this history, we left the valiant Biscayan and the renowned Don Quixote with their swords lifted up, and ready to discharge on each other two furious and most terrible blows, which had they fallen directly, and met with no opposition, would have cut and divided the two combatants from head to heel, and have split them like a pomegranate: but, as I said before, the story remained imperfect; neither did the author inform us where we might find the remaining part of the relation. This vexed me extremely, and turned the pleasure, which the perusal of the beginning had afforded me, into disgust, when I had reason to despair of ever seeing the rest. Yet, after all, it seemed to me no less impossible than unjust, that so valiant a knight should have been destitute of some learned person to record his incomparable exploits; a misfortune which never attended any of his predecessors; I mean the knights-adventurers, each of whom was always provided with one or two learned men, who were always at hand to write not only their wondrous deeds, but also to set down their thoughts and childish petty actions, were they never so hidden. Therefore, as I could not imagine that so worthy a knight should be so unfortunate as to want that which has been so profusely lavished even on such a one as Platyr,[1] and others of that stamp; I could not induce myself to believe, that so admirable a history was ever left unfinished, and rather choose to think

[1] A second-rate knight in Palmerin of England.

that time, the devourer of all things, had hid or consumed it. On the other side, when I considered that several modern books were found in his study, as the *Cure of Jealousy*, and the *Nymphs and Shepherds of Henares*,[1] I had reason to think, that the history of our knight could be of no very ancient date; and that, had it never been continued, yet his neighbours and friends could not have forgotten the most remarkable passages of his life. Full of this imagination, I resolved to make it my business to make a particular and exact inquiry into the life and miracles of our renowned Spaniard Don Quixote, that refulgent glory and mirror of the knighthood of La Mancha, and the first who, in these depraved and miserable times, devoted himself to the neglected profession of knight-errantry, to redress wrongs and injuries, to relieve widows, and defend the honour of damsels; such of them, I mean, who in former ages rode up and down over hills and dales with whip in hand, mounted on their palfreys, with all their virginity about them, secure from all manner of danger, and who, unless they happened to be ravished by some boisterous villain or huge giant, were sure, at fourscore years of age (all which time they never slept one night under a roof), to be decently laid in their graves, as pure virgins as the mothers that bore them. For this reason and many others, I say, our gallant Don Quixote is worthy everlasting and universal praise; nor ought I to be denied my due commendation for my indefatigable care and diligence, in seeking and finding out the continuation of this delightful history; though, after all, I must confess, that had not Providence, chance, or fortune, as I will not inform you, assisted me in the discovery, the world had been deprived of two hours' diversion and pleasure, which it is likely to afford to those who will read it with attention. One day being in the Alcana[2] at Toledo, I saw a young lad offer to sell a parcel of old written papers to a shop-keeper. Now I, being apt to take up the least piece of written or printed papers that lies in my way, though it were in the middle of the street, could not forbear

[1] [The river Henares runs past the university of Alcalá, not far from Madrid, and is much celebrated by Spanish poets of that university.]

[2] [A street inhabited by silk-mercers, &c.]

laying my hands on one of the manuscripts, to see what it was, and I found it to be written in Arabic, which I could not read. This made me look about to see whether I could find e'er a Morisco[1] that understood Spanish, to read it for me, and give me some account of it; nor was it very difficult to meet with an interpreter there; for had I wanted one for a better and more ancient tongue,[2] that place would have infallibly supplied me. It was my good fortune to find one immediately; and having informed him of my desire, he no sooner read some lines, but he began to laugh. I asked him what he laughed at? "At a certain remark here in the margin of the book," said he. I prayed him to explain it; whereupon still laughing, he

[1] In the original, "Morisco Aljamiado." *Aljamia* (from Aljama, *a frontier*), was a term applied by the pure Arabs to denote the corrupted language of the Moors long settled in Spain. In one of the old ballads, a Moor, who communicates to the Cid a certain plot that is going on against him, is styled "Moro Latinado." How much the two languages must have been mingled in the olden times, may easily be imagined, when we remember that there are still extant several papal rescripts directed against the use of the Arabic language by the Spanish Christians; that, in spite of all these, it was found necessary, after some space, to translate the common devotional books of the Christian religion into Arabic for their use; and that, at Cordova, the Gothic laws rendered into Arabic, were appealed to in the courts of justice whenever the parties were Christians.—(See MURPHY'S *Moors in Spain*, and BOUTERWEK'S *Geschichte der Spanisches Literatur.*) Cervantes adheres closely to the romances which he designs to satirise in all this fiction about the discovery, and translation of the history of his Don. The Amadis de Gaul, the Belianis, &c., &c., are all represented as having been originally composed in the Greek tongue by "the Saga Alquife," Friston, Artemidorus, Lirgandeus, and the like learned personages. The origin of all romantic adventures was, in the eye of Cervantes' contemporaries, Moorish, and therefore he takes a Moor in place of a Greek. The Spanish commentators, finally, have discovered that *Cid Hamet Ben Engeli* is, after all, no more than an Arabian version of the name of Cervantes himself. *Cid*, as all the world knows means lord or signior. *Hamet* is a common Moorish prefix. *Ben Engeli* signifies the *son of a stag*, which, being expressed in Spanish is *hijo del ciervo, cervol*, or *cervanteno*. It is said on the next page, that this Morisco translated the whole of Ben Engeli's MS. in less than six weeks; but this is nothing to Shelton, the first English translator of Cervantes (and perhaps in some respects the best), who says, in his preface, that he finished his version in forty successive days.

[2] [Meaning some Jew, to interpret the Hebrew or Chaldee.]

did it in these words: "This Dulcinea del Toboso, so often mentioned in this history, is said to have had the best hand at salting of pork of any woman in all La Mancha." I was surprised when I heard him name Dulcinea del Toboso, and presently imagined that those old papers contained the history of Don Quixote. This made me press him to read the title of the book; which he did, turning it thus extemporarily out of Arabic: The History of Don Quixote de la Mancha; written by Cid Hamet Benengeli, an Arabian Historiographer. I was so overjoyed when I heard the title, that I had much ado to conceal it; and presently taking the bargain out of the shop-keeper's hand, I agreed with the young man for the whole; and bought that for half a real, which he might have sold me for twenty times as much, had he but guessed at the eagerness of his chapman. I immediately withdrew with my purchase to the cloister of the great church, taking the Moor with me; and desired him to translate me those papers that treated of Don Quixote, without adding or omitting the least word, offering him any reasonable satisfaction. He asked me but two[1] arrobas of raisins, and two bushels of wheat, and promised me to do it faithfully with all expedition: in short, for the quicker despatch, and the greater security, being unwilling to let such a lucky prize go out of my hands, I took the Moor to my own house, where in less than six weeks he finished the whole translation.

Don Quixote's fight with the Biscayan was exactly drawn on one of the leaves of the first quire, in the same posture as we left them with their swords lifted up over their heads, the one guarding himself with his shield, the other with his cushion. The Biscayan's mule was pictured so to the life, that with half an eye you might have known it to be an hired mule. Under the Biscayan was written Don Sancho de Aspetia, and under Rozinante Don Quixote. Rozinante was so admirably delineated, so slim, so stiff, so lean, so jaded, with so sharp a ridge-bone, and altogether so like one wasted with an incurable consumption, that any one must have owned at first sight, that no horse ever better deserved that name. Not far off

[1] [An arroba is 25 lb. weight, or 32 pints measure.]

stood Sancho Panza holding his ass by the halter; at whose feet there was a scroll, in which was written Sancho Zancas:[1] and if we may judge of him by his picture, he was thick and short, paunch-bellied, and long-haunched; so that in all likelihood for this reason he is sometimes called Panza and sometimes Zanca, in the history. There was some other niceties to be seen in that piece, but hardly worth observation, as not giving any light into this true history, otherwise they had not passed unmentioned; for none can be amiss so they be authentic. I must only acquaint the reader, that if any objection is to be made as to the veracity of this, it is only the author is an Arabian, and those of that country are not a little addicted to lying: but yet, if we consider that they are our enemies, we should sooner imagine, that the author has rather suppressed the truth, than added to the real worth of our knight; and I am the more inclinable to think so, because it is plain, that where he ought to have enlarged in his praise, he maliciously chooses to be silent; a proceeding unworthy of an historian, who ought to be exact, sincere, and impartial; free from passion, and not to be biassed either by interest, fear, resentment, or affection, to deviate from truth, which is the mother of history, the preserver and eternizer of great actions, the professed enemy of oblivion, the witness of things passed, and the director of future times. As for this history, I know it will afford you as great a variety as you could wish, in the most entertaining manner; and if in any point it falls short of your expectation, I am of opinion it is more the fault of the infidel its author, than the subject: and so let us come to the Second Book, which, according to our translation, began in this manner.

Such were the bold and formidable looks of the two enraged combatants, that with uplifted arms, and with destructive steel, they seemed to threaten heaven, earth, and the infernal mansions; while the spectators seemed wholly lost in fear and astonishment. The choleric Biscayan discharged the first blow, and that with such a force, and so desperate a fury, that had not his sword turned in his hand, that single stroke had put an end to

[1] [Haunches or shanks.]

the dreadful combat, and all our knight's adventures. But fate, that reserved him for greater things, so ordered it, that his enemy's sword turned in such a manner, that though it struck him on the left shoulder, it did him no other hurt than to disarm that side of his head, carrying away with it a great part of his helmet and one half of his ear, which like a dreadful ruin fell together to the ground. Assist me, ye powers!——but it is in vain: the fury which then engrossed the breast of our hero of La Mancha is not to be expressed; words would but wrong it; for what colour of speech can be lively enough to give but a slight sketch or faint image of his unutterable rage? Exerting all his valour, he raised himself upon his stirrups, and seemed even greater than himself; and at the same instant griping his sword fast with both hands, he discharged such a tremendous blow full on the Biscayan's cushion and his head, that in spite of so good a defence, as if a whole mountain had fallen upon him, the blood gushed out at his mouth, nose, and ears, all at once; and he tottered so in his saddle, that he had fallen to the ground immediately had he not caught hold of the neck of his mule: but the dull beast itself being roused out of its stupidity with that terrible blow, began to run about the fields; and the Biscayan having lost his stirrups and his hold, with two or three winces the mule shook him off, and threw him on the ground. Don Quixote beheld the disaster of his foe with the greatest tranquillity and unconcern imaginable; and seeing him down, slipped nimbly from his saddle, and running to him, set the point of his sword to his throat and bid him yield, or he would cut off his head. The Biscayan was so stunned, that he could make him no reply; and Don Quixote had certainly made good his threats, so provoked was he, had not the ladies in the coach, who with great uneasiness and fear beheld the sad transaction, hastened to beseech Don Quixote very earnestly to spare his life. "Truly, beautiful ladies," said the victorious knight, with a great deal of loftiness and gravity, "I am willing to grant your request; but upon condition that this same knight shall pass his word of honour to go to Toboso, and there present himself in my name before the peerless lady Donna Dulcinea, that she

may dispose of him as she shall see convenient." The lady, who was frightened almost out of her senses, without considering what Don Quixote enjoined, or inquiring who the lady Dulcinea was, promised in her squire's behalf a punctual obedience to the knight's commands. "Let him live then," replied Don Quixote, "upon your word, and owe to your intercession that pardon which I might justly deny his arrogance."

CHAPTER X.

Of the pleasant discourse which took place between Don Quixote and his squire, Sancho Panza.

SANCHO PANZA was got up again before this, not much better for the kicks and thumps bestowed on his carcase by the friars' grooms; and seeing his master engaged in fight, he went devoutly to prayers, beseeching heaven to grant him victory, that he might now win some island, in order to his being made governor of it, according to his promise. At last, perceiving the danger was over, the combat at an end, and his master ready to mount again, he ran in all haste to help him; but ere the knight put his foot in the stirrup, Sancho fell on his knees before him, and, kissing his hand, "An't please your worship," cried he, "my good lord Don Quixote, I beseech you make me governor of the island you have won in this dreadful and bloody fight; for though it were never so great, I find myself able to govern it as well as the best that has ever governed an island in the world."—"Brother Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "these are no adventures of islands; these are only rencounters on the road, where little is to be got besides a broken head, or the loss of an ear: therefore have patience, and some adventure will offer itself, which will not only enable me to prefer thee to a government, but even to something more considerable." Sancho gave him a world of thanks; and having once more kissed his hand, and the skirts of his coat of armour, he helped him to get upon Rozinante; and then leaping on

his ass, he followed the hero, who, without taking leave of those in the coach, put on a good round pace, and rode into a wood, that was not far off. Sancho made after him as fast as his ass would trot: but finding Rozinante was like to leave him behind, he was forced to call to his master to stay for him. Don Quixote accordingly checked his horse, and soon gave Sancho leisure to overtake him.

"Methinks, sir," said the fearful squire, as soon as he came up with him, "it won't be amiss for us to betake ourselves to some church, to get out of harm's way; for if that same man, whom you have fought with should do otherwise than well, I dare lay my life they will get a warrant from the Holy Brotherhood,[1] and have us taken up; which if they do, on my word it will go hard with

[1] The reader of modern romances may at first sight imagine that the Inquisition is meant, but it is not so. The terror with which the words "holy office" on all occasions inspire honest Sancho, was indeed felt at the time of his supposed existence by every man, woman, and child within the Spanish dominions. Under Ferdinand and Isabella, the injunctions of the papal bulls for the establishment of inquisitions were first carried into full effect in Castile, and afterwards in Arragon. Ximenes, Torquemada, and a long series of artful bigots effectually riveted the chain; and the delicacy observed by Cervantes himself, in all his allusions to the functionaries and functions of the Holy Office, is one of the most striking proofs of the extent to which this spiritual tyranny had, in the course of less than a century, bowed down all Spanish thought and language beneath its sway. In most of the Spanish historians, I find the establishment of the Inquisition spoken of in terms of most hypocritical adulation. In Mariana, however, although the Jesuit (himself at one time an Inquisitor) by no means says all he thinks, enough is said to let us understand something of his true sentiments. The plain and obvious arguments against a secret, a bloody, and a bigoted tribunal, are set forth very powerfully, and he has tact enough to manage it so that the effect of these is not at all done away by the pompous arguments he, as in his own person, is compelled to adduce *per contra*. See Mariana's whole chapter, entitled "Inquisitores Castellæ dati;" and particularly the passage beginning. "Grave provincialibus visum est Parentum Scelera filiorum pœnis lui; occulto accusatore reos fieri; neque cum indice compositos damnari; contra quam olim factum erat peccata in religione vindicari morte; *illud gravissimum adimi per inquisitiones loquendi liberi audiendique commercium, dispersis per urbes et oppida et agros observatoribus, quod extremum in servitute credebant*," &c. For a full account of the Spanish Inquisition, see Llorente's *Histoire de l'Inquisition en Espagne;* a masterly and very learned article by Mr. Southey, in the 'Quarterly Review;' and an able essay under the head of Inquisition, lately pub-

us ere we can get out of their clutches."—"Hold thy tongue," cried Don Quixote: "where didst thou ever read, or find that a knight-errant was ever brought before any judge for the homicides which he committed."—"I can't tell what you mean by your homilies," replied Sancho; "I do not know that ever I saw one in my born days, not I: but well I wot, that the law lays hold on those that goes to murder one another in the fields; and for your what-d'ye-call-them's, I've nothing to say to them."—"Then be not afraid, good Sancho," cried Don Quixote; "for I would deliver thee out of the hands of the Chaldeans,[1] and with much more ease out of those of the Holy Brotherhood. But come, tell me truly, dost thou believe that the whole world can boast of another knight that may pretend to rival me in valour? didst thou ever read in history, that any other ever showed more resolution to undertake, more vigour to attack, more breath to hold out, more dexterity and activity to strike, and more art and force to overthrow his enemies?"—"Not I, by my troth," replied Sancho, "I never did meet with anything like you in history, for I can neither read nor write; but that which I dare wager is, that I never in my life served a bolder master than your worship: pray Heaven this same boldness may not bring us to what I bid you beware of! All I have to put you in mind of now is, that you get your ear dressed, for you lose a deal of blood; and by good luck I have here some lint and a little white salve in my wallet."—"How needless would all this have been," cried Don Quixote, "had I but bethought myself

---

lished in the *Encyclopædia Edinensis*, by the Rev. Dr. John Hodgson of Blantyre. The "Holy Brotherhood" alluded to on the present occasion was a very necessary and useful association for the prevention of robberies and murders in the less populous districts of Spain. The state in which the country had been left, after a long series of wars and tumults, rendered it necessary for well-disposed individuals to take such steps in aid of the (in such matters) too dilatory arm of the Spanish executive. Shortly afterwards Cervantes mentions the "Santa Hermandad vieja" of Toledo, which was a particular branch of this institution, having its separate prison, &c.

[1] So the Moors were frequently called by the early Spaniards, whose archaic phraseology is continually in the mouth of Don Quixote.

of making a small bottleful of the balsam of Fierabras![1] a single drop of which would have spared us a great deal of time and medicaments."—"What is that same balsam, an't please you?"—cried Sancho.—"A balsam," answered Don Quixote, "of which I have the receipt in my head. He that has some of it may defy death itself, and dally with all manner of wounds; therefore when I have made some of it, and given it thee, if at any time thou happenest to see my body cut in two by some unlucky back-stroke, as 'tis common among us knights-errant, thou hast no more to do but to take up nicely that half of me which is fallen to the ground and clap it exactly to the other half on the saddle before the blood is congealed, always taking care to lay it just in its proper place; then thou shalt give me two draughts of that balsam, and thou shalt immediately see me become whole, and sound as an apple."—"If this be true," quoth Sancho, "I will quit you of your promise about the island this very minute, and will have nothing of your worship for what service I have done, and am to do you, but the recipe of that same balsam; for, I dare say, let me go wherever I will, it will be sure to yield me three good reals an ounce; and thus I shall make shift to pick a pretty good livelihood out of it. But stay though," continued he, "does the making stand your worship in much, sir?"—"Three quarts of it," replied Don Quixote, "may be made for three reals."—"Body of me," cried Sancho, "why do not you make some out of hand, and teach me how to make it?"—"Say no more, friend Sancho," returned Don Quixote; "I intend to teach thee much greater secrets and design thee nobler rewards: but in the meantime dress my ear, for it pains me more than I could wish." Sancho then took his lint and ointment out of his wallet; but when Don Quixote perceived the vizor of his helmet was broken, he had like to have run stark staring mad; straight laying hold on his sword, and lifting up his eyes to heaven, "By the great Creator of the universe," cried

[1] Sir Ferumbras or Fierabras was one of the greatest heroes of the Round-table of Charlemagne, although he has not the advantage of being commemorated in the original *Magnum Opus* of the Archbishop Turpin of Rheims.—See Additional Note XII.

he, "by every syllable contained in the four holy Evangelists, I swear to lead a life like the great Marquis of Mantua,[1] when he made a vow to revenge the death of his cousin Baldwin, which was never to eat bread on a table-cloth, never to lie with the dear partner of his bed, and other things, which, though they are now at present slipped out of my memory, I comprise in my vow no less than if I had now mentioned them; and this I bind myself to, till I have fully revenged myself on him that has done me this injury."

"Good your worship," cried Sancho (amazed to hear him take such a horrid oath), "think on what you are doing; for if that same knight has done as you bid him, and has gone and cast himself before my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, I do not see but you and he are quit; and the man deserves no further punishment, unless he does you some new mischief."—"'Tis well observed," replied Don Quixote; "and therefore as to the point of revenge, I revoke my oath; but I renew and confirm the rest, protesting solemnly to lead the life I mentioned, till I have by force of arms despoiled some knight of as good a helmet as mine was. Neither do thou fancy, Sancho, that I make this protestation lightly, or make a smoke of straw; no, I have a laudable precedent for it, the authority of which will sufficiently justify my imitation; for the very same thing happened about Mambrino's helmet, which cost Sacripante[2] so dear."—"Good sir," quoth

[1] Of this story I have already said something (Note, page 52). The vow of the Marquis runs thus in the ballad:

Juro per dios verdadero
De nunca peynar mis comas,
Ni los barbas mi tocare,
De no vestir otras ropas,
Ni renovar mi calzare,
Ni las armas mi quitare;
Sino fuera por un' hora;
De no comer en mantele,
Ni a mesa mi assentare
Hasta matar a Don Carloto, &c.

See a preceding note on the story of Baldwin, &c., Sylva de Romances, F. 38.

[2] For these names and Albraca (p. 98) I refer the reader to Boiardo and Ariosto.

Sancho, "let all such cursing and swearing go to the devil; there's nothing can be worse for your soul's health, nay, for your bodily health neither. Besides, suppose we should not this good while meet any one with a helmet on, what a sad case should we then be in? will your worship then keep your oath in spite of so many hardships, such as to lie rough for a month together, far from any inhabited place, and a thousand other idle penances which that mad old Marquis of Mantua punished himself with by his vow? Do but consider that we may ride I do not know how long upon this road without meeting any armed knight to pick a quarrel with; for here are none but carriers and waggoners, who are so far from wearing any helmets that it is ten to one whether they ever heard of such a thing in their lives."—"Thou art mistaken, friend Sancho," replied Don Quixote; "for we shall not be two hours this way without meeting more men in arms than there were at the siege of Albraca, to carry off the fair Angelica."—"Well then, let it be so," quoth Sancho; "and may we have the luck to come off well, and quickly win that island which costs me so dear, and then I do not care what befalls me."—"I have already bid thee not trouble thyself about this business, Sancho," said Don Quixote; "for should we miss of an island, there is either the kingdom of Denmark, or that of Sobradisa,[1] as fit for thy purpose as a ring to thy finger; and what ought to be no small comfort to thee, they are both upon *Terra firma*.[2] But we'll talk of this in its proper season: at this time I would have thee see whether thou hast anything to eat in thy wallet, that we may afterwards seek for some castle, where we may lodge this night, and make the balsam I told thee; for I protest my ear smarts extremely."—"I have here an onion," replied the squire, "a piece of cheese, and a few stale crusts of bread; but sure such coarse fare is not for such a brave knight as your worship."—"Thou art grossly mistaken, friend Sancho," answered Don Quixote; "know,

[1] [Sobradisa is the name of a fictitious kingdom which occurs, as also does Denmark, in Amadis de Gaul.]

[2] [In allusion to the famous Firm Island, in Amadis de Gaul, the land of promise to the faithful squires of knights-errant.]

that it is the glory of knights-errant to be whole months without eating: and when they do, they fall upon the first thing they meet with, though it be never so homely. Hadst thou but read as many books as I have done, thou hadst been better informed as to that point; for though I think I have read as many histories of chivalry in my time as any other man, I never could find that the knights-errant ever ate, unless it were by mere accident, or when they were invited to great feasts and royal banquets; at other times they indulged themselves with little other food besides their thoughts. Though it is not to be imagined they could live without supplying the exigencies of human nature, as being after all no more than mortal men, yet it is likewise to be supposed, that as they spent the greatest part of their lives in forests and deserts, and always destitute of a cook, consequently their usual food was but such coarse country fare as thou now offerest me. Never then make thyself uneasy about what pleases me, friend Sancho, nor pretend to make a new world, nor to unhinge the very constitution and ancient customs of knight-errantry."

"I beg your worship's pardon," cried Sancho; "for as I was never bred a scholar, I may chance to have missed in some main point of your laws of knighthood; but from this time forward I will be sure to stock my wallet with all sorts of dry fruits for you, because your worship is a knight; for myself, who am none, I will provide good poultry and other substantial victuals."—"I do not say, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "that a knight-errant is obliged to feed altogether upon fruit; I only mean, that this was their common food, together with some roots and herbs, which they found up and down the fields, of all which they had a perfect knowledge as I myself have."—"'Tis a good thing to know these herbs," cried Sancho, "for I am much mistaken, or that kind of knowledge will stand us in good stead ere long. In the meantime," continued he, "here's what good heaven has sent us." With that he pulled out the provision he had, and they fell-to heartily together. But their impatience to find out a place where they might be harboured that night, made them shorten their sorry meal, and mount again, for fear of being

benighted; so away they put on in search of a lodging. But the sun and their hopes failed them at once, as they came to a place where some goat-herds had set up some small huts; and therefore they concluded to take up their lodging there that night. This was as great a mortification to Sancho, who was altogether for a good town, as it was a pleasure to his master, who was for sleeping in the open fields, as believing, that as often as he did it, he confirmed his title to knighthood by a new act of possession.

CHAPTER XI.

What passed between Don Quixote and the Goat-herds.

The knight was very courteously received by the goat-herds; and as for Sancho, after he had set up Rozinante and his ass as well as he could, he presently repaired to the attractive smell of some pieces of kid's flesh which stood boiling in a kettle over the fire. The hungry squire would immediately have tried whether they were fit to be removed out of the kettle into the stomach, but was not put to that trouble; for the goat-herds took them off the fire and spread some sheep-skins on the ground, and soon got their rural feast ready; and cheerfully invited his master and him to partake of what they had. Next, with some coarse compliment, after the country way, they desired Don Quixote to sit down on a trough with the bottom upwards; and then six of them, who were all that belonged to that fold, squatted them down round the skins, while Sancho stood to wait upon his master, and gave him drink in a horn cup, which the goat-herds used. But he seeing his man stand behind, said to him, "That thou mayest understand, Sancho, the benefits of knight-errantry, and how the meanest retainers to it have a fair prospect of being speedily esteemed and honoured by the world, it is my pleasure that thou sit thee down by me, in the company of these good people; and that there be no difference now observed between thee and me, thy natural lord and master; that thou eat in the same dish, and drink

in the same cup; for it may be said of knight-errantry as of love, that it makes all things equal."—"I thank your worship," cried Sancho; "but yet I must needs own, had I but a good deal of meat before me, I'd eat it as well, or rather better, standing, and by myself, than if I sat by an emperor; and, to deal plainly and truly with you, I had rather munch a crust of brown bread and an onion in a corner, without any more ado or ceremony, than feed upon turkey at another man's table, where one is fain to sit mincing and chewing his meat an hour together, drink little, be always wiping his fingers and his chops, and never dare to cough nor sneeze, though he has never so much a mind to it, nor do a many things which a body may do freely by one's self: therefore, good sir, change those tokens of your kindness which I have a right to by being your worship's squire, into something that may do me more good. As for these same honours, I heartily thank you as much as if I had accepted them, but yet I give up my right to them from this time to the world's end."—"Talk no more," replied Don Quixote, "but sit thee down, for the humble shall be exalted;" and so pulling him by the arms, he forced him to sit by him.

All this while the goat-herds, who did not understand this jargon of knights-errant, chivalry, and squires, fed heartily, and said nothing, but stared upon their guests; who very fairly swallowed hunks of meat as big as their fists with a mighty appetite. The first course being over, they brought in the second, consisting of dried acorns, and half a cheese as hard as a brick; nor was the horn idle all the while, but went merrily round up and down so many times, sometimes full, and sometimes empty, like the two buckets of a well, so that they easily emptied one of the two skins of wine which they had there. And now Don Quixote having satisfied his appetite, took a handful of acorns, and looking earnestly upon them, "O happy age," cried he,[1] "which our first parents called the age of gold! not because gold, so much adored in this iron-age, was then easily

[1] This beautiful speech, for it is throughout beautiful and classical in the highest degree, is little more than a translation of one of the finest passages in Tasso's *Aminta*. "*O bell' età*," &c., end of act 1st.

purchased, but because those two fatal words, mine and thine, were distinctions unknown to the people of those fortunate times; for all things were in common in that holy age; men, for their sustenance, needed only to lift their hands, and take it from the sturdy oak, whose spreading arms liberally invited them to gather the wholesome savoury fruit; while the clear springs, and silver rivulets, with luxuriant plenty, offered them their pure refreshing water. In hollow trees, and in the clefts of rocks, the labouring and industrious bees erected their little commonwealths, that men might reap with pleasure and with ease the sweet and fertile harvest of their toils. The tough and strenuous cork-trees did of themselves, and without other art than their native liberality, dismiss and impart their broad light bark, which served to cover those lowly huts, propped up with rough-hewn stakes, that were first built as a shelter against the inclemencies of the air: all then was union, all peace, all love and friendship in the world: as yet no rude ploughshare presumed with violence to pry into the pious bowels of our mother Earth, for she without compulsion kindly yielded from every part of her fruitful and spacious bosom, whatever might at once satisfy, sustain, and indulge her frugal children. Then was the time when innocent beautiful young shepherdesses went tripping over the hills and vales: their lovely hair sometimes plaited, sometimes loose and flowing, clad in no other vestment but what was necessary to cover decently what modesty would always have concealed: the Tyrian die, and the rich glossy hue of silk, martyred and dissembled into every colour, which are now esteemed so fine and magnificent, were unknown to the innocent plainness of that age; yet bedecked with more becoming leaves and flowers, they may be said to outshine the proudest of the vain-dressing ladies of our age, arrayed in the most magnificent garbs and all the most sumptuous adornings which idleness and luxury have taught succeeding pride: lovers then expressed the passion of their souls in the unaffected language of the heart, with the native plainness and sincerity in which they were conceived, and divested of all that artificial contexture, which enervates what it labours to enforce:

imposture, deceit, and malice, had not yet crept in, and imposed themselves unbribed upon mankind in the disguise of truth and simplicity; justice, unbiassed either by favour or interest, which now so fatally pervert it, was equally and impartially dispensed; nor was the judge's fancy law, for then there were neither judges, nor causes to be judged; the modest maid might walk wherever she pleased alone, free from the attacks of lewd lascivious importuners. But in this degenerate age, fraud and a legion of ills infecting the world, no virtue can be safe, no honour be secure; while wanton desires, diffused in the hearts of men, corrupt the strictest watches, and the closest retreats; which, though as intricate and unknown as the labyrinth of Crete, are no security for chastity. Thus that primitive innocence being vanished, and oppression daily prevailing, there was a necessity to oppose the torrent of violence: for which reason the order of knighthood-errant was instituted, to defend the honour of virgins, protect widows, relieve orphans, and assist all the distressed in general. Now I myself am one of this order, honest friends; and though all people are obliged by the law of nature to be kind to persons of my order; yet since you, without knowing anything of this obligation, have so generously entertained me, I ought to pay you my utmost acknowledgment; and, accordingly, return you my most hearty thanks for the same."

All this long oration, which might very well have been spared, was owing to the acorns that recalled the golden age to our knight's remembrance, and made him thus hold forth to the goat-herds, who devoutly listened, but were edified little, the discourse not being suited to their capacities. Sancho, as well as they, was silent all the while, eating acorns, and frequently visiting the second skin of wine, which for coolness sake was hung upon a neighbouring cork-tree. As for Don Quixote, he was longer, and more intent upon his speech than upon supper. When he had done, one of the goat-herds addressing himself to him, "Sir Knight," said he, "that you may be sure you are heartily welcome, we will get one of our fellows to give us a song; he is just a-coming; a good notable young lad he is, I will say that for him, and up to the ears in love.

He is a scholard, and can read and write; and plays so rarely upon the rebeck[1] that it is a charm but to hear him." No sooner were the words out of the goat-herd's mouth, than they heard the sound of the instrument he spoke of, and presently appeared a good comely young man of about two-and-twenty years of age. The goat-herds asked him if he had supped? and he having told them he had, "Then, dear Antonio," says the first speaker, "pray thee sing us a song, to let this gentleman, our guest, see that we have those among us who know somewhat of music, for all we live amidst woods and mountains. We have told him of thee already; therefore, pray thee make our words good, and sing us the ditty thy uncle the prebendary[2] made of thy love, that was so liked in our town."—"With all my heart," replied Antonio; and so without any farther entreaty, sitting down on the stump of an oak, he tuned his fiddle, and very handsomely sang the following song.

ANTONIO.

Though love ne'er prattles at your eyes
(The eyes those silent tongues of love),
Yet sure, Olalia, you're my prize:
For truth, with zeal, even heaven can move.
I think my love you only try,
Even while I fear you've sealed my doom:
So, though involved in doubts I lie,
Hope sometimes glimmers through the gloom.
A flame so fierce, so bright, so pure,
No scorn can quench, or art improve:
Thus like a martyr I endure;
For there's a heaven to crown my love.
In dancing and in dress I strove
My proudest rivals to outvie;
In serenades I've breathed my love,
When all things slept but love and I.
I need not add, I speak your praise
Till every nymph's disdain I move;
Though thus a thousand foes I raise,
'Tis sweet to praise the fair I love.

---

[1] [*Rabel*, a fiddle, with three strings, supposed to be used by shepherds.]

[2] [*Beneficiado*, an endowed cleric.]

Teresa once your charms debased,
But I her rudeness soon reproved:
In vain her friend my anger faced;
For then I fought for her I loved.
Dear cruel fair, why then so coy?
How can you so much love withstand?
Alas! I crave no lawless joy,
But with my heart would give my hand.
Soft, easy, strong is Hymen's tie:
Oh! then no more the bliss refuse;
Oh! wed me, or I swear to die,
Or linger wretched and recluse.

Here Antonio ended his song; Don Quixote entreated him to sing another, but Sancho Panza, who had more mind to sleep than to hear the finest singing in the world, told his master, there was enough. "Good sir," quoth he, "your worship had better go and lie down where you are to take your rest this night; besides, these good people are tired with their day's labour, and rather want to go to sleep, than to sit up all night to hear ballads."—"I understand thee, Sancho," cried Don Quixote; "and indeed I thought thy frequent visiting the bottle would make thee fonder of sleep than of music."—"Make us thankful," cried Sancho, "we all liked the wine well enough."—"I do not deny it," replied Don Quixote; "but go thou and lay thee down where thou pleasest; as for me, it better becomes a man of my profession to wake than to sleep: yet stay and dress my ear before thou goest, for it pains me extremely." Thereupon one of the goat-herds beholding the wound, as Sancho offered to dress it, desired the knight not to trouble himself, for he had a remedy that would quickly cure him; and then fetching a few rosemary leaves, which grew in great plenty thereabout, he bruised them, and mixed a little salt among them, and having applied the medicine to the ear he bound it up, assuring him, he needed no other remedy; which in a little time proved very true.

CHAPTER XII.

The Story which a young Goat-herd told to those that were with Don Quixote.

A young fellow, who used to bring them provisions from the next village, happened to come while this was doing, and addressing himself to the goat-herds, "Hark ye, friends," said he, "d'ye hear the news?"—"What news?" cried one of the company. "That fine shepherd and scholar Chrysostom died this morning," answered the other; "and they say it was for love of that devilish untoward lass Marcella, rich William's daughter, that goes up and down the country in the habit of a shepherdess."—"For Marcella!" cried one of the goat-herds.—"I say for her," replied the fellow, "and what is more, it is reported, he has ordered by his will, they should bury him in the fields like any heathen Moor, just at the foot of the rock, hard by the cork-tree fountain, where they say he had the first sight of her. Nay, he has likewise ordered many other strange things to be done, which the heads of the parish won't allow of, for they seem to be after the way of the Pagans. But Ambrose, the other scholar, who likewise apparelled himself like a shepherd, is resolved to have his friend Chrysostom's will fulfilled in everything, just as he has ordered it. All the village is in an uproar. But after all, it is thought Ambrose and his friends will carry the day; and to-morrow morning he is to be buried in great state where I told you: I fancy it will be worth seeing; howsoever, be it what it will, I will even go and see it, even though I could not get back again to-morrow."—"We will all go," cried the goat-herds, "and cast lots who shall tarry to look after the goats."—"Well said, Peter," cried one of the goat-herds; "but as for casting of lots, I will save you that labour, for I will stay myself, not so much out of kindness to you neither, or want of curiosity, as because of the thorn in my toe, that will not let me go."—"Thank

you, however," quoth Peter. Don Quixote, who heard all this, entreated Peter to tell him who the deceased was, and also to give him a short account of the shepherdess.

Peter made answer, that all he knew of the matter was, that the deceased was a wealthy gentleman, who lived not far off; that he had been several years at the university of Salamanca, and then came home mightily improved in his learning. "But above all," quoth he, "it was said of him, that he had great knowledge in the stars, and whatsoever the sun and moon do in the skies, for he would tell us to a tittle the clip of the sun and moon."—"We call it an eclipse," cried Don Quixote, "and not a clip, when either of those two great luminaries is darkened."—"He would also," continued Peter, who did not stand upon such nice distinctions, "foretell when the year would be plentiful or *estril*."—"You would say *steril*," cried Don Quixote.—"*Steril* or *estril*," replied the fellow, "that is all one to me: but this I say, that his parents and friends, being ruled by him, grew woundy rich in a short time;[1] for he would tell them, This year sow barley, and no wheat: in this you may sow pease, and no barley: next year will be a good year for oil: the three after that, you won't gather a drop; and whatsoever he said would certainly come to pass."—"That science," said Don Quixote, "is called astrology."—"I do not know what you call it," answered Peter, "but I know he knew all this, and a deal more. But in short, within some few months after he had left the varsity, on a certain morning we saw him come dressed for all the world like a shepherd, and driving his flock, having laid down the long gown, which he used to wear as a scholar. At the same time one Ambrose, a great friend of his, who had been his fellow scholar also, took upon him to go like a shepherd, and keep him company, which we all did not a little marvel at. I had almost forgot to tell you how he that is dead was a mighty man for making of verses, inso-

[1] Cervantes here has in his eye that passage in Aristotle's Politics, where the story is told of a Cretan sage, who, being reproached with the unproductiveness of his philosophical pursuits, answered, he could, if he chose, draw an abundant revenue from his science; and, accordingly, did soon realise a fortune, in consequence of arranging his crops, &c., so as to suit the weather he foresaw.

much that he commonly made the carols which we sang on Christmas-Eve, and the plays which the young lads in our neighbourhood enacted on Corpus Christi day;[1] and every one would say that nobody could mend them. Somewhat before that time Chrysostom's father died, and left him a deal of wealth, both in land, money, cattle, and other goods, whereof the young man remained dissolute master; and in troth he deserved it all, for he was as good-natured a soul as e'er trod on shoe of leather; mighty good to the poor, a main friend to all honest people, and had a face like a blessing. At last it came to be known, that the reason of his altering his garb in that fashion, was only that he might go up and down after that shepherdess Marcella, whom our comrade told you of before, for he was fallen mightily in love with her. And now I will tell you such a thing you never heard the like in your born days, and may not chance to hear of such another while you breathe, though you were to live as long as Sarnah.—"Say Sarah," cried Don Quixote, who hated to hear him blunder thus.—"The Sarna, or the itch, for that is all one with us," quoth Peter, "lives long enough too; but if you go on thus, and make me break off my tale at every word, we are not like to have done this twelvemonth."—"Pardon me, friend," replied Don Quixote; "I only spoke to make thee understand that there is a difference between Sarna and Sarah: however, thou sayest well; for the Sarna (that is, the itch) lives longer than Sarah; therefore pray make an end of thy story, for I will not interrupt thee any more."

"Well then," quoth Peter, "you must know, good master of mine, that there lived near us one William, a yeoman, who was richer yet than Chrysostom's father; now he had no child in the varsal world but a daughter; her mother died in child-bed of her (rest her soul), and was as good a woman as ever went upon two legs: methinks I see her yet standing afore me, with that blessed face of hers, the sun on one side, and the moon on the t'other. She was a main housewife, and did a deal

[1] These *plays* were of the same nature with our own *mysteries*, founded, namely, upon subjects taken from holy writ. Such performances were usual all over Europe at this time on Corpus Christi day, and several other festivals of the church.

of good among the poor: for which I dare say she is at this minute in Paradise. Alas! her death broke old William's heart; he soon went after her, poor man, and left all to his little daughter, that Marcella by name, giving charge of her to her uncle, the parson of our parish. Well, the girl grew such a fine child, and so like her mother, that it used to put us in mind of her every foot: however, 'twas thought she'd make a finer woman yet: and so it happened indeed; for, by the time that she was fourteen or fifteen years of age, no man set his eyes on her, that did not bless heaven for having made her so handsome; so that most men fell in love with her, and were ready to run mad for her. All this while her uncle kept her up very close: yet the report of her great beauty and wealth spread far and near, insomuch, that she had I don't know how many sweethearts, almost all the young men in our town asked her of her uncle; nay from I don't know how many leagues about us, there flocked whole droves of suitors, and the very best in the country too, who all begged, and sued, and teazed her uncle to let them have her. But though he'd have been glad to have got fairly rid of her, as soon as she was fit for a husband, yet would not he advise or marry her against her will; for he's a good man, I'll say that for him, and a true Christian every inch of him, and scorns to keep her from marrying to make a benefit of her estate; and, to his praise be it spoken, he has been mainly commended for it more than once, when the people of our parish meet together. For I must tell you, Sir Errant, that here in the country, and in our little towns, there is not the least thing can be said or done, but people will talk and find fault: but let busy-bodies prate as they please, the parson must have a good body indeed, who could bring his whole parish to give him a good word, especially in the country."—"Thou art in the right," cried Don Quixote, "and therefore go on, honest Peter, for the story is pleasant, and thou tellest it with a grace."—"May I never want God's grace," quoth Peter, "for that is most to the purpose. But for our parson, as I told you before, he was not for keeping his niece from marrying, and therefore he took care to let her know of all

those that would have taken her to wife, both what they were, and what they had, and he was at her, to have her pitch upon one of them for a husband; yet would she never answer otherwise, but that she had no mind to wed as yet, as finding herself too young for the burden of wedlock. With these and such-like come-offs, she got her uncle to let her alone, and wait till she thought fit to choose for herself: for he was wont to say, that parents are not to bestow their children where they bear no liking; and in that he spoke like an honest man. And thus it happened, that when we least dreamed of it, that coy lass, finding herself at liberty, would needs turn shepherdess; and neither her uncle, nor all those of the village who advised her against it, could work anything upon her, but away she went to the fields to keep her own sheep with the other young lasses of the town. But then it was ten times worse; for no sooner was she seen abroad, when I cannot tell how many spruce gallants, both gentlemen and rich farmers, changed their garb for love of her, and followed her up and down in shepherd's guise. One of them, as I have told you, was this same Chrysostom, who now lies dead, of whom it is said, he not only loved, but worshipped her. Howsoever, I would not have you think or surmise, because Marcella took that course of life, and was as it were under no manner of keeping, that she gave the least token of naughtiness or light behaviour; for she ever was, and is still so coy, and so watchful to keep her honour pure and free from evil tongues, that among so many suitors who woo her, there is not one can make his brags of having the least hope of ever speeding with her. For though she does not shun the company of shepherds, but uses them courteously, so far as they behave themselves handsomely; yet whensoever any one of them does but offer to break his mind to her, be it never so well meant, and only in order to marry, she casts him away from her as with a sling, and will never have any more to say to him.

"And thus this fair maiden does more harm in this country than the plague would do; for her courteousness and fair looks draw on everybody to love her; but then her dogged stubborn coyness breaks their hearts, and

makes them ready to hang themselves; and all they can do, poor wretches, is to make a heavy complaint, and call her cruel, unkind, ungrateful, and a world of such names. whereby they plainly show what a sad condition they are in. Were you but to stay here some time, you'd hear these hills and valleys ring again with the doleful moans of those she has denied, who yet cannot, for the blood of them, give over sneaking after her. We have a place not far off, where there are some two dozen of beech trees, and on them all you may find I don't know how many Marcellas cut in the smooth bark. On some of them there is a crown carved over the name, as much as to say that Marcella bears away the crown, and deserves the garland of beauty. Here sighs one shepherd, there another whines; here is one singing doleful ditties, there another is wringing his hands and making woeful complaints. You will have one lay him down at night at the foot of a rock, or some oak, and there lie weeping and wailing without a wink of sleep, and talking to himself till the sun finds him the next morning; you will have another lie stretched upon the hot sandy ground, breathing his sad lamentations to heaven, without heeding the sultry heat of the summer sun. And all this while the hard-hearted Marcella ne'er minds any one of them, and does not seem to be the least concerned for them. We are all mightily at a loss to know what will be the end of all this pride and coyness, who shall be the happy man that shall at last tame her, and bring her to his lure. Now because there is nothing more certain than all this, I am the more apt to give credit to what our comrade has told us, as to the occasion of Chrysostom's death; and therefore I would needs have you go and see him laid in his grave to-morrow; which I believe will be worth your while, for he had many friends, and it is not half a league to the place where it was his will to be buried."—"I intend to be there," answered Don Quixote, "and in the meantime I return thee many thanks for the extraordinary satisfaction this story has afforded me."—"Alas! Sir Knight," replied the goat-herd, "I have not told you half the mischiefs this proud creature hath done here, but to-morrow mayhap we shall meet some shepherd by the way that will be able to

tell you more. Meanwhile it won't be amiss for you to take your rest in one of the huts; for the open air is not good for your wound, though what I've put to it is so special a medicine that there's not much need to fear but t'will do well enough." Sancho, who was quite out of patience with the goat-herd's long story, and wished him at the devil for his pains, at last prevailed with him to lie down in Peter's hut, where Don Quixote, in imitation of Marcella's lovers, devoted the remainder of the night to amorous expostulations with his dear Dulcinea. As for Sancho, he laid himself down between Rozinante and his ass, and slept it out, not like a disconsolate lover, but like a man that had been soundly kicked and bruised in the morning.

CHAPTER XIII.

A continuation of the Story of Marcella.

Scarce had day begun to appear from the balconies of the east, when five of the goat-herds got up, and having waked Don Quixote, asked him if he held his resolution of going to the funeral, whither they were ready to bear him company. Thereupon the knight, who desired nothing more, presently arose, and ordered Sancho to get Rozinante and the ass ready immediately; which he did with all expedition, and then they set forwards. They had not gone yet a quarter of a league, before they saw advancing towards them, out of a cross path, six shepherds clad in black skins, their heads crowned with garlands of cypress and bitter rose-bay-tree, with long holly-staves in their hands. Two gentlemen on horseback, attended by three young lads on foot, came immediately after them: as they drew near, they saluted one another civilly, and after the usual question,—"Which way d'ye travel?" they found they were all going the same way, to see the funeral; and so they all joined company. "I fancy, Senior Vivaldo," said one of the gentlemen, addressing himself to the other, "we shall not think our time mis-

spent in going to see this famous funeral, for it must of necessity be very extraordinary, according to the account which these men have given us of the dead shepherd and his murdering mistress."—"I am so far of your opinion," answered Vivaldo, "that I would not stay one day, but a whole week, rather than miss the sight." This gave Don Quixote occasion to ask them what they had heard concerning Chrysostom and Marcella? One of the gentlemen made answer, "That having met that morning with these shepherds, they could not forbear inquiring of them, why they wore such a mournful dress? whereupon one of them acquainted them with the sad occasion, by relating the story of a certain shepherdess, named Marcella, no less lovely than cruel, whose coyness and disdain had made a world of unfortunate lovers, and caused the death of that Chrysostom, to whose funeral they were going. In short, he repeated to Don Quixote all that Peter had told him the night before. After this, Vivaldo asked the knight why he travelled so completely armed in so peaceable a country? "My profession," answered the champion, "does not permit me to ride otherwise. Luxurious feasts, sumptuous dresses, and downy ease, were invented for effeminate courtiers; but labour, vigilance, and arms, are the portion of those whom the world calls knights-errant, of which number I have the honour to be one, though the most unworthy and the meanest of the fraternity." He needed to say no more to satisfy them his brains were out of order; however, that they might the better understand the nature of his folly, Vivaldo asked him, what he meant by a knight-errant? "Have you not read then," cried Don Quixote, "the Annals and History of Britain, where are recorded the famous deeds of King Arthur, who, according to an ancient tradition in that kingdom, never died, but was turned into a crow by enchantment, and shall one day resume his former shape, and recover his kingdom again? For which reason, since that time, the people of Great Britain dare not offer to kill a crow.[1] In

[1] It is supposed that the superstition alluded to in the text had, in reality, gone so far, as to have influence at least on the *Welsh* legislators; for in the laws of Hoel the Good, we find a heavy fine appointed to be paid by every person who kills a raven (Leges Hoeli

this good king's time, the most noble order of the Knights of the Round Table was first instituted, and then also the amours between Sir Lancelot of the Lake and Queen Guinever were really transacted, as that history relates; they being managed and carried on by the mediation of that honourable matron the Lady Quintaniona. Which produced that excellent history in verse so sung and celebrated here in Spain—

> 'There never was on earth a knight
> So waited on by ladies fair,
> As once was he Sir Lancelot hight,
> When first he left his country dear:'[1]

And the rest, which gives so delightful an account both of his loves and feats of arms. From that time the order of knight-errantry began by degrees to dilate and extend itself into most parts of the world. Then did the great Amadis de Gaul signalise himself by heroic exploits, and so did his offspring to the fifth generation. The valorous Felixmart of Hyrcania then got immortal fame, and that undaunted knight Tirante the White, who never can be applauded to his worth. Nay, had we but lived a little sooner, we might have been blessed with the conversation of that invincible knight of our modern times, the valorous Don Belianis of Greece. And this, gentlemen, is that order of chivalry, which, sinner as I am, I profess, with a due observance of the laws which those brave knights observed before me; and for that reason I choose to wander through these solitary deserts, seeking adventures, fully resolved to expose my person to the most formidable dangers which fortune can obtrude on me, that by the strength of my arm I may relieve the weak and the distressed."

After all this stuff, you may be sure the travellers were

Boni, Londini, 1730, p. 334), and I do not think any origin of such a law could be pointed out either more rational or more probable, than the prevalence of this reverential feeling towards Arthur. The inscription on the tombstone of Arthur was (according to the monkish chroniclers, too often rivals of the romancers),

Hic jacet Arthurus Rex quondam Rexque Futurus.

[1] [See Additional Note VII.]

sufficiently convinced of Don Quixote's frenzy. Nor were they less surprised than were all those who had hitherto discovered so unaccountable a distraction in one who seemed a rational creature. However, Vivaldo, who was of a gay disposition, had no sooner made the discovery, but he resolved to make the best advantage of it, that the shortness of the way would allow.

Therefore, to give him further occasion to divert them with his whimsies, "Methinks, Sir Knight-errant," said he to him, "you have taken up one of the strictest and most mortifying professions in the world. I don't think but that a Carthusian friar has a better time on't than you have."—"Perhaps," answered Don Quixote, "the profession of a Carthusian may be as austere, but I am within two fingers' breadth of doubting, whether it may be as beneficial to the world as ours. For, if we must speak the truth, the soldier, who puts his captain's command in execution, may be said to do as much at least as the captain who commanded him. The application is easy: for, while those religious men have nothing to do, but with all quietness and security to say their prayers for the prosperity of the world, we knights, like soldiers, execute what they do but pray for, and procure those benefits to mankind, by the strength of our arms, and at the hazard of our lives, for which they only intercede. Nor do we do this sheltered from the injuries of the air, but under no other roof than that of the wide heavens, exposed to summer's scorching heat, and winter's pinching cold. So that we may justly style ourselves the ministers of heaven, and the instruments of its justice upon earth; and as the business of war is not to be compassed without vast toil and labour, so the religious soldier must undoubtedly be preferred before the religious monk, who, living still quiet and at ease, has nothing to do but to pray for the afflicted and distressed. However, gentlemen, do not imagine I would insinuate that the profession of a knight-errant was a state of perfection equal to that of a holy recluse: I would only infer from what I have said, and what I myself endure, that ours without question is more laborious, more subject to the discipline of heavy blows, to maceration, to the penance of hunger and thirst,

and, in a word, to rags, to want, and misery. For if you find that some knights-errant have at last by their valour been raised to thrones and empires,[1] you may be sure it has been still at the expense of much sweat and blood. And had even those happier knights been deprived of those assisting sages and enchanters, who helped them in all emergencies, they would have been strangely disappointed of their mighty expectations."—"I am of the same opinion," replied Vivaldo; "but one thing among many others, which I can by no means approve in your profession, is, that when you are just going to engage in some very hazardous adventure, where your lives are evidently to be much endangered, you never once remember to commend yourselves to God, as every good Christian ought to do on such occasions, but only recommend yourselves to your mistresses,[2] and that with as great zeal and devotion as if you worshipped no other deity; a thing which, in my opinion, strongly relishes of Paganism."

"Sir," replied Don Quixote, "there is no altering that method: for should a knight-errant do otherwise, he would too much deviate from the ancient and established customs of knight-errantry, which inviolably oblige him just in the moment when he is rushing on, and giving birth to some doughty achievement, to have his mistress still before his eyes, still present to his mind, by a strong and lively imagination, and with soft, amorous, and energetic looks, imploring her favour and protection in that perilous circumstance. Nay, if nobody can overhear him, he is obliged to whisper, or speak between his teeth, some short ejaculations, to recommend himself with all the fervency

[1] Of such elevations, we have already had occasion to notice several instances. They are as plentiful as blackberries in the romances. Reynaldo de Montalban became Emperor of Trebizond (according to the Sylva de Romances, p. 76). In Esplandian, c. 177, we are told, that "El emperador casando a su hija Leonorina con Esplandian les renuncio todo su imperio." Bernardo del Carpio "se casa con Olympia, haziendole Rey de Irlanda" (Espinosa, canto 33). Palmerin d'Oliva became Emperor of Constantinople. Tirante the White became "Principe y Cesar del Imperio de Grecia," &c. &c. &c.

[2] The same reproach was once made to Tirante the White: His answer was, "El que a muchos sirve no sirve a ninguno" [who serves many serves none].—Lib. iii. cap. 28.

imaginable to the lady of his wishes, and of this we have innumerable examples in history. Nor are you for all this to imagine that knights-errant omit recommending themselves to Heaven, for they have leisure enough to do it even in the midst of the combat."

"Sir," replied Vivaldo, "you must give me leave to tell you, I am not yet thoroughly satisfied in this point: for I have often observed in my reading, that two knights-errant, having first talked a little together, have fallen out presently, and been so highly provoked, that, having turned their horses' heads to gain room for the career, they have wheeled about, and then with all speed run full tilt at one another, hastily recommending themselves to their mistresses in the midst of their career; and the next thing has commonly been, that one of them has been thrown to the ground over the crupper of his horse, fairly run through and through with his enemy's lance; and the other forced to catch hold of his horse's mane to keep himself from falling. Now I cannot apprehend how the knight that was slain had any time to recommend himself to Heaven, when his business was done so suddenly. Methinks those hasty invocations, which in his career were directed to his mistress, should have been directed to Heaven, as every good Christian would have done. Besides, I fancy every knight-errant has not a mistress to invoke, nor is every one of them in love."—"Your conjecture is wrong," replied Don Quixote; "a knight-errant cannot be without a mistress; 'tis not more essential for the skies to have stars, than 'tis to us to be in love. Insomuch, that I dare affirm, that no history ever made mention of any knight-errant, that was not a lover; for were any knight free from the impulses of that generous passion, he would not be allowed to be a lawful knight, but a misborn intruder, and one who was not admitted within the pale of knighthood at the door, but leaped the fence, and stole in like a robber and a thief."—"Yet, sir," replied the other, "I am much mistaken, or I have read that Don Galaor, the brother of Amadis, never had any certain mistress to recommend himself to, and yet for all that he was not the less esteemed."

"One swallow does not make a summer," answered Don

Quixote. "Besides, I know that knight was privately very much in love: and as for his making his addresses, wherever he met with beauty, this was an effect of his natural inclination, which he could not easily restrain. But after all, 'tis an undeniable truth, that he had a favourite lady, whom he had crowned empress of his will; and to her he frequently recommended himself in private, for he did not a little value himself upon his discretion and secrecy in love."—"Then, sir," said Vivaldo, "since 'tis so much the being of knight-errantry to be in love, I presume you, who are of that profession, cannot be without a mistress. And therefore, if you do not set up for secrecy as much as Don Galaor did, give me leave to beg of you, in the name of all the company, that you will be pleased so far to oblige us, as to let us know the name and quality of your mistress, the place of her birth, and the charms of her person. For, without doubt, the lady cannot but esteem herself happy in being known to all the world to be the object of the wishes of a knight so accomplished as yourself." With that Don Quixote, breathing out a deep sigh, "I cannot tell," said he, "whether this lovely enemy of my repose is the least affected with the world's being informed of her power over my heart: all I dare say, in compliance with your request, is, that her name is Dulcinea, her country La Mancha, and Toboso the happy place which she honours with her residence. As for her quality, it cannot be less than princess, seeing she is my mistress and my queen. Her beauty transcends all the united charms of her whole sex; even those chimerical perfections, which the hyperbolical imaginations of poets in love have assigned to their mistresses, cease to be incredible descriptions when applied to her, in whom all those miraculous endowments are most divinely centred. The curling locks of her bright flowing hair are purest gold; her smooth forehead the Elysian Plain; her eyebrows are two celestial bows; her eyes two glorious suns; her cheeks two beds of roses; her lips are coral; her teeth are pearl; her neck is alabaster; her breasts marble; her hands ivory; and snow would lose its whiteness near her bosom. Then for the parts which modesty has veiled, my imagination, not to wrong them, chooses to lose itself in silent admira-

tion; for nature boasts nothing that may give an idea of their incomparable worth."[1]

"Pray, sir," cried Vivaldo, "oblige us with an account of her parentage, and the place of her birth, to complete the description."—"Sir," replied Don Quixote, "she is not descended from the ancient Curtiuses, Caiuses, nor Scipios of Rome, nor from the more modern Colonnas, nor Orsinis; nor from the Moncadas, and Requesenses of Catalonia; nor from the Rebellas and Villanovas of Valencia; nor from the Palafoxes, Nuzas, Rocabertis, Corellas, Lunas, Alagones, Urreas, Foces, or Gurreas of Arragon; nor from the Cerdas, Manriques, Mendozas, and Gusmans of Castile; nor from the Alencastros, Pallas, and Menezes of Portugal; but she derives her descent from the family of Toboso in La Mancha, a race, which, though it be modern, is sufficient to give a noble beginning to the most illustrious progenies of succeeding ages. And let no man presume to contradict me in this, unless it be upon those conditions, which Zerbin fixed at the foot of Orlando's armour,

> Let none but he these arms displace,
> Who dares Orlando's fury face."[2]

"I draw my pedigree from the Cachopines of Laredo,"[3] replied Vivaldo, "yet I dare not make any comparisons with the Tobosos of La Mancha; though, to deal sincerely with you, 'tis a family I never heard of till this moment."—"'Tis strange," said Don Quixote, "you should never have heard of it before."

All the rest of the company gave great attention to this

[1] [This rhapsody has a striking similarity to Ariosto's description of Alcina. *Orl. Furioso*, Canto vii.]

[2] See Ariosto, Canto 24:

> ——— Nessun le muova
> Che star non possa con Roldan a pruova, &c.

[3] Bowles, upon the authority of the venerable Sir Isaac Heard, mentions that an old house was pulled down at St. Andrews not very long ago, on a stone in the interior wall of which appeared this inscription:

> Antes falten Robles y Enzinas
> Que las casas Cachopinas.

discourse; and even the very goat-herds and shepherds were now fully convinced that Don Quixote's brains were turned topsy-turvy. But Sancho Panza believed every word that dropped from his master's mouth to be truth, as having known him, from his cradle, to be a man of sincerity. Yet that which somewhat staggered his faith, was this story of Dulcinea of Toboso; for he was sure he had never heard before of any such princess, nor even of the name, though he lived hard by Toboso.

As they went on thus discoursing, they saw, upon the hollow road between the neighbouring mountains, about twenty shepherds more, all accoutred in black skins, with garlands on their heads, which, as they afterwards perceived, were all of yew or cyprus; six of them carried a bier covered with several sorts of boughs and flowers: which one of the goat-herds espying, "Those are they," cried he, "that are carrying poor Chrysostom to his grave; and 'twas in yonder bottom that he gave charge they should bury his corpse." This made them all double their pace, that they might get thither in time; and so they arrived just as the bearers had set down the bier upon the ground, and four of them had begun to open the ground with their spades, just at the foot of a rock. They all saluted each other courteously, and condoled their mutual loss; and then Don Quixote, with those who came with him, went to view the bier; where they saw the dead body of a young man in shepherd's weeds all strewed over with flowers. The deceased seemed to be about thirty years old; and, dead as he was, it was easily perceived that both his face and shape were extraordinarily handsome. Within the bier were some few books and several papers, some open, and the rest folded up. This doleful object so strangely filled all the company with sadness, that not only the beholders, but also the grave-makers, and all the mourning shepherds, remained a long time silent; till at last one of the bearers, addressing himself to one of the rest, "Look, Ambrose," cried he, "whether this be the place which Chrysostom meant, since you must needs have his will so punctually performed?"—"This is the very place," answered the other; "there it was that my unhappy friend many times told me the sad story of his

cruel fortune; and there it was that he first saw that mortal enemy of mankind; there it was that he made the first discovery of his passion, no less innocent than violent; there it was that the relentless Marcella last denied, shunned him, and drove him to that extremity of sorrow and despair that hastened the sad catastrophe of his tragical and miserable life; and there it was, that, in token of so many misfortunes, he desired to be committed to the bowels of eternal oblivion."

Then addressing himself to Don Quixote and the rest of the travellers, "This body, gentlemen," said he, "which here you now behold, was once enlivened by a soul which heaven had enriched with the greatest part of its most valuable graces. This is the body of that Chrysostom who was unrivalled in wit, matchless in courteousness, incomparable in gracefulness, a phœnix in friendship, generous and magnificent without ostentation, prudent and grave without pride, modest without affectation, pleasant and complaisant without meanness; in a word, the first in every estimable qualification and second to none in misfortune: he loved well, and was hated; he adored, and was disdained; he begged pity of cruelty itself; he strove to move obdurate marble; pursued the wind; made his moans to solitary deserts; was constant to ingratitude; and for the recompense of his fidelity, became a prey to death in the flower of his age, through the barbarity of a shepherdess, whom he strove to immortalise by his verse; as these papers which are here deposited might testify, had he not commanded me to sacrifice them to the flames, at the same time that his body was committed to the earth."

"Should you do so," cried Vivaldo, "you would appear more cruel to them than their exasperated unhappy parent. Consider, sir, 'tis not consistent with discretion, nor even with justice, so nicely to perform the request of the dead when 'tis repugnant to reason. Augustus Cæsar himself would have forfeited his title to wisdom, had he permitted that to have been effected which the divine Virgil had ordered by his will. Therefore, sir, now that you resign your friend's body to the grave, do not hurry thus the noble and only remains of that dear unhappy man to a worse

fate, the death of oblivion. What though he has doomed them to perish in the height of his resentment, you ought not indiscreetly to be their executioner; but rather reprieve and redeem them from eternal silence, that they may live, and, flying through the world, transmit to all ages the dismal story of your friend's virtue and Marcella's ingratitude, as a warning to others, that they may avoid such tempting snares and enchanting destructions; for not only to me, but to all here present, is well known the history of your enamoured and desperate friend: we are no strangers to the friendship that was between you, as also to Marcella's cruelty, which occasioned his death. Last night being informed that he was to be buried here to-day, moved not so much by curiosity as pity, we are come to behold with our eyes that which gave us so much trouble to hear. Therefore, in the name of all the company, like me, deeply affected with a sense of Chrysostom's extraordinary merit, and his unhappy fate, and desirous to prevent such deplorable disasters for the future, I beg that you will permit me to save some of these papers, whatever you resolve to do with the rest."

And so, without awaiting an answer, he stretched out his arm, and took out those papers which lay next to his hand. "Well, sir," said Ambrose, "you have found a way to make me submit, and you may keep those papers, but for the rest, nothing shall make me alter my resolution of burning them." Vivaldo said no more; but being impatient to see what these papers were, which he had rescued from the flames, he opened one of them immediately, and read the title of it, which was, *The Song of Despair*. "That," said Ambrose, "was the last piece my dear friend ever wrote; and therefore, that you may all hear to what a sad condition his unhappy passion had reduced him, read it aloud, I beseech you, sir, while the grave is making."—"With all my heart," replied Vivaldo: and so the company, having the same desire, presently gathered round about him, and he read the following lines.

CHAPTER XIV.

The unfortunate Shepherd's despairing Verses, and other unexpected matters.

CHRYSOSTOM'S SONG.[1]

RELENTLESS tyrant of my heart,
Attend, and hear thy slave impart
The matchless story of his pain.
In vain I labour to conceal
What my extorted groans reveal;
Who can be rack'd, and not complain?

But oh! who duly can express
Thy cruelty, and my distress?
No human art, no human tongue.
Then fiends assist, and rage infuse!
A raving fury be my muse,
And hell inspire the dismal song!

Owls, ravens, terrors of the night,
Wolves, monsters, fiends, with dire affright,
Join your dread accents to my moans!
Join, howling winds, your sullen noise;
Thou, grumbling thunder, join thy voice;
Mad seas, your roar, and hell thy groans.

Though still I moan in dreary caves,
To desert rocks, and silent graves,
My loud complaints shall wander far;
Borne by the winds they shall survive,
By pitying echoes kept alive,
And fill the world with my despair.

Love's deadly cure is fierce disdain,
Distracting fear a dreadful pain,
And jealousy a matchless woe;
Absence is death, yet while it kills
I live with all these mortal ills,
Scorn'd, jealous, loath'd, and absent too.

---

[1] [This is a very inexact and condensed rendering of the original poem, which consists of 133 lines in 16-line stanzas, very ingeniously and elegantly rhymed.]

No dawn of hope e'er cheer'd my heart,
No pitying ray e'er sooth'd my smart,
All, all the sweets of life are gone;
Then come despair, and frantic rage,
With instant fate my pain assuage,
And end a thousand deaths by one.

But even in death let love be crown'd,
My fair destroyer guiltless found,
And I be thought with justice scorn'd:
Thus let me fall unloved, unbless'd,
With all my load of woes oppress'd,
And even too wretched to be mourn'd.

O! thou, by whose destructive hate,
I'm hurried to this doleful fate,
When I'm no more, thy pity spare!
I dread thy tears; oh, spare them then—
But oh! I rave, I was too vain,
My death can never cost a tear.

Tormented souls, on you I call,
Hear one more wretched than you all:
Come howl as in redoubled flames!
Attend me to th' eternal night,
No other dirge or fun'ral rite
A poor despairing lover claims.

And thou my song, sad child of woe,
When life is gone, and I'm below,
For thy lost parent cease to grieve.
With life and thee my woes increase,
And should they not by dying cease,
Hell has no pains like those I leave.

These verses were well approved by all the company: only Vivaldo observed, that the jealousies and fears of which the shepherd complained, did not very well agree with what he had heard of Marcella's unspotted modesty and reservedness. But Ambrose, who had been always privy to the most secret thoughts of his friend, informed him that the unhappy Chrysostom wrote those verses when he had torn himself from his adored mistress, to try whether absence, the common cure of love, would relieve him, and mitigate his pain. And as everything disturbs an absent lover, and nothing is more usual than for him to torment himself with a thousand chimeras of his own brain, so did Chrysostom perplex himself with jealousies and

suspicions, which had no ground but in his distracted imagination; and therefore whatever he said in those uneasy circumstances, could never affect, or in the least prejudice Marcella's virtuous character, upon whom, setting aside her cruelty, and her disdainful haughtiness, envy itself could never fix the least reproach. Vivaldo being thus convinced, they were going to read another paper, when they were prevented by a marvellous apparition (as it seemed) that offered itself to their view. It was Marcella herself, who appeared at the top of the rock, at the foot of which they were digging the grave; but so beautiful, that fame seemed rather to have lessened than to have magnified her charms: those who had never seen her before gazed on her with silent wonder and delight; nay, those who were used to see her seemed no less lost in admiration than the rest.

But scarce had Ambrose spied her, when, with anger and indignation in his heart, he cried out, "What dost thou there, thou fierce, thou cruel basilisk of these mountains? comest thou to see whether the wounds of this murdered wretch will bleed afresh at thy presence? or comest thou thus mounted aloft, to glory in the fatal effects of thy native inhumanity, like another Nero at the sight of flaming Rome? or is it to trample on this unfortunate corpse, as Tarquin's ungrateful daughter did her father's? Tell us quickly why thou comest, and what thou yet desirest? for since I know that Chrysostom's whole study was to serve thee while he lived, I will see that all his friends pay thee the like obedience now he is dead."

"I come not here to any of those ungrateful ends, Ambrose," replied Marcella; "but only to clear my innocence, and show the injustice of all those who lay their misfortunes and Chrysostom's death to my charge: therefore, I entreat you all who are here at this time to hear me a little, for I shall not need to use many words to convince people of sense of an evident truth. Heaven, you are pleased to say, has made me beautiful, and that to such a degree, that you are forced, nay, as it were, compelled to love me, in spite of your endeavours to the contrary; and for the sake of that love, you say I ought to

love you again. Now, though I am sensible, that whatever is beautiful is lovely, I cannot conceive, that what is loved for being handsome, should be bound to love that by which it is loved, merely because it is loved. He that loves a beautiful object may happen to be ugly; and as what is ugly deserves not to be loved, it would be ridiculous to say, I love you because you are handsome, and therefore you must love me again though I am ugly. But suppose two persons of different sexes are equally handsome, it does not follow, that their desires should be alike and reciprocal; for all beauties do not kindle love; some only recreate the sight, and never reach, nor captivate the heart. Alas! should whatever is beautiful beget love, and enslave the mind, mankind's desires would ever run confused and wandering, without being able to fix their determinate choice; for as there is an infinite number of beautiful objects, the desires would consequently be also infinite; whereas, on the contrary, I have heard that true love is still confined to one, and voluntary and unforced.

"This being granted, why would you have me force my inclinations for no other reason but that you say you love me? Tell me, I beseech you, had Heaven formed me as ugly as it has made me beautiful, could I justly complain of you for not loving me? Pray consider also, that I do not possess those charms by choice; such as they are, they were freely bestowed on me by Heaven: and as the viper is not to be blamed for the poison with which she kills, seeing it was assigned her by nature, so I ought not to be censured for that beauty which I derive from the same cause; for beauty in a virtuous woman is but like a distant flame, or a sharp-edged sword, and only burns and wounds those who approach too near it. Honour and virtue are the ornaments of the soul, and that body that is destitute of them cannot be esteemed beautiful, though it be naturally so. If then honour be one of those endowments which must adorn the body, why should she that is beloved for her beauty, expose herself to the loss of it, merely to gratify the loose desires of one, who, for his own selfish ends, uses all the means imaginable to make her lose it?

"I was born free, and, that I might continue so, I retire to these solitary hills and plains, where trees are my com-

panions, and clear fountains my looking-glasses. With the trees and with the waters I share my thoughts, and my beauty. I am a distant flame, and a sword far off; those whom I have attracted with my sight, I have undeceived with my words; and if hope be the food of desire, as I never gave any encouragement to Chrysostom, nor to any other, it may well be said, it was rather his own obstinacy than my cruelty that shortened his life. If you tell me that his intentions were honest, and therefore ought to have been complied with, I answer, that when, at the very place where his grave is making, he discovered his passion, I told him, I was resolved to live and die single, and that the earth alone should reap the fruit of my reservedness, and enjoy the spoils of my beauty; and if, after all the admonitions I gave him, he would persist in his obstinate pursuit, and sail against the wind, what wonder is it he should perish in the waves of his indiscretion? Had I ever encouraged him, or amused him with ambiguous words, then I had been false; and had I gratified his wishes, I had acted contrary to my better resolves; he persisted though I had given him a due caution, and he despaired without being hated.

"Now I leave you to judge, whether I ought to be blamed for his sufferings? if I have deceived any one, let him complain; if I have broke my promise to any one, let him despair; if I encourage any one, let him presume; if I entertain any one, let him boast: but let no man call me cruel or murderer, until I either deceive, break my promise, encourage, or entertain him. Heaven has not yet been pleased to show whether it is its will I should love by destiny; and it is vain to think I will ever do it by choice: so let this general caution serve every one of those who make their addresses to me for their own ends. And if any hereafter die on my account, let not their jealousy, nor my scorn or hate, be thought the cause of their death; for she who never pretended to love, cannot make any one jealous, and a free and generous declaration of our fixed resolution ought not to be counted hate or disdain.

"In short, let him that calls me a tigress, and a basilisk, avoid me as a dangerous thing; and let him that calls me ungrateful, give over serving me: I assure them I will never

seek nor pursue them. Therefore let none hereafter make it their business to disturb my ease, nor strive to make me hazard among men the peace I now enjoy, which I am persuaded is not to be found with them. I have wealth enough; I neither love nor hate any one: the innocent conversation of the neighbouring shepherdesses, with the care of my flocks, help me to pass away my time, without either coquetting with this man, or practising arts to ensnare that other. My thoughts are limited by these mountains; and if they wander farther, it is only to admire the beauty of heaven, and thus by steps to raise my soul towards her original dwelling."

As soon as she had said this, without awaiting any answer, she left the place, and ran into the thickest of the adjoining wood, leaving all that heard her charmed with her discretion as well as with her beauty.

However, so prevalent were the charms of the latter, that some of the company, who were desperately struck, could not forbear offering to follow her, without being the least deterred by the solemn protestations which they had heard her make that very moment. But Don Quixote, perceiving their design, and believing he had now a fit opportunity to exert his knight-errantry; "Let no man," cried he, "of what quality or condition soever, presume to follow the fair Marcella, under the penalty of incurring my furious displeasure. She has made it appear, by undeniable reasons, that she was not guilty of Chrysostom's death; and has positively declared her firm resolution never to condescend to the desires of any of her admirers: for which reason, instead of being importuned and persecuted, she ought to be esteemed and honoured by all good men, as being perhaps the only woman in the world that ever lived with such a virtuous reservedness."

Now, whether it were that Don Quixote's threats terrified the amorous shepherds, or that Ambrose's persuasion prevailed with them to stay and see their friend interred, none of the shepherds left the place, till the grave being made, and the papers burnt, the body was deposited into the bosom of the earth, not without many tears from all the assistants. They covered the grave with a great stone, till a monument should be made, which Ambrose said he

designed to have set up there, with the following epitaph upon it.

Here of a wretched swain
The frozen body's laid,
Kill'd by the cold disdain
Of an ungrateful maid.

Here first love's power he tried,
Here first his pains express'd;
Here first he was denied,
Here first he chose to rest.

You who the shepherd mourn,
From coy Marcella fly;
Who Chrysostom could scorn,
May all mankind destroy.

The shepherds strewed the grave with many flowers and boughs; and every one having condoled a while with his friend Ambrose, they took their leave of him, and departed. Vivaldo and his companion did the like; as did also Don Quixote, who was not a person to forget himself on such occasions: he likewise bade adieu to the kind goat-herds that had entertained him, and to the two travellers, who desired him to go with them to Seville, assuring him there was no place in the world more fertile in adventures, every street and every corner there producing some. Don Quixote returned them thanks for their kind information; but told them, "he neither would nor ought to go to Seville, till he had cleared all those mountains of the thieves and robbers which he heard very much infested all those parts." Thereupon the travellers, being unwilling to divert him from so good a design, took their leave of him once more, and pursued their journey, sufficiently supplied with matter to discourse on, from the story of Marcella and Chrysostom, and Don Quixote's follies. As for him, he resolved to find out the shepherdess Marcella, if possible, to offer her his service to protect her to the utmost of his power: but he happened to be crossed in his designs, as you shall hear in the sequel of this true history; for here ends the Second Book.

THIRD BOOK.

CHAPTER XV.

Giving an account of Don Quixote's unfortunate rencounter with certain bloody-minded and wicked Yanguesian carriers.[1]

THE sage Cid Hamet Benengeli relates, that when Don Quixote had taken leave of all those that were at Chrysostom's funeral, he and his squire went after Marcella into the wood; and having ranged it above two hours without being able to find her, they came at last to a meadow, whose springing green, watered with a delightful and refreshing rivulet, invited, or rather pleasantly forced them, to alight and give way to the heat of the day, which began to be very violent: so leaving the ass and Rozinante to graze at large, they ransacked the wallet; and without ceremony the master and the man fell to, and fed lovingly on what they found. Now Sancho had not taken care to tie up Rozinante, being persuaded that he was a horse of such sobriety and chastity, that all the mares in the pastures of Cordova could not raise him to attempt an indecent thing. But either fortune, or the devil, who seldom sleeps, so ordered it, that a good number of Galician mares, belonging to some Yanguesian carriers, were then feeding in the same valley, it being the custom of those men, about the hottest time of the day, to stop wherever they met with grass and water to refresh their cattle; nor could they have found a fitter place than that where Don Quixote was. Rozinante, as I said before, was chaste and modest; however, he was flesh and blood; so that as soon as he had smelt the mares, forsaking his natural gravity and reservedness, without

[1] The people of a certain district in Castile, the principal village of which is *Yanguas*.

asking his master's leave, away he trots it briskly to make them sensible of his little necessities: but they, who it seems had more mind to feed than to be merry, received their gallant so rudely, with their heels and teeth, that in a trice they broke his girths and threw down his saddle, and left him disrobed of all his equipage. And for an addition to his misery, the carriers perceiving the violence that was offered to their mares, flew to their relief with poles and pack-staves, and so belaboured poor Rozinante, that he soon sunk to the ground under the weight of their unmerciful blows.

Don Quixote and Sancho, perceiving at a distance the ill-usage of Rozinante, ran with all speed to his rescue; and as they came near the place, panting, and almost out of breath, "Friend Sancho," cried Don Quixote, "I perceive these are no knights, but only a pack of scoundrels, and fellows of the lowest rank; I say it, because thou mayest lawfully help me to revenge the injury they have done Rozinante before our faces."—"What a devil do you talk of revenge?" quoth Sancho; "we are likely to revenge ourselves finely! you see they are above twenty, and we are but two; nay, perhaps but one-and-a-half."—"I alone am worth a hundred," replied Don Quixote; and then, without any more words, he drew his sword, and flew upon the Yanguesians. Sancho, encouraged by his master's example, did the like; and with the first blow which Don Quixote gave one of them, he cut through his leathern doublet, and gave him a deep slash in the shoulder. The Yanguesians, seeing themselves thus rudely handled, betook themselves to their levers and pack-staves, and then all at once surrounding the valiant knight and his trusty squire, they charged them and laid on with great fury. At the second round, down they settled poor Sancho, and then Don Quixote himself, who, as chance would have it, fell at the feet of Rozinante, that had not yet recovered his legs; neither could the knight's courage nor his skill avail against the fury of a number of rustical fellows armed with pack-staves. The Yanguesians, fearing the ill consequences of the mischief they had done, made all the haste they could to be gone, leaving our two adventurers in a woeful condition. The first that came to

himself was Sancho Panza, who, finding himself near his master, called to him thus, with a weak and doleful voice; "Ah master! master! Sir, Sir Knight!"—"What is the matter, friend Sancho?" asked the knight, in the same feeble and lamenting tone. "I could wish," replied Sancho, "that your worship would help me to two good draughts of the liquor you talk of, if you have any by you; perhaps it is as good to cure broken bones, as it is to heal outward wounds."—"Oh! that I had some of it here now," cried Don Quixote; "we could not then be said to want anything: but I swear to thee, honest Sancho, by the faith of a knight-errant, within these two days (if no other disaster prevent me) I will have some of it at my disposal, or it shall hardly escape my hands."—"Two days, sir!" replied Sancho: "why, pray how many days do you think it will be before we are able to stir our feet?"—"As for myself," answered the bruised Don Quixote, "I must own I cannot set a term to the days of our recovery; but it is I who am the fatal cause of all this mischief; for I ought not to have drawn my sword against a company of fellows, upon whom the honour of knighthood was never conferred; and I do not doubt but that the Lord of hosts suffered this punishment to befall me for transgressing thus the laws of chivalry. Therefore, friend Sancho, observe what I am going to tell thee, for it is a thing that highly concerns the welfare of us both: it is that for the future, whenever thou perceivest us to be any ways abused by such inferior fellows, thou art not to expect I should offer to draw my sword against them; for I will not do it in the least: no, do thou then draw and chastise them as thou thinkest fit; but if any knights come to take their parts, then will I be sure to step between thee and danger, and assault them with the utmost vigour and intrepidity. Thou hast already had a thousand proofs of the greatness of my valour, and the prevailing strength of my most dreadful arm;"—so arrogant the poor gentleman was grown since his victory over the bold Biscayan.

But Sancho was not so well pleased with his master's admonitions, but that he thought fit to answer him. "Sir," says he, "I am a peaceful man, a harmless quiet fellow,

d'ye see; I can make shift to pass by an injury as well as any man, as having a wife to maintain, and children to bring up; and therefore pray take this from me by the way of advice (for I will not offer to command my master), that I will not in any wise draw my sword neither against knight nor clown, not I. I freely forgive all mankind, high and low, rich and poor, lords and beggars, whatever wrongs they ever did or may do me, without the least exception."—"Sancho," said his master, hearing this, "I heartily wish I had breath enough to answer thee effectually, or that the pain which I feel in one of my short ribs would leave me but for so long as might serve to convince thee of thy error. Come, suppose, thou silly wretch, that the gale of fortune, which has hitherto been so contrary to us, should at last turn favourable, swelling the sails of our desires, so that we might with as much security as ease arrive at some of those islands which I have promised thee; what would become of thee, if, after I had conquered one of them, I were to make thee lord of it? Thou wouldst certainly be found not duly qualified for that dignity, as having abjured all knighthood, all thoughts of honour, and all intention to revenge injuries, and defend thy own dominions. For thou must understand, that in kingdoms and provinces newly conquered, the hearts and minds of the inhabitants are never so thoroughly subdued, or wedded to the interests of their new sovereign, but that there is reason to fear, they will endeavour to raise some commotions to change the face of affairs, and, as men say, once more try their fortune. Therefore it is necessary that the new possessor have not only understanding to govern, but also valour to attack his enemies, and defend himself on all occasions."—"I would I had had that understanding and valour you talk of," quoth Sancho; "but now, sir, I must be free to tell you, I have more need of a surgeon, than of a preacher. Pray try whether you can rise, and we will help Rozinante though he does not deserve it; for he is the chief cause of all this beating. For my part, I could never have believed the like of him before, for I always took him for as chaste and sober a person as myself. In short, it is a true saying, that a man must eat a peck of salt with his friend, before he

knows him; and I find there is nothing sure in this world: for, who would have thought, after the dreadful slashes you gave to that knight-errant, such a terrible shower of bastinadoes would so soon have fallen upon your shoulders?" —"As for thine," replied Don Quixote, "I doubt they are used to endure such sort of showers; but mine, that were nursed in soft linen, will most certainly be longer sensible of this misfortune; and were it not that I imagine (but why do I say imagine?), were it not that I am positively sure, that all these inconveniences are inseparable from the profession of chivalry, I would abandon myself to grief, and die of mere despair on this very spot."—"I beseech you, sir," quoth Sancho, "since these rubs are the vails of your trade of knighthood, tell me whether they use to come often, or whether we may look for them at set times? for, I fancy, if we meet but with two such harvests more, we shall never be able to reap the third, unless God of his infinite mercy assist us."

"Know, friend Sancho," returned Don Quixote, "that the life of knights-errant is subject to a thousand hazards and misfortunes: but on the other side, they may at any time suddenly become kings and emperors, as experience has demonstrated in many knights, of whose histories I have a perfect knowledge. And I could tell thee now (would my pain suffer me) of some of them who have raised themselves to those high dignities only by the valour of their arm; and those very knights, both before and after their advancement, were involved in many calamities: for, the valorous Amadis de Gaul saw himself in the power of his mortal enemy Archelaus the enchanter,[1] of whom it is credibly reported, that when he held him prisoner, he gave him above two hundred stripes with his horse bridle, after he had tied him to a pillar in the court-yard of his house. There is also a secret author of no little credit who relates that the Knight of the Sun being taken in a trap in a certain castle, was hurried to a deep dungeon, where, after they had bound him hand and foot, they forcibly gave him a clyster of snow-water and sand, which would probably have cost him his life, had he not been assisted

[1] See the Amadis, chap. xix. and lxix. For the Knight of the Sun mentioned immediately after, see Palmerin of Oliva, cap. 43.

in that distress by a wise magician, his particular friend. Thus I may well bear my misfortune patiently, since those which so many greater persons have endured may be said to outdo it: for, I would have thee to know, that those wounds that are given with the instruments and tools which a man happens to have in his hands, do not really disgrace the person struck. We read it expressly in the laws of duels,[1] 'That if a shoemaker strikes another man with his last which he hold in his hand, though it be of wood, as a cudgel is, yet the party who was struck with it shall not be said to have been cudgelled.' I tell thee this, that thou mayest not think we are in the least dishonoured, though we have been horribly beaten in this rencounter; for the weapons which those men used were but instruments of their profession, and not one of them, as I very well remember, had either tuck, or sword, or dagger."—"They gave me no leisure," quoth Sancho, "to examine things so narrowly; for I had no sooner laid my hand on my cutlass,[2] but they crossed my shoulders with such a wooden blessing, as settled me on the ground without sense or motion, where you see me lie, and where I don't trouble my head whether it be a disgrace to be mauled with cudgels or with pack-staves; let them be what they will, I am only vexed to feel them so heavy on my shoulders, where I am afraid they are imprinted as deep as they are on my mind."—"For all this," replied Don Quixote, "I must inform thee, friend Sancho, that there is no remembrance which time will not efface, nor no pain to which death will not put a period."—"Thank you for nothing!" quoth Sancho; "what worse can befall us, than to have only death to trust to? were our affliction to

[1] The most complete code of duelling is to be found in Maffei's treatise, *Della Scienza Cavalleresca*. Most minute rules are there laid down concerning more improbable contingencies than that alluded to in the text. *Insults* are classed and subdivided, as accurately as crimes against life and property have ever been in statute-books; and the proper *quantum* of revenge to be exacted in every supposable case, is laid down with all the gravity of a Numa. *Eg.* when you are insulted by a lame man, you must tie up your leg before you take the field against him, &c. &c.

[2] [*Tizona*: The name of one of the swords which Ruy Diaz the Cid used against the Moors. He had another called *Colada*.]

be cured with a plaster or two, a man might have some patience; but for aught I see, all the salves in an hospital won't set us on our best legs again."—"Come, no more of this," cried Don Quixote; "take courage, and make a virtue of necessity; for it is what I am resolved to do. Let us see how it fares with Rozinante; for if I am not mistaken, the poor creature has not been the least sufferer in this adventure."—"No wonder at that," quoth Sancho, "seeing he's a knight-errant too; I rather wonder how my ass has escaped so well, while we have fared so ill."—"In our disasters," returned Don Quixote, "fortune leaves always some door open to come at a remedy. I say it, Sancho, because that little beast may now supply the want of Rozinante, to carry me to some castle, where I may get cured of my wounds. Nor do I esteem this kind of riding dishonourable, for I remember that the good old Silenus, tutor and governor to the jovial god of wine, rode very fairly on a goodly ass, when he made his entry into the city with a hundred gates."—"Ay," quoth Sancho, "it will do well enough, could you ride as fairly on your ass as he did on his; but there is a deal of difference between riding, and being laid cross the pannel like a pack of rubbish."—"The wounds which are received in combat," said Don Quixote, "rather add to our honour, than deprive us of it; therefore, good Sancho, trouble me with no more replies, but, as I said, endeavour to get up, and lay me as thou pleasest upon thy ass, that we may leave this place ere night steal upon us."—"But, sir," cried Sancho, "I have heard you say, that it is a common thing among you knight-errants to sleep in the fields and deserts the best part of the year, and that you look upon it to be a very happy kind of life."—"That is to say," replied Don Quixote, "when we can do no better, or when we are in love; and this is so true, that there have been knights who have dwelt on rocks, exposed to the sun, and other inclemencies of the sky, for the space of two years, without their lady's knowledge: one of those was Amadis, when, assuming the name of the Lovely Obscure,[1] he in-

[1] Beltenebros is the name given to Amadis in all the romances, on occasion of this adventure; this has been often cited as one of the

habited the bare rock, either eight years or eight months, I can't now punctually tell which of the two, for I don't thoroughly remember the passage. Let it suffice that there he dwelt, doing penance, for I don't know what unkindness his lady, Oriana, had showed him. But setting these discourses aside, pr'ythee despatch, lest some mischief befall the ass, as it has done Rozinante."—"That would be the devil indeed," replied Sancho; and so, breathing out some thirty lamentations, threescore sighs, and a hundred and twenty plagues and poxes on those that had decoyed him thither, he at last got upon his legs, yet not so but that he went stooping, with his body bent like a Turk's bow, not being able to stand upright. Yet in this crooked posture he made a shift to harness his ass, who had not forgot to take his share of licentiousness that day. After this, he helped up Rozinante, who, could his tongue have expressed his sorrows, would certainly not have been behindhand with Sancho and his master. After many bitter ohs, and screwed faces, Sancho laid Don Quixote on the ass, tied Rozinante to its tail, and then, leading the ass by the halter, he took the nearest way that he could guess to the high road; to which he luckily came, before he had travelled a short league, and then he discovered an inn; which, in spite of all he could say, Don Quixote was pleased to mistake for a castle. Sancho swore it was an inn, and his master was as positive of the contrary. In short, their dispute lasted so long, that before they could decide it they reached the inn door, where Sancho straight went in, with all his train, without troubling himself any farther about the matter.

---

most convincing proofs of the Spanish, or, more properly, the Peninsular origin of the romance; but in the old French Amadis it is Beltenebreux.

CHAPTER XVI.

What happened to Don Quixote in the Inn which he took for a Castle.

THE inn-keeper, seeing Don Quixote lying quite athwart the ass, asked Sancho what ailed him? Sancho answered it was nothing, only his master had got a fall from the top of a rock to the bottom, and had bruised his sides a little. The inn-keeper had a wife, very different from the common sort of hostesses, for she was of a charitable nature, and very compassionate of her neighbour's affliction; which made her immediately take care of Don Quixote, and call her daughter (a good handsome girl) to set her helping-hand to his cure. One of the servants in the inn was an Asturian wench, a broad-faced, flat-headed, saddle-nosed dowdy; blind of one eye and the other almost out: however, the activity of her body supplied all other defects. She was not above three feet high from her heels to her head; and her shoulders, which somewhat loaded her, as having too much flesh upon them, made her look downwards oftener than she could have wished. This charming abigail likewise assisted the mistress and the daughter; and with the latter, helped to make the knight's bed, and a sorry one it was; the room where it stood was an old gambling cock-loft, which by manifold signs seemed to have been, in the days of yore, a repository for chopped straw. Somewhat farther, in a corner of that garret, a carrier had his lodging; and though his bed was nothing but the pannels and coverings of his mules, it was much better than that of Don Quixote, which only consisted of four rough-hewn boards laid upon two uneven tressels, a flock-bed, that, for thinness, might well have passed for a quilt, and was full of knobs and bunches, which had they not peeped out through many a hole, and shown themselves to be of wool, might well have been taken for stones: the rest of that extraordinary bed's furniture was a pair of sheets, which rather seemed to be of leather than of linen cloth, and a coverlet

whose every individual thread you might have told, and never have missed one in the tale.

In this ungracious bed was the knight laid, to rest his belaboured carcase, and presently the hostess and her daughter anointed and plastered him all over, while Maritornes[1] (for that was the name of the Asturian wench) held the candle. The hostess, while she greased him, wondering to see him so bruised all over, "I fancy," said she, "those bumps look much more like a dry beating than a fall."—"It was no dry beating, mistress, I promise you," quoth Sancho, "but the rock had I know not how many cragged ends and knobs, whereof every one gave my master a token of his kindness. And by the way, forsooth," continued he, "I beseech you save a little of that same tow and ointment for me too, for I don't know what is the matter with my back, but I fancy I stand mainly in want of a little greasing too."—"What, I suppose you fell too?" quoth the landlady.—"Not I," quoth Sancho, "but the very fright that I took to see my master tumble down the rock, has so wrought upon my body, that I am as sore as if I had been sadly mauled."—"It may well be as you say," cried the innkeeper's daughter; "for I have dreamed several times that I have been falling from the top of a high tower without ever coming to the ground; and, when I waked, I have found myself as out of order, and as bruised, as if I had fallen in good earnest."—"That is e'en my case, mistress," quoth Sancho; "only ill-luck would have it so, that I should find myself e'en almost as battered and bruised as my lord Don Quixote, and yet all the while be as broad awake as I am now."—"How do you call this same gentleman?" quoth Maritornes.—"He is Don Quixote de la Mancha," replied Sancho; "and he is a knight-errant, and one of the primest and stoutest that ever the sun shined on."—"A knight-errant," cried the wench, "pray what is that?"[2]—"Heigh-day!" cried Sancho, "does the wench

[1] Malitorne is old French for "mechante femme."

[2] Io son nutrito sotto il Santo impero
Del magnanimo Artus real e pio,
E da lui fatto *errante cavaliero*,
Vo *cercando avventure* hor quinci hor quindi.
GYRONE, L. 2, 75.

know no more of the world than that comes to? Why, a knight-errant is a thing which in two words you see well cudgelled, and then an emperor. To-day there is not a more wretched thing upon the earth, and yet to-morrow he'll have two or three kingdoms to give away to his squire."—"How comes it to pass, then," quoth the landlady, "that thou, who art this great person's squire, hast not yet got thee at least an earldom?"—"Fair and softly goes far," replied Sancho. "Why, we have not been a month in our gears, so that we have not yet encountered any adventure worth the naming: besides, many a time we look for one thing, and light on another. But if my lord Don Quixote happens to get well again, and I escape remaining a cripple, I'll not take the best title in the land for what I am sure will fall to my share."

Here Don Quixote, who had listened with great attention to all these discourses, raised himself up in his bed with much ado, and taking the hostess in a most obliging manner by the hand, "Believe me," said he, "beautiful lady, you may well esteem it a happiness that you have now the opportunity to entertain my person in your castle. Self-praise is unworthy a man of honour, and therefore I shall say no more of myself, but my squire will inform you who I am; only thus much let me add, that I shall eternally preserve your kindness in the treasury of my remembrance, and study all occasions to testify my gratitude. And I wish," continued he, "the powers above had so disposed my fate, that I were not already love's devoted slave, and captivated by the charms of the disdainful beauty who engrosses all my softer thoughts! for then I would be proud to sacrifice my liberty to this beautiful damsel." The hostess, her daughter, and the kind-hearted Maritornes, stared at one another, quite at a loss for the meaning of this high-flown language, which they understood fully as well as if it had been Greek. Yet, conceiving these were words of compliment and courtship, they looked upon him and admired him as a man of another world: and so, having made him such returns as innkeepers' breeding could afford, they left him to his rest; only Maritornes stayed to rub down Sancho, who wanted her help no less than his master.

Now you must know, that the carrier and she had agreed to pass the night together; and she had given him her word, that as soon as all the people in the inn were in bed, she would be sure to come to him, and be at his service. And it is said of this good-natured thing that whenever she had passed her word in such cases, she was sure to make it good, though she had made the promise in the midst of a wood, and without any witness at all: for she stood much upon her gentility, though she undervalued herself so far as to serve in an inn; often saying, that nothing but crosses and necessity could have made her stoop to it.

Don Quixote's hard, scanty, beggarly, miserable bed was the first of the four in that wretched apartment; next to that was Sancho's kennel, which consisted of nothing but a bed-mat and a coverlet, that rather seemed shorn canvas than a rug. Beyond these two beds was that of the carrier, made, as we have said, of the pannels and furniture of two of the best of twelve mules which he kept, every one of them goodly beasts, and in special good case; for he was one of the richest muleteers of Arevalo, as the Moorish author of this history relates, who makes particular mention of him, as having been acquainted with him; nay, some do not stick to say he was somewhat akin to him.[1] However it be, it appears that Cid Hamet Benengeli was a very exact historian, since he takes care to give us an account of things that seem so inconsiderable and trivial. A laudable example, which those historians should follow, who usually

[1] Cervantes probably means to insinuate, that the muleteer was himself a Moor, one of the many who made outward profession of Christianity, after Mahometanism became a crime in Spain; which, as all the world knows, happened in Cervantes's own day, to the great injury of the commerce and agriculture of the Spanish dominions. Before their total expulsion, it would seem the Moriscos were very much employed as carriers and muleteers; for, says the author of certain "Discourses on the Provision of the Court" (never published, but quoted by Pellicer, and composed in 1616), "By the expulsion of the Moors, Spain lost about four or five thousand carriers, who were of infinite advantage in transporting all kinds of merchandise. Between 1608 and 1616, the charge of carriage from Seville to Madrid has been more than tripled. In Tiemblo (a little town fourteen leagues from Madrid), I remember eighteen carriers, and now there is not one. There used to be not less than five and twenty at Talamea (forty-eight leagues from Madrid), and now there is only one in the whole place.

relate matters so concisely, that we have scarce a smack of them, leaving the most essential part of the story drowned in the ink-horn, either through neglect, malice, or ignorance. A thousand blessings then be given to the curious author of *Tallante de Ricamonte*, and to that other indefatigable sage who recorded the achievements of Count Tomillas! for they have described even the most minute and trifling circumstances with a singular preciseness.

But to return to our story: you must know, that after the carrier had visited his mules, and given them their second course, he laid himself down on his packsaddles, in expectation of the most punctual Maritornes's kind visit. By this time Sancho, duly greased and anointed, had crept into his sty, where he did all he could to sleep, but his aching ribs did all they could to prevent him. As for the knight, whose sides were in as bad circumstances as the squire's, he lay with both his eyes open like a hare. And now was every soul in the inn gone to bed, nor any light to be seen, except that of a lamp which hung in the middle of the gateway. This general tranquillity setting Don Quixote's thoughts at work, offered to his imagination one of the most absurd follies that ever crept into a distempered brain from the perusal of romantic whimsies. Now he fancied that he was in a famous castle (for, as we have already said, all the inns he lodged in seemed no less than castles to him), and that the innkeeper's daughter (consequently daughter to the lord of the castle), strangely captivated with his graceful presence and gallantry, had promised him the pleasure of her embraces, as soon as her father and mother were gone to rest. This chimera disturbed him, as if it had been a real truth; so that he began to be mightily perplexed, reflecting on the danger to which his honour was exposed: but at last his virtue overcame the powerful temptation, and he firmly resolved not to be guilty of the least infidelity to his lady Dulcinea del Toboso, though Queen Genever herself, with her trusty matron Quintañona, should join to decoy him into the alluring snare.

While these wild imaginations worked in his brain, the gentle Maritornes was mindful of her assignation, and with soft and wary steps, barefoot, and in her smock,

with her hair gathered up in a hempen coif, stole into the room, and felt about for her beloved carrier's bed: but scarce had she got to the door, when Don Quixote, whose ears were on the scout, was sensible that something was coming in; and therefore having raised himself in his bed, sore and wrapt up in plasters as he was, he stretched out his arms to receive his fancied damsel, and caught hold of Maritornes by the wrist, as she was, with her arms stretched, groping her way to her paramour; he pulled her to him, and made her sit down by his bedside, she not daring to speak a word all the while. Now, as he imagined her to be the lord of the castle's daughter, her smock, which was of the coarsest canvas, seemed to him of the finest holland; and the glass-beads about her wrist, precious oriental pearls; her hair, that was almost as rough as a horse's mane, he took to be threads of shining gold brighter than the sun; and her breath, that doubtless savoured somewhat of last night's repast, was to him a grateful compound of the most fragrant perfumes of Arabia. In short, flattering imagination transformed her into the likeness of those romantic beauties, one of whom, as he remembered to have read, came to pay a private visit to a wounded knight, with whom she was desperately in love; and the poor gentleman's obstinate folly had so infatuated his outward sense, that his feeling and his smell could not in the least undeceive him, and he thought he had no less than a balmy Venus in his arms, while he hugged a fulsome bundle of deformities, that would have turned any man's stomach but a sharp-set carrier's. Therefore, clasping her still closer, with a soft and amorous whisper, "Oh! thou most lovely temptation," cried he, "oh! that I now might but pay a warm acknowledgment for the mighty blessing which your extravagant goodness would lavish on me! yes, most beautiful charmer, I would give an empire to purchase your most desirable embraces; but fortune, madam, fortune, that tyrant of my life, that unrelenting enemy to the truly deserving, has maliciously hurried and riveted me to this bed, where I lie so bruised and battered, that though I were eager to gratify your desires, I should at this dear unhappy minute be doomed to impotence. Nay, to that unlucky bar fate has added a

yet more invincible obstacle; I mean my plighted faith to the unrivalled Dulcinea del Toboso, the sole mistress of my wishes, and absolute sovereign of my heart. Oh! did not this oppose my present happiness, I could never be so dull and insensible a knight as to lose the benefit of this extraordinary favour which you have now condescended to offer me."

Poor Maritornes all this while sweated for fear and anxiety, to find herself thus locked in the knight's arms; and without either understanding, or willing to understand, his florid excuses, she did what she could to get from him, and sheer off, without speaking a word. On the other side, the carrier, whose lewd thoughts kept him awake, having heard his trusty lady when she first came in, and listened ever since to the knight's discourse, began to be afraid that she had made some other assignation; and so, without any more ado, he crept softly to Don Quixote's bed, where he listened awhile to hear what would be the end of all this talk, which he could not understand: but perceiving at last by the struggling of his faithful Maritornes, that it was no fault of hers, and that the knight strove to detain her against her will, he could by no means bear his familiarity; and therefore taking it in mighty dudgeon, he up with his fist, and hit the enamoured knight such a swinging blow on the jaws, that his face was all over blood in a moment. And not satisfied with this, he got on the top of the knight, and with his splay feet betrampled him, as if he had been trampling a hay-mow. With that the bed, whose foundations were none of the best, sank under the additional load of the carrier, and fell with such a noise, that it waked the innkeeper, who presently suspected it to be one of Maritornes's nightly skirmishes; and therefore having called her aloud, and finding that she did not answer, he lighted a lamp and made to the place where he heard the bustle. The wench, who heard him coming, knowing him to be of a passionate nature, was scared out of her wits, and fled for shelter to Sancho's sty, where he lay snoring to some tune: there she pigged in, and lay snug as an egg. Presently her master came in, in a mighty heat: "Where's this damned whore?" cried he; "I dare say

this is one of her pranks." By this, Sancho awaked; and feeling that unusual lump, which almost overlaid him, he took it to be the night-mare, and began to lay about him with his fists, and thumped the wench so unmercifully, that at last flesh and blood were no longer able to bear it; and forgetting the danger she was in, and her dear reputation, she paid him back his thumps as fast as her fists could lay them on, and soon roused the drowsy squire out of his sluggishness, whether he would or no: who finding himself thus pommelled, by he did not know whom, he bustled up in his nest, and catching hold of Maritornes, they began the most pleasant skirmish in the world; when the carrier perceiving, by the light of the innkeeper's lamp, the dismal condition that his dear mistress was in, presently took her part; and leaving the knight, whom he had more than sufficiently mauled, flew at the squire and paid him confoundedly. On the other hand, the innkeeper, who took the wench to be the cause of all this hurly-burly, cuffed and kicked, and kicked and cuffed her over and over again: and so there was a strange multiplication of fisticuffs and drubbings. The carrier pommelled Sancho, Sancho mauled the wench, the wench belaboured the squire, and the innkeeper thrashed her again: and all of them laid on with such expedition, that you would have thought they had been afraid of losing time. But the jest was, that in the heat of the fray the lamp went out, so that being now in the dark, they plied one another at a venture; they struck and tore, all went to rack, while nails and fists flew about without mercy.

There happened to lodge that night in the inn one of the officers belonging to that society which they call the old Holy Brotherhood of Toledo, whose chief office is to look after thieves and robbers. Being waked with the heavy bustle, he presently jumped out of his bed, and with his short staff in one hand, and a tin-box with his commission in it in the other, he groped his way, and having entered the room in the dark, cried out, "I charge you all to keep the peace: I am an officer of the Holy Brotherhood." The first he popped his hand upon happened to be the poor battered knight, who lay upon his back at his full length, without any feeling, upon the ruins of his

bed. The officer having caught him by the beard, presently cried out, "I charge you to aid and assist me;" but finding he could not stir, though he griped him hard, he presently imagined him to be dead, and murdered by the rest in the room. With that he bawled out to have the gates of the inn shut. "Here's a man murdered," cried he; "look that nobody makes his escape." These words struck all the combatants with such a terror, that, as soon as they reached their ears they gave over, and left the argument undecided. Away stole the innkeeper to his own room, the carrier to his packsaddles, and the wench to her kennel; only the unfortunate knight, and his no less unfortunate squire, remained where they lay, not being able to stir; while the officer, having let go Don Quixote's beard, went out for a light, in order to apprehend the supposed murderers; but the inn-keeper having wisely put out the lamp in the gateway, as he sneaked out of the room, the officer was obliged to repair to the kitchen chimney, where with much ado, puffing and blowing a long while amidst the embers, he at last made shift to get a light.

CHAPTER XVII.

A further account of the innumerable hardships which the brave Don Quixote, and his worthy squire Sancho Panza, underwent in the Inn, which the Knight unluckily took for a Castle.

Don Quixote, who by this time was come to himself, began to call Sancho with the same lamentable tone as the day before, when he had been beaten by the carriers in the meadow; "Sancho," cried he, "friend Sancho, art thou asleep? art thou asleep, friend Sancho?"—"Sleep!" replied Sancho, mightily out of humour, "may Old Nick rock my cradle then. Why, how the devil should I sleep, when all the imps of hell have been tormenting me to-night?"—"Nay, thou art in the right," answered Don Quixote, "for either I have no skill in these matters, or

this castle is enchanted. Hear what I say to thee, but first swear thou wilt never reveal it till after my death." —"I swear it," quoth Sancho.—"I am thus cautious," said Don Quixote, "because I hate to take away the reputation of any person."—"Why," quoth Sancho, "I tell you again, I swear never to speak a word of the matter while you live; and I wish I may be at liberty to talk on't to-morrow."—"Why," cried Don Quixote, "have I done thee so much wrong, Sancho, that you would have me die so soon?"—"Nay, 'tis not for that neither," quoth Sancho; "but because I can't abide to keep things long, for fear they should grow mouldy."—"Well, let it be as thou pleasest," said Don Quixote: "for I dare trust greater concerns to thy courtesy and affection. In short, know, that this very night there happened to me one of the strangest adventures that can be imagined; for the daughter of the lord of this castle came to me, who is one of the most engaging and most beautiful damsels that ever nature has been proud to boast of: what could I not tell thee of the charms of her shape and face, and the perfections of her mind! what could I not add of other hidden beauties, which I condemn to silence and oblivion, lest I endanger my allegiance and fidelity to my lady Dulcinea del Toboso! I will only tell thee, that the heavens envying the inestimable happiness which fortune had thrown into my hand, or rather, because this castle is enchanted, it happened, that in the midst of the most tender and passionate discourses that passed between us, the profane hand of some mighty giant, which I could not see, nor imagine whence it came, hit me such a dreadful blow on the jaws that they are still embrued with blood; after which the discourteous wretch, presuming on my present weakness, did so barbarously bruise me, that I feel myself in a worse condition now than I did yesterday, after the carriers had so roughly handled me for Rozinante's incontinency: from which I conjecture, that the treasure of this damsel's beauty is guarded by some enchanted Moor, and not reserved for me."

"Nor for me, neither," quoth Sancho; "for I have been rib-roasted by above four hundred Moors, who have hammered my bones in such guise, that I may safely say

the assault and battery made on my body by the carriers' poles and pack-staves, were but ticklings and strokings with a feather to this.[1] But, sir, pray tell me, d'ye call this such a pleasant adventure, when we are so lamentably pounded after it? And yet your hap may well be accounted better than mine, seeing you've hugged that fair maiden in your arms. But I, what have I had, I pray you, but the heaviest blows that ever fell on a poor man's shoulders? Woe's me, and the mother that bore me, for I neither am, nor ever mean to be a knight-errant, and yet of all the misadventures, the greater part falls still to my lot."—"What, hast thou been beaten as well as I?" said Don Quixote. "What a plague," cried Sancho, "han't I been telling you so all this while!"—"Come, never let it trouble thee, friend Sancho," replied Don Quixote; "for I'll immediately make the precious balsam, that will cure thee in the twinkling of an eye." By this time the officer, having lighted his lamp, came into the room, to see who it was that was murdered. Sancho seeing him enter in his shirt, a napkin wrapped about his head like a turban, and the lamp in his hand, he being also an ugly ill-looking fellow, "Sir," quoth the squire to his master, "pray see whether this be not the enchanted Moor, that's come again to have t'other bout with me, and try whether he has not left some place unbruised[2] for him now to maul as much as the rest."—"It cannot be the Moor," replied Don Quixote; "for persons enchanted are to be seen by nobody."—"If they do not suffer themselves to be seen," quoth Sancho, "at least they suffer themselves to be felt: if not, let my carcase bear witness."—"So might mine," cried Don Quixote; "yet this is no sufficient reason to prove that what we see is the enchanted Moor."

While they were thus arguing, the officer advanced, and wondered to hear two men talk so calmly to one another there: yet finding the unfortunate knight lying in the same deplorable posture as he left him, stretched

[1] [In the original: *Tortas y pan pintado*—"cakes and gingerbread," a common expression for trifles.]

[2] [Literally, 'left something at the bottom of the ink-horn'; that is, left the business incomplete.]

out like a corpse, bloody, bruised, and beplastered, and not able to stir himself; "How is't, honest fellow," quoth he to the champion, "how do you find yourself?"—"Were I your fellow," replied Don Quixote, "I would have a little more manners than you have, you blockhead, you; is that your way of approaching knights-errant in this country?"—The officer could not bear such a reprimand from one who made so scurvy a figure, and lifting up the lamp, oil and all, hit Don Quixote such a blow on the head with it, that he had reason to fear he had made work for the surgeon, and therefore stole presently out of the room, under the protection of the night.—"Well, sir," quoth Sancho, "d'ye think now it was the enchanted Moor, or no? for my part, I think he keeps the treasure you talk of for others, and reserves only kicks, cuffs, thumps and knocks for your worship, and myself."—"I am now convinced," answered Don Quixote; "therefore let us waive that resentment of these injuries, which we might otherwise justly show; for considering these enchanters can make themselves invisible when they please, it is needless to think of revenge. But, pray thee rise, if thou canst, Sancho, and desire the governor of the castle to send me some oil, salt, wine and rosemary, that I may make my healing balsam; for truly, I want it extremely, so fast the blood flows out of the wound which the phantasm gave me just now."

Sancho then got up as fast as his aching bones would let him, and with much ado made shift to crawl out of the room to look for the inn-keeper; and, stumbling by the way on the officer, who stood hearkening to know what mischief he had done, "Sir," quoth he to him, "for heaven's sake, do so much as help us to a little oil, salt, wine, and rosemary, to make a medicine for one of the best knights-errant that ever trod on shoe of leather, who lies yonder grievously wounded by the enchanted Moor of this castle."[1] The officer, hearing him talk at that rate, took him to be one out of his wits; and it beginning to

[1] The fair Rosaliana, in Belianis of Greece, uses these words: "Acabad de matar aquellos malos gigantes, porque en el entretanto que alguno dellos fuere vivo no seran deshechos los encantamentos de este castillo."—L. iii, c. 9.

be daylight, he opened the inn-door and told the inn-keeper what Sancho wanted. The host presently provided the desired ingredients, and Sancho crept back with them to his master, whom he found holding his head, and sadly complaining of the pain which he felt there; though after all, the lamp had done him no more harm than only raising of two huge bumps; for that which he fancied to be blood, was only sweat, and the oil of the lamp that had liquored his hair and face.

The knight took all the ingredients, and, having mixed them together, he had them set over the fire, and there kept them boiling till he thought they were enough. That done, he asked for a phial to put this precious liquor in; but there being none to be got, the inn-keeper presented him with an old earthen jug, and Don Quixote was forced to be contented with that. Then he mumbled over the pot above fourscore *Paternosters*, and as many *Ave Marias*, *Salves*, and *Credos*, making the sign of the cross at every word by way of benediction. At which ceremony, Sancho, the inn-keeper, and the officer were present; for as for the carrier, he was gone to look after his mules, and took no manner of notice of what passed. This blessed medicine being made, Don Quixote resolved to make an immediate experiment of it on himself; and to that purpose he took off a good draught of the overplus, which the pot would not hold; but he had scarce gulped it down, when it set him a vomiting so violently, that he cast up everything in his stomach; and his retching and straining put him into such a sweat, that he desired to be covered up warm, and left to his repose. With that they left him, and he slept three whole hours; and then waking, found himself so wonderfully eased, that he made no question but he had now the right balsam of Fierabras; and therefore he thought he might safely undertake all the most dangerous adventures in the world, without the least hazard of his person.

Sancho, encouraged by the wonderful effect of the balsam on his master, begged that he would be pleased to give him leave to sip up what was left in the pot, which was no small quantity; and Don Quixote having consented, honest Sancho lifted it up with both his hands, and with

a strong faith, and better will, poured every drop down his throat. Now the man's stomach not being so nice as his master's, the drench did not set him a vomiting after that manner; but caused such a wambling in his stomach, such a bitter loathing, kecking, and retching, and such grinding pangs, with cold sweats and swoonings, that he verily believed his last hour was come, and in the midst of his agony gave both the balsam and him that made it to the devil.—"Friend," said Don Quixote, seeing him in that condition, "I begin to think all this pain befalls thee, only because thou hast not received the order of knighthood; for it is my opinion, this balsam ought to be used by no man that is not a professed knight."—"What a plague did you mean then by letting me drink it?" quoth Sancho; "a murrain on me, and all my generation, why did not you tell me this before?" At length the dose began to work to some purpose, and forced its way at both ends so copiously, that both his bed-mat and coverlet were soon made unfit for any further use; and all the while he strained so hard, that not only himself, but the standers-by, thought he would have died. This dreadful hurricane lasted about two hours; and then too, instead of finding himself as free from pain as his master, he felt himself so feeble, and so far spent, that he was not able to stand.

But Don Quixote, as we have said, found himself in an excellent temper; and his active soul loathing an inglorious repose, he presently was impatient to depart to perform the duties of his adventurous profession; for he thought those moments that were trifled away in amusements, or other concerns, only a blank in life; and all delays a depriving distressed persons, and the world in general, of his needed assistance. The confidence which he reposed in his balsam, heightened, if possible, his resolution; and thus carried away by his eager thoughts, he saddled Rozinante himself, and then put the pannel upon the ass, and his squire upon the pannel, after he had helped him to huddle on his clothes; that done, he mounted his steed; and having spied a javelin that stood in a corner, he seized and appropriated it to himself, to supply the want of his lance. Above twenty people that

were in the inn stood spectators of all these transactions; and among the rest the inn-keeper's daughter, from whom Don Quixote had not power to withdraw his eyes, breathing out at every glance a deep sigh from the very bottom of his heart; which those who had seen him so mortified the night before, took to proceed from the pain of his bruises.

And now being ready to set forward, he called for the master of the house, and with a grave delivery, "My lord governor," cried he, "the favours I have received in your castle are so great and extraordinary, that they bind my grateful soul to an eternal acknowledgment; therefore that I may be so happy as to discharge part of the obligation, think if there be ever a proud mortal breathing on whom you desire to be revenged for some affront or other injury, and acquaint me with it now; and by my order of knighthood, which binds me to protect the weak, relieve the oppressed, and punish the bad, I promise you I'll take effectual care, that you shall have ample satisfaction to the utmost of your wishes."—"Sir Knight," answered the inn-keeper, with an austere gravity, "I shall not need your assistance to revenge any wrong that may be offered to my person; for I would have you to understand, that I am able to do myself justice, whenever any man presumes to do me wrong; therefore all the satisfaction I desire is, that you will pay your reckoning for horse-meat and man's meat, and all your expenses in my inn."—"How!" cried Don Quixote, "is this an inn?"—"Yes," answered the host, "and one of the most noted, and of the best repute upon the road."—"How strangely have I been mistaken then!" cried Don Quixote; "upon my honour I took it for a castle, and a considerable one too; but if it be an inn, and not a castle, all I have to say is, that you must excuse me from paying any thing; for I would by no means break the laws which we knights-errant are bound to observe; nor was it ever known, that they ever paid in any inn whatsoever;[1] for this is the least recompense that can be allowed them for the intolerable labours they endure day and night,

[1] There is a contrary authority in Pulci, *Morg. Magg.* C. 21:

Orlando che sentito ha gia il romore
Presto s'arma per andare a vedere:

winter and summer, on foot and on horseback, pinched with hunger, choked with thirst, and exposed to all the injuries of the air, and all the inconveniences in the world."—"I have nothing to do with all this," cried the inn-keeper; "pay your reckoning, and don't trouble me with your foolish stories of a cock and a bull; I can't afford to keep house at that rate."—"Thou art both a fool and a knave of an inn-keeper," replied Don Quixote, and with that clapping spurs to Rozinante, and brandishing his javelin at his host, he rode out of the inn without any opposition, and got a good way from it, without so much as once looking behind him to see whether his squire came after him.

The knight being marched off, there remained only the squire, who was stopped for the reckoning. However he swore he would not pay a cross; for the self-same law that acquitted the knight acquitted the squire. This put the inn-keeper into a great passion, and made him threaten Sancho very hard, telling him if he would not pay him by fair means, he would have him laid by the heels that moment. Sancho swore by his master's knighthood, he would sooner part with his life than his money on such an account; nor should the squires in after ages ever have occasion to upbraid him with giving so ill a precedent, or breaking their rights.

As ill luck would have it, there happened to be in the inn four Segovia clothiers, three Cordova point-makers, and two Seville hucksters, all brisk, gamesome, roguish fellows; who agreeing all in the same design, encompassed Sancho, and pulled him off his ass, while one of them went and got a blanket. Then they put the unfortunate squire into it, and observing the roof of the place they were in to be somewhat too low for their purpose, they carried him into the back yard, which had no limits but the sky, and there they tossed him for several

---

Ma l'Ostier suo per non pigliar errore,
Volle che pegno lasciasse il destrire
Che non ista delli Scotti alla fede.
Orlando scoppia di duolo e di pena,
Ma da pagar non aveva moneta:
Che solea sempre dar bastioni o spade
All Oste, quando i danar gli mancavono.

times together in the blanket, as they do dogs on Shrove Tuesday. Poor Sancho made so grievous an outcry all the while, that his master heard him, and imagined those lamentations were of some person in distress, and consequently the occasion of some adventure; but having at last distinguished the voice, he made to the inn with a broken gallop; and finding the gates shut, he rode about to see whether he might not find some other way to get in. But he no sooner came to the back-yard wall, which was none of the highest, when he was an eye-witness of the scurvy trick that was put upon his squire. There he saw him ascend and descend, and frolick and caper in the air with so much nimbleness and agility, that it is thought the knight himself could not have forborne laughing, had he been any thing less angry. He did his best to get over the wall, but alas, he was so bruised, that he could not so much as alight from his horse. This made him fume and chafe, and vent his passion in a thousand threats and curses, so strange and various that it is impossible to repeat them. But the more he stormed, the more they tossed and laughed; Sancho on his side begging, and howling, and threatening, and damning, to as little purpose as his master, for it was weariness alone could make the tossers give over. Then they charitably put an end to his high dancing, and set him upon his ass again, carefully wrapped in his mantle.

But Maritornes pitying a creature in such tribulation, and thinking he had danced and tumbled enough to be dry, was so generous as to help him to a draught of water, which she purposely drew from the well that moment, that it might be the cooler. Sancho clapped the pot to his mouth, but his master made him desist: "Hold, hold," cried he, "son Sancho, drink no water, child, it will kill thee; behold I have here the most holy balsam, two drops of which will cure thee effectually."—"Ha," replied Sancho, shaking his head, and looking sourly on the knight with a side-face, "have you again forgot that I am no knight? or would you have me cast up the few guts I have left since yesternight's job? Keep your brewings for yourself, in the devil's name, and let me alone." With that he lifted up the jug to his nose, but finding it to be mere element, he spirted out again tho

little he had tasted, and desired the wench to help him to some better liquor; so she went and fetched him wine to make him amends, and paid for it too out of her own pocket; for, to give the devil his due, it was said of her, that though she was somewhat too free of her favours, yet she had something of Christianity in her. As soon as Sancho had tipped off his wine, he visited his ass's ribs twice or thrice with his heels, and, free egress being granted him, he trooped off, well content with the thoughts of having had his ends, and got off scot-free, though at the expense of his shoulders, his usual sureties. It is true, the inn-keeper kept his wallet for the reckoning; but the poor squire was so dismayed, and in such haste to be gone, that he never missed it. The host was for shutting the inn doors after him, for fear of the worst; but the tossers would not let him, being a sort of fellows that would not have cared for Don Quixote a straw, though he had really been one of the Knights of the Round Table.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Of the discourse between the Knight and the Squire, with other matters worthy to be related.

SANCHO overtook his master, but so pale, so dead-hearted, and so mortified, that he was hardly able to sit his ass. "My dear Sancho," said Don Quixote, seeing him in that condition, "I am now fully convinced that this castle, or inn, is enchanted; for what could they be that made themselves such barbarous sport with thee, but spirits and people of the other world? and I the rather believe this, seeing that when I looked over the wall, and saw thee thus abused, I strove to get over it, but could not stir, nor by any means alight from Rozinante. For, by my honour, could I either have got over the wall, or dismounted, I would have revenged thee so effectually on those discourteous wretches, that they should never have forgot the severity of their punishment, though for once I had infringed the laws of chivalry; which, as I have often informed thee, do not

permit any knight to lay hands on one that is not knighted, unless it be in his own defence, and in case of great necessity."—"Nay," quoth Sancho, "I would have paid them home myself, whether knight or no knight, but it was not in my power; and yet I dare say, those that made themselves so merry with my carcase were neither spirits nor enchanted folks, as you will have it, but mere flesh and blood as we be. I am sure they called one another by their Christian names and surnames, while they made me vault and frisk in the air; one was called Pedro Martinez, the other Tenorio Hernandez; and as for our dog of an host, I heard them call him Juan Palomeque the left-handed. Then pray don't you fancy, that your not being able to get over the wall, nor to alight, was some enchanter's trick. It is a folly to make many words; it is as plain as the nose in a man's face, that these same adventures which we hunt for up and down, are like to bring us at last into a peck of troubles, and such a plaguy deal of mischief, that we shan't be able to set one foot afore the other. The short and the long is, I take it to be the wisest course to jog home and look after our harvest, and not to run rambling from Zecca[1] to Mecca, lest we leap out of the fryingpan into the fire."[2]

"Poor Sancho," cried Don Quixote, "how ignorant thou art in matters of chivalry! Come, say no more, and have patience; a day will come when thou shalt be convinced how honourable a thing it is to follow this employment. For, tell me, what satisfaction in this world, what pleasure, can equal that of vanquishing and triumphing over one's enemy? None, without doubt."—"It may be so for aught I know," quoth Sancho, "though I know nothing of the matter. However, this I may venture to say, that ever since we have turned knights-errant, your worship I mean, for it is not for such scrubs as myself to be named the same day with such folk, the devil of any fight you have had the better in, unless it be that with the Biscayan; and in that too you came off with the loss of one ear and the vizor of your helmet. And what have we got ever since, pray, but blows, and more blows; bruises, and more

[1] [Zecca or Ceca was the name of the great mosque at Cordova, which was reckoned as hardly inferior in sanctity to that of Mecca.]

[2] [Lit. *de coca en colodra*, from the measure into the milk-can.]

bruises? besides this tossing in a blanket, which fell all to my share, and for which I cannot be revenged because they were hobgoblins that served me so forsooth, though I hugely long to be even with them, that I may know the pleasure you say there is in vanquishing one's enemy."—"I find, Sancho," cried Don Quixote, "thou and I are both sick of the same disease; but I will endeavour with all speed to get me a sword made with so much art, that no sort of enchantment shall be able to hurt whosoever shall wear it; and perhaps fortune may put into my hand that which Amadis de Gaul wore when he styled himself The Knight of the Burning Sword, which was one of the best blades that ever was drawn by knight; for, besides the virtue I now mentioned, it had an edge like a razor, and would enter the strongest armour that ever was tempered or enchanted."—"I will lay anything," quoth Sancho, "when you have found this sword, it will prove just such another help to me as your balsam; that is to say, it will stand nobody in any stead but your dubbed knights, let the poor devil of a squire shift how he can."—"Fear no such thing," replied Don Quixote; "Heaven will be more propitious to thee than thou imaginest."

Thus they went on discoursing, when Don Quixote, perceiving a thick cloud of dust arise right before them in the road, "The day is come," said he, turning to his squire, "the day is come, Sancho, that shall usher in the happiness which fortune has reserved for me; this day shall the strength of my arm be signalized by such exploits as shall be transmitted even to the latest posterity. See'st thou that cloud of dust, Sancho? it is raised by a prodigious army marching this way, and composed of an infinite number of nations."—"Why then, at this rate," quoth Sancho, "there should be two armies; for yonder is as great a dust on the other side." With that Don Quixote looked, and was transported with joy at the sight, firmly believing that two vast armies were ready to engage each other in that plain; for his imagination was so crowded with those battles, enchantments, surprising adventures, amorous thoughts, and other whimsies which he had read of in romances, that his strong fancy changed everything he saw into what he

desired to see; and thus he could not conceive that the dust was only raised by two large flocks of sheep that were going the same road from different parts, and could not be discerned till they were very near; he was so positive that they were two armies, that Sancho firmly believed him at last. "Well, sir," quoth the squire, "what are we to do, I beseech you?"—"What shall we do," replied Don Quixote, "but assist the weaker and injured side? for know, Sancho, that the army which now moves towards us is commanded by the great Alifanfaron, emperor of the vast island of Taprobana;[1] the other that advances behind us is his enemy, the King of the Garamantians, Pentapolin with the naked arm; so called, because he always enters into the battle with his right arm bare."—"Pray, sir," quoth Sancho, "why are these two great men going together by the ears?"—"The occasion of their quarrel is this," answered Don Quixote. "Alifanfaron, a strong Pagan, is in love with Pentapolin's daughter, a very beautiful lady and a Christian; now her father refuses to give her in marriage to the heathen prince, unless he abjure his false belief and embrace the Christian religion."—"Burn my beard," said Sancho, "if Pentapolin be not in the right on it; I will stand by him, and help him all I may."—"I commend thy resolution," replied Don Quixote, "it is not only lawful, but requisite; for there is no need of being a knight to fight in such battles."—"I guessed as much," quoth Sancho; "but where shall we leave my ass in the meantime, that I may be sure to find him again after the

[1] The most of the fine-sounding names in this catalogue, are to be found (or, at least, something like them) in the Romances. The

"—— utmost Indian isle, Taprobane,"

is one of the few places enumerated, which it is worth while to seek for on any map.

—— "Such forces met not, nor so wide a camp,
When Agrican, with all his northern powers
Beseiged Albracca, as romances tell,
The city of Gallaphrone, from whence to win
The fairest of her sex, Angelica,
His daughter sought by many prowest knights,
Both Paynim and the peers of Charlemagne.

battle; for I fancy you never heard of any man that ever charged upon such a beast."—"It is true," answered Don Quixote, "and therefore I would have thee turn him loose, though thou wert sure never to find him again; for we shall have so many horses after we have got the day, that even Rozinante himself will be in danger of being changed for another." Then mounting to the top of a hillock, whence they might have seen both the flocks, had not the dust obstructed their sight, "Look yonder, Sancho!" cried Don Quixote; "that knight whom thou see'st in the gilded arms, bearing in his shield a crowned lion couchant at the feet of a lady, is the valiant Laurcalco, lord of the silver bridge. He in the armour powdered with flowers of gold, bearing three crows argent in a field azure, is the formidable Micocolembo, great Duke of Quiracia. That other, of a gigantic size that marches on his right, is the undaunted Brandabarbaran of Boliche, sovereign of the three Arabias; he is arrayed in a serpent's skin, and carries instead of a shield a huge gate, which they say belonged to the temple which Samson pulled down at his death, when he revenged himself upon his enemies. But cast thy eyes on this side, Sancho, and at the head of the other army see the victorious Timonel of Carcaiona, Prince of New Biscay, whose armour is quartered azure, vert, or, and argent, and who bears in his shield a cat or, in a field gules, with these four letters, MIAU, for a motto, being the beginning of his mistress's name, the beautiful Miaulina, daughter to Alfeñiquen, Duke of Algarva. That other monstrous load upon the back of yonder wild horse, with arms as white as snow, and a shield without any device, is a Frenchman, now created knight, called Pierre Papin, Baron of Utrique; he whom you see pricking that pied courser's flanks with his armed heels is the mighty Duke of Nervia, Espartafilardo[1] of the Wood, bearing for device on his shield an asparagus-plant with this motto in Castilian, *Rastrea mi suerte; (Divine my fate)*. And thus

[1] [The duke's name *Espartafilardo* signifies spun from grass; the well-known esparto-grass, now used so much in the manufacture of paper, being also, it is said, used for making ropes. The device and motto on the shield may signify the bearer's solitary condition in life;

he went on, naming a great number of others in both armies, to every one of whom his fertile imagination assigned arms, colours, impresses and mottoes, as readily as if they had really been that moment in being before his eyes. And then proceeding without the least hesitation; "That vast body," said he, "that is just opposite to us, is composed of several nations. There you see those who drink the pleasant stream of the famous Xanthus; there the mountaineers that till the Massilian fields; those that sift the pure gold of Arabia Felix: those that inhabit the renowned and delightful banks of Thermodon. Yonder, those who so many ways sluice and drain the golden Pactolus for its precious sand. The Numidians, unsteady and careless of their promises. The Persians, excellent archers. The Medes and Parthians, who fight flying. The Arabs, who have no fixed habitations. The Scythians, cruel and savage, though fair-complexioned. The sooty Ethiopians, that bore their lips; and a thousand other nations whose countenances I know, though I have forgotten their names. On the other side, come those whose country is watered with the crystal streams of Betis, shaded with olive-trees. Those who bathe their limbs in the rich flood of the golden Tagus. Those whose mansions are laved by the profitable stream of the divine Genil.[1] Those who range the verdant Tartesian meadows. Those who indulge their luxurious temper in the delicious pastures of Xerez. The wealthy inhabitants of La Mancha, crowned with golden ears of corn. The ancient offspring of the Goths, cased in iron. Those who wanton in the lazy current of Pisuerga. Those who feed their numerous flocks in the ample plains where the Guadiana, so celebrated for its hidden course, pursues its wandering race. Those who shiver with extremity of cold, on the woody Pyrenean hills, or on the hoary tops of the snowy Apennines. In a word, all that Europe includes within its spacious bounds, half a world in an army." It is

---

for, according to a previous annotator, *Solo como el esparrago* is a Spanish proverb. The whole of this passage is a good-humoured satire on the romance-writers.]

[1] [The river Genil fertilises the plains of Granada in the same way that the Nile annually irrigates the Delta.]

scarce to be imagined how many countries he had run over, how many nations he enumerated, distinguishing every one by what is peculiar to them, with an incredible vivacity of mind, and that still in the puffy style of his fabulous books.

Sancho listened to all this romantic muster-roll as mute as a fish, with amazement; all that he could do was now and then to turn his head on this side and the other side, to see if he could discern the knights and giants whom his master named. But at length, not being able to discover any, "Why," cried he, "you had as good tell me it snows; the devil of any knight, giant, or man, can I see, of all those you talk of now; who knows but all this may be witchcraft and spirits, like yesternight?"—"How," replied Don Quixote; "dost thou not hear their horses neigh, their trumpets sound, and their drums beat?"—"Not I," quoth Sancho, "I prick up my ears like a sow in the beans, and yet I can hear nothing but the bleating of sheep." Sancho might justly say so indeed, for by this time the two flocks were got very near them. "Thy fears disturb thy senses," said Don Quixote, "and hinder thee from hearing and seeing right; but it is no matter; withdraw to some place of safety, since thou art so terrified; for I alone am sufficient to give the victory to that side which I shall favour with my assistance." With that he couched his lance, clapped spurs to Rozinante, and rushed like a thunder-bolt from the hillock into the plain. Sancho bawled after him as loud as he could; "Hold, sir!" cried Sancho; "for heaven's sake come back! What do you mean? as sure as I am a sinner those you are going to maul are nothing but poor harmless sheep. Come back, I say. Woe to him that begot me! Are you mad, sir? there are no giants, no knights, no cats, no asparagus-gardens, no golden quarters nor what-d'ye-call-thems. Does the devil possess you? you are leaping over the hedge before you come at the stile. You are taking the wrong sow by the ear. Oh, that I was ever born to see this day!" But Don Quixote still riding on, deaf and lost to good advice, out-roared his expostulating squire. "Courage, brave knights!" cried he; "march up, fall on, all you who fight under the standard of the valiant Pentapolin with the naked arm; follow me, and

you shall see how easily I will revenge him on that infidel Alifanfaron of Taprobana."

So saying, he charged into the midst of the squadron of sheep and commenced to spear them with his lance with as much gallantry and resolution, as if he were verily engaging with his mortal enemies.

The shepherds and drovers, seeing their sheep go to wreck, called out to him; till finding fair means ineffectual, they unloosed their slings, and began to ply him with stones as big as their fists. But the champion disdaining such a distant war, spite of their showers of stones, rushed among the routed sheep, trampling both the living and the slain in a most terrible manner, impatient to meet the general of the enemy, and end the war at once. "Where, where art thou," cried he, "proud Alifanfaron? Appear! See here a single knight who seeks thee everywhere, to try now, hand to hand, the boasted force of thy strenuous arm, and deprive thee of life, as a due punishment for the unjust war which thou hast audaciously waged with the valiant Pentapolin." Just as he had said this, while the stones flew about his ears, one unluckily hit upon his small ribs, and had like to have buried two of the shortest deep in the middle of his body.

The knight thought himself slain, or at least desperately wounded; and therefore calling to mind his precious balsam, and pulling out his earthen jug, he clapped it to his mouth; but before he had swallowed a sufficient dose, souse comes another of those bitter almonds, that spoiled his draught, and hit him so pat upon the jug, hand and teeth, that it broke the first, maimed the second, and struck out three or four of the last. These two blows were so violent, that the boisterous knight, falling from his horse, lay upon the ground as quiet as the slain; so that the shepherds, fearing he was killed, got their flock together with all speed, and carrying away their dead, which were no less than seven sheep, they made what haste they could out of harm's way, without looking any farther into the matter.

All this while Sancho stood upon the hill, where he was mortified upon the sight of this mad adventure. There he stamped and swore, and banned his master to the bottom-

less pit; he tore his beard for madness, and cursed the moment he first knew him, but seeing him at last knocked down, and settled, the shepherds being scampered, he thought he might venture to come down; and found him in a very ill plight, though not altogether senseless. "Ah! master," quoth he, "this comes of not taking my counsel. Did I not tell you it was a flock of sheep, and no army?"—"Friend Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "know, it is an easy matter for necromancers to change the shapes of things as they please: thus that malicious enchanter, who is my inveterate enemy, to deprive me of the glory which he saw me ready to acquire, while I was reaping a full harvest of laurels, transformed in a moment the routed squadrons into sheep. If thou wilt not believe me, Sancho, yet do one thing for my sake; do but take thy ass, and follow those supposed sheep at a distance, and I dare engage thou shalt soon see them resume their former shapes, and appear such as I described them. But stay, do not go yet, for I want thy assistance: draw near, and see how many cheek-teeth and others I want, for by the dreadful pain in my jaws and gums, I fear there is a total dilapidation in my mouth." With that the knight opened his mouth as wide as he could, while the squire gaped to tell his grinders, with his eyes almost in his chaps; but, just in that fatal moment, the balsam, that lay wambling and fretting in Don Quixote's stomach, came up with an unlucky hiccup and with the same violence that the powder flies out of a gun, all that he had in his stomach discharged itself upon the beard of the compassionate squire. "Santa Maria," cried poor Sancho, "what will become of me! my master is a dead man! he is vomiting his very heart's blood!" But he had hardly said this, when the colour, smell, and taste, soon undeceived him; and, finding it to be the balsam he had seen him drink, it caused such a revulsion in his maw, that, before he could turn his head, he unloaded the whole cargo of his stomach on his master, and put him in as delicate a pickle as he was himself. Sancho having thus paid him in his own coin, ran to his ass to take out something to clean himself and his master; but when he came to look for his wallet and found it missing, not

remembering till then that he had unhappily left it in the inn, he was ready to run quite out of his wits; he stormed and stamped, and cursed him worse than before, and resolved with himself to let his master go to the devil, and e'en trudge home by himself, though he was sure to lose his wages, and his hopes of being governor of the promised island.

Thereupon Don Quixote got up with much ado, and clapping his left hand before his mouth, that the rest of his loose teeth might not drop out, he laid his right hand on Rozinante's bridle (for such was the good-nature of the creature, that he had not budged a foot from his master); then he crept along to Squire Sancho, that stood lolling on his ass's pannel, with his face in the hollow of both his hands, in a doleful moody melancholy fit.—"Friend Sancho," said he, seeing him thus abandoned to sorrow, "learn of me, that one man is no more than another, if he do no more than what another does. All these storms are but tokens of an approaching calm; better success will soon follow: good and bad fortune cannot either last; and therefore we may well promise ourselves a speedy good fortune, since our afflictions have extended their reign to such excess: besides, thou oughtest not to afflict thyself so much for misfortunes, of which thou hast no share, but what friendship and humanity bid thee take."—"How!" quoth Sancho, "have I no other share in them! was not he that was tossed in the blanket this morning the son of my father? and did not the wallet, and all that was in it, which I have lost, belong to the son of my mother?"—"How," asked Don Quixote, "hast thou lost thy wallet?"—"I don't know," said Sancho, "whether it is lost or no, but I am sure I can't tell what is become of it."—"Nay then," replied Don Quixote, "I find we must fast to-day."—"Ay, marry must we," quoth Sancho, "unless you take care to gather in these fields some of those roots and herbs which I have heard you say you know, and which used to help such unlucky knights-errant as yourself at a dead lift."—"For all that," cried Don Quixote, "I would rather have at this time a good luncheon of bread, or a cake and two pilchards' heads, than all the roots and simples in

Dioscorides's herbal, and Doctor Laguna's[1] supplement and commentary: I pray thee therefore get upon thy ass, good Sancho, and follow me once more; for God's providence, that relieves every creature, will not fail us, especially since we are about a work so much to his service; thou seest he even provides for the little insects in the air, the wormlings in the earth, and the spawnlings in the water; and, in his infinite mercy, he makes his sun shine on the righteous, and on the unjust, and rains upon the good and the bad."

"Many words won't fill a bushel," quoth Sancho, interrupting him; "you would make a better preacher than a knight-errant, or I am plaguily out."—"Knights-errant," replied Don Quixote, "ought to know all things; there have been such in former ages, that have delivered as ingenious and learned a sermon or oration at the head of an army, as if they had taken their degrees at the university of Paris; from which we may infer, that the lance never dulled the pen, nor the pen the lance."—"Well then," quoth Sancho, "for once let it be as you would have it; let us even leave this unlucky place, and seek out a lodging, where, I pray God, there may be neither blankets, nor blanket-heavers, nor hobgoblins, nor enchanted Moors; for before I will be hampered as I have been, may I be cursed with bell, book, and candle, if I don't give the trade to the devil."—"Leave all things to Providence," replied Don Quixote," and for once lead which way thou pleasest, for I leave it wholly to thy discretion to provide us a lodging. But first, I pray thee, feel a little how many teeth I want in my upper jaw on the right side, for there I feel most pain."—With that Sancho, feeling with his finger in the knight's mouth, "Pray, sir," quoth he, "how many grinders did your worship use to have on that side?"—"Four," answered Don Quixote, "besides the eye-tooth, all of them whole and sound."—"Think well on what you say," cried Sancho.—"I say four," replied Don Quixote, "if there were not five; for I never in all my life have had a tooth drawn or dropped out, or rotted by the worm, or loosened by rheum."—"Bless me!" quoth Sancho,

[1] [Andres de Laguna, born at Segovia, was physician to Pope Julius III. He translated and annotated the Materia Medica of Pedacius Dioscorides.]

"why, you have in this nether jaw on this side but two grinders and a stump; and in that part of your upper jaw, never a stump, and never a grinder; alas! all is levelled there as smooth as the palm of one's hand." "Oh unfortunate Don Quixote!" cried the knight; "I had rather have lost an arm, so it were not my sword-arm: for a mouth without cheek-teeth is like a mill without a mill-stone, Sancho: and every tooth in a man's head is more valuable than a diamond. But we that profess this strict order of knight-errantry, are all subject to these calamities; and therefore, since the loss is irretrievable, mount, my trusty Sancho, and go thy own pace; I will follow thee."

Sancho obeyed, and led the way, still keeping the road they were in; which being very much beaten, promised to bring him soonest to a lodging. Thus pacing along very softly, for Don Quixote's gums and ribs would not suffer him to go faster, Sancho, to divert his uneasy thoughts, resolved to talk to him all the while of one thing or other, as the next chapter will inform you.

CHAPTER XIX.

Of the wise discourse between Sancho and his Master; as also of the adventure of the dead Corpse, and other famous occurrences.

"Now, sir," quoth Sancho, "I can't help thinking, but that all the mishaps that have befallen us of late, are a just judgment for the grievous sin you have committed against the order of knighthood, in not keeping the oath you swore, not to eat bread at board, nor to have a merry bout with the queen, and the Lord knows what more, until you had won what-d'ye-call-him the Moor's helmet, I think you named him."—"Truly," answered Don Quixote, "thou art much in the right, Sancho; and to deal ingenuously with thee, I wholly forgot that: and now thou may'st certainly assure thyself, thou wert tossed in a blanket for not remembering to put me in mind of it. However, I will take care to make due atonement; for knight-errantry has ways to conciliate all sorts of matters."

—"Why," quoth Sancho, "did I ever swear to mind you of your vow?"—"It is nothing to the purpose," replied Don Quixote, "whether thou sworest or no: let it suffice that I think thou art not very clear from being accessory to the breach of my vow; and therefore to prevent the worst, there will be no harm in providing for a remedy."—"Hark you then," cried Sancho, "be sure you don't forget your atonement, as you did your oath, lest those confounded hobgoblins come and maul me, and mayhap you too, for being a stubborn sinner."

Insensibly night overtook them before they could discover any lodging; and, which was worse, they were almost hunger-starved, all their provision being in the wallet which Sancho had unluckily left behind; and to complete their distress, there happened to them an adventure, or something that really looked like one.

While our benighted travellers went on dolefully in the dark, the knight very hungry, and the squire very sharp set, what should they see moving towards them but a great number of lights, that appeared like so many wandering stars. At this strange apparition, down sank Sancho's heart at once, and even Don Quixote himself was not without some symptoms of surprise. Presently the one pulled his ass's halter, the other his horse's bridle, and both made a stop. They soon perceived that the lights made directly towards them, and the nearer they came the bigger they appeared. At the terrible wonder Sancho shook and shivered in every joint like one in a palsy, and Don Quixote's hair stood up on end; however, heroically shaking off the amazement which that sight stamped upon his soul, "Sancho," said he, "this must doubtless be a great and most perilous adventure, where I shall have occasion to exert the whole stock of my courage and strength."—"Woe's me," quoth Sancho, "should this happen to be another adventure of ghosts, as I fear it is, where shall I find ribs to endure it?"—"Come all the fiends in hell," cried Don Quixote, "I will not suffer them to touch a hair of thy head. If they insulted thee lately, know there was then between thee and me a wall, over which I could not climb: but now we are in the open field, where I shall have liberty to make use of my sword."

—"Ay," quoth Sancho, "you may talk; but should they bewitch you as they did before, what the devil would it avail us to be in the open field."—"Come, Sancho," replied Don Quixote. "be of good cheer; the event will soon convince thee of the greatness of my valour."—"Pray heaven it may," quoth Sancho; "I will do my best."

With that they rode a little out of the way, and, gazing earnestly at the lights, they soon discovered a great number of persons all in white. At the dreadful sight, all poor Sancho's shuffling courage basely deserted him; his teeth began to chatter as if he had been in an ague fit, and as the objects drew nearer his chattering increased. And now they could plainly distinguish about twenty men on horseback, all in white, with torches in their hands, followed by a hearse covered over with black, and six men in deep mourning, whose mules were also in black down to their very heels. Those in white moved slowly, murmuring from their lips something in a low and lamentable tone. This dismal spectacle, at such a time of night, in the midst of such a vast solitude, was enough to have shipwrecked the courage of a stouter squire than Sancho, and even of his master, had he been any other than Don Quixote; but as his imagination straight suggested to him, that this was one of those adventures of which he had so often read in his books of chivalry, the hearse appeared to him to be a litter, where lay the body of some knight either slain or dangerously wounded, the revenge of whose misfortunes was reserved for his prevailing arm; and so without any more ado, couching his lance, and seating himself firm in the saddle, he posted himself in the middle of the road, where the company were to pass. As soon as they came near, "Stand," cried he to them in a haughty tone, "whoever you be, and tell me who you are, whence you come, whither you go, and what you carry in that litter; for there is all the reason in the world to believe, that you have either done or received a great deal of harm; and it is requisite I should be informed of the matter, in order either to punish you for the ill you have committed, or else to revenge you of the wrong you have suffered."—"Sir," answered one of the men in white, "we are in haste; the inn is a great way

off, and we cannot stay to answer so many questions;" and with that, spurring his mule, he moved forwards. But Don Quixote, highly dissatisfied with the reply, laid hold on the mule's bridle and stopped him; "Stay," cried he, "proud discourteous knight! Mend your behaviour, and give me instantly an account of what I asked of you, or here I defy you all to mortal combat."—Now the mule, that was shy and skittish, being thus rudely seized by the bridle, was presently scared, and, rising up on her hinder legs, threw her rider to the ground. Upon this one of the footmen that belonged to the company gave Don Quixote ill language; which so incensed him, that, being resolved to be revenged upon them all, in a mighty rage he flew at the next he met, who happened to be one of the mourners. Him he threw to the ground very much hurt; and then turning to the rest with a wonderful agility, he fell upon them with such fury, that he presently put them all to flight. You would have thought Rozinante had wings at that time, so active and so fierce he then approved himself.

It was not indeed for men unarmed, and naturally fearful, to maintain the field against such an enemy; no wonder then if the gentlemen in white were immediately dispersed. Some ran one way, some another, crossing the plain with their lighted torches: you would now have taken them for a parcel of frolicsome masqueraders, gambling and scouring on a carnival night. As for the mourners, they, poor men, were so muffled up in their long cumbersome cloaks, that they were unable to make a stand, and Don Quixote, with complete safety to himself, routed them and made them, much against their will, leave the place; the rather, for that they thought it was no mortal creature, but the devil himself, that was come to fetch away the dead body which they were accompanying to the grave. All the while Sancho was lost in admiration and astonishment, charmed with the sight of his master's valour; and now concluded him to be the formidable champion he boasted himself.

After this the knight, by the light of a torch that lay burning upon the ground, perceiving the man who was thrown by his mule lying near it, he rode up to him, and,

setting his lance to his throat, "Yield," cried he, "and beg thy life, or thou diest."—"Alas, sir," cried the other, "what need to ask me to yield? I am not able to stir, for one of my legs is broken; and I beseech you, if you are a Christian, do not kill me. I am a licentiate, and have taken the first orders; it would be a heinous sacrilege to take away my life."—"What a devil brought you hither then, if you are a clergyman?" cried Don Quixote.—"What else but my ill fortune," replied the supplicant.—"A worse hovers over thy head," cried Don Quixote, "and threatens thee, if thou dost not answer this moment to every particular question I ask."—"I will, I will, sir," replied the other; "and first I must beg your pardon for saying I was a licentiate, for I have yet but taken my bachelor's degree.[1] My name is Alonzo Lopez; I am of Alcovendas, and came now from the town of Baeza, with eleven other clergymen, the same that now ran away with the torches. We were going to Segovia to bury the corpse of a gentleman of that town, who died at Baeza, and lies now in yonder hearse."—"And who killed him?" asked Don Quixote.—"Heaven, with a pestilential fever," answered the other.—"If it be so," said Don Quixote, "I am discharged of revenging his death. Since Heaven did it, there is no more to be said; had it been its pleasure to have taken me off so, I too must have submitted. I would have you informed, reverend sir, that I am a knight of La Mancha, my name Don Quixote; my employment is to visit all parts of the world in quest of adventures, to right and relieve injured innocence, and punish oppression."—"Truly, sir," replied the clergyman, "I do not understand how you can call that to right and relieve men, when you break their legs: you have made that crooked which was right and straight before; and Heaven knows whether it can ever be set right as long as I live. Instead of relieving the injured, I fear you have injured me past relief; and while you seek adventures, you have made me meet with a very great misadventure."

[1] [Pellicer remarks that at that time it was a common practice to assume degrees prematurely or altogether falsely, an abuse which Cervantes has animadverted on elsewhere. See 'Exemplary Novels,' 'Dog's Dialogue,' p. 153 (trans.), and 'Licentiate Vidriera,' p. 106.]

—"All things," replied Don Quixote, "are not blessed alike with a prosperous event, good Mr. Bachelor; you should have taken care not to have thus gone a-processioning in these desolate plains at this suspicious time of night, with your white surplices, burning torches, and sable weeds, like ghosts and goblins, that went about to scare people out of their wits; for I could not omit doing the duty of my profession, nor would I have forborne attacking you, though you had really been all Lucifer's infernal crew; for such I took you to be, and till this moment could have no better opinion of you."

"Well, sir," said the bachelor, "since my bad fortune has so ordered it, I must desire you, as you are a knight-errant, who have made mine so ill an errand, to help me to get from under my mule, for he lies so heavy upon me, that I cannot get my foot out of the stirrup."—"Why did not you acquaint me sooner with your grievance?" cried Don Quixote; "I might have talked on till to-morrow morning and never have thought on it."—With that he called Sancho, who made no great haste, for he was much better employed in rifling a load of choice provisions, which the holy men carried along with them, on a sumpter-mule. He had spread his coat on the ground, and having laid on it as much food as it would hold, he wrapped it up like a bag, and laid the booty on his ass; and then away he ran to his master, and helped him to set the bachelor upon his mule: after which he gave him his torch, and Don Quixote bade him follow his company, and excuse him for his mistake, though, all things considered, he could not avoid doing what he had done.—"And, sir," quoth Sancho, "if the gentlemen would know who it was that so well thrashed their jackets, you may tell them it was the famous Don Quixote de la Mancha, otherwise called the Knight of the Doleful Countenance.[1]

[1] "Caballero de la triste figura" is translated by Shelton, "Knight of the Ill-favoured Face;" Smollett's "Knight of the Sorrowful Countenance" expresses far better the sense of Cervantes. At a certain chivalric spectacle given by Queen Mary of Hungary, the Count D'Aremberg jousted under the title of "Knight of the Griphon" with Don Juan de Saavedra, who was arrayed in sable armour, and styled "the Sorrowful Knight."

When the bachelor was gone, Don Quixote asked Sancho, why he called him the Knight of the Doleful Countenance?—"I'll tell you why," quoth Sancho; "I have been staring upon you this pretty while by the light of that unlucky priest's torch, and may I never stir if ever I set eyes on a more dismal figure in my born days; and I can't tell what should be the cause on't, unless your being tired after this fray, or the want of your worship's teeth."—"That is not the reason," cried Don Quixote; "no, Sancho, I rather conjecture, that the sage who is commissioned by fate to register my achievements, thought it convenient I should assume a new appellation, as all the knights of yore; for one was called the Knight of the Burning Sword, another of the Unicorn, a third of the Phœnix, a fourth the Knight of the Damsels, another of the Griffin, and another the Knight of Death; by which by-names and distinctions they were known all over the globe. Therefore, doubtless, that learned sage, my historian, has inspired thee with the thought of giving me that additional appellation of the Knight of the Doleful Countenance: and accordingly I assume the name, and intend henceforward to be distinguished by that denomination. And, that it may seem the more proper, I will with the first opportunity have a most doleful face painted on my shield."—"On my word," quoth Sancho, "you may even save the money, and instead of having such a face painted, you need no more but only show your own. I am but in jest, as a body may say; but what with the want of your teeth, and what with hunger, you look so queerly and so woefully, that no painter can draw you a figure so fit for your purpose as your worship's."—This merry conceit of Sancho extorted a smile from his master's austere countenance: however, he persisted in his resolution about the name and the picture; and after a pause, a sudden thought disturbing his conscience, "Sancho," cried he, "I am afraid of being excommunicated for having laid violent hands upon a man in holy orders, *Juxta illud; si quis suadente diabolo*, &c. But yet, now I think better on it, I never touched him with my hands, but only with my lance: besides, I did not in the least suspect I had to do with priests, whom I honour and revere as every good Catholic and faithful Christian ought

to do, but rather took them to be evil spirits. Well, let the worst come to the worst, I remember what befell the Cid Ruy-Diaz, when he broke to pieces the chair of a king's ambassador in the pope's presence, for which he was excommunicated [1]; which did not hinder the worthy Rodrigo de Vivar from behaving himself that day like a valorous knight, and a man of honour."

This said, Don Quixote was for visiting the hearse, to see whether what was in it were only dead bones: but Sancho would not let him; "Sir," quoth he, "you are come off now with a whole skin, and much better than you have done hitherto. Who knows but these same fellows that are now scampered off, may chance to bethink themselves what a shame it is for them to have suffered themselves to be thus routed by a single man, and so come back and fall upon us all at once? Then we shall have work enough upon our hands. The ass is in good case; there's a hill not far off, and our bellies cry cupboard. Come, let us even get out of harm's way, and not let the plough stand to catch a mouse, as the saying is; to the grave with the dead, and the living to the bread." With that he put on a jog-trot with his ass; and his master, bethinking himself that he was in the right, put on after him without replying.

After they had ridden a little way, they came to a valley that lay concealed between two hills. There they alighted, and Sancho having opened his coat and spread it on the grass, with the provision which he had bundled up in it, our two adventurers fell to; and their stomachs being sharpened with the sauce of hunger, they ate their breakfast, dinner, afternoon's luncheon, and supper, all at the same time, feasting themselves with variety of cold meats, which you may be sure were the best that could be got; the priests who had brought it for their own eating, being, like the rest of their coat, none of the worst stewards for their bellies, and knowing how to make much of themselves.

[1] Don Quixote alludes very inaccurately to one of the most evidently apocryphal of all the Cid's achievements. The ballad in which the story is told, must have been composed at some period when the precedence of France and Spain was matter of courtly dispute: therefore long after the time when the best of the Spanish ballads concerning the Cid were framed. I give a translation of the ballad at the end.—See Additional Note XIII.

But now they began to grow sensible of a very great misfortune, and such a misfortune as was bemoaned by poor Sancho, as one of the saddest that ever could befall him; for they found they had not one drop of wine or water to wash down their meat and quench their thirst, which now scorched and choked them worse than hunger had pinched them before. However, Sancho, considering they were in a place where the grass was fresh and green, said to his master——what you shall find in the following chapter.

CHAPTER XX.

Of a wonderful Adventure achieved by the valorous Don Quixote de la Mancha; the like never compassed with less danger by any of the most famous Knights in the world.

"THE grass is so fresh," quoth Sancho, half choked with thirst, "that I dare lay my life we shall light on some spring or stream hereabouts; therefore, sir, let us look, I beseech you, that we may quench this confounded drought, that plagues our throats ten times worse than hunger did our guts." Thereupon Don Quixote, leading Rozinante by the bridle, and Sancho his ass by the halter, after he had laid up the reversion of their meal, they went feeling about, only guided by their guess; for it was so dark they scarce could see their hands. They had not gone above two hundred paces before they heard a noise of a great waterfall; which was to them the most welcome sound in the world: but then listening with great attention to know on which side the grateful murmur came, they on a sudden heard another kind of noise that strangely allayed the pleasure of the first, especially in Sancho, who was naturally fearful and faint-hearted. They heard a terrible din of obstreperous blows, struck regularly, and a more dreadful rattling of chains and irons, which, together with the roaring of the waters, might have filled any other heart but Don Quixote's with terror and amazement. Add to this the horrors of a dark night and solitude in an un-

known place, the loud rustling of the leaves of some lofty trees under which fortune brought them at the same unlucky moment, the whistling of the wind, which concurred with the other dismaying sounds, the fall of the waters, the thundering thumps, and the clanking of chains aforesaid, the worst too being, that the blows were redoubled without ceasing, the wind blew on, and daylight was far distant. But then it was, Don Quixote, secured by his intrepidity (his inseparable companion), mounted his Rozinante, braced his shield, brandished his lance, and showed a soul unknowing fear, and superior to danger and fortune.

"Know, Sancho," cried he, "I was born in this iron age, to restore the age of gold, or the golden age, as some choose to call it. I am the man for whom fate has reserved the most dangerous and formidable attempts, the most stupendous and glorious adventures, and the most valorous feats of arms. I am the man who must revive the order of the Round Table, the twelve peers of France, and the nine worthies, and efface the memory of your Platyrs, your Tablantes, your Olivantes, and your Tirantes. Now must your Knights of the Sun, your Belianises and all the numerous throng of famous heroes and knights-errant of former ages, see the glory of all their most dazzling actions eclipsed and darkened by more illustrious exploits. Do but observe, O thou my faithful squire, what a multifarious assemblage of terrors surrounds us! A horrid darkness, a doleful solitude, a confused rustling of leaves, a dismal rattling of chains, a howling of the winds, an astonishing noise of cataracts, that seem to fall with a boisterous rapidity from the steep mountains of the moon, a terrible sound of redoubled blows, still wounding our ears like furious thunderclaps, and a dead and universal silence of those things that might buoy up the sinking courage of frail mortality. In this extremity of danger, Mars himself might tremble with the affright: yet I, in the midst of all these unutterable alarms, still remain undaunted and unshaken. These are but incentives to my valour, and but animate my heart the more; it grows too big and mighty for my breast, and leaps at the approach of this threatening adventure, formidable as it is like to prove. Come, girt

Rozinante straighter, and then Providence protect thee: thou mayest stay for me here: but if I do not return in three days, go back to our village; and from thence, for my sake, to Toboso, where thou shalt say to my incomparable Lady Dulcinea, that her captive knight died in attempting things that might have made him worthy to be called hers.

When Sancho heard his master talk thus, he fell a weeping in the most pitiful manner in the world. "Pray, sir," cried he, "why will you thus run yourself into mischief. Why need you go about this rueful misventure? it is main dark, and there is never a living soul sees us; we have nothing to do but to sheer off, and get out of harm's way, though we were not to drink a drop these three days. Who is there to take notice of our flinching? I have heard our parson, whom you very well know, say in his pulpit, that he who seeks danger, perishes therein; and therefore we should not tempt Heaven by going about a thing that we cannot compass but by a miracle. Is it not enough, think you, that it has preserved you from being tossed in a blanket as I was, and made you come off safe and sound from among so many enemies that went with the dead man? If all this won't work upon that hard heart of yours, do but think of me, and rest yourself assured, that when once you have left your poor Sancho, he will be ready to give up the ghost for very fear, to the next that will come for it: I left my house and home, my wife, children, and all to follow you, hoping to be the better for it, and not the worse; but as covetousness breaks the sack, so has it broke me and my hopes; for while I thought myself cocksure of that unlucky and accursed island, which you so often promised me, in lieu thereof you drop me here in a strange place. Dear master, don't be so hard-hearted; and if you won't be persuaded not to meddle with this ungracious adventure, do but put it off till daybreak, to which, according to the little skill I learned when a shepherd, it cannot be above three hours; for the muzzle of the lesser bear[1] is just over our head, and makes midnight in the line of the left

[1] [Lit. the mouth of the Horn—the Spanish name of the constellation Ursa Minor. It is also called *Carro Menor*, the Little Wain.]

arm."—"How! canst thou see the muzzle of the bear?" asked Don Quixote; "there's not a star to be seen in the sky."—"That's true," quoth Sancho; "but fear is sharp-sighted, and can see things under ground, and much more in the skies."—"Let day come, or not come, it is all one to me," cried the champion; "it shall never be recorded of Don Quixote, that either tears or entreaties could make him neglect the duty of a knight. Then, Sancho, say no more; for heaven, that has inspired me with a resolution of attempting this dreadful adventure, will certainly take care of me and thee; come quickly, girt my steed, and stay here for me; for I will shortly return alive or dead."

Sancho, finding his master obstinate, and neither to be moved with tears nor good advice, resolved to try a trick of policy to keep him there till daylight: and accordingly, while he pretended to fasten the girths, he slily tied Rozinante's hinder legs with his ass's halter, without being so much as suspected; so that when Don Quixote thought to have moved forwards, he found his horse would not go a step without leaping, though he spurred him on smartly. Sancho, perceiving his plot took, "Look you, sir," quoth he, "heaven's on my side, and won't let Rozinante budge a foot forwards; and now, if you will still be spurring him, I dare pawn my life, it will be but striving against the stream; or, as the saying is, but kicking against the pricks." Don Quixote fretted, and chafed, and raved, and was in a desperate fury, to find his horse so stubborn; but at last, observing that the more he spurred and galled his sides, the more restive he proved, he resolved, though very unwillingly, to have patience until it was light. "Well," said he, "since Rozinante will not leave this place, I must tarry in it until the dawn, though its tardiness will cost me some sighs."—"You shall not need to sigh nor be melancholy," quoth Sancho, "for I will undertake to tell you stories until it be day; unless your worship had rather get off your horse, and take a nap upon the green grass, as knights-errant are wont, that you may be the fresher, and the better able in the morning to go through that monstrous adventure that waits for you."—"What dost thou mean by thus alighting and sleeping?" replied Don

Quixote; "thinkest thou I am one of those carpet-knights, that abandon themselves to sleep and lazy ease, when danger is at hand? no, sleep thou, thou art born to sleep; or do what thou wilt. As for myself, I know what I have to do."—"Good sir," quoth Sancho, "do not put yourself into a passion; I meant no such thing, not I." Saying this, he clapped one of his hands upon the pommel of Rozinante's saddle, and the other upon the crupper, and thus he stood embracing his master's left thigh, not daring to budge an inch, for fear of the blows that dinned continually in his ears. Don Quixote then thought fit to claim his promise, and desired him to tell some of his stories to help to pass away the time.

"Sir," quoth Sancho, "I am woefully frighted, and have no heart to tell stories; however, I will do my best; and, now I think on it, there is one come into my head, which if I can but hit on it right, and nothing happens to put me out, is the best story you ever heard in your life; therefore listen, for I am going to begin.—In the days of yore, when it was as it was, good betide us all, and evil to him that evil seeks. And here, sir, you are to take notice that they of old did not begin their tales in an ordinary way; for it was a saying of a wise man whom they called Cato the Roman Tonsor,[1] that said, Evil to him that evil seeks, which is as pat for your purpose as a ring for the finger, that you may neither meddle nor make, nor seek evil and mischief for the nonce, but rather get out of harm's way, for nobody forces us to run into the mouth of all the devils in hell that wait for us yonder."—"Go on with the story, Sancho," cried Don Quixote, "and leave the rest to my discretion."—"I say then," quoth Sancho, "that in a country town in Estremadura, there lived a certain shepherd, goat-herd I should have said; which goat-herd, as the story has it, was called Lope Ruiz; and this Lope Ruiz was in love with a shepherdess, whose name was Toralva; the which shepherdess, whose name was Toralva, was the daughter of a wealthy grazier; and this wealthy grazier"——"If thou goest on at this rate," cried Don Quixote, "and makest so many needless repetitions, thou wilt not have told thy

[1] [A mistake for Cato, the Roman Censor.]

story these two days. Pray thee tell it concisely, and like a man of sense, or let it alone."—"I tell it you," quoth Sancho, "as all stories are told in our country, and I cannot for the blood of me tell it in any other way, nor is it fit I should alter the custom."—"Why then, tell it how thou wilt," replied Don Quixote, "since my ill fortune forces me to stay and hear thee."

"Well then, dear sir," quoth Sancho, "as I was saying, this same shepherd was woundily in love with that same shepherdess Toralva, who was a round, strapping, wild wench, and somewhat mannish, for she had a few whiskers; methinks I see her now standing before me."—"Then I suppose thou knewest her," said Don Quixote.—"Not I," answered Sancho, "I never set eyes on her in my life; but he that told me the story said this was so true, that I might vouch it for a real truth, and even swear I had seen it all myself. Well,——but, as you know, days go and come, and time and straw makes medlars ripe; so it happened, that after several days coming and going, the devil, who seldom lies dead in a ditch, but will have a finger in every pie, so brought it about, that the shepherd fell out with his sweetheart, insomuch that the love he bore her turned into dudgeon and ill-will; and the cause was, by report of some mischievous tale-carriers that bore no good will to either party, for that the shepherd thought her no better than she should be, a little loose in the hilts, and free of her behaviour.[1] Thereupon being grievous in the dumps about it, and now bitterly hating her, he even resolved to leave that country to get out of her sight: for now, as every dog has his day, the wench perceiving he came no longer a-suitoring to her, but rather tossed his nose at her, and shunned her, she began to love him and dote upon him like anything."—"That is the nature of women," cried Don Quixote, "not to love when we love them, and to love when we love them not. But go on."

"The shepherd then gave her the slip," continued Sancho, "and driving his goats before him, went trudging

[1] [The original runs, "she gave him a certain quantity of small occasions for jealousy, passing due limits and trenching upon what is forbidden."]

through Estremadura, in his way to Portugal. But Toralva, having a long nose, soon smelt his design, and then what does she do, think ye, but comes after him bare-foot and bare-legged, with a pilgrim's staff in her hand, and a wallet at her back, wherein they say she carried a piece of looking-glass, half a comb, a broken pot with paint, and I don't know what other trinkum-trankums to prink herself up. But let her carry what she would, it is no bread and butter of mine; the short and the long is, that they say the shepherd with his goats got at last to the river Guadiana,[1] which happened to be overflowed at that time, and what was worse than ill luck, there was neither boat nor bark to ferry him over; which vexed him the more because he perceived Toralva at his heels, and he feared to be teased and plagued with her weeping and wailing. At last he spied a fisherman, in a little boat, but so little it was, that it would carry but one man and one goat at a time. Well, for all that, he called to the fisherman, and agreed with him to carry him and his three hundred goats over the water. The bargain being struck, the fisherman came with his boat, and carried over one goat; then he rowed back and fetched another goat, and after that another goat. Pray sir," quoth Sancho, "be sure you keep a good account how many goats the fisherman ferries over; for if you happen but to miss one, my tale is at an end, and the devil a word I have more to say.—Well then, whereabouts was I ?—Ho! I have it.—Now the landing-place on the other side was very muddy and slippery, which

[1] This story (originally told by Petrus Alphonsus) may be found in its most perfect form in the *Cento Novelle Antiche*.

"Il favolatore incommencio a dire una favola de uno villano che avea suoi cento bisonte; ando a uno mercato a comperire berbeci ed ebbene due per bisonte. Tornando con le sue pecore uno fiume che avea passa era molto cresciuto. Stando a la riva brigosi d'accioire in questo modo che vide uno pescator povero con uno suo burchiello a dismisura picciolino, si che non vi capea se non il villano ed una pecora per volto. Lo villano commencio a passare con una berbice, e comincio a vocare il fiume era largo. Voga è passa. E lo favolatore non dicea più: E Messere Azzolino disse; che fai? via oltre. Lo favolatore rispose, Messere lasciate passare le pecore, poi conteremo lo fatto; che le pecore no sarebbono passate in uno anno, si che in tanto puote bene adagio dormire."—Nov. xxx.

made the fisherman be a long while in going and coming; yet for all that, he took heart of grace, and made shift to carry over one goat, then another, and then another."—"Come," said Don Quixote, "we will suppose he has landed them all on the other side of the river; for as thou goest on, one by one, we shall not have done these twelve months."—"Pray, let me go on in my own way," quoth Sancho. "How many goats are got over already?"—"Nay, how the devil can I tell?" replied Don Quixote.—"There it is!" quoth Sancho; "did not I bid you keep count? on my word the tale is at an end, and now you may go whistle for the rest."—"Ridiculous," cried Don Quixote: "pray thee, is there no going on with the story unless I know exactly how many goats are wafted over?"—"No, marry is there not," quoth Sancho, "for as soon as you answered that you could not tell, the rest of the story quite and clean slipped out of my head; and in troth it is a thousand pities, for it was a special one."—"So then," cried Don Quixote, "the story's ended?"—"Ay, marry is it," quoth Sancho, "it is no more to be fetched to life than my dead mother."—"Upon my honour," cried Don Quixote, "a most extraordinary story, and told and concluded in as extraordinary a manner! it is a nonsuch, I assure ye; though truly I expected no less from a man of such uncommon parts. Alas! poor Sancho, I am afraid this dreadful noise has turned thy brain."—"That may well be," quoth Sancho; "but as for my story, I am sure there is nothing more to be said, for where you lose the account of the goats, there it ends."—"Let it be so," replied Don Quixote; "but now let us try whether Rozinante be in humour to march." With that he gave Rozinante two spurs, and the high-mettled jade answered with one bound, and then stood stock still, not having the command of his hind legs.

Much about this time, whether it were the coolness of the dawn, or that Sancho had eaten some loosening food at supper, or, which seems more probable, that nature, by a regular impulse, gave him notice of her desire to perform a certain function, it seems, honest Sancho found himself urged to do that which nobody could do for him: but such were his fears, that he durst not for his life stir the

breadth of a straw from his master; yet to think of not doing that which he had a mind to was to him as great an impossibility. In this perplexing exigency (with leave be it spoken) he could find no other expedient but to take his right hand from the crupper of the saddle, and softly untying his breeches, let them drop down to his heels; having done this, he as silently took up his shirt, and exposed his posteriors, which were none of the least, to the open air: but the main point was how to ease himself of this terrible burden without making a noise; to which purpose he clutched his teeth close, screwed up his face, shrunk up his shoulders, and held in his breath as much as possible: yet see what misfortunes attend the best projected undertakings! when he had almost compassed his design, at the very last he could not help but make a small sound, very different from those that caused his fear. "Hark!" cried Don Quixote, who heard it, "what noise is that, Sancho."—"Some new adventures, I will warrant you," quoth Sancho, "for ill luck, you know, seldom comes alone." Having passed off the thing thus, he even ventured to try his fortune again, and did it so cleverly, that without the least rumour or noise, his business was done effectually, to the unspeakable ease of his body and mind.

But Don Quixote having the sense of smelling as perfect as that of hearing, and Sancho standing so very near, or rather tacked to him, certain fumes, that ascended perpendicularly, began to regale his nostrils with a smell not so grateful as amber. No sooner did the unwelcome steams disturb him, but having recourse to the common remedy, he stopped his nose, and then, with a snuffling voice, "Sancho," said he, "thou art certainly in great bodily fear."—"So I am," quoth Sancho: "but what makes your worship perceive it now more than you did before."—"Because," replied Don Quixote, "thou smellest now more unsavourily than thou didst before."—"Hoh! that may be," quoth Sancho: "but whose fault is that? you may e'en thank yourself for it. Why do you lead me a wild-goose chase, and bring me at such unseasonable hours to such dangerous places? you know I am not used to it."—"Pray thee," said Don Quixote, still holding his nose, "get thee three or

four steps from me; and for the future take more care, and know your distance; for I find my familiarity with thee has bred contempt."—"I warrant," quoth Sancho, "you think I have been doing something I should not have done."—"The less you say, Friend Sancho," cried Don Quixote, "the better it will be."

This discourse, such as it was, served them to pass away the night; and now Sancho, seeing the morning arise, thought it time to untie Rozinante's feet, and do up his breeches; and he did both with so much caution, that his master suspected nothing. As for Rozinante, he no sooner felt himself at liberty, but he seemed to express his joy by pawing the ground: for, with his leave be it spoken, he was a stranger to curveting and prancing. Don Quixote also took it as a good omen, that his steed was now ready to move, and believed that it was a signal given him by kind fortune, to animate him to give birth to the approaching adventure.

Now had Aurora displayed her rosy mantle over the blushing skies, and dark night withdrawn her sable veil; all objects stood confessed to human eyes, and Don Quixote could now perceive he was under some tall chestnut trees, whose thick-spreading boughs diffused an awful gloom around the place, but he could not yet discover whence proceeded the dismal sound of those incessant strokes. Therefore, being resolved to find it out, once more he took his leave of Sancho, with the same injunctions as before; adding, withal, that he should not trouble himself about the recompense of his services, for he had taken care of that in his will, which he had providently made before he left home; but if he came off victorious from this adventure, he might most certainly expect to be gratified with the promised island. Sancho could not forbear blubbering again to hear these tender expressions of his master, and resolved not to leave him till he had finished this enterprise. And from that deep concern, and this nobler resolution to attend him, the author of this history infers, that the squire was something of a gentleman by descent, or at least the offspring of the old Christians.[1] Nor did his good nature

[1] [In contradistinction to the Jewish or Moorish families.]

fail to move his master more than he was willing to show, at a time when it behoved him to shake off all softer thoughts; for now he rode towards the place whence the noise of the blows and the water seemed to come, while Sancho trudged after him, leading by the halter the inseparable companion of his good and bad fortune.

After they had gone a pretty way under a pleasant covert of chestnut-trees, they came into a meadow, adjoining to certain rocks, from whose top there was a great fall of waters. At the foot of those rocks they discovered certain old ill-contrived buildings, that rather looked like ruins than inhabited houses; and they perceived that the terrifying noise of the blows, which yet continued, issued out of that place. When they came nearer, even patient Rozinante himself started at the dreadful sound; but, being heartened and pacified by his master, he was at last prevailed upon to draw nearer and nearer with wary steps: the knight recommending himself all the way most devoutly to his Dulcinea, and now and then also to Heaven, in short ejaculations. As for Sancho, he stuck close to his master, peeping all the way through Rozinante's legs, to see if he could perceive what he dreaded to find out. When a little farther, doubling the point of a rock, they plainly discovered (kind reader, do not take it amiss) six huge fulling-mill hammers, which interchangeably thumping several pieces of cloth, made the terrible noise that caused all Don Quixote's anxieties and Sancho's tribulation that night.

Don Quixote was struck dumb at this unexpected sight, and was ready to drop from his horse with shame and confusion. Sancho stared upon him, and saw him hang down his head, with a desponding dejected countenance, like a man quite dispirited with this cursed disappointment. At the same time he looked upon Sancho, and seeing by his eyes, and his cheeks swelled with laughter, that he was ready to burst, he could not forbear laughing himself, in spite of all his vexation; so that Sancho, seeing his master begin, immediately gave a loose to his mirth, and broke out into such a fit of laughing, that he was forced to hold his sides with both his knuckles, for fear of bursting his aching paunch. Four times he ceased, and four times

renewed his obstreperous laughing; which sauciness Don Quixote began to resent with great indignation; and the more when Sancho, in a jeering tone, presumed to ridicule him with his own words, repeating part of the vain speech he made when first they heard the noise; "Know, Sancho, I was born in this iron age to restore the age of gold. I am the man for whom heaven has reserved the most dangerous and glorious adventures," etc. Thus he went on, till his master, dreadfully enraged at his insolence, hit him two such blows on the shoulders with his lance, that, had they fallen upon his head, they had saved Don Quixote the trouble of paying him his wages, whatever he must have done to his heirs. Thereupon Sancho, finding his jest turn to earnest, begged pardon with all submission: "Mercy, good your worship," cried he, "spare my bones, I beseech you! I meant no harm, I did but joke a little."—"And because you joke, I do not," cried Don Quixote. "Come hither, good Mr. Jester, you who pretend to rally; tell me, had this been a dangerous adventure as well as it proves only a false alarm, have I not shown resolution enough to undertake and finish it? am I, who am a knight, bound to know the meaning of every mechanic noise, and distinguish between sound and sound! Besides, it might happen, as really is the case, that I had never seen a fulling-mill before, though thou, like a base scoundrel as thou art, wert born and brought up among such mean implements of drudgery. But let the six fulling-hammers be transformed into so many giants, and then set them at me one by one, or all together; and if I do not lay them all at my feet with their heels upwards, then I will give thee leave to exercise thy ill-bred raillery as much as thou pleasest."

"Good your worship," quoth Sancho, "talk no more on it, I beseech you; I confess I carried the jest too far. But now all is hushed and well, pray tell me in sober sadness, as you hope to speed in all adventures, and come off safe and sound as from this, don't you think but that the fright we were in, I mean that I was in, would be a good subject for people to make sport with?"—"I grant it," answered Don Quixote, "but I would not have it told; for all people are not so discreet as to place things, or look upon them, in the position in which they should be considered."—"I

will say that for you," quoth Sancho, "you have shown you understand how to place things in their right position, when, aiming at my head, you hit my shoulders; had not I ducked a little on one side, I had been in a fine condition! but let that pass, it will wash out in the bucking. I have heard my grandam say, that man loves thee well who makes thee to weep. Good masters may be hasty sometimes with a servant, but presently after a hard word or two they commonly give him a pair of cast breeches: what they give after a basting, heaven knows; all I can tell is, that knights-errant, after bastinadoes, give you some cast island, or some old-fashioned kingdom upon the main-land."

"Fortune," said Don Quixote, "will perhaps order everything thou hast said to come to pass; therefore, Sancho, I pray thee, think no more of my severity; thou knowest a man cannot always command the first impulse of his passions. On the other side, let me advise thee not to be so saucy for the future, and not to assume that strange familiarity with me which is so unbecoming in a servant. I protest, in such a vast number of books of knight-errantry as I have read, I never found that any squire was ever allowed so great a freedom of speech with his master as thou takest with me; and truly I look upon it to be a great fault in us both; in thee for disrespecting me, and in me for not making myself be more respected. Gandalin, Amadis de Gaul's squire, though he was earl of the Firm Island, yet never spoke to his master but with cap in hand, his head bowed, and his body half bent, after the Turkish manner. But what shall we say of Gasabal, Don Galaor's squire, who was such a strict observer of silence, that, to the honour of his marvellous taciturnity, he gave the author occasion to mention his name but once in that voluminous authentic history? From all this, Sancho, I would have thee make this observation, that there ought to be a distance kept between the master and the man, the knight and the squire. Therefore, once more I tell thee, let us live together for the future more according to the due decorum of our respective degrees, without giving one another any further vexation on this account; for after all, it will always be the worse for you

on whatsoever occasion we happen to disagree. As for the rewards I promised you, they will come in due time; and should you be disappointed that way, you have your salary to trust to, as I have told you."

"You say very well," quoth Sancho; "but now, sir, suppose no rewards should come, and I should be forced to stick to my wages, I would fain know how much a squire-errant used to earn in the days of yore! Did they go by the month, or by the day, like our labourers?"—"I do not think," replied Don Quixote, "they ever went by the hire, but rather that they trusted to their master's generosity. And if I have assigned thee wages in my will, which I left sealed up at home, it was only to prevent the worst, because I do not know yet what success I may have in chivalry in these depraved times; and I would not have my soul suffer in the other world for such a trifling matter; for there is no state of life so subject to dangers as that of a knight-errant."—"Like enough," quoth Sancho, "when merely the noise of the hammers of a fulling-mill is able to trouble and disturb the heart of such a valiant knight as your worship! But you may be sure I will not hereafter so much as offer to open my lips to jibe or joke at your doings, but always stand in awe of you, and honour you as my lord and master."—"By doing so," replied Don Quixote, "thy days shall be long on the face of the earth; for next to our parents, we ought to respect our masters, as if they were our fathers.

CHAPTER XXI.

Of the high Adventure and Conquest of Mambrino's Helmet, with other Events relating to our invincible Knight.

AT the same time it began to rain, and Sancho would fain have taken shelter in the fulling-mills; but Don Quixote had conceived such an antipathy against them for the shame they had put upon him, that he would by no means be prevailed with to go in; and turning to the right hand

he struck into a highway, where they had not gone far before he discovered a horseman, who wore upon his head something that glittered like gold. The knight had no sooner spied him, but, turning to his squire, "Sancho," cried he, "I believe there is no proverb but what is true; they are all so many sentences and maxims drawn from experience, the universal mother of sciences; for instance, that saying, That where one door shuts, another opens: thus fortune, that last night deceived us with the false prospect of an adventure, this morning offers us a real one to make us amends; and such an adventure, Sancho, that if I do not gloriously succeed in it, I shall have now no pretence to an excuse, no darkness, no unknown sounds to impute my disappointment to: in short, in all probability yonder comes the man who wears on his head Mambrino's helmet,[1] and thou knowest the vow I have made."—"Good sir," quoth Sancho, "mind what you say, and take heed what you do; for I would willingly keep my carcase and the case of my understanding from being pounded, mashed, and crushed with fulling hammers."—"Hell take the blockhead!" cried Don Quixote; "is there no difference between a helmet and a fulling-mill?"—"I don't know," saith Sancho, "but I am sure, were I suffered to speak my mind now as I was wont, mayhap I would give you such main reasons, that yourself should see you are wide of the matter."—"How can I be mistaken, thou eternal misbeliever!" cried Don Quixote; "dost thou not see that knight that comes riding up directly towards us upon a dapple-grey steed, with a helmet of gold on his head."—"I see what I see," replied Sancho, "and the devil of anything I can spy but a fellow on such another grey ass as mine is, with something that glitters o' top of his head."—"I tell thee, that is Mambrino's helmet," replied Don Quixote; "do thou stand at a distance, and leave me to deal with him; thou shalt see, that without trifling away so much as a moment in needless talk, I will finish this adventure, and possess myself of the desired helmet."—"I shall stand at a distance, you may be sure," quoth Sancho; "but God grant that it be not

[1] See *Orlando Furioso*, Canto I.

the fulling-mills again."[1]—"I have warned you already, fellow," said Don Quixote, "not so much as to name the fulling-mills; dare but once more to do it, nay, but to think on it, and I vow to—I say no more, but I'll full your very soul." These threats were more than sufficient to padlock Sancho's lips, for he had no mind to have his master's vow fulfilled at the expense of his bones.

Now the truth of the story was this: there were in that part of the country two villages, one of which was so little that it had not so much as a shop in it, nor any barber; so that the barber of the greater village served also the smaller. And thus a person happening to have occasion to be let blood, and another to be shaved, the barber was going thither with his brass basin, which he had clapped upon his head to keep his hat, that chanced to be a new one, from being spoiled by the rain; and as the basin was new scoured, it made a glittering show a great way off. As Sancho had well observed, he rode upon a grey ass, which Don Quixote as easily took for a dapple-grey steed, as he took the barber for a knight, and his brass basin for a golden helmet; his distracted brain easily applying every object to his romantic ideas. Therefore, when he saw the poor imaginary knight draw near, he fixed his lance, or javelin, to his thigh, and without staying to hold a parley with his adversary, flew at him as fiercely as Rozinante would gallop, resolved to pierce him through and through; crying out in the midst of his career, "Caitiff, wretch, defend thyself, or immediately surrender that which is so justly my due."

The barber, who, as he peaceably went along, saw that terrible apparition come thundering upon him at unawares, had no other way to avoid being run through with his lance, but to throw himself off from his ass to the ground; and then as hastily getting up, he took to his heels, and ran over the fields swifter than the wind, leaving his ass and his basin behind him. Don Quixote finding himself thus master of the field, and of the basin, "The miscreant," cried he, "who has left this helmet, has shown himself as prudent as the beaver, who, finding

[1] [There is a far-fetched play upon words here, in the original, which cannot be rendered in English.]

himself hotly pursued by the hunters, to save his life, tears and cuts off with his teeth that for which his natural instinct tells him he is followed."—Then he ordered Sancho to take up the helmet.—"On my word," quoth Sancho, having taken it up, "it is a special basin, and as well worth a piece of eight as a thief is worth a halter."

With that he gave it to his master, who presently clapped it on his head, turning it every way to find out the beaver or vizor; and at last seeing it had none, "Doubtless," said he, "the pagan for whom this famous helmet was first made, had a head of a prodigious size; but the worst is, that there is at least one-half of it wanting."—Sancho could not forbear smiling to hear his master call the barber's basin a helmet, and, had not his fear dashed his mirth, he had certainly laughed outright. —"What does the fool grin at now?" cried Don Quixote. "I laugh," said he, "to think what a hugeous jolt-head he must needs have had who was the owner of this same helmet, that looks for all the world like a barber's basin." —"I fancy," said Don Quixote, "this enchanted helmet has fallen by some strange accident into the hands of some person, who, not knowing the value of it, for the lucre of a little money, finding it to be of pure gold, melted one half, and of the other made this headpiece, which, as thou sayest, has some resemblance to a barber's basin: but to me, who know the worth of it, the metamorphosis signifies little; for as soon as ever I come to some town where there is an armourer, I will have it altered so much for the better, that then even the helmet which the God of Smiths made for the God of War shall not deserve to be compared with it. In the meantime I'll wear it as it is; it is better than nothing, and will serve at least to save part of my head from the violent encounter of a stone."— "Ay, that it will," quoth Sancho, "so it is not hurled out of a sling, as were those at the battle between the two armies, when they hit you that confounded dowse o' the chops, that saluted your worship's cheek-teeth, and broke the pot about your ears in which you kept that blessed drench that made me bring up my guts."—"True," cried Don Quixote, "there I lost my precious balsam indeed; but I do not much repine at it, for thou knowest I have

the receipt in my memory."—"So have I too," quoth Sancho, "and shall have while I have breath to draw; but if ever I make any of that stuff, or taste it again, may I give up the ghost with it! Besides, I don't intend ever to do anything that may give occasion for the use of it: for, my fixed resolution is, with all my five senses, to preserve myself from hurting, and from being hurt by, anybody. As to being tossed in a blanket again, I have nothing to say to that, for there is no remedy for accidents but patience it seems: so if it ever be my lot to be served so again, I'll even shrink up my shoulders, hold my breath, and shut my eyes, and then happy be lucky, let the blanket and fortune even toss on to the end of the chapter."

"Truly," said Don Quixote, "I am afraid thou art no good Christian, Sancho, thou never forgettest injuries. Let me tell thee, it is the part of noble and generous spirits to pass by trifles. Where art thou lame? which of thy ribs is broken, or what part of thy skull is bruised, that thou can'st never think on that jest without malice? for, after all, it was nothing but a jest, a harmless piece of pastime: had I looked upon it otherwise, I had returned to that place before this time, and had made more noble mischief in revenge of the abuse, than ever the incensed Grecians did at Troy, for the detention of their Helen, that famed beauty of the ancient world; who, however, had she lived in our age, or had my Dulcinea adorned her's, would have found her charms outrivalled by my mistress's perfections;" and saying this, he heaved up a deep sigh. "Well then," quoth Sancho, "I will not rip up old sores; let it go for a jest, since there is no revenging it in earnest. But what shall we do with this dapple-grey steed, that is so like a grey ass? you see that same poor devil-errant has left it to shift for itself, poor thing, and by his haste to rub off, I don't think he means to come back for it, and, by my beard, the grey beast is a special one."—"It is not my custom," replied Don Quixote, "to plunder those whom I overcome; nor is it usual among us knights, for the victor to take the horse of his vanquished enemy and let him go afoot, unless his own steed be killed or disabled in the combat: therefore, Sancho, leave the

horse, or the ass, whichever thou pleasest to call it; the owner will be sure to come for it, as soon as he sees us gone."—"I have a huge mind to take him along with us," quoth Sancho, "or at least to exchange him for my own, which is not so good. What, are the laws of knight-errantry so strict, that a man must not exchange one ass for another? at least I hope they will give me leave to swop one harness for another."—"Truly, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "I am not so very certain as to this last particular, and therefore, till I am better informed, I give thee leave to exchange the furniture, if thou hast absolutely occasion for it."—"I have so much occasion for it," quoth Sancho, "that though it were for my own very self I could not need it more." So without any more ado, being authorised by his master's leave, he made *mutatio caparum* [a change of caparisons], and made his own beast three parts in four better[1] for his new furniture. This done, they breakfasted upon what they left at supper, and quenched their thirst at the stream that turned the fulling-mills, towards which they took care not to cast an eye, for they abominated the very thoughts of them. Thus their spleen being eased, their choleric and melancholic humours assuaged, up they got again, and never minding their way, were all guided by Rozinante's discretion, the depository of his master's will, and also of the ass's, that kindly and sociably always followed his steps wherever he went. Their guide soon brought them again into the high road, where they kept at a slow pace, not caring which way they went.

As they jogged on thus, quoth Sancho to his master, "Pray, sir, will you give me leave to talk to you a little? for since you have laid that bitter command upon me, to hold my tongue, I have had four or five quaint conceits that have rotted in my gizzard, and now I have another at my tongue's end that I would not for anything should miscarry."—"Say it," cried Don Quixote, "but be short, for no discourse can please when too long."

"Well then," quoth Sancho, "I have been thinking to myself of late how little is to be got by hunting up and

[1] [Literally, leaving him better by a tierce and quint; alluding to the game of picquet.]

down those barren woods and strange places, where, though you compass the hardest and most dangerous jobs of knight-errantry, yet no living soul sees or hears on't, and so it is every bit as good as lost; and therefore methinks it were better (with submission to your worship's better judgment be it spoken) that we e'en went to serve some emperor, or other great prince that is at war; for there you might show how stout, and how wondrous strong and wise you be; which, being perceived by the lord we shall serve, he must needs reward each of us according to his deserts; and there you will not want a learned scholar to set down all your high deeds, that they may never be forgotten: as for mine I say nothing, since they are not to be named the same day with your worship's; and yet I dare avouch, that if any notice be taken in knight-errantry of the feats of squires, mine will be sure to come in for a share." [1]—"Truly, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "there is some reason in what thou sayest; but first of all it is requisite that a knight-errant should spend some time in various parts of the world, as a probationer in quest of adventures, that, by achieving some extraordinary exploits, his renown may diffuse itself through neighbouring climes and distant nations: so when he goes to the court of some great monarch, his fame flying before him as his harbinger, secures him such a reception, that the knight has scarcely reached the gates of the metropolis of the kingdom, when he finds himself attended and surrounded by admiring crowds, pointing and crying out, 'There, there rides the knight of the Sun, or of the Serpent,' or whatever other title the knight takes upon him; 'That is he,' they will cry, 'who vanquished in single combat the huge giant Brocabruno, surnamed of the invincible strength; this is he that freed the great Mamaluco of Persia from the enchantment that had kept him confined for almost nine hundred years together.'

[1] The reader of romance does not need to be told how faithfully Don Quixote, in reply to this saying of his squire, has abridged the main story of many a ponderous folio. The imaginary career of glory which he unfolds before the eyes of Sancho is paralleled almost *ad literatim* in the romance of Sir Degore, so admirably analysed by Mr. Ellis. The conclusion of Belianis is almost exactly the same sort of adventure.

Thus, as they relate his achievements with loud acclamations, the spreading rumour at last reaches the king's palace, and the monarch of that country, being desirous to be informed with his own eyes, will not fail to look out of his window. As soon as he sees the knight, knowing him by his arms, or the device on his shield, he will be obliged to say to his attendants, 'My lords and gentlemen, haste all of you, as many as are knights, go and receive the flower of chivalry that is coming to our court.' At the king's command, away they all run to introduce him; the king himself meets him half-way on the stairs, where he embraces his valorous guest, and kisses his cheek; then taking him by the hand, he leads him directly to the queen's apartment, where the knight finds her attended by the princess her daughter, who must be one of the most beautiful and most accomplished damsels in the whole compass of the universe. At the same time fate will so dispose of everything, that the princess shall gaze on the knight, and the knight on the princess, and each shall admire one another as persons rather angelical than human; and then, by an unaccountable charm, they shall both find themselves caught and entangled in the inextricable net of love, and wondrously perplexed for want of an opportunity to discover their amorous anguish to one another. After this, doubtless, the knight is conducted by the king to one of the richest apartments in the palace; where, having taken off his armour, they will bring him a rich scarlet vestment lined with ermines: and if he looked so graceful cased in steel, how lovely will he appear in all the heightening ornaments of courtiers! Night being come, he shall sup with the king, the queen, and the princess; and shall all the while be feasting his eyes with the sight of the charmer, yet so that nobody shall perceive it; and she will repay him his glances with as much discretion; for, as I have said, she is a most accomplished person. After supper a surprising scene is unexpectedly to appear; enter first an ill-favoured little dwarf, and after him a fair damsel between two giants, with the offer of a certain adventure so contrived by an ancient necromancer, and so difficult to be performed, that he who shall undertake and end it with success, shall be esteemed the best

knight in the world. Presently it is the king's pleasure that all his courtiers should attempt it; which they do, but all of them unsuccessfully; for the honour is reserved for the valorous stranger, who effects that with ease which the rest essayed in vain; and then the princess shall be overjoyed, and esteem herself the most happy creature in the world, for having bestowed her affections on so deserving an object. Now by the happy appointment of fate, this king, or this emperor, is at war with one of his neighbours as powerful as himself, and the knight being informed of this, after he has been some few days at court, offers the king his service; which is accepted with joy, and the knight courteously kisses the king's hand in acknowledgment of so great a favour. That night the lover takes his leave of the princess at the iron grate before her chamber-window looking into the garden, where he and she have already had several interviews, by means of the princess's confidante, a damsel who carries on the intrigue between them. The knight sighs, the princess swoons, the damsel runs for cold water to bring her to life again, very uneasy also because the morning light approaches, and she would not have them discovered, lest it should reflect on her lady's honour. At last the princess revives, and gives the knight her lovely hand to kiss through the iron grate; which he does a thousand and a thousand times, bathing it all the while with his tears. Then they agree how to transmit their thoughts with secrecy to each other, with a mutual interchange of letters, during this fatal absence. The princess prays him to return with all the speed of a lover; the knight promises it with repeated vows, and a thousand kind protestations. At last, the fatal moment being come that must tear him from all he loves, and from his very self, he seals once more his love on her soft snowy hand, almost breathing out his soul, which mounts to his lips, and even would leave its body to dwell there; and then he is hurried away by the fearful confidante. After this cruel separation he retires to his chamber, and throws himself on his bed; but grief will not suffer sleep to close his eyes. Then rising with the sun, he goes to take his leave of the king and queen, and of the princess, but having taken leave of the two former, he

is told that the princess is indisposed; and as he has reason to believe that his departing is the cause of her disorder, he is so grieved at the news, that he is ready to betray the secret of his heart; which the princess's confidante observing, she goes and acquaints her with it, and finds the lovely mourner bathed in tears; who tells her, that the greatest affliction of her soul is her not knowing whether her charming knight be of royal blood: but the damsel pacifies her, assuring her that so much gallantry, and such noble qualifications, were unquestionably derived from an illustrious and royal original. This comforts the afflicted fair, who does all she can to compose her looks, lest the king or the queen should suspect the cause of their alteration; and so some days after she appears in public as before. And now the knight, having been absent for some time, meets, fights, and overcomes the king's enemies, takes I do not know how many cities, wins I do not know how many battles, returns to court, and appears before his mistress laden with honour. He visits her privately as before, and they agree that he shall demand her of the king her father in marriage, as the reward of all his services: but the king will not grant his suit, as being unacquainted with his birth; however, whether it be that the princess suffers herself to be privately carried away, or that some other means are used, the knight marries her, and in a little time the king is very well pleased with the match; for now the knight appears to be the son of a mighty king of I cannot tell what country, for I think it is not in the map. Some time after, the father dies, the princess is heiress, and thus in a trice our knight comes to be king. Having thus completed his happiness, his next thoughts are to gratify his squire, and all those who have been instrumental in his advancement to the throne; thus he marries his squire to one of the princess's damsels, and most probably to her favourite, who had been privy to the amours, and who is daughter to one of the most considerable dukes in the kingdom."

"That is what I have been looking for all this while," quoth Sancho; "give me but that, and let the world rub, there I'll stick; for every tittle of this will come to pass, and be your worship's case as sure as a gun, if you will

take upon you that same nickname of the Knight of the Doleful Countenance."—"Most certainly, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "for by the same steps, and in that very manner, knights-errant have always proceeded to ascend to the throne; therefore our chief business is to find out some great potentate, either among the Christians or the Pagans, that is at war with his neighbours, and has a fair daughter. But we shall have time enough to inquire after that; for, as I have told thee, we must first purchase fame in other places, before we presume to go to court. Another thing makes me more uneasy: suppose we have found out a king and a princess, and I have filled the world with the fame of my unparalleled achievements, yet cannot I tell how to find out that I am of royal blood, though it were but second cousin to an emperor; for it is not to be expected that the king will ever consent that I shall wed his daughter until I have made this out by authentic proofs, though my service deserve it never so much; and thus, for want of a punctilio, I am in danger of losing what my valour so justly merits. It is true, indeed, I am a gentleman, and of a noted ancient family, and possessed of an estate of a hundred and twenty crowns a-year; nay, perhaps the learned historiographer who is to write the history of my life, will so improve and beautify my genealogy, that he will find me to be the fifth, or sixth at least, in descent from a king; for, Sancho, there are two sorts of originals in the world; some who, sprung from mighty kings and princes, by little and little have been so lessened and obscured, that the estates and titles of the following generations have dwindled to nothing, and ended in a point like a pyramid; others, who, from mean and low beginnings, still rise and rise, till at last they are raised to the very top of human greatness; so vast the difference is, that those who were something are now nothing, and those that were nothing are now something. And therefore who knows but that I may be one of those whose original is so illustrious? which being handsomely made out, after due examination, ought undoubtedly to satisfy the king, my father-in-law. But even supposing he were still refractory, the princess is to be so desperately in love with me, that she will marry me without his

consent, though I were a son of the meanest water-carrier; and if her tender honour scruples to bless me against her father's will, then it may not be amiss to put a pleasant constraint upon her, by conveying her by force out of the reach of her father, to whose persecutions either time or death will be sure to put a period."

"Ay," quoth Sancho, "your rake-helly fellows have a saying that is pat to your purpose, Never cringe nor creep, for what you by force may reap; though I think it were better said, A leap from a hedge is better than a good man's prayer. No more to be said, if the king your father-in-law won't let you have his daughter by fair means, never stand shall I, as your honour says, but fairly run away with her. All the mischief that I fear is only, that while you are making your peace with him, and waiting for a dead man's shoes, as the saying is, the poor dog of a squire is like to go long barefoot, and may go hang himself for any good you will be able to do him, unless the damsel, Go-between, who is to be his wife, run away too with the princess, and he solace himself with her till a better time comes; for I don't see but that the knight may clap up the match between us without any more ado."—"That is most certain," answered Don Quixote.—"Why then," quoth Sancho, "let us even take our chance, and let the world rub."—"May fortune crown our wishes," cried Don Quixote, "and let him be a wretch who thinks himself one!"—"Amen, say I," quoth Sancho; "for I am one of your old Christians, and that is enough to qualify me to be an earl."—"And more than enough," said Don Quixote; "for though thou wert not so well descended, being a king I could bestow nobility on thee, without putting thee to the trouble of buying it, or doing me the least service; and making thee an earl, men must call thee my lord, though it grieves them never so much."—"And do you think," quoth Sancho, "I would not become my equality main well?"—"Thou shouldest say quality," said Don Quixote, "and not equality."—"Even as you will," returned Sancho: "but, as I was saying, I should become an earldom rarely; for I was once beadle to a brotherhood, and the beadle's gown did so become me, that everybody said I had the presence of a warden. Then

how do you think I shall look with a duke's robes on my back, all bedaubed with gold and pearl like any foreign count? I believe we shall have folks come a hundred leagues to see me."—"Thou wilt look well enough," said Don Quixote; "but then thou must shave that rough bushy beard of thine at least every other day, or people will read thy beginning in thy face as soon as they see thee."—"Why then," quoth Sancho, "it is but keeping a barber in my house; and if needs be, he shall trot after me wherever I go, like a grandee's master of the horse."—"How camest thou to know," said Don Quixote, "that grandees have their masters of the horse to ride after them?"—"I'll tell you," quoth Sancho: "some years ago I happened to be about a month among your court-folks, and there I saw a little dandiprat riding about, who, they said, was a hugeous great lord: there was a man a-horseback that followed him close wherever he went, turning and stopping as he did, you would have thought he had been tied to his horse's tail. With that I asked why that hind-man did not ride by the other, but still came after him thus? and they told me he was master of his horses, and that the grandees have always such kind of men at their tail; and I marked this so well, that I han't forgot it since."—"Thou art in the right," said Don Quixote; "and thou mayest as reasonably have thy barber attend thee in this manner. Customs did not come up all at once, but rather started up and were improved by degrees; so thou mayest be the first earl that rode in state with his barber behind him; and this may be said to justify thy conduct, that it is an office of more trust to shave a man's beard than to saddle a horse."—"Well," quoth Sancho, "leave the business of the cut-beard to me, and do but take care you be a king and I an earl."—"Never doubt it," replied Don Quixote; and with that looking about, he discovered—what the next chapter will tell you.

CHAPTER XXII.

How Don Quixote set free many miserable creatures, who were betaking themselves, much against their wills, to a place they did not like.

Cid Hamet Benengeli, the Arabian and Manchegan author, relates in this most grave, high-sounding, minute, soft and humorous history, that after this discourse between the renowned Don Quixote and his squire Sancho Panza, which we have laid down at the end of the twenty-first chapter, the knight lifting up his eyes, saw about twelve men a-foot, trudging in the road, all in a row, one behind another, like beads upon a string, being linked together by the neck to a huge iron chain, and manacled besides. They were guarded by two horsemen, armed with carabines, and two men a-foot, with swords and javelins. As soon as Sancho spied them, "Look ye, sir," cried he, "here is a gang of wretches hurried away by main force to serve the king in the galleys."—"How," replied Don Quixote, "is it possible the king will force anybody?"—"I don't say so," answered Sancho; "I mean these are rogues whom the law has sentenced for their misdeeds, to row in the king's galleys."—"However," replied Don Quixote, "they are forced, because they do not go of their own free will."—"Sure enough," quoth Sancho.—"If it be so," said Don Quixote, "they come within the scope of my office, which is to hinder violence and oppression, and succour all people in misery."—"Ay, sir," quoth Sancho, "but neither the king nor law offer any violence to such wicked wretches, they have but their deserts." By this the chain of slaves came up, when Don Quixote, in very civil terms, desired the guards to inform him why these people were led along in that manner?—"Sir," answered one of the horsemen, "they are criminals, condemned to serve the king in his galleys: that is all I have to say to you, and you need inquire no farther."—"Nevertheless, sir," replied Don Quixote, "I have a great desire to know in few words the cause of their misfortune, and I will

esteem it an extraordinary favour, if you will let me have that satisfaction."—"We have here the copies and certificates of their several sentences," said the other horseman, "but we can't stand to pull them out and read them now; you may draw near and examine the men yourself: I suppose they themselves will tell you why they are condemned; for they are such honest people, they are not ashamed to boast of their rogueries."

With this permission, which Don Quixote would have taken of himself had they denied it him, he rode up to the chain, and asked the first, for what crimes he was in these miserable circumstances? The galley-slave answered him, that it was for being in love. "What, only for being in love?" cried Don Quixote: "were all those that are in love to be used thus, I myself might have been long since in the galleys."—"Ay, but," replied the slave, "my love was not of that sort which you conjecture: I was so desperately in love with a basket of linen, and embraced it so close, that had not the judge taken it from me by force, I would not have parted with it willingly. In short I was taken in the fact, and so there was no need to put me to the rack, it was proved so plain upon me. So I was committed, tried, condemned, had the gentle lash; and besides that, was sent, for three years, to be an element-dasher, and there is an end of the business."—"An element-dasher," cried Don Quixote, "what do you mean by that?"—"A galley-slave," answered the criminal, who was a young fellow, about four-and-twenty years old, and said he was born at Piedrahita.

Then Don Quixote examined the second, but he was so sad and desponding, that he would make no answer; however, the first rogue informed the knight of his affairs: "Sir," said he, "this canary-bird keeps us company for having sung too much.'—"Is it possible!" cried Don Quixote, "are men sent to the galleys for singing?"—"Ay, marry are they," quoth the arch rogue; "for there is nothing worse than to sing in anguish."—"How!" cried Don Quixote; "that contradicts the saying, Sing away sorrow, cast away care."—"Ay, but with us the case is different," replied the slave; "he that sings in disaster, weeps all his life after."—"This is a riddle which I

cannot unfold," cried Don Quixote.—"Sir," said one of the guards, "singing in anguish, among these jail-birds, means to confess upon the rack: this fellow was put to the torture, and confessed his crime, which was stealing of cattle; and because he squeaked, or sung, as they call it, he was condemned to the galleys for six years, besides an hundred jerks with a cat of nine tails that have whisked and powdered his shoulders already. Now the reason why he goes thus mopish and out o' sorts, is only because his comrogues jeer and laugh at him continually for not having had the courage to deny; as if it had not been as easy for him to have said no as yes; or as if a fellow, taken up on suspicion, were not a lucky rogue, when there is no positive evidence can come in against him but his own tongue; and in my opinion they are somewhat in the right."—"I think so too," said Don Quixote.

Thence addressing himself to the third, "And you," said he, "what have you done?"—"Sir," answered the fellow, readily and pleasantly enough, "I must mow the great meadow for five years together, for want of twice five ducats."—"I will give twenty with all my heart," said Don Quixote, "to deliver thee from that misery."

"That seems to me," quoth the slave, "just like money to a starving man at sea, when there are no victuals to be bought with it: had I had the twenty ducats you offer me before I was tried, to have greased the clerk's pen, and have whetted my lawyer's wit, I might have been now at Toledo in the market-place of Zocodover, and not have been thus led along like a dog in a string. But Heaven is powerful. Patience; I say no more."

Then passing to the fourth, who was a venerable old Don, with a grey beard that reached to his bosom, he put the same question to him; whereupon the poor creature fell a-weeping, and was not able to give him an answer; so the next behind him lent him a tongue. "Sir," said he, "this honest person goes to the galleys for four years, having taken his progress through the town in state, and rested at the usual stations."—"This is," quoth Sancho,

'as I take it, after he had been exposed to public shame."[1] —"Right," replied the slave; "and all this he is condemned to for being a broker of human flesh: for, to tell you the truth, the gentleman is a pimp, and, besides that, he has a knack of conjuring."—"If it were not for that addition of conjuring," cried Don Quixote, "he ought not to have been sent to the galleys purely for being a pimp, unless it were to be general of the galleys: for, the profession of a procurer, is not like other common employments, but an office that requires a great deal of prudence and sagacity; an office of trust and weight, and most highly necessary in a well regulated commonwealth; nor should it be executed but by civil well-descended persons of good natural parts, and of a liberal education. Nay it were requisite there should be a comptroller and surveyor of the profession, as there are of others; and a certain and settled number of them, as there are of exchange-brokers. This would be a means to prevent an infinite number of mischiefs that happen every day, because the trade or profession is followed by poor ignorant pretenders, silly waiting women, young giddy-brained pages, shallow footmen, and such raw inexperienced sort of people, who in unexpected turns and emergencies stand with their fingers in their mouths, know not their right hand from their left, but suffer themselves to be surprised, and spoil all for want of quickness of invention either to conceal, carry on, or bring off a thing artificially. Had I but time I would point out what sort of persons are best qualified to be chosen professors of this most necessary employment in the commonwealth; however, at some future season I will inform those of it who may remedy this disorder. All I have to say now, is, that the grief I had to see these venerable grey hairs in such distress, for having followed that no less useful than ingenious vocation of pandaring, is now lost in my abhorrence of his additional character of a conjurer; though I very well know that no sorcery in the world can effect or force the will, as some ignorant credulous persons fondly imagine: for our will is a free faculty, and no herb nor

[1] [According to Jarvis, the punishment referred to consisted of being taken through the town mounted, face to tail, upon an ass.]

charms can constrain it. As for philtres, and such-like compositions, which some silly women and designing pretenders make, they are nothing but certain mixtures and poisonous preparations, that make those who take them run mad; though the deceivers labour to persuade us they can make one person love another; which, as I have said, is an impossible thing, our will being a free, uncontrollable power."—"You say very well, sir," cried the old coupler; "and upon my honour, I protest I am wholly innocent, as to the imputation of witchcraft. As for the business of pimping, I cannot deny it, but I never took it to be a criminal function; for my intention was, that all the world should taste the sweets of love, and enjoy each other's society, living together in friendship and in peace, free from those griefs and jars that unpeople the earth. But my harmless design has not been so happy as to prevent my being sent now to a place whence I never expect to return, stooping as I do under the heavy burden of old age, and being grievously afflicted with the strangury, which scarce affords me a moment's respite from pain." This said, the reverend procurer burst out afresh into tears and lamentations, which melted Sancho's heart so much, that he pulled a piece of money out of his bosom, and gave it to him as an alms.

Then Don Quixote turned to another, who seemed to be nothing at all concerned. "I go to serve his majesty," said he, "for having been somewhat too familiar with two of my cousins-german, and two other kind-hearted virgins that were sisters; by which means I have multiplied my kin in so odd and intricate a manner, that it would puzzle a convocation of casuists to resolve their degrees of consanguinity. All this was proved upon me. I had no friends, and, what was worse, no money, and so was like to have swung for it: however, I was only condemned to the galleys for six years, and patiently submitted to it. I feel myself yet young, to my comfort; so if my life does but hold out, all will be well in time. If you will be pleased to bestow something upon poor sinners, heaven will reward you; and when we pray, we will be sure to remember you, that your life may be as long and prosperous, as your presence is goodly and noble." This

brisk spark appeared to be a student by his habit, and some of the guards said he was a fine speaker, and a good latinist.

After him came a man about thirty years old, a clever, well-set, handsome fellow, only he squinted horribly with one eye: he was strangely loaded with irons; a heavy chain clogged his leg, and was so long, that he twisted it about his waist like a girdle: he had a couple of collars about his neck, the one to link him to the rest of the slaves, and the other, one of those iron-ruffs which they call a keep-friend, or foot-friend; from whence two irons went down to his middle, and to their two bars were riveted a pair of manacles that griped him by the fists, and were secured with a large padlock; so that he could neither lift his hands to his mouth, nor bend down his head towards his hands. Don Quixote inquiring why he was worse hampered with irons than the rest, "Because he alone has done more rogueries than all the rest," answered one of the guards. "This is such a reprobate, such a devil of a fellow, that no gaol nor fetters will hold him; we are not sure he is fast enough, for all he is chained so."—"What sort of crimes then has he been guilty of," asked Don Quixote, "that he is only sent to the galleys?"—"Why," answered the keeper, "he is condemned to ten years' slavery, which is no better than a civil death: but I need not stand to tell you any more of him, but that he is that notorious rogue, Gines de Passamonte,[1] alias Ginesillo de Parapilla."—"Hark you, sir," cried the slave, "fair and softly; what a pox makes you give a gentleman more names than he has? Gines is my Christian name, and Passamonte my surname, and not Ginesillo, nor Parapilla, as you say. Blood! let every man mind what he says, or it may prove the worse for him."—"Don't you be so saucy, Mr. Crack-rope," cried the officer to him, "or I may chance to make you keep a

[1] Cervantes makes even the galley-slaves play upon Don Quixote's foible; for *Passamonte* is the name of a gigantic brother of the illustrious Giant Morgante, slain by Orlando in the Morgante Maggiore. Gines pretends to have written his own life while in the galleys. The preliminary fiction of Guzman d'Alfarache [see next note] is of the same species.

better tongue in your head."—"It is a sign," cried the slave, "that a man is fast, and under the lash; but one day or other somebody shall know whether I am called Parapilla or no."—"Why, Mr. Slip-string," replied the officer, "do not people call you by that name?"—"They do," answered Gines, "but I'll make them call me otherwise, or I'll flay and bite them worse than I care to tell you now. But you, sir, who are so inquisitive," added he, turning to Don Quixote, "if you have a mind to give us anything, pray do it quickly, and go your ways; for I don't like to stand here answering questions; broil me! I am Gines de Passamonte, I am not ashamed of my name. As for my life and conversation, there is an account of them in black and white, written with this very hand of mine."—"There he tells you true," said the officer, "for he has written his own history himself, without omitting a tittle of his roguish pranks; and he has left the manuscript in pawn in the prison for two hundred reals."—"Ay," said Gines, "and will redeem it, burn me! though it lay there for as many ducats."—"Then it must be an extraordinary piece," cried Don Quixote.—"So extraordinary," replied Gines, "that it far outdoes not only Lazarillo de Tormes,[1] but whatever has

[1] About the most popular book in Spain at the time when Cervantes wrote, was the Life of Lazarillo de Tormes, a work of very extraordinary genius, written at a very early period of his career, by the great Spanish historian, poet, soldier, and statesman, Don Diego de Mendoza. It was the first comic romance that had appeared in the modern world, or at least the first that had ever made any noise in the world. The species of tricks and adventures in which Lazarillo is engaged had indeed been long in great favour among the Spaniards, but Mendoza first embalmed such materials in the elegancies of diction, and adorned them with the interests of an artificial narrative. The contrast his shrewd and humorous representation of human life affords to the pompous romances of chivalry, which then formed almost the sole reading of the Spaniards, is such, that no one can be surprised with the great success of this first effort of Mendoza's genius. Lazarillo de Tormes was immediately translated into Italian and French, and both abroad and at home gave birth to innumerable imitations. The best of all these is, without doubt, the History of Guzman d'Alfarache, commonly called the Spanish Rogue, which made its appearance a few years before the publication of Don Quixote. Like its prototype, this book became exceedingly popular all over Europe; and there soon appeared (among many others) an excellent version of it in English,

been, and shall be written in that kind; for mine is true every word, and no invented stories can compare with it for variety of tricks and accidents."—"What is the title of the book?" asked Don Quixote.—"The Life of Gines de Passamonte," answered the other.—"Is it quite finished?" asked the knight.—"How the devil can it be finished and I yet living?" replied the slave. "There is in it every material point from my cradle, to this my last going to the galleys."—"Then it seems you have been there before," said Don Quixote.—"To serve God and the king, I was some four years there once before," replied Gines: "I already know how the biscuit and the cow-hide agree with my carcase: it does not grieve me much to go there again, for there I shall have leisure to give a finishing stroke to my book. I have the devil knows what to add; and in our Spanish galleys there is always leisure and idle time enough o' conscience: neither shall I want so much for what I have to insert, for I know it all by heart."

"Thou seemest to be a witty fellow," said Don Quixote. —"You should have said unfortunate too," replied the slave; "for the bitch Fortune is still unkind to men of wit."—"You mean to such wicked wretches as yourself," cried the officer. "Look you, Mr. Commissary," said Gines, "I have already desired you to use good language. The law did not give us to your keeping for you to abuse us, but only to conduct us where the king has occasion for us. Let every man mind his own business, and give good words, or hold his tongue; for by the blood—I will say no more, murder will out; there will be a time when some people's rogueries may come to light, as well as those of other folks."—With that the officer, provoked by the slave's threats, held up his staff to strike him; but Don

---

which ought, without doubt, to be reprinted in its original shape. From these books Le Sage derived a great many of the best stories with which we have all been made so familiar by his Gil Blas and Bachelor of Salamanca. Indeed, in Le Sage's own abridgment of Guzman d'Alfarache, many of the best stories in the whole book are omitted, for no other reason but that Le Sage had already appropriated them in his Gil Blas. Mendoza's rich and beautiful style, however, gives a charm to his Lazarillo which the dry and caustic Aleman (the author of Guzman) could never rival.—See Additional Note XIV.

Quixote stepped between them, and desired him not to do it, and to consider, that the slave was the more to be excused for being too free of his tongue, since he had ne'er another member at liberty. Then addressing himself to all the slaves, "My dearest brethren," cried he, "I find, by what I gather from your own words, that though you deserve punishment for the several crimes of which you stand convicted, yet you suffer execution of the sentence by constraint, and merely because you cannot help it. Besides, it is not unlikely but that this man's want of resolution upon the rack, the other's want of money, the third's want of friends and favour, and, in short, the judges perverting and wresting the law to your great prejudice, may have been the cause of your misery. Now, as heaven has sent me into the world to relieve the distressed, and free suffering weakness from the tyranny of oppression, according to the duty of my profession of knight-errantry, these considerations induce me to take you under my protection. But because it is the part of a prudent man not to use violence where fair means may be effectual, I desire you, gentlemen of the guard, to release these poor men, there being people enough to serve his majesty in their places; for it is a hard case to make slaves of men whom God and nature made free; and you have the less reason to use these wretches with severity, seeing they never did you any wrong. Let them answer for their sins in the other world; heaven is just, you know, and will be sure to punish the wicked, as it will certainly reward the good. Consider besides, gentlemen, that it is neither a Christian-like, nor an honourable action, for men to be the butchers and tormentors of one another; especially, when no advantage can arise from it. I choose to desire this of you, with so much mildness, and in so peaceable a manner, gentlemen, that I may have occasion to pay you a thankful acknowledgment, if you will be pleased to grant so reasonable a request: but if you provoke me by refusal, I must be obliged to tell ye, that this lance, and this sword, guided by this invincible arm, shall force you to yield that to my valour which you deny to my civil entreaties."

"A very good jest indeed," cried the officer; "what the

devil makes you dote at such a rate? would you have us set at liberty the king's prisoners, as if we had authority to do it, or you to command it? Go, go about your business, good Sir Errant, and set your basin right upon your empty pate; and pray do not meddle any further in what does not concern you, for those who play with cats must expect to be scratched."

"Thou art a cat, and rat, and a coward to boot," cried Don Quixote; and with that he attacked the officer with such a sudden and surprising fury, that before he had any time to put himself into a posture of defence, he struck him down, dangerously wounded with his lance; and, as fortune had ordered it, this happened to be the horseman who was armed with a carbine. His companions stood astonished at such a bold action, but at last fell upon the champion with their swords and darts, which might have proved fatal to him, had not the slaves laid hold of this opportunity to break the chain, in order to regain their liberty; for the guards perceiving their endeavours to get loose, thought it more material to prevent them, than to be fighting a madman: but, as he pressed them vigorously on one side, and the slaves were opposing them and freeing themselves on the other, the hurly-burly was so great, and the guards so perplexed, that they did nothing to the purpose. In the meantime, Sancho was helping Gines de Passamonte to get off his gyves, which he did sooner than can be imagined; and then that active desperado having seized the wounded officer's sword and carbine, he joined with Don Quixote, and sometimes aiming at one, and sometimes at the other, as if he had been ready to shoot them, yet still without letting off the piece, the other slaves at the same time pouring volleys of stone-shot at the guards, they betook themselves to their heels, leaving Don Quixote and the criminals masters of the field. Sancho, who was always for taking care of the main chance, was not at all pleased with this victory; for he guessed that the guards who were fled, would raise a hue and cry, and soon be at their heels with the whole posse of the Holy Brotherhood, and lay them up for a rescue and rebellion. This made him advise his master to get out of the way as fast as he could, and hide himself in the neighbouring

mountains. "I hear you," answered Don Quixote to this motion of his squire, "and I know what I have to do." Then calling to him all the slaves, who by this time had uncased the keeper to his skin, they gathered about him to know his pleasure, and he spoke to them in this manner: "It is the part of generous spirits to have a grateful sense of the benefits they receive, no crime being more odious than ingratitude. You see, gentlemen, what I have done for your sakes, and you cannot but be sensible how highly you are obliged to me. Now all the recompense I require is, only that every one of you, laden with that chain from which I have freed your necks, do instantly repair to the city of Toboso; and there presenting yourselves before the Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, tell her, that her faithful votary, the Knight of the Doleful Countenance, commanded you to wait on her, and assure her of his profound veneration. Then you shall give her an exact account of every particular relating to this famous achievement, by which you once more taste the sweets of liberty; which done, I give you leave to seek your fortunes where you please."

To this the ringleader and master thief, Gines de Passamonte, made answer for all the rest, "What you would have us to do," said he, "our noble deliverer, is absolutely impracticable and impossible; for we dare not be seen all together for the world. We must rather part, and skulk some one away, some another, and lie snug in creeks and corners under ground, for fear of those damned man-hounds that will be after us with a hue and cry; therefore all we can and ought to do in this case, is to change this compliment and homage which you would have us pay to the Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, into a certain number of Ave Marias and Credos, which we will say for your worship's benefit; and this may be done by night or by day, walking or standing, and in war as well as in peace: but to imagine we will return to our flesh-pots of Egypt, that is to say, take up our chains again, and lug them the devil knows where, is as unreasonable as to think it is night now at ten o'clock in the morning. 'Sdeath, to expect this from us, is to expect pears from an elm-tree."—"Now, by my sword," replied Don Quixote,

"sir son of a whore, Sir Ginesello de Parapilla, or whatever be your name, you yourself alone shall go to Toboso, like a dog that has scalded his tail, with the whole chain about your shoulders." Gines, who was naturally very choleric, judging by Don Quixote's extravagance in freeing them, that he was not very wise, winked on his companions, who, like men that understood signs, presently fell back to the right and left, and pelted Don Quixote with such a shower of stones, that all his dexterity to cover himself with his shield was now ineffectual, and poor Rozinante no more obeyed the spur, than if he had been only the statue of a horse. As for Sancho, he got behind his ass, and there sheltered himself from the volleys of flints that threatened his bones, while his master was so battered, that in a little time he was thrown out of his saddle to the ground. He was no sooner down, but the student leaped on him, took off his basin from his head, gave him three or four thumps on the shoulders with it, and then gave it so many knocks against the stones, that he almost broke it to pieces. After this, they stripped him of his upper coat, and had robbed him of his hose too, but that his greaves hindered them. They also eased Sancho of his upper coat, and left him in his doublet; then, having divided the spoils, they shifted every one for himself, thinking more how to avoid being taken up, and linked again in the chain, than of trudging with it to my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso. Thus the ass, Rozinante, Sancho, and Don Quixote, remained indeed masters of the field, but in an ill condition: the ass hanging his head, and pensive, shaking his ears now and then, as if the volleys of stones had still whizzed about them; Rozinante lying in a desponding manner, for he had been knocked down as well as his unhappy rider; Sancho uncased to his doublet, and trembling for fear of the Holy Brotherhood; and Don Quixote filled with sullen regret, to find himself so barbarously used by those whom he had so highly obliged.

CHAPTER XXIII.

What befell the renowned Don Quixote in the Sierra Morena (black mountains) being one of the rarest adventures in this authentic history.

DON QUIXOTE, finding himself so ill-treated, said to his squire; "Sancho, I have always heard it said, that to do a kindness to clowns, is like throwing water into the sea. Had I given ear to thy advice, I had prevented this misfortune; but since the thing is done it is needless to repine; this shall be a warning to me for the future."—"That is," quoth Sancho, "when the devil is blind: but since you say, you had escaped this mischief had you believed me, good sir, believe me now, and you will escape a greater; for I must tell you, that those of the Holy Brotherhood do not stand in awe of your chivalry, nor do they care a straw for all the knights-errant in the world. Methinks I already hear their arrows whizzing about my ears."[1]—"Thou art naturally a coward, Sancho," cried Don Quixote; nevertheless, that thou mayest not say I am obstinate, and never follow thy advice, I will take thy counsel, and for once convey myself out of the reach of this dreadful brotherhood, that so strangely alarms thee; but upon this condition, that thou never tell any mortal creature, neither while I live, nor after my death, that I withdrew myself from this danger through fear, but merely to comply with thy entreaties: for if thou ever presume to say otherwise, thou wilt belie me; and from this time to that time, and from that time to the world's end, I give thee the lie, and thou liest, and shalt lie in thy throat, as often as thou sayest, or but thinkest to the

[1] [The officers of the Holy Brotherhood used cross-bows.] It appears that when they found any one in the act of guilt, or, as we express it in Scotland, *red-hand*, their custom was to tie him to a stake, and shoot at him with their arrows till he died. "Sic deprehensum," says Munsterus (in his *Cosmographia*, p. 60), "vivum palo alligatum sagittis confiiciunt." Charles V., by an edict, directed that the man should be hanged first, and then shot at in this manner.

contrary. Therefore do not offer to reply; for shouldest thou but surmise, that I would avoid any danger, and especially this which seems to give some occasion or colour for fear, I would certainly stay here, though unattended and alone, and expect and face not only the Holy Brotherhood, which thou dreadest so much, but also the fraternity or twelve heads of the tribes of Israel, the seven Maccabees,[1] Castor and Pollux, and all the brothers and brotherhoods in the universe."—"An't please your worship," quoth Sancho, "to withdraw is not to run away, and to stay is no wise action, when there is more reason to fear than to hope; it is the part of a wise man to keep himself to-day for to-morrow, and not venture all his eggs in one basket. And for all I am but a clown, or a bumpkin, as you may say, yet I would have you to know I know what's what, and have always taken care of the main chance; therefore do not be ashamed of being ruled by me, but even get on horseback an you are able: come, I will help you, and then follow me; for my mind plaguily misgives me, that now one pair of heels will stand us in more stead than two pair of hands."

Don Quixote, without any reply, made shift to mount Rozinante, and Sancho on his ass led the way to the neighbouring mountainous desert called Sierra Morena,[2] which the crafty squire had a design to cross over, and get out at the farthest end, either at Viso, or Almadovar del Campo, and in the mean time to lurk in the craggy and almost inaccessible retreats of that vast mountain, for fear of falling into the hands of the Holy Brotherhood. He was the more eager to steer this course, finding that the provision which he had laid on his ass had escaped plundering, which was a kind of miracle, considering how narrowly the galley-slaves had searched everywhere for booty. It was night before our two travellers got to the middle and most desert part of the mountain; where Sancho advised his master to stay some days, at least as

[1] [The text gives *los siete mancebos*, 'the seven young men.' Pellicer supposes that the author wrote *Macebeos*. Possibly *los siete Campeones*, the seven Champions of Christendom, are referred to.]

[2] [This Black Ridge separates the kingdom of Castile from the province of Andalusia.]

long as their provisions lasted; and accordingly that night they took up their lodging between two rocks, among a great number of cork-trees; but fortune, which, according to the opinion of those that have not the light of true faith, guides, appoints, and contrives all things as it pleases, directed Gines de Passamonte (that master-rogue, who, thanks to Don Quixote's force and folly, had been put in a condition to do him a mischief) to this very part of the mountain, in order to hide himself till the heat of the pursuit, which he had just cause to fear, were over. He discovered our adventurers much about the time that they fell asleep; and as wicked men are always ungrateful, and urgent necessity prompts many to do things, at the very thoughts of which they perhaps would start at other times, Gines, who was a stranger both to gratitude and humanity, resolved to ride away with Sancho's ass; for as for Rozinante, he looked upon him as a thing that would neither sell nor pawn: so while poor Sancho lay snoring, he spirited away his darling beast, and made such haste, that before day he thought himself and his prize secure from the unhappy owner's pursuit.

Now Aurora with her smiling face returned to enliven and cheer the earth, but alas! to grieve and affright Sancho with a dismal discovery: for he had no sooner opened his eyes, but he missed his ass; and finding himself deprived of that dear partner of his fortunes, and best comfort in his peregrinations, he broke out into the most pitiful and sad lamentations in the world; insomuch that he waked Don Quixote with his moans. "O dear child of my bowels," cried he, "born and bred under my roof, my children's playfellow, the comfort of my wife, the envy of my neighbours, the ease of my burdens, the staff of my life, and in a word, half my maintenance; for with six and twenty maravedis, which were daily earned by thee, I made shift to keep half my family." Don Quixote, who easily guessed the cause of these complaints, strove to comfort him with kind condoling words, and learned discourses upon the uncertainty of human happiness: but nothing proved so effectual to assuage his sorrow, as the promise which his master made him of drawing a bill of exchange on his niece for three asses out of five

which he had at home, payable to Sancho Panza, or his order; which prevailing argument soon dried up his tears, hushed his sighs and moans, and turned his complaints into thanks to his generous master for so unexpected a favour.

And now, as they wandered further in these mountains, Don Quixote was transported with joy to find himself where he might flatter his ambition with the hopes of fresh adventures to signalize his valour; for these vast deserts made him call to mind the wonderful exploits of other knights-errant, performed in such solitudes. Filled with those airy notions, he thought of nothing else: but Sancho was for more substantial food; and now, thinking himself quite out of the reach of the Holy Brotherhood, his only care was to fill his belly with the relics of the clerical booty; and thus sitting sideling, as women do, upon his beast,[1] he slily took out now one piece of meat, then another, and kept his grinders going faster than his feet. Thus plodding on, he would not have given a rush to have met with any other adventure.

Whilst he was thus employed, he observed, that his master endeavoured to take up something that lay on the ground with the end of his lance: this made him run to help him to lift up the bundle, which proved to be a portmanteau, and the seat of a saddle, that were half, or rather quite rotted and destroyed. The portmanteau was heavy, and Don Quixote having ordered Sancho to see what it contained, though it was shut with a chain and a padlock, he easily saw what was in it through the cracks, and pulled out four fine holland shirts, and other clean and fashionable linen, besides a considerable quantity of gold tied up in a handkerchief. "Blessed Heaven," quoth Sancho; "for sending us such a lucky adventure once in our lives;" with that, groping further, he found a pocket-book richly bound. "Give me that," said Don Quixote, "and do thou keep the gold."—Sancho kissed his master's hand for gratitude, and taking the linen from the port-

[1] [The author appears in sundry passages to have forgotten that the ass was stolen, though later (see pp. 220, 244) he again refers to the loss. Pellicer notes that in later editions Cervantes attempted to correct the oversight in some passages, but not in all.]

manteau, he clapped it in the bag where he kept the victuals. "I fancy," said Don Quixote, "that some person, having lost his way in these mountains, has been met by robbers, who have murdered him, and buried his body somewhere hereabouts."—"Sure your worship's mistaken," answered Sancho, "for, had they been highwaymen, they would never have left such a booty behind them."—"Thou art in the right," replied Don Quixote; "and therefore I cannot imagine what it must be. But stay, I will examine the pocket-book, perhaps we shall find something written in that, which will help us to discover what I would know." With that he opened it, and the first thing he found was the following rough draught of a sonnet, fairly enough written to be read with ease; so he read it aloud, that Sancho might know what was in it as well as himself:

Love is a god ne'er knows our pain,
  Or cruelty's his darling attribute;
Else he'd ne'er force me to complain,
  And to his spite my raging pain impute.

But sure if Love's a god, he must
  Have knowledge equal to his power;
And 'tis a crime to think a god unjust:
  Whence then the pains that now my heart devour?

From Phyllis? No: why do I pause?
Such cruel ills ne'er boast so sweet a cause;
  Nor from the gods such torments we do bear.
Let death then quickly be my cure:
When thus we ills unknown endure,
  'Tis shortest to despair.

"The devil of anything can be picked out of this," quoth Sancho, "unless you can tell who that same Phyll is."—"I did not read Phyll, but Phyllis," said Don Quixote.—"O then, mayhap, the man has lost his filly-foal."—"Phyllis," said Don Quixote, "is without doubt the name of a lady that is beloved by the author of this sonnet, who truly seems to be a tolerable poet, or I have but little judgment."—"Why then," quoth Sancho, "belike your worship understands how to make verses too?"—"That I do," answered Don Quixote, "and better than thou imaginest; as thou

shalt see when I shall give thee a letter written all in verse to carry to my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso: for, I must tell thee, friend Sancho, all the knights-errant, or at least the greatest part of them, in former times, were great poets, and as great musicians; those qualifications, or, to speak better, those two gifts, or accomplishments, being almost inseparable from amorous adventures: though I must confess the verses of the knights in former ages are not altogether so polite, nor so adorned with words, as with thoughts and inventions."

"Good sir," quoth Sancho, "look again into the pocket-book, mayhap you will find somewhat that will inform you of what you would know." With that Don Quixote turning over the leaf, "Here's some prose," cried he, "and I think it is the sketch of a love-letter."—"O! good your worship," quoth Sancho, "read it out by all means, for I delight mightily in hearing of love-stories."

Don Quixote read it aloud, and found what follows:

"The falsehood of your promises, and my despair, hurry me from you for ever; and you shall sooner hear the news of my death, than the cause of my complaints. You have forsaken me, ungrateful fair, for one more wealthy indeed, but not more deserving than your abandoned slave. Were virtue esteemed a treasure equal to its worth by your unthinking sex, I must presume to say, I should have no reason to envy the wealth of others, and no misfortune to bewail. What your beauty has raised, your actions have destroyed; the first made me mistake you for an angel, but the last convince me you are a very woman. However, O! too lovely disturber of my peace, may uninterrupted rest and downy ease engross your happy hours, and may forgiving heaven still keep your husband's perfidiousness concealed, lest it should cost your repenting heart a sigh for the injustice you have done to so faithful a lover, and so I should be prompted to a revenge which I do not desire to take."

"This letter," quoth Don Quixote, "does not give us any further insight into the things we would know; all I can infer from it is, that the person who wrote it was

a betrayed lover." And so turning over the remaining leaves, he found several other letters and verses, some of which were legible, and some so scribbled, that he could make nothing of them. As for those he read, he could meet with nothing in them but accusations, complaints, and expostulations, distrusts and jealousies, pleasures and discontents, favours and disdain, the one higly valued, the others as mournfully resented. And while the knight was poring on the pocket-book, Sancho was rummaging the portmanteau, and the seat of the saddle, with such exactness, that he did not leave a corner unsearched, nor a seam unripped, nor a single lock of wool unpicked; for the gold he had found, which was above an hundred ducats, had but whetted his greedy appetite, and made him wild for more. Yet though this was all he could find, he thought himself well paid for the more than Herculean labours he had undergone; nor could he now repine at his being tossed in a blanket, the straining and griping operation of the balsam, the benedictions of the pack-staves and levers, the fisticuffs of the carrier, the loss of his cloak, his dear wallet, and of his dearer ass, and all the hunger, thirst, and fatigue, which he had suffered in his kind master's service. On the other side, the Knight of the Doleful Countenance strangely desired to know who was the owner of the portmanteau, guessing by the verses, the letter, the linen, and the gold, that he was a person of worth, whom the disdain and unkindness of his mistress had driven to despair. At length, however, he gave over the thoughts of it, discovering nobody through that vast desert; and so he rode on, wholly guided by Rozinante's discretion, which always made the grave sagacious creature choose the plainest and smoothest way; the master still firmly believing, that in those woody uncultivated forests he should infallibly start some wonderful adventure.

And indeed, while these hopes possessed him, he spied upon the top of a stony crag just before him a man that skipped from rock to rock, over briars and bushes, with wonderful agility. He seemed to him naked from the waist upwards, with a thick black beard, his hair long, and strangely tangled, his head, legs, and feet bare; on his hips a pair of breeches, that appeared to be of sad-

coloured velvet, but so tattered and torn, that they discovered his skin in many places. These particulars were observed by Don Quixote while he passed by, and he followed him, endeavouring to overtake him, for he presently guessed this was the owner of the portmanteau. But Rozinante, who was naturally slow and phlegmatic, was in too weak a case besides to run races with so swift an apparition: yet the Knight of the Doleful Countenance resolved to find out that unhappy creature, though he were to bestow a whole year in the search; and to that intent he ordered Sancho to beat one side of the mountain, while he hunted the other. "In good sooth," quoth Sancho, "your worship must excuse me as to that; for if I but offer to stir an inch from you, I am almost frighted out of my senses: and let this serve you hereafter for a warning, that you may not send me a nail's breadth from your presence."—"Well," said the knight, "I will take thy case into consideration; and it does not displease me, Sancho, to see thee thus rely upon my valour, which, I dare assure thee, shall never fail thee, though thy very soul should be scared out of thy body. Follow me, therefore, step by step, with as much haste as is consistent with good speed; and let thy eyes pry everywhere while we search every part of this rock, where, it is probable, we may meet with that wretched mortal, who doubtless is the owner of the portmanteau."

"Sir," quoth Sancho, "I had much rather get out of his way; for, should we chance to meet him, and he lay claim to the portmanteau, it is a plain case I shall be forced to part with the money: and therefore I think it much better, without making so much ado, to let me keep it in good faith, till we can light on the right owner some more easy way, and without dancing after him; which may not happen till we have spent all the money; and in that case I am free from the law, and he may go whistle for it."—"Thou art mistaken, Sancho," cried Don Quixote; "for, seeing we have some reason to think, that we know who is the owner, we are bound in conscience to endeavour to find him out, and restore it to him; the rather, because should we not now strive to meet him, yet the strong presumption we have that the goods belong to him, will

render us as guilty as if the party whom we suspect to have lost the things is really the right owner; therefore, friend Sancho, do not think much of searching for him, since, if we find him out, it will extremely ease my mind."

With that he spurred Rozinante; and Sancho followed him on foot, in no very good humour, thanks to Ginesillo de Passamonte. So when they had rode over the greatest part of the mountain, they came to a brook, where they found a mule lying dead, with her saddle and bridle about her, and herself half devoured by beasts and birds of prey; which discovery further confirmed them in their suspicion, that the man who fled so nimbly from them was the owner of the mule and portmanteau.

Now as they paused and pondered upon this, they heard a whistling like that of some shepherd keeping his flocks; and presently after, upon their left hand, they spied a great number of goats with an old herdsman after them, on the top of the mountain. Don Quixote called out to him, and desired him to come down; but the goat-herd, instead of answering him, asked them in as loud a tone, how they came thither in those deserts, where scarce any living creatures resorted except goats, wolves, and other wild beasts? Sancho told him, they would satisfy him as to that point if he would come where they were. With that the goat-herd came down to them; and seeing them look upon the dead mule, "That dead mule," said the old fellow, "has lain in that very place this six months; but pray tell me, good people, have you not met the master of it by the way?"—"We have met nobody," answered Don Quixote; "but we found a portmanteau and a saddle-cushion not far from this place."—"I have seen it too," quoth the goat-herd, "but I never durst meddle with it, nor so much as come near it, for fear of some misdemeanour, lest I should be charged with having stolen somewhat out of it: for who knows what might happen? the devil is subtle, and sometimes lays baits in our way to tempt us, or blocks to make us stumble."—"It is just so with me, gaffer," quoth Sancho; "for I saw the portmanteau too, d'ye see, but the devil a bit would I come within a stone's throw of it; no, there I found it, and there I left it:

i' faith, it shall e'en lie there still for me. He that steals a bellweather shall be discovered by the bell."—"Tell me, honest friend," asked Don Quixote, "dost thou know who is the owner of those things?"—"All I know of the matter," answered the goat-herd, "is, that it is now six months, little more or less, since to a certain sheepfold, some three leagues off, there came a young well-featured proper gentleman in good clothes, and under him this same mule that now lies dead here, with the cushion and cloak-bag, which you say you met, but touched not. He asked us which was the most desert and least frequented part of these mountains? and we told him this where we are now; and in that we spoke the plain truth, for should you venture to go but half a league further, you would hardly be able to get back again in haste; and I marvel how you could get even thus far; for there is neither highway nor footpath that may direct a man this way. Now, as soon as the young gentleman had heard our answer, he turned about his mule, and made to the place we showed him, leaving us all with a hugeous liking to his comeliness, and strangely marvelling at his demand, and the haste he made towards the middle of the mountain. After that we heard no more of him in a great while, till one day by chance one of the shepherds coming by, he fell upon him without saying why or wherefore, and beat him without mercy: after that he went to the ass that carried our victuals, and, taking away all the bread and cheese that was there, he tripped back again to the mountain with wondrous speed. Hearing this, a good number of us together resolved to find him out; and when we had spent the best part of two days in the thickest of the forest, we found him at last lurking in the hollow of a huge cork-tree, from whence he came forth to meet us as mild as could be. But then he was so altered, his face was so disfigured, wan, and sunburnt, that, had it not been for his attire, which we made shift to know again, though it was all in rags and tatters, we could not have thought it had been the same man. He saluted us courteously, and told us in few words, mighty handsomely put together, that we were not to marvel to see him in that manner, for that it behoved him so to be,

that he might fulfil a certain penance enjoined him for the great sins he had committed. We prayed him to tell us who he was, but he would by no means do it: we likewise desired him to let us know where we might find him, that whensoever he wanted victuals we might bring him some, which we told him we would be sure to do, for otherwise he would be starved in that barren place; requesting him, that if he did not like that motion either, he would at leastwise come and ask us for what he wanted, and not take it by force as he had done. He thanked us heartily for our offer, and begged pardon for that injury, and promised to ask it henceforwards as an alms, without setting upon any one. As for his place of abode, he told us he had none certain, but wherever night caught him there he lay: and he ended his discourse with such bitter moans, that we must have had hearts of flint had we not had a feeling with him, and kept him company therein; chiefly considering we beheld him so strangely altered from what we had seen him before: for, as I said, he was a very fine comely young man, and by his speech and behaviour we could guess him to be well born, and a courtlike sort of a body: for though we were but clowns, yet such was his genteel behaviour, that we could not help being taken with it. Now as he was talking to us, he stopped of a sudden, as if he had been struck dumb, fixing his eyes steadfastly on the ground; whereat we all stood in amaze. After he had thus stared a good while, he shut his eyes, then opened them again, bit his lips, knit his brows, clenched his fists; and then rising from the ground, whereon he had thrown himself a little before, he flew at the man that stood next to him with such a fury, that if we had not pulled him off by main force, he would have bit and thumped him to death; and all the while he cried out, "Ah! traitor Ferdinand, here, here thou shalt pay for the wrong thou hast done me; I must rip up that false heart of thine;" and a deal more he added, all in dispraise of that same Ferdinand. After that he flung from us without saying a word, leaping over the bushes and brambles at such a strange rate, that it was impossible for us to come at him; from which we gathered, that his madness comes on him by fits, and that some one called Ferdinand had done him an ill turn, that

hath brought the poor young man to this pass. And this hath been confirmed since that many and many times: for when he is in his right senses, he will come and beg for victuals, and thank us for it with tears: but when he is in his mad fit, he will beat us though we proffer him meat civilly: and to tell you the truth, sirs," added the goat-herd, "I and four others, of whom two are my men, and the other two my friends, yesterday agreed to look for him till we should find him out, either by fair means or by force to carry him to Almodover town, that is but eight leagues off; and there we will have him cured, if possible, or at least we shall learn what he is when he comes to his wits, and whether he has any friends to whom he may be sent back. This is all I know of the matter; and I dare assure you, that the owner of those things which you saw in the way, is the selfsame body that went so nimbly by you;" for Don Quixote had by this time acquainted the goat-herd of his having seen that man skipping among the rocks.

The knight was wonderfully concerned when he had heard the goat-herd's story, and renewed his resolution of finding out that distracted wretch, whatever time and pains it might cost him. But fortune was more propitious to his desires than he could reasonably have expected: for just as they were speaking they spied him right against the place where they stood, coming towards them out of the cleft of a rock, muttering somewhat to himself, which they could not well have understood had they stood close by him, much less could they guess his meaning at that distance. His apparel was such as has already been said, only Don Quixote observed when he drew nearer, that a shamoy doublet torn in many places, that he wore over all, was perfumed with amber; and by this, as also by the rest of his clothes, he judged him to be a man of some quality.

As soon as the unhappy creature came near them, he saluted them very civilly, but with a hoarse voice. Don Quixote returned his civilities, and, alighting from Rozinante, accosted him in a very graceful manner, and hugged him close in his arms, as if he had been one of his intimate acquaintance. The other, whom we may venture

to call the Tatterdemalion of the Ill-favoured Countenance, as well as Don Quixote the Knight of the Doleful one, having got loose from that embrace, could not forbear stepping back a little; and laying his hands on his companion's shoulders, he stood staring in his face, as if he had been striving to call to mind whether he had known him before, probably wondering as much to behold Don Quixote's countenance, armour, and strange figure, as Don Quixote did to see his tattered condition: but the first that opened his mouth after this pause was the Ragged Knight, as you shall find by the sequel of the story.

CHAPTER XXIV.

The Adventure in the Sierra Morena continued.

The history relates, that Don Quixote listened with great attention to the sorry knight of the Sierra, who made him the following compliment. "Truly, sir, whoever you be (for I have not the honour to know you), I am much obliged to you for your expressions of civility and friendship; and I could wish I were in a condition to convince you otherwise than by words of the deep sense I have of them: but my bad fortune leaves me nothing to return for so many favours, but unprofitable wishes."—"Sir," answered Don Quixote, "I have so hearty a desire to serve you, that I was fully resolved not to leave these mountains till I had found you out, that I might know from yourself, whether the discontents that have urged you to make choice of this unusual course of life, might not admit of a remedy; for if they do, assure yourself I will leave no means untried, till I have purchased you that ease which I heartily wish you: or if your disasters are of that fatal kind that exclude you for ever from the hopes of comfort or relief, then will I mingle sorrows with you and, by sharing your load of grief, help you to bear the oppressing weight of affliction; for it is the only comfort of the miserable to have partners in their woes. If, then, good intentions may plead merit, or a grateful

requital, let me entreat you, sir, by that generous nature that shoots through the gloom with which adversity has clouded your graceful outside; nay, let me conjure you by the darling object of your wishes, to let me know who you are, and what strange misfortunes have urged you to withdraw from the converse of your fellow-creatures, to bury yourself alive in this horrid solitude, where you linger out a wretched being, a stranger to ease, to all mankind, and even to your very self. And I solemnly swear," added Don Quixote, "by the order of knighthood, of which I am an unworthy professor, that if you so far gratify my desires, I will assist you to the utmost of my capacity, either by remedying your disaster, if it is not past redress, or by becoming your partner in sorrow, and striving to ease it by a society in sadness."

The Knight of the Wood, hearing him of the Doleful Countenance talk at that rate, looked upon him steadfastly for a long time, and viewed, and reviewed him from head to foot; and when he had gazed a great while upon him, "Sir," cried he, "if you have anything to eat, for heaven's sake give it me, and when my hunger is abated, I shall be better able to comply with your desires, which your great civilities and undeserved offers oblige me to satisfy." Sancho and the goat-herd, hearing this, presently took out some victuals, the one out of his bag, the other out of his scrip, and gave it to the ragged knight to allay his hunger, who immediately fell on with that greedy haste, that he seemed rather to devour than feed; for he used no intermission between bit and bit, so greedily he chopped them up; and all the time he was eating, neither he, nor the bystanders, spoke the least word. When he had assuaged his voracious appetite, he beckoned to Don Quixote and the rest to follow him; and after he had brought them to a neighbouring meadow, he laid himself at his ease on the grass, where the rest of the company sitting down by him, neither he nor they having yet spoke a word since he fell to eating, he began in this manner:

"Gentlemen," said he, "if you intend to be informed of my misfortunes, you must promise me beforehand not to cut off the thread of my doleful narration with any

questions, or any other interruption; for in the very instant that any one of you does it, I shall leave off abruptly, and will not afterwards go on with the story." This preamble put Don Quixote in mind of Sancho's ridiculous tale, which by his neglect in not telling the goats, was brought to an untimely conclusion. "I only use this precaution," added the Ragged Knight, "because I would be quick in my relation; for the very remembrance of my former misfortune proves a new one to me, and yet I promise you, I will endeavour to omit nothing that is material, that you may have as full an account of my disasters as I am sensible you desire." Thereupon Don Quixote, for himself and the rest, having promised him uninterrupted attention, he proceeded in this manner:

"My name is Cardenio, the place of my birth one of the best cities in Andalusia; my descent noble, my parents wealthy, but my misfortunes are so great, that they have doubtless filled my relations with the deepest sorrow; nor are they to be remedied with wealth, for goods of fortune avail but little against the anger of Heaven. In the same town dwelt the charming Lucinda, the most beautiful creature that ever nature framed, equal in descent and fortune to myself, but more happy and less constant. I loved, nay adored her almost from her infancy; and from her tender years she blessed me with as kind a return as is suitable with the innocent freedom of that age. Our parents were conscious of that early friendship; nor did they oppose the growth of this inoffensive passion, which they perceived could have no other consequences than a happy union of our families by marriage; a thing which the equality of our births and fortunes did indeed of itself almost invite us to. Afterwards our loves so grew up with our years, that Lucinda's father, either judging our usual familiarity prejudicial to his daughter's honour, or for some other reasons, sent to desire me to discontinue my frequent visits to his house: but this restraint proved but like that which was used by the parents of that loving Thisbe, so celebrated by the poets, and but added flames to flames, and impatience to desires. As our tongues were now debarred their former privilege, we had recourse to our pens, which assumed

the greater freedom to disclose the most hidden secrets of our hearts; for the presence of the beloved object often heightens a certain awe and bashfulness, that disorders, confounds, and strikes dumb, even the most passionate lover. How many letters have I written to that lovely charmer! how many soft moving verses have I addressed to her! what kind, yet honourable returns have I received from her! the mutual pledges of our secret love, and the innocent consolations of a violent passion. At length, languishing and wasting with desire, deprived of that reviving comfort of my soul, I resolved to remove those bars with which her father's care and decent caution obstructed my only happiness, by demanding her of him in marriage. He very civilly told me, that he thanked me for the honour I did him, but that I had a father alive, whose consent was to be obtained as well as his, and who was the most proper person to make such a proposal. I thanked him for his civil answer, and thought it carried some show of reason, not doubting but my father would readily consent to the proposal. I therefore immediately went to wait on him, with the design of begging his approbation and assistance. I found him in his chamber with a letter opened before him, which, as soon as he saw me, he put into my hand, before I could have time to acquaint him with my business.—'Cardenio,' said he, 'you will see by this letter the extraordinary kindness that Duke Ricardo has for you.' I suppose I need not tell you, gentlemen, that this Duke Ricardo is a grandee of Spain, most of whose estate lies in the best part of Andalusia. I read the letter, and found it contained so kind and advantageous an offer, that my father could not but accept of it with thankfulness; for the duke entreated him to send me to him with all speed, that I might be the companion of his eldest son, promising withal to advance me to a post answerable to the good opinion he had of me.

"This unexpected news struck me dumb; but my surprise and disappointment were much greater, when I heard my father say to me, 'Cardenio, you must get ready to be gone in two days: in the mean time give Heaven thanks for opening you a way to that preferment which

I am so sensible you deserve.' After this he gave me several wise admonitions both as a father and a man of business, and then he left me. The day fixed for my journey quickly came; however, the night that preceded it, I spoke to Lucinda at her window, and told her what had happened. I also gave her father a visit, and informed him of it too, beseeching him to preserve his good opinion of me, and defer the bestowing of his daughter till I had been with Duke Ricardo, which he kindly promised me: and then, Lucinda and I, after an exchange of vows and protestations of eternal fidelity, took our leaves of each other with all the grief which two tender and passionate lovers can feel at a separation.

"I left the town, and went to wait upon the duke, who received and entertained me with that extraordinary kindness and civility that soon roused the envy of his greatest favourites. But he that most endearingly caressed me, was Don Ferdinand, the duke's second son, a young, airy, handsome, generous gentleman, and of a very amorous disposition; he seemed to be overjoyed at my coming, and in a most obliging manner told me, he would have me one of his most intimate friends. In short he so really convinced me of his affection, that though his elder brother gave me many testimonies of love and esteem, yet could I easily distinguish between their favours. Now, as it is common for bosom friends to keep nothing secret from each other, Don Ferdinand relying as much on my fidelity, as I had reason to depend on his, revealed to me his most private thoughts; and among the rest, his being in love with the daughter of a very rich farmer, who was his father's vassal. The beauty of that lovely country maid, her virtue, her discretion, and the other graces of her mind, gained her the admiration of all those who approached her: and those uncommon endowments had so charmed the soul of Don Ferdinand, that, finding it absolutely impossible to corrupt her chastity, since she would not yield to his embraces as a mistress, he resolved to marry her. I thought myself obliged by all the ties of gratitude and friendship, to dissuade him from so unsuitable a match; and therefore I made use of such arguments as might have diverted any one but so con-

firmed a lover from such an unequal choice. At last, finding them all ineffectual, I resolved to inform the duke his father of his intentions: but Don Ferdinand was too clear-sighted not to read my design in my great dislike of his resolutions, and dreading such a discovery, which he knew my duty to his father might well warrant, in spite of our intimacy, since I looked upon such a marriage as highly prejudicial to them both, he made it his business to hinder me from betraying his passion to his father, assuring me, there would be no need to reveal it to him. To blind me the more effectually, he told me he was willing to try the power of absence, that common cure of love, thereby to wear out and lose his unhappy passion; and that in order to this, he would take a journey with me to my father's house, pretending to buy horses in our town, where the best in the world are bred. No sooner had I heard this plausible proposal but I approved it, swayed by the interest of my own love, that made me glad of an opportunity to see my absent Lucinda.

"I have heard since, that Don Ferdinand had already been blessed by his mistress, with all the liberty of boundless love, upon a promise of marriage, and that he only waited an opportunity to discover it with safety, being afraid of incurring his father's indignation. But as what we call love in young men, is too often only an irregular passion and boiling desire, that has no other object than sensual pleasure, and vanishes with enjoyment, while real love, fixing itself on the perfections of the mind, is still improving and permanent; as soon as Don Ferdinand had accomplished his lawless desires, his strong affection slackened, and his hot love grew cold: so that if at first his proposing to try the power of absence was only a pretence, that he might get rid of his passion, there was nothing now that he more heartily coveted, that he might thereby avoid fulfulling his promise. And therefore having obtained the duke's leave, away we posted to my father's house, where Don Ferdinand was entertained according to his quality; and I went to visit my Lucinda, who, by a thousand innocent endearments, made me sensible, that her love, like mine, was rather heightened than weakened by absence, if any

thing could heighten a love so great and so perfect. I then thought myself obliged by the laws of friendship, not to conceal the secrets of my heart from so kind and intimate a friend, who had so generously entrusted me with his; and therefore, to my eternal ruin, I unhappily discovered to him my passion. I praised Lucinda's beauty, her wit, her virtue, and praised them so like a lover, so often, and so highly that I raised in him a great desire to see so accomplished a lady; and to gratify his curiosity, I showed her to him by the help of a light, one evening, at a low window, where we used to have our amorous interviews. She proved but too charming, and too strong a temptation to Don Ferdinand; and her prevailing image made so deep an impression on his soul, that it was sufficient to blot out of his mind all those beauties that had till then employed his wanton thoughts. He was struck dumb with wonder and delight at the sight of the ravishing apparition; and, in short, to see her, and to love her, proved with him the same thing: and when I say to love her, I need not add to desperation, for there is no loving her but to an extreme. If her face made him so soon take fire, her wit quickly set him all in a flame. He often importuned me to communicate to him some of her letters, which I indeed would never expose to any eyes but my own; but unhappily one day he found one, wherein she desired me to demand her of her father, and to hasten the marriage. It was penned with that tenderness and discretion, that, when he had read it, he presently cried out, that the amorous charms which were scattered and divided among other beauties, were all divinely centred in Lucinda, and in Lucinda alone. Shall I confess a shameful truth? Lucinda's praises, though never so deserved, did not sound pleasantly to my ears out of Don Ferdinand's mouth. I began to entertain I know not what distrusts and jealous fears, the rather, because he would be still improving the least opportunity of talking of her, and insensibly turning the discourse he held on other matters, to make her the subject, though never so far-fetched, of our constant talk. Not that I was apprehensive of the least infidelity from Lucinda: far from it; she gave me daily fresh assurances of her

inviolable affection; but I feared every thing from my malignant stars, and lovers are commonly industrious to make themselves uneasy.

"It happened one day that Lucinda, who took great delight in reading books of knight-errantry, desired me to lend her the romance of Amadis de Gaul"——

Scarce had Cardenio mentioned knight-errantry, when Don Quixote interrupted him: "Sir," said he, "had you but told me, when you first mentioned the Lady Lucinda, that she was an admirer of books of knight-errantry, there had been no need of using any amplification to convince me of her being a person of uncommon sense; yet, sir, had she not used those mighty helps, those infallible guides to sense, though indulgent nature had strove to bless her with the richest gifts she can bestow, I might justly enough have doubted whether her perfections could have gained her the love of a person of your merits; but now you need not employ your eloquence to set forth the greatness of her beauty, the excellence of her worth, or the depth of her sense, for, from this account which I have of her taking a great delight in reading books of chivalry, I dare pronounce her to be the most beautiful, nay, the most accomplished lady in the universe; and I heartily could have wished, that with Amadis de Gaul, you had sent the worthy Don Rugel of Greece; for I am certain the Lady Lucinda would have been extremely delighted with Daryda and Garaya, as also with the discreet shepherd Darinel, and those admirable verses of his bucolics, which he sang and repeated with so good a grace. But a time may yet be found to give her the satisfaction of reading those master-pieces, if you will do me the honour to come to my house, for there I may supply you with above three hundred volumes, which are my soul's greatest delight, and the darling comfort of my life; though now I remember myself, I have just reason to fear there is not one of them left in my study, thanks to the malicious envy of wicked enchanters. I beg your pardon for giving you this interruption, contrary to my promise; but when I hear the least mention made of knight-errantry, it is no more in my power to forbear speaking than it is in the sunbeams not to warm, or in

those of the moon not to impart her natural humidity; and therefore, sir, I beseech you to go on."

While Don Quixote was running on with this impertinent digression, Cardenio hung down his head on his breast with all the signs of a man lost in sorrow; nor could Don Quixote, with repeated entreaties, persuade him to look up, or answer a word. At last, after he had stood thus a considerable while, he raised his head, and, suddenly breaking silence, "I am positively convinced," cried he, "nor shall any man in the world ever persuade me to the contrary; and he's a blockhead who says, that arrant knave, Master Elisabat,[1] never carried on with Queen Madasima."

"It is false!" cried Don Quixote, in a mighty heat; "by all the powers above, it is all scandal and base detraction to say this of Queen Madasima! She was a most noble and virtuous lady; nor is it to be presumed that so great a princess would ever debase herself so far as to fall in love with a physic-monger. Whoever dares to say she did, lies like an arrant villain; and I'll make him acknowledge it either on foot or on horseback, armed, or unarmed, by night or by day, or how he pleases."

Cardenio very earnestly fixed his eyes on Don Quixote, while he was thus defying him, and taking Queen Madasima's part, as if she had been his true and lawful princess; and being provoked by these abuses into one of his mad fits, he took up a great stone that lay by him, and hit Don Quixote such a blow on his breast with it, that it beat him down backwards. Sancho, seeing his lord and master so roughly handled, fell upon the mad knight with his clenched fists; but he beat him off at the first onset, and laid him at his feet with a single blow, and then fell upon him forthwith, and basted his ribs just as he listed. Nay, the goat-herd, who was offering to take Sancho's part, had like to have been served in the same manner. So the Ragged Knight, having tumbled

[1] [Elisabat, or Helizabad (see p. 95, note), is a skilful surgeon in Amadis de Gaul, who performs wonderful cures; and Queen Madasima is wife to Gantasis, who also makes a great figure in the romance; they travel together and sleep in woods and deserts, without any imputation on her honour.]

them one over another, and beaten them handsomely, left them, and with remarkable calmness took himself off to some woody hiding-place in the mountain.

Sancho got up when he saw him gone; and being very much out of humour to find himself so roughly handled without any manner of reason, began to pick a quarrel with the goat-herd, railing at him for not forewarning them of the Ragged Knight's mad fits, that they might have stood upon their guard. The goat-herd answered, he had given them warning at first, and if he could not hear, it was no fault of his. To this Sancho replied, and the goat-herd made a rejoinder, till from *pros* and *cons* they fell to a warmer way of disputing, and went to fisticuffs together, catching one another by the beards, and tugging, hauling, and belabouring one another so unmercifully, that, had not Don Quixote parted them, they would have pulled one another's chins off. Sancho, in great wrath, still keeping his hold, cried to his master, "Let me alone, Sir Knight of the Doleful Countenance: this is no dubbed knight, but an ordinary fellow like myself; I may be revenged on him for the wrong he has done me; let me box it out, and fight him fairly hand to fist like a man."—"Thou mayest fight him as he is thy equal," answered Don Quixote; "but thou oughtest not to do it, since he has done us no wrong."—After this he pacified them, and then addressing himself to the goat-herd, he asked him whether it was possible to find out Cardenio again, that he might hear the end of his story? The goat-herd answered, that, as he already told him, he knew of no settled place he used, but that if they made any stay thereabout, he might be sure to meet with him, mad or sober, some time or other.

CHAPTER XXV.

Of the strange things that happened to the valiant Knight of La Mancha in the Black Mountain; and of the penance he did there, in imitation of Beltenebros, or the Lovely Obscure.

Don Quixote took leave of the goat-herd, and having mounted Rozinante, bade Sancho follow him, which he did with his beast, in no very good humour, his master leading him into the roughest and most craggy part of the mountain. Thus they travelled for a while without speaking a word. Sancho, almost dead, and ready to burst for want of a little chat, waited with great impatience till his master should begin, not daring to speak first, since his strict injunction of silence. But at last, not being able to keep his word any longer, "Good your worship," quoth he, "give me your blessing and leave to be gone, I beseech you, that I may go home to my wife and children, where I may talk till I am weary, and nobody can hinder me; for I must needs tell you, that for you to think to lead me a jaunt through hedge and ditch, over hills and dales, by night and by day, without daring to open my lips, is to bury me alive. Could beasts speak, as they did in Æsop's time, it would not have been half so bad with me; for then I might have communed with my ass as I pleased, and have forgot my ill fortune: but to trot on in this fashion, all the days of my life, after adventures, and to light of nothing but thumps, kicks, and cuffs, and be tossed in a blanket, and after all, forsooth, to have a man's mouth sewed up, without daring to speak one's mind,—I say it again, no living soul can endure it."

"I understand thee, Sancho," answered Don Quixote, "thou lingerest with impatience, to exercise thy talking faculty. Well, I am willing to free thy tongue from this restraint that so cruelly pains thee, upon condition, that the time of this licence shall not extend beyond that of our continuance in these mountains."—"A match," quoth Sancho, "let us make hay while the sun shines, I will talk whilst I

may; what I may do hereafter Heaven knows best!" And so beginning to take the benefit of his privilege, "Pray, sir," quoth he, "what occasion had you to take so hotly the part of Queen Magimasa,[1] or what do you call her? What the devil was it to you, whether that same Master Abbot were her friend in a corner, or no? had you taken no notice of what was said, as you might well have done, seeing it was no business of yours, the madman would have gone on with his story, you had missed a good thump with a stone, the kicks, and some five or six good dowses on the chaps."

"Upon my honour, friend Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "didst thou but know, as well as I do, what a virtuous and eminent lady Queen Madasima was, thou wouldst say I had a great deal of patience, seeing I did not strike that profane wretch on the mouth, out of which such blasphemies proceeded: for, in short, it was the highest piece of detraction to say, that a queen was scandalously familiar with a barber-surgeon: for the truth of the story is, that this Master Elisabat, of whom the madman spoke, was a person of extraordinary prudence and sagacity, and physician to that queen, who also made use of his advice in matters of importance; but to say she gave him up her honour, and prostituted herself to the embraces of a man of such an inferior degree, was an impudent, groundless, and slanderous accusation, worthy of the severest punishment; neither can I believe that Cardenio knew what he said, when he charged the queen with that debasing guilt; for, it is plain, that his raving fit had disordered the seat of his understanding."—"Why, there it is," quoth Sancho; "who but a madman would have minded what a madman said? What if the flint that hit you on the breast had dashed out your brains? we had been in a dainty pickle for taking the part of that same lady, with a pease-cod in her. Nay, and Cardenio would have come off too, had he knocked you on the head;

[1] Madasima was the real name of this lady. Ozell considers *abad* (abbot) as a mere blunder of Sancho for Elizabad; but Elizabad, of whom something has been said already, seems to have been a priest as well as a doctor, for Amadis says to him (Book i. c. 38), "Azora os ruego Maestro que *digays* de Mañana *missa*."

for the law has nothing to do with madmen."—"Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "we knights-errant are obliged to vindicate the honour of women of what quality soever, as well against madmen, as against men in their senses; much more queens of that magnitude and extraordinary worth, as Queen Madasima, for whose rare endowments I have a peculiar veneration; for she was a most beautiful lady, discreet and prudent to admiration, and behaved herself with an exemplary patience in all her misfortunes. It was then that the company and wholesome counsels of Master Elisabat proved very useful to alleviate the burden of her afflictions: from which the ignorant and ill-meaning vulgar took occasion to suspect and rumour, that she was guilty of an unlawful commerce with him. But I say once more, they lie, and lie a thousand times, whoever they be, that shall presumptuously report, or hint, or so much as think or surmise so base a calumny."

"Why," quoth Sancho, "I neither say, nor think one way nor the t'other, not I: let them that say it, eat the lie, and swallow it with their bread. If they lay together, they have answered for it before now. I never thrust my nose in other men's porridge. It is no bread and butter of mine: every man for himself, and God for us all, say I; for he that buys and lies, finds it in his purse. Let him that owns the cow take her by the tail. Naked came I into the world, and naked must I go out. Many think to find flitches of bacon, and find not so much as the racks to lay them on: but who can hedge in a cuckoo? Little said is soon mended. It is a sin to belie the devil: but misunderstanding brings lies to town, and there is no padlocking of people's mouths: for a close mouth catches no flies."

"Bless me!" cried Don Quixote, "what a catalogue of musty proverbs hast thou run through! what a heap of frippery ware hast thou threaded together, and how wide from the purpose! Pray thee have done, and for the future let thy whole study be to spur thy ass; nor do thou concern thyself with things that are out of thy sphere; and with all thy five senses remember this, that whatsoever I do, have done, and shall do, is no more than what is the result of mature consideration, and strictly conformable

to the laws of chivalry, which I understand better than all the knights that ever professed knight-errantry."—"Ay, ay, sir," quoth Sancho; "but pray, is it a good law of chivalry that says we shall wander up and down, over bushes and briars, in this rocky wilderness, where there is neither footpath nor horseway; running after a madman, who, if we may light on him again, may chance to make an end of what he has begun, not of his tale, I mean, but of *your* honour's head, and of *my* ribs, of which, belike, he'd break every one?"—"Once more, I pr'ythee, have done," said Don Quixote: "I have business of greater moment than the finding this frantic man; it is not so much that business that detains me in this barren and desolate wild, as a desire I have to perform a certain heroic deed that shall immortalise my fame, and make it fly to the remotest regions of the habitable globe; nay, it shall seal and confirm the most complete and absolute knight-errant in the world."—"But is not this same adventure very dangerous?" asked Sancho.—"Not at all," replied Don Quixote, "though as fortune may order it, our expectations may be baffled by disappointing accidents: but the main thing consists in thy diligence."—"My diligence?" quoth Sancho.—"I mean," said Don Quixote, "that if thou returnest with all the speed imaginable from the place whither I design to send thee, my pain will soon be at an end, and my glory begin. And because I do not doubt thy zeal for advancing thy master's interest, I will no longer conceal my design from thee. Know, then, my most faithful squire, that Amadis de Gaul was one of the most accomplished knights-errant; nay, I should not have said he was one of them, but the most perfect, the chief, and prince of them all. And let not the Belianises, nor any others, pretend to stand in competition with him for the honour of priority; for, to my knowledge should they attempt it, they would be egregiously in the wrong. I must also inform thee, that when a painter studies to excel and grow famous in his art, he takes care to imitate the best originals; which rule ought likewise to be observed in all other arts and sciences that serve for the ornament of well-regulated commonwealths. Thus he that is ambitious of gaining the reputation of a prudent

and patient man, ought to propose to himself to imitate Ulysses, in whose person and troubles Homer has admirably delineated a perfect pattern and prototype of wisdom and heroic patience. So Virgil, in his Æneas, has given the world a rare example of filial piety, and of the sagacity of a valiant and experienced general; both the Greek and Roman poets representing their heroes not such as they really were, but such as they should be, to remain examples of virtue to ensuing ages. In the same manner, Amadis having been the polar star and sun of valorous and amorous knights, it is him we ought to set before our eyes as our great exemplar, all of us that fight under the banner of love and chivalry; for it is certain that the adventurer who shall emulate him best, shall consequently arrive nearest to the perfection of knight-errantry. Now, Sancho, I find that among the things which most displayed that champion's prudence and fortitude, his constancy and love, and his other heroic virtues, none was more remarkable than his retiring from his disdainful Oriana, to do penance on the Barren Rock, changing his name into that of Beltenebros, or the Lovely Obscure, a title certainly most significant, and adapted to the life which he then intended to lead.[1] So I

[1] This is one of the most beautifully told of all the adventures of Amadis. It was on the suggestion of the old hermit that he assumed the name of Beltenebros: "Y Amadis le pedio que no le llamasse de su nombre, mas por otro qual el le quisi ss· poner. El hombre bueno dixo: Yo vos quiero poner un *nombre* que será conforme á vuestra persona y angustia en que soys puesto; y vuestra vida está en grande amargura, y en *tenieblas*, quiero que ayays nombre *Beltenebros*. A Amadis plugo de aquel nombre." *Amad. de Gaula*, c. 48.

The penitence of Don Quixote is one of the principal points of his imitation of Amadis—and the imitation is carried as close as is consistent with the general purpose of Cervantes. Amadis had just finished the conquest of the Firm Island—an enchanted region, seven leagues long by five broad, which was called *Insola*, or *Insula*, because it was almost surrounded by the sea, and *Firma Insula*, by reason of an isthmus connecting it with the mainland. From this he departed for the court of Sobradisa, the sovereignty of which country was then in the hands of the beautiful Queen Briolanja. The peerless Oriana being informed of this new expedition, conceived certain feelings of jealousy, and sent him, by her page Burin, a letter full of haughty complaints, forbidding him ever to appear again in her presence. The letter was superscribed, "I am the damsel wounded with the point of the sword through the heart, and thou art he that hast wounded me."

am resolved to imitate him in this, the rather because I think it a more easy task than it would be to copy after his other achievements, such as cleaving the bodies of giants, cutting off the heads of dragons, killing dreadful monsters, routing whole armies, dispersing navies, breaking the force of magic spells. And since these mountainous wilds offer me so fair an opportunity, I see no reason why I should neglect it, and therefore I will lay hold on it now."—"Very well," quoth Sancho; "but pray, sir, what is it that you mean to do in this fag-end of the world?"—"Have I not already told thee," answered Don Quixote, "that I intend to copy Amadis in his madness, despair, and fury? nay, at the same time I will imitate the valiant Orlando Furioso's extravagance,[1] when he ran mad, after he had found the unhappy tokens of the fair Angelica's dishonourable commerce with Medoro at the fountain; at which time, in his frantic despair, he tore up trees by the roots, troubled the waters of the clear fountains, slew the shepherds, destroyed their flocks, fired

---

Amadis, on receiving and reading this communication, sank forthwith into the profoundest melancholy; left all his adventures "cut off in the middle," and withdrew to do penance in solitude. Having no farther occasion for the services of his Esquire Gandalin, he appointed him governor of the Firm Island,—as in due time Sancho himself becomes governor of Barataria. Amadis chose to consult Andalod, a certain hermit, who inhabited a dismal place, called the Poor Rock, in the midst of the sea, and, by his direction, he established there the seat of his miseries; assuming at the same time, for the reasons above-mentioned, the name of Beltenebros. Here Amadis devoted himself to a life of the most exemplary piety, hearing the matins and vespers of the ancient Andalod, confessing himself every noon, and spending all the rest of the four-and-twenty hours in tears and lamentations. Now and then, however, he composed poems on the rigour of Oriana; and accordingly we find, that Don Quixote also develops a vein both of music and poetry in the sequel, when he sings to the guitar a canzonet of his own composition, for the purpose of being overheard by Altesidora, the duchess's maid. The deliverance of the Don from his afflictions on the Sierra Morena is also copied from that of Amadis; in whose history the damsel of Denmark plays a part, not unlike that which is devised for the fair Dorothea in this book of Don Quixote.—"Pero Beltenebros se despidio del hermitaño, haziendole saber que aquella donzella por la piedad de Dios alli por su salud era aportada."—*Amad.* c. 52.

[1] See Note XV. at end.

their huts, demolished houses, drove their horses before him, and committed a hundred thousand other extravagancies, worthy to be recorded in the eternal register of fame. Not that I intend, however, in all things to imitate Roldan, or Orlando, or Rotolante [1] (for he had all those names), but only to make choice of such frantic effects of his amorous despair, as I shall think most essential and worthy imitation. Nay, perhaps I shall wholly follow Amadis, who, without launching out into such destructive and fatal ravings, and only expressing his anguish in complaints and lamentations, gained nevertheless a renown equal, if not superior, to that of the greatest heroes."

"Sir," quoth Sancho, "I dare say the knight who did these penances had some reason to be mad; but what need have you to be mad too? what lady has sent you a packing, or so much as slighted you? when did you ever find that my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso did otherwise than she should do, with either Moor [2] or Christian?"—"Why, there is the point," cried Don Quixote, "in this consists the singular perfection of my undertaking; for, mark me, Sancho, for a knight-errant to run mad upon any just occasion, is neither strange nor meritorious; no, the rarity is to run mad without a cause, without the least constraint or necessity: there is a refined and exquisite passion for you, Sancho! for thus my mistress must needs have a vast idea of my love, since she may guess what I should perform in the wet, if I do so much in the dry. But besides, I have but too just a motive to give a loose to my raving grief, considering the long date of my absence from my ever supreme lady, Dulcinea del

[1] The last of these names was assumed by Orlando when he went incognito to the tournament of Cyprus.—*Espejo de Caballerias*, P. I. c. 76.

"Il nome è *Rotolante*, e quel ch' io posso
È a tuo commando, infin c' ho sangue adosso.
* * * *
Il giovanetto Rè molto hebbe grato
Il cortese parlar che fece Orlando."
Boiardo, B. II. c. 19.

[2] [*Moro*, a ludicrous misunderstanding of *Medoro* mentioned above.]

Toboso; for as the shepherd in Matthias Ambrosio has it,

> Poor lovers, absent from the darling fair,
> All ills not only dread, but bear.[1]

Then do not lavish any more time in striving to divert me from so rare, so happy, and so singular an imitation. I am mad, and will be mad, until thy return with an answer to the letter which thou must carry from me to the Lady Dulcinea; and if it be as favourable as my unshaken constancy deserves, then my madness and my penance shall end; but if I find she repays my vows and services with ungrateful disdain, then will I be emphatically mad, and screw up my thoughts to such an excess of distraction, that I shall be insensible of the rigour of my relentless fair. Thus what return soever she makes to my passion, I shall be eased one way or other of the anxious thoughts that now divide my soul; either entertaining the welcome news of her reviving pity with demonstrations of sense, or else showing my insensibility of her cruelty by the height of my distraction. But in the mean time, Sancho, tell me, hast thou carefully preserved Mambrino's helmet? I saw thee take it up the other day, after that monster of ingratitude had spent his rage in vain endeavours to break it; which, by the way, argues the most excellent temper of the metal."—"Body of me," quoth Sancho, "Sir Knight of the Doleful Countenance, I can no longer bear to hear you run on at this rate! Why, this were enough to make any man believe that all your bragging and bouncing of your knight-errantry, your winning of kingdoms, and bestowing of islands, and heaven knows what, upon your squire, are mere flim-flam stories, and nothing but shams and lies; for who the devil can hear a man call a barber's basin a helmet, nay, and stand to it, and vouch it four days together, and not think him that says it to be stark mad, or without brains? I have

[1] "Mas en ausencia se siente
Con un estraño accidente,
Sen sombra de ningun bene
Zelos, muertes, y desden
Que esto, y mas, teme el ausente."
Galatea, L. 3.

the basin safe enough here in my pouch, and I'll get it mended for my own use, if ever I have the luck to get home to my wife and children."

"Now as I love bright arms," cried Don Quixote, "I swear thou art the shallowest, silliest, and most stupid fellow of a squire that ever I heard or read of in my life! How is it possible for thee to be so dull of apprehension, as not to have learnt in all this time that thou hast been in my service, that all the actions and adventures of us knights-errant seem to be mere chimeras, follies, and impertinencies? Not that they are so indeed, but only either through the officious care, or else through the malice and envy of those enchanters that always haunt and persecute us unseen, and by their fascinations change the appearance of our actions into what they please, according to their love or hate. This is the very reason why that which I plainly perceive to be Mambrino's helmet, seems to thee to be only a barber's basin, and perhaps another man may take it to be something else. And in this I can never too much admire the prudence of the sage who espouses my interests, in making that inestimable helmet seem a basin; for did it appear in its proper shape, its tempting value would raise me as many enemies as there are men in the universe, all eager to snatch from me so desirable a prize: but so long as it shall seem to be nothing else but a barber's basin, men will not value it; as is manifest from the fellow's leaving it behind him on the ground; for had he known what it really was, he would sooner have parted with his life. Keep it safe then, Sancho, for I have no need of it at present, far from it; I think to put off my armour, and strip myself as naked as I came out of my mother's womb, in case I determine to imitate Orlando's fury, rather than the penance of Amadis."

This discourse brought them to the foot of a high rock that stood by itself, as if it had been hewn out, and divided from the rest; by its skirt glided a purling stream, that softly took its winding course through an adjacent meadow. The verdant freshness of the grass, the number of wild trees, plants, and flowers, that feasted the eyes in that pleasant solitude, invited the Knight of the Doleful Countenance to make choice of it to perform his

amorous penance; and therefore as soon as he had let his ravished sight rove a while over the scattered beauties of the place, he took possession of it with the following speech, as if he had utterly lost the small share of reason he had left: "Behold, O heavens!" cried he, "the place which an unhappy lover has chosen in order to bemoan the deplorable state to which you have reduced him: here shall my flowing tears swell the liquid veins of this crystal rill, and my deep sighs perpetually move the leaves of these shady trees, in testimony of the anguish and pain that harrows up my soul. Ye rural deities, whoever you be, that make these unfrequented deserts your abode, hear the complaints of an unfortunate lover, whom a tedious absence, and some slight impressions of a jealous mistrust, have driven to these regions of despair, to bewail his rigorous destiny, and deplore the distracting cruelty of that ungrateful fair, who is the perfection of all human beauty. Ye pitying Napæan nymphs and Dryades, silent inhabitants of the woods and groves, assist me to lament my fate, or at least attend the mournful story of my woes; so may no designing beastly satyrs, those just objects of your hate, ever have power to interrupt your rest. O Dulcinea del Toboso! thou sun that turnest my gloomy night to day! glory of my pain! north star of my travels, and reigning planet that controlst my heart! pity, I conjure thee, the unparallelled distress to which thy absence has reduced the faithfulest of lovers, and grant to my fidelity that kind return which it so justly claims! so may indulgent fate shower on thee all the blessings thou ever canst desire, or Heaven grant!—Ye lonesome trees, under whose spreading branches I come to linger out the gloomy shadow of a tedious being; let the soft language of your rustling leaves, and the kind nodding of your springing boughs, satisfy me that I am welcome to your shady harbours.—O thou, my trusty squire, the inseparable companion of my adventures, diligently observe what thou shalt see me do in this lonely retreat, that thou mayst inform the dear cause of my ruin with every particular." As he said this, he alighted, and presently taking off his horse's bridle and saddle, "Go, Rozinante," saith he, giving his horse a clap

on the haunch, "he that has lost his freedom gives thee thine, thou steed as renowned for thy extraordinary actions, as for thy misfortunes; go rear thy awful front wherever thou pleasest, secure that neither the Hippogryphon of Astolpho,[1] nor the renowned Frontino,[2] which Bradamante purchased at so high a price, could ever be thought thy equals."

"Joy be with him," cried Sancho, "that saved me the trouble of sending Dapple to grass too: poor thing, had I him here, he should not want two or three claps, nor a fine speech in his praise neither, while I took off his pannel. But stay, were he here, what need would there be to strip him of his harness? Alas, he never had any thing to do with these mad pranks of love, no more than myself, who was his master when fortune pleased. But do you hear me, now I think on it, Sir Knight of the Doleful Countenance, if your worship is resolved to be mad, and send me away in good earnest, we must even clap the saddle again on Rozinante's back; for to tell you the truth, I am but a sorry foot-man, and if I do not ride home, I do not know when I shall be able to come back again."—"Do as thou thinkest fit for that,

[1] This is certainly the most daring of hyperboles.

"Quello Ippogrifo grande e strano augello
Lo porta via con tal prestezza d'ale
Che lasceria di lungo tratto quello
Celer ministro del fulmineo strale;
Credo ch'à pena el tuono e la saetta
Venga in terra dal ciel con maggior fretta."

Orlando, Canto 6.

[2] The Don seems to have been thinking of Ruggiero's manumissory address to his famous steed when he made his speech to Rozinante.

——— "Frontin al tutto sciolto messe
Da se lontano *e libertà li diede.*
O mio Frontin (li disse) se a mè stesse
Di dare a merti tuoi degna mercede,
Avreste quel destrier da invidiar poco
Che volo al cielo e fra le stelle ha loco.
Cillaro, so, non fu, non fu Arione
Di te miglior ne merito più lode."

Ariosto, Canto 45.

Sancho's apostrophe also to his absent Dapple is in obvious allusion to this passage.

Sancho," answered Don Quixote, "for I design thou shalt set forward about three days hence. In the mean while, thou shalt be a witness of what I will do for my lady's sake, that thou mayest give her an account of it."—"Bless my eyesight," quoth Sancho, "what can I see more than I have seen already?"—"Thou hast seen nothing yet," answered Don Quixote; "thou must see me throw away my armour, tear my clothes, knock my head against the rocks, and do a thousand other things of that kind, that will fill thee with astonishment."—"For goodness' sake, sir," quoth Sancho, "take heed how you quarrel with those ungracious rocks; you may chance to get such a crack on the crown at the very first rap, as may spoil your penance at one dash. No, I do not like that way by no means; if you must needs be knocking your noddle, to go through stitch with this ugly job, seeing it is all but a mockery, or as it were between jest and earnest, why cannot you as well play your tricks on something that is softer than these unconscionable stones? You may run your head against water, or rather against cotton, or this stuffing of Rozinante's saddle, and then let me alone with the rest: I will be sure to tell my Lady Dulcinea, that you bebumped your pole against the point of a rock that is harder than a diamond."

"I thank thee for thy goodwill, dear Sancho," replied Don Quixote; "but I assure thee, that all these seeming extravagancies that I must run through, are no jests: far from it, they must all be performed seriously and solemnly; for otherwise we should transgress the laws of chivalry, that forbid us to tell lies upon pain of degradation; now to pretend to do one thing, and effect another, is an evasion, which I esteem to be as bad as lying. Therefore the blows which I must give myself on the head, ought to be real, substantial, sound ones, without any trick, or mental reservation; for which reason I would have thee leave me some lint and salve, since fortune has deprived us of the sovereign balsam which we lost."—"It was a worse loss to lose the ass," quoth Sancho, "for with him we have lost bag and baggage, lint and all: but no more of your damned drench, if you love me; the very thoughts on it are enough not only to

turn my stomach, but my soul; such a rumbling I feel in my wame at the name of it. Then as for the three days you would have me loiter here to mind your mad tricks, you had as good make account they are already over; for I hold them for seen and passed, and will tell wonders to my lady: wherefore write you your letter, and send me going with all haste; for let me be hanged if I do not long already to be back, to take you out of this purgatory wherein I leave you."

"Dost thou only call it purgatory, Sancho?" cried Don Quixote; "call it hell rather, or something worse, if there be in nature a term expressive of a more wretched state."—"Nay, not so neither," quoth Sancho, "I would not call it hell; because, as I heard our parson say, 'There is no retention[1] out of hell.'"—"Retention!" cried Don Quixote; "what dost thou mean by that word?"—"Why," quoth Sancho, "retention is retention; it is, that whosoever is in hell, never comes, nor can come, out of it: which shall not be your case this bout, if I can stir my heels, and have but spurs to tickle Rozinante's flanks, till I come to my Lady Dulcinea; for I will tell her such strange things of your maggoty tricks, your folly and your madness, for indeed they are no better, that I will lay my head to a hazel-nut, I will make her as supple as a glove, though I found her at first as tough-hearted as a cork; and when I have wheedled an answer out of her, all full of sweet honey words, away will I whisk it back to you, cutting the air as swift as a witch upon a broom-stick, and free you out of your purgatory; for a purgatory I will have it to be in spite of hell, nor shall you gainsay me in that fancy; for, as I have told you before, there are some hopes of your retention out of this place."

"Well, be it so," said the Knight of the Doleful Countenance: "but how shall I do to write this letter?"—"And the order for the three asses?" added Sancho.—"I will not forget it," answered Don Quixote; "but since we have here no paper, I must be obliged to write on the leaves or bark of trees, or on wax, as they did in ancient times; yet now I consider on it, we are here as ill provided with wax as with paper; but stay, now I remember, I have

[1] [*i.e.* "redemption."]

Cardenio's pocket-book, which will supply that want in this exigence, and then thou shalt get the letter fairly transcribed at the first village where thou canst meet with a schoolmaster; or, for want of a schoolmaster, thou mayest get the clerk of the parish to do it; but by no means give it to any notary or scrivener to be written out; for they commonly write such confounded hands, that the devil himself would scarce be able to read it."—"Well," quoth Sancho, "but what shall I do for want of your name to it?"—"Why," answered Don Quixote, "Amadis never used to subscribe his letters."—"Ay," replied Sancho, "but the bill of exchange for the three asses must be signed; for should I get it copied out afterwards, they would say it is not your hand, and so I shall go without the asses."—"I will write and sign the order for them in the pocket-book," answered Don Quixote; "and as soon as my niece sees the hand, she will never scruple the delivery of the asses: and as for the love-letter, when thou gettest it transcribed, thou must get it thus underwritten, 'Yours till death, the Knight of the Doleful Countenance.' It is no matter whether the letter and subscription be written by the same hand or no; for, as I remember, Dulcinea can neither read nor write, nor did she ever see any of my letters, nay, not so much as any of my writing in her life: for my love and her's have always been purely Platonic, never extending beyond the lawful bounds of a modest look; and that too so very seldom, that I dare safely swear, that though for these twelve years she has been dearer to my soul than light to my eyes, yet I never saw her four times in my life; and perhaps of those few times that I have seen her, she has scarce perceived once that I beheld her; so strictly, and so discreetly, Lorenzo Corchuelo her father, and Aldonza Nogales her mother, have kept and educated her."—"Heighday," quoth Sancho; "did you ever hear the like? and is my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, at last the daughter of Lorenzo Corchuelo, she that is otherwise called Aldonza Lorenzo?"—"The same," answered Don Quixote; "and it is she that merits to be the sovereign mistress of the universe."—"I know her full well," quoth Sancho; "it is a strapping wench, i' faith, and pitches the bar with

e'er a lusty young fellow in our parish. By the mass, it is a sturdy, strong-built, sizable, manly lass, and one that will keep her chin out of the mire, I warrant her; nay, and hold the best knight-errant to it that wears a head, if ever he venture upon her. Body of me, what a pair of lungs and a voice she has, when she sets up her throat! 'Tis said one day she perched herself up o' top of our steeple to call some ploughmen that were at work in a fallow-field: and though they were half a league off, they heard her as plain as if they had been in the church-yard under her. The best of her is, that she is neither coy nor prudish; she is a tractable lass, and fit for a court-lady, for she will play with any one, and jibes and jokes at every body. And now, in good truth, Sir Knight of the Doleful Countenance, you may e'en play at your gambols as you please; you may run mad, you may hang yourself for her sake; there is nobody but will say you e'en took the wisest course, though the devil himself should carry you away. Now am I even wild to begone, though it were for nothing else but to see her, for I have not seen her this many a day: I fancy I shall hardly know her again, for a woman's face strangely alters by her being always in the sun, and drudging and moiling in the open fields. Well, I must needs own I have been mightily mistaken all along: for I durst have sworn this Lady Dulcinea had been some great princess with whom you were in love, and such a one as deserved those rare gifts you bestowed on her, as the Biscayan, the galley-slaves, and many others, that, for aught I know, you may have sent her before I was your squire. I cannot choose but laugh to think how my Lady Aldonza Lorenzo (my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, I should have said) would behave herself, should any of those men which you have sent, or may send to her, chance to go and fall down on their marrow-bones before her: for it is ten to one they may happen to find her a carding of flax, or threshing in the barn, and then how finely baulked they will be! as sure as I am alive, they must needs think the devil owed them a shame; and she herself will but flout them, and mayhap be somewhat nettled at it."

"I have often told thee, Sancho," said Don Quixote, "and I tell thee again, that thou oughtest to bridle or immure thy saucy prating tongue; for though thou art but a dull-headed dunce, yet now and then thy ill-mannered jests bite too sharp. But that I may at once make thee sensible of thy folly and my discretion, I will tell thee a short story. A handsome, brisk, young, rich widow, and above all no prude, happened to fall in love with a well-set, lusty lay-brother.[1] His superior hearing of it, took occasion to go to her, and said to her, by way of charitable admonition, 'I mightily wonder, madam, how a lady of your merit, so admired for beauty and for sense, and withal so rich, could make so ill a choice, and dote on a mean, silly, despicable fellow, as I hear you do, while we have in our house so many masters of arts, bachelors, and doctors of divinity, among whom your ladyship may pick and choose, as you would among pears, and say, 'This I like, and that I do not like.' But she soon answered the officious grave gentleman: 'Sir,' said she, with a smile, 'you are much mistaken, and think altogether after the old out-of-fashion way, if you imagine I have made so ill a choice; for though you fancy the man is a fool, yet in respect to what I desire of him, he knows as much or rather more philosophy, than Aristotle himself.' So Sancho, as to the use which I make of the Lady Dulcinea, she is equal to the greatest princess in the world. Pry'thee tell me, dost thou think the poets, who, every one of them, celebrate the praises of some lady or other, had all real mistresses? or that the Amaryllises, the Phyllises, the Sylvias, the Dianas, the Galateas, and the like, which you shall find in so many poems, romances, songs and ballads, upon every stage, and even in every barber's shop, were creatures of flesh and blood, and mistresses to those that did, and do celebrate them? No, no, never think it; for I dare assure thee, the greatest part of them were nothing but the mere imaginations of the poets, for a groundwork to exercise their wits upon, and give to the world occasion to look on the authors as men of an amorous and gallant

[1] [*Motilon*, a lay-brother or servant in a convent or college, so called from *motilar*, to crop the head; his hair being cropped short without a tonsure.]

disposition: and so it is sufficient for me to imagine, that Aldonza Lorenzo is beautiful and chaste; as for her birth and parentage, they concern me but little; for there is no need to make an inquiry about a woman's pedigree, as there is of us men, when some badge of honour is bestowed on us; and so she is to me the greatest princess in the world: for thou oughtest to know, Sancho, if thou knowest it not already, that there are but two things that chiefly excite us to love a woman,—an attractive beauty, and unspotted fame. Now these two endowments are happily reconciled in Dulcinea; for as for the one, she has not her equal, and few can vie with her in the other: but to cut off all objections at once, I imagine, that all I say of her is really so, without the least addition or diminution: I fancy her to be just such as I would have her for beauty and quality. Helen cannot stand in competition with her; Lucretia cannot rival her; and all the heroines which antiquity has to boast, whether Greeks, Romans, or Barbarians, are at once outdone by her incomparable perfections. Therefore let the world say what it will; should the ignorant vulgar foolishly censure me, I please myself with the assurances I have of the approbation of men of the strictest morals, and the nicest judgment."—"Sir," quoth Sancho, "I knock under: you have reason on your side in all you say, and I own myself an ass. Nay, I am an ass to talk of an ass; for it is ill talking of halters in the house of a man that was hanged. But where is the letter all this while, that I may be jogging?"

With that Don Quixote pulled out the pocket-book, and, retiring a little aside, he very seriously began to write the letter; which he had no sooner finished, but he called Sancho, and ordered him to listen while he read it over to him, that he might carry it as well in his memory as in his pocket-book, in case he should have the ill luck to lose it by the way; for so cross was fortune to him, that he feared every accident. "But, sir," said Sancho, "write it over twice or thrice there in the book, and give it me, and then I will be sure to deliver the message safe enough I warrant ye: for it is a folly to think I can get it by heart; alas, my memory is so bad, that many times I forget my own name! but yet for all that, read it out to me, I beseech

you, for I have a hugeous mind to hear it. I dare say it is as fine as though it were in print."—"Well, then, listen," said Don Quixote.

Don Quixote's Letter to Dulcinea del Toboso.

"High and Sovereign Lady!

"He that is stabbed to the quick with the poniard of absence, and wounded to the heart with love's most piercing darts, sends you that health which he wants himself, sweetest Dulcinea del Toboso. If your beauty reject me, if your virtue refuse to raise my fainting hopes, if your disdain exclude me from relief, I must at last sink under the pressure of my woes, though much inured to sufferings: for my pains are not only too violent, but too lasting. My trusty squire Sancho will give you an exact account of the condition to which love and you have reduced me, too beautiful ingrate! If you relent at last, and pity my distress, then I may say I live, and you preserve what is yours. But if you abandon me to despair, I must patiently submit, and, by ceasing to breathe, satisfy your cruelty and my passion.—Yours, till death,

"THE KNIGHT OF THE DOLEFUL COUNTENANCE."

"By the life of my father," quoth Sancho, "if I ever saw a finer thing in my born days! How neatly and roundly you tell your mind, and how cleverly you bring in at last, *The Knight of the Doleful Countenance.* Well, I say it again in good earnest, your honour is the very devil, and there is no kind of thing in the world but what you can turn your hand to."—"A man ought to have some knowledge of everything," answered Don Quixote, "if he would be duly qualified for the employment I profess."—"Well then," quoth Sancho, "do so much as write the warrant for the three asses on the other side of that leaf; and pray write it mighty plain, that they may know it is your hand at first sight."—"I will," said Don Quixote; and with that he wrote it accordingly, and then read it in this form:

"My dear Niece,

"Upon sight of this my first bill of asses, be pleased to deliver three of the five which I left at home in your custody

to Sancho Panza, my squire, for the like number received of him here in tale; and this, together with his receipt, shall be your discharge. Given in the heart of Sierra Morena, the 27th of August, in the present year."

"It is as it should be," quoth Sancho; "there only wants your name at the bottom."—"There is no need to set my name," answered Don Quixote, "I will only set the two first letters of it, and it will be as valid as if it were written at length, though it were not only for three asses, but for three hundred."—"I dare take your worship's word," quoth Sancho. "And now I am going to saddle Rozinante, and then you shall give me your blessing, for I intend to set out presently, without seeing any of your mad tricks; and I will relate, that I saw you perform so many, that she can desire no more."—"Nay," said Don Quixote, "I will have thee stay a while, Sancho, and see me stark naked; it is also absolutely necessary thou shouldst see me practise some twenty or thirty mad gambols. I shall have despatched them in less than half an hour, and when thou hast been an eye-witness of that essay, thou mayest with a safe conscience swear thou hast seen me play a thousand more; for I dare assure thee, for thy encouragement, thou never canst exceed the number of those I shall perform."—"Good sir," quoth Sancho, "as you love me do not let me stay to see you naked! it will grieve me so to the heart, that I shall cry my eyes out; and I have blubbered and howled but too much since yesternight for the loss of my ass; my head is so sore with it, I am not able to cry any longer: but if you will needs have me see some of your antics, pray, do them in your clothes out of hand, and let them be such as are most to the purpose, for the sooner I go, the sooner I shall come back, and the way to be gone is not to stay here. I long to bring you an answer to your heart's content, and I will be sure to do it, or let the Lady Dulcinea look to it; for if she does not answer it as she should do, I protest solemnly I will force a favourable answer out of her stomach by dint of good kicks and fisticuffs; for it is not to be endured, that such a notable knight-errant as your worship is, should thus run out of his wits without

knowing why or wherefore, for such a—odsbobs, I know what I know; she had best not provoke me to speak it out; for, by the Lord, I shall let fly, and out with it by wholesale, though it spoil the market."

"I protest, Sancho," said Don Quixote, "I think thou art as mad as myself."—"Nay, not so mad neither," replied Sancho, "but somewhat more choleric. But talk no more of that. Let us see, how will you do for victuals when I am gone? Do you mean to do like the other madman yonder, rob upon the highway, and snatch the goat-herds' victuals from them by main force?"—"Never let that trouble thy head," replied Don Quixote, "for though I had all the dainties that can feast a luxurious palate, I would feed upon nothing but the herbs and fruits which this wilderness will afford me; for the singularity of my present task consists in fasting, and half starving myself, and in the performance of other austerities."—"But there is another thing come into my head," quoth Sancho; "how shall I do to find the way hither again, it is such a bye-place?"—"Take good notice of it beforehand," said Don Quixote, "and I will endeavour to keep here abouts till thy return; besides, about the time when I may reasonably expect thee back, I will be sure to watch on the top of yonder high rock for thy coming. But now I bethink myself of a better expedient, thou shalt cut down a good number of boughs, and strew them in the way as thou ridest along, till thou gettest to the plains, and this will serve thee to find me again at thy return, like the clue in the labyrinth of Theseus."

"I will go about it out of hand," quoth Sancho. With that he went and cut down a bundle of boughs, then came and asked his master's blessing, and, after a shower of tears shed on both sides, mounted Rozinante, which Don Quixote very seriously recommended to his care, charging him to be as tender of that excellent steed as of his own person. After that he set forward towards the plains, strewing several boughs as he rode, according to order. His master importuned him to stay and see him do two or three of his antic postures before he went, but he could not prevail upon him: however, before he was got out of sight he considered over it and rode back. "Sir," quoth he, "I

have thought better of it, and believe I had best take your advice, that I may swear with a safe conscience I have seen you play your mad tricks; therefore I would see you do one of them at least, though I think I have seen you do a very great one already, I mean your staying by yourself in this desert."

"I had advised thee right," said Don Quixote; "and therefore stay but while a man may repeat the Creed, and I will show thee what thou wouldst see." With that, slipping off his breeches, and stripping himself naked to the waist, he gave two or three frisks in the air, and then pitching on his hands, he fetched his heels over his head twice together; and as he tumbled with his legs aloft, discovered such rarities, that Sancho even made haste to turn his horse's head, that he might no longer see them, and rode away full satisfied, that he might swear his master was mad. And so we will leave him to make the best of his way till his return, which will be more speedy than might be imagined.

CHAPTER XXVI.

A continuation of the refined extravagancies by which the gallant Knight of La Mancha chose to express his love in the Sierra Morena.

The history relates, that as soon as the Knight of the Doleful Countenance saw himself alone, after he had taken his frisks and leaps naked as he was, the prelude to his amorous penance, he ascended the top of a high rock, and there began seriously to consider with himself what resolution to take in that nice dilemma, which had already so perplexed his mind; that is, whether he should imitate Orlando in his wild ungovernable fury, or Amadis in his melancholy mood. To which purpose, reasoning with himself, "I do not much wonder," said he, "at Orlando's being so very valiant, considering he was enchanted in such a manner, that he could not be slain, but by the thrust of a long pin through the bottom of his foot, which he

sufficiently secured, always wearing seven iron soles to his shoes; and yet this availed him nothing against Bernardo del Carpio, who, understanding what he depended upon, squeezed him to death between his arms at Roncesvalles. But, setting aside his valour, let us examine his madness; for that he was mad, is an unquestionable truth; nor is it less certain, that his frenzy was occasioned by the assurances he had that the fair Angelica had resigned herself up to the unlawful embraces of Medoro, that young Moor with curled locks, who was page to Agramante.[1] Now, after all, seeing he was too well convinced of his lady's infidelity, it is not to be wondered at he should run mad: but how can I imitate him in his furies, if I cannot imitate him in their occasion? for I dare swear my Dulcinea del Toboso never saw a downright Moor in his own garb since she first beheld light, and that she is at this present as right as the mother that bore her: so that I should do her a great injury, should I entertain any dishonourable thoughts of her behaviour, and fall into such a kind of madness as that of Orlando Furioso. On the other side I find, that Amadis de Gaul, without punishing himself with such distraction, or expressing his resentment in so boisterous and raving a manner, got as great a reputation for being a lover as any one whatsoever: for what I find in history as to his abandoning himself to sorrow, is only this: he found himself disdained, his lady Oriana having charged him to get out of her sight, and not to presume to appear in her presence till she gave him leave; and this was the true reason why he retired to the Barren Rock with the hermit, where he gave up himself wholly to grief, and wept a deluge of tears, till pitying Heaven, commiserating his affliction, at last sent him relief in the height of his anguish. Now then, since this is true, as I know it is, what need have I to tear off my clothes, to rend and root up these harmless trees, or trouble the clear water of these brooks, that must give me drink when I am thirsty? No, long live the memory of Amadis de Gaul, and let him be the great exemplar which Don Quixote de la Mancha chooses to imitate in all things that will admit of a parallel. So may it be said of the living

[1] [Medoro was page to the Saracen Dardinel, not to Agramante.]

copy, as was said of the dead original, that, if he did not perform great things, yet no man was more ambitious of undertaking them than he; and though I am not disdained nor discarded by Dulcinea, yet it is sufficient that I am absent from her. Then it is resolved: and now, ye famous actions of the great Amadis, recur in my remembrance, and be my trusty guides to follow his example." This said, he called to mind, that the chief exercise of that hero in his retreat was prayer; to which purpose, our modern Amadis presently went and made himself a rosary of galls or acorns instead of beads; but he was extremely troubled for want of a hermit to hear his confession, and comfort him in his affliction. However, he entertained himself with his amorous contemplations, walking up and down in the meadow, and writing some poetical conceptions in the smooth sand, and upon the barks of trees, all of them expressive of his sorrows, and the praises of Dulcinea; but unhappily none were found entire and legible but these stanzas that follow:—

Ye lofty trees, with spreading arms,
The pride and shelter of the plain;
Ye humbler shrubs, and flow'ry charms,
Which here in springing glory reign!
If my complaints may pity move,
Hear the sad story of my love!
While with me here you pass your hours,
Should you grow faded with my cares,
I'll bribe you with refreshing showers,
You shall be watered with my tears.
Distant, though present in idea,
I mourn my absent Dulcinea

Del Toboso.

Love's truest slave despairing chose
This lonely wild, this desert plain,
The silent witness of the woes
Which he, though guiltless, must sustain,
Unknowing why those pains he bears,
He groans, he raves, and he despairs:
With ling'ring fires love racks my soul,
In vain I grieve, in vain lament;
Like tortur'd fiends, I weep, I howl,
And burn, yet never can repent.
Distant, though present in idea,
I mourn my absent Dulcinea

Del Toboso.

While I through honour's thorny ways
In search of distant glory rove,
Malignant fate my toil repays
With endless woes and hopeless love.
Thus I on barren rocks despair,
And curse my stars, yet bless my fair.
Love arm'd with snakes has left his dart,
And now does like a fury rave,
And scourge and sting in every part,
And into madness lash his slave.
Distant, though present in idea,
I mourn my absent Dulcinea

Del Toboso.

This addition of Del Toboso to the name of Dulcinea made those who found these verses laugh not a little; and they imagined, that when Don Quixote made them, he was afraid those who should happen to read them would not understand on whom they were made, should he omit to mention the place of his mistress's birth and residence; and this was indeed the true reason, as he himself afterwards confessed. With this employment did our disconsolate knight beguile his tedious hours; sometimes also he expressed his sorrows in prose, sighed to the winds, and called upon the Sylvan gods and Fauns, the Naïades, the Nymphs of the adjoining groves, and the mournful Echo, imploring their attention and condolement with repeated supplications; at other times he employed himself in gathering herbs for the support of languishing nature, which decayed so fast, what with his slender diet, and what with his studied anxiety and intenseness of thinking, that had Sancho stayed but three weeks from him, whereas by good fortune he stayed but three days, the Knight of the Doleful Countenance would have been so disfigured, that his mother would never have known the child of her own womb.

But now it is necessary we should leave him a while to his sighs, his sobs, and his amorous expostulations, and see how Sancho Panza behaved himself in his embassy. He made all the haste he could to get out of the mountain, and then taking the direct road to Toboso, the next day he arrived near the inn where he had been tossed in a blanket. Scarce had he descried the fatal walls, but a sudden shivering seized his bones, and he fancied himself

to be again dancing in the air, so that he had a good mind to have rode farther before he baited, though it was dinner-time, and his mouth watered strangely at the thoughts of a hot bit of meat, the rather, because he had lived altogether upon cold victuals for a long while. This greedy longing drew him near the inn, in spite of his aversion to the place; but yet when he came to the gate he had not the courage to go in, but stopped there, not knowing whether he had best enter or no. While he sat musing, two men happened to come out, and believing they knew him, "Look, master doctor," cried one to the other, "is not that Sancho Panza, whom the housekeeper told us her master had inveigled to go along with him?" —"The same," answered the other; "and more than that, he rides on Don Quixote's horse." Now these two happened to be the curate and the barber, who had brought his books to a trial, and passed sentence on them; therefore, they had no sooner said this, but they called to Sancho, and asked him where he had left his master? The trusty squire presently knew them, and, having no mind to discover the place and condition he left his master in, he told them he was taken up with certain business of great consequence at a certain place, which he durst not discover for his life. "How! Sancho," cried the barber, "you must not think to put us off with a flim-flam story; if you will not tell us where he is, we shall believe you have murdered him, and robbed him of his horse; therefore either satisfy us where you have left him, or we will have you laid by the heels."—"Look you, neighbour," quoth Sancho, "there is no occasion for you to use threats to me, I am neither a thief nor a man-slayer; I leave every man to fall by his own fortune, or by the hand of Him that made him. As for my master, I left him frisking and doing penance in the midst of yon mountain, to his heart's content." After this, without any further entreaty, he gave them a full account of that business, and of all their adventures; how he was then going from his master to carry a letter to my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, Lorenzo Corchuelo's daughter, with whom he was up to the ears in love.

The curate and barber stood amazed, hearing all these

particulars; and though they already knew Don Quixote's madness but too well, they wondered more and more at the increase of it, and at so strange a cast and variety of extravagance. Then they desired Sancho to show them the letter. He told them it was written in a pocket-book, and that his master had ordered him to get it fairly transcribed upon paper at the next village he should come to. Upon the curate promising to write it out very fairly himself, Sancho put his hand into his bosom to give him the pocket-book: but though he fumbled a great while for it, he could find none of it; he searched and searched again, but it had been in vain though he had searched till doomsday, for he came away from Don Quixote without it. This put him into a cold sweat, and made him turn as pale as death; he fell a-searching all his clothes, turned his pockets inside outwards, fumbled in his bosom again: but being at last convinced he had it not about him, he fell a-raving and stamping, and cursing himself like a madman; he rent his beard from his chin with both hands, befisted his own forgetful skull, and his blubber cheeks, and gave himself a bloody nose in a moment. The curate and barber asked him what was the matter with him, and why he punished himself at that strange rate?—"I deserve it all," quoth Sancho, "like a blockhead as I am, for losing at one cast no less than three asses, of which any one was as good as a castle."—"How so?" quoth the barber.—"Why," cried Sancho, "I have lost that same pocket-book, wherein was written Dulcinea's letter, and a bill of exchange drawn by my master upon his niece for three of the five asses which he has at home;" and with that he told them how he had lost his own ass. But the curate cheered him up, and promised him to get another bill of exchange from his master written upon paper, whereas that in the pocket-book, not being in due form, would not have been accepted. With that Sancho took courage, and told them if it were so, he cared not a straw for Dulcinea's letter, for he knew it almost all by rote. "Then pr'ythee let us hear it," said the barber, "and we will see and write it." In order to this Sancho paused, and began to study for the words; presently he fell a scratching his head, stood first upon

one leg, and then upon another, gaped sometimes upon the skies, sometimes upon the ground; at length, after he had gnawed away the top of his thumb, and quite tired out the curate and barber's patience, "Before George," cried he, "Mr. Doctor, I believe the devil is in it, for may I be choked if I can remember a word of this confounded letter, but only, that there was at the beginning, 'High and superficial lady.'—"Superhuman or sovereign lady, you would say," quoth the barber.—"Ay, ay," quoth Sancho, "you are in the right; but stay, now I think I can remember some of that which followed: ho! I have it, I have it now—'He that is wounded, and wants sleep, sends you the dagger——which he wants himself——that stabbed him to the heart——and the hurt man does kiss your ladyship's hand'——and at last, after a thousand hums and ha's, 'Sweetest Dulcinea Del Toboso;' and thus he went on rambling a good while with I do not know what more of fainting, and relief, and sinking, till at last he ended with 'Yours till death, the Knight of the Doleful Countenance.'"

The curate and the barber were mightily pleased with Sancho's excellent memory; insomuch, that they desired him to repeat the letter twice or thrice more, that they might also get it by heart, and write it down, which Sancho did very freely, but every time he made many odd alterations and additions as pleasant as the first. Then he told them many other things of his master, but spoke not a word of his being tossed in a blanket himself at that very inn. He also told them, that if he brought a kind answer from the Lady Dulcinea, his master would forthwith set out to see and make himself an emperor, or at least a king; for so they two had agreed between themselves, he said; and that after all, it was a mighty easy matter for his master to become one, such was his prowess, and the strength of his arm; which being done, his master would marry him to one of the empress's damsels, and that fine lady was to be heiress to a large country on the main land, but not to any island or islands, for he was out of conceit with them. Poor Sancho spoke all this so seriously and so feelingly, ever and anon wiping his nose, and stroking his beard, that now the curate and the

barber were more surprised than they were before, when they saw the prevailing influences of Don Quixote's folly upon that silly credulous fellow. However, they did not think it worth their while to undeceive him yet, seeing this was only a harmless delusion, that might divert them a while; and therefore they exhorted him to pray for his master's health, and long life, seeing it was no impossible thing, but that he might in time become an emperor as he said, or at least an archbishop, or somewhat else equivalent to it.

"But pray, good Mr. Doctor," asked Sancho, "should my master have no mind to be an emperor, and take a fancy to be an archbishop,[1] I would fain know what your

[1] The veracious Archbishop of Rheims on every occasion mentions himself as performing feats of valour quite equal to the noblest knights of the Round Table; and, in the Morgante Maggiore, *passim*, all justice is done to this part of his character. But the union of military and clerical functions was by no means at an end in the days of Cervantes himself, for, twenty years after his death (1638), Don Lope de Hoyez, the Spanish admiral, was defeated in a great naval action, by the French fleet, under the orders of the Archbishop of Bordeaux, who was then the favourite sea-officer of Louis XIII.—See Pellicer.

Guevara, in treating of the revolt which Juan de Padilla, and others excited in Castile (anno 1520), has occasion to detail at great length the exploits of another martial prelate, Don Antonio d'Acugna, Bishop of Zamora. At the age of seventy, this pious gentleman displayed all the fire of a young commander—indeed Guevara himself addressed a letter to him on the subject of his exertions. "To make soldiers priests," quoth he, "might be permitted; but to turn priests into soldiers is scandalous: What then, my lord, shall we say of you, who have not only countenanced this scandal, but in your own person a hundred times exemplified it? You brought three hundred priests of Zamora to fight Tordesillas, and you led them yourself to the assault, at the very beginning of Lent, when you should have been conducting them to the altar. In the assault which your troops sustained from the governors of the kingdom, I saw with my own eyes one of your priests lying with his hackbut behind a hedge, from which situation he killed no less than eleven soldiers, making the sign of the cross over his gun-stock every time he fired. But, behold the end! I saw this very man, before the day was over, receive a bullet in his brain, which constrained him to give up the ghost, without having time to say so much as a single *credo* for his own salvation. I have seen you yourself, my lord, standing in the trench at Ampudia, lifting up the soldiers as they fell from the ladder, and calling out to them like a common brigadier, 'Courage, my boys! courage! up, up! mount, mount! fight bravely, and if you die, may my soul have the same portion with yours, for your

archbishops-errant are wont to give their squires?"—"Why," answered the curate, "they use to give them some parsonage, or sinecure, or some other benefice, or church-living, which, with the profits of the altar, and other fees, brings them in a handsome revenue."—"Ay, but," says Sancho, "to put in for that, the squire must be a single man, and know how to answer, and assist at mass at least; and how shall I do then, seeing I have the ill luck to be married? nay, and besides I do not so much as know the first letter of my criss-cross-row.[1] What will become of me, should it come into my master's head to make himself an archbishop, and not an emperor, as is the custom of knights-errant?"—"Do not let that trouble thee, friend Sancho," said the barber; we will talk to him about it, and advise him, nay, urge him to it as a point of conscience, to be an emperor, and not an archbishop, which will be better for him, by reason he has more courage than learning."

"Troth, I am of your mind," quoth Sancho, "though he is such a headpiece, that I dare say he can turn himself to any thing: nevertheless, I mean to make it the burden of my prayers, that heaven may direct him to that which is best for him, and what may enable him to reward me most."—"You speak like a wise man and a good Christian," said the curate: "but all we have to do at present, is to see how we shall get your master to give over that severe unprofitable penance which he has undertaken; and therefore let us go in to consider about it, and also to eat our dinner, for I fancy it is ready by this time."—"Do you two go in if you please," quoth Sancho, "but as for me, I had rather stay without; and anon I'll tell you why I do not care to go indoors: however, pray send me out a piece of hot victuals to eat here, and some provender for Rozinante." With that they went in, and a while

---

cause is divine!' Now, the men to whom you said so, my lord bishop, what were they but persons excommunicated by the Pope, traitors to their king, disturbers of the realm, sacrilegious, brigands, enemies of the commonwealth, sources of mutiny?" &c. &c.—Guevara, Lib. I. pp. 170, 171.

[1] [The first row of the common hornbook, which always began with a cross.]

after the barber brought him out some meat; and returning to the curate, they consulted how to compass their design. At last the latter luckily bethought himself of an expedient that seemed most likely to take, as exactly fitting Don Quixote's humour; which was that he should disguise himself in the habit of a damsel-errant, and the barber should alter his dress as well as he could, so as to pass for a squire, or gentleman-usher. "In that equipage," added he, we will go to Don Quixote, and feigning myself to be a distressed damsel, I will beg a boon of him, which he, as a valorous knight-errant, will not fail to promise me. By this means I will engage him to go with me to redress a very great injury done me by a false and discourteous knight, beseeching him not to desire to see my face, nor ask me any thing about my circumstances, till he has revenged me of that wicked knight. This bait will take, I dare engage, and by this stratagem we will decoy him back to his own house, where we will try to cure him of his romantic frenzy."

CHAPTER XXVII.

How the Curate and Barber put their design in execution; with other things worthy to be recorded in this important History.

THE curate's project was so well liked by the barber, that they instantly put it into practice. First, they borrowed a complete woman's apparel of the hostess, leaving her in pawn a new cassock of the curate's; and the barber made himself a long beard with a grizzled ox's tail, in which the inn-keeper used to hang his combs. The hostess being desirous to know what they intended to do with those things, the curate gave her a short account of Don Quixote's distraction, and their design. Whereupon the inn-keeper and his wife presently guessed this was their romantic knight, that made the precious balsam; and accordingly they told them the whole story of Don Quixote's lodging there, and of Sancho's being tossed in a blanket. Which done, the hostess readily fitted out the curate at such a rate, that it would have pleased any one to have seen him; for she dressed him up in a cloth gown

trimmed with borders of black velvet, the breadth of a span, all pinked and jagged; and a green velvet bodice, faced with a border of white satin; which accoutrements probably had been in fashion in old King Bamba's[1] days. The curate would not let her encumber his head with a

[1] [An ancient Gothic king of Spain.] When King Reccesuinth died in the year 692, his children were young, and the nobles immediately exercised their ancient right of electing to the vacant throne a person able to wield with vigour the iron sceptre of the Goths. Wamba [Bamba], on whom their choice had fallen, after much persuasion, acceded to their proposal, and having been crowned at Toledo, for several years reigned with great prosperity. One Paulus, however, a near relation of the late king, at length succeeded in stirring up a formidable body of the nobles to rebellion, and these were not overthrown by Wamba, until after a long campaign had scattered confusion and destruction over the finest provinces of Spain. Paulus and his adherents, after being defeated in a conclusive battle, retreated to Toledo, of which royal city they had possessed themselves at the commencement of their insurrection. Here they were compelled to surrender themselves into the hands of Wamba, who immediately summoned a council of all his nobles to try the traitors. Such of them as were of noble blood were shaved (the mark of degradation). Paulus, and one or two of his chief supporters, were beheaded in presence of the army; and all the rest were dismissed by the clemency of the king. The ill success of this insurrection did not however secure the tranquillity of Wamba's crown. Count Remigius, another member of the same royal house, made, after some space, another attempt of the same kind; and, according to Mariana, he first had recourse to soliciting Moorish aid, and thereby paved the way for the ill-omened invitation of Count Julian. Remigius and his allies were defeated, but not, it would seem, so perfectly as Paulus had been, for he was not only suffered to retain his possessions, but to frequent the court of Wamba; whom, despairing of open warfare, he, after a few months had elapsed, attempted to carry off by poison. Wamba sickened, and supposing himself to be on the point of death, determined to prevent needless effusion of blood by abdicating the throne, and formally resigning it to Remigius. The nobles were accordingly assembled around his couch, where Remigius was invested with the royal insignia, and immediately after Wamba assumed the cowl—an expedient to which many of the warriors and rude livers of those days had recourse when they conceived themselves to be in extremity. Next day his illness greatly subsided, but he disdained to attempt undoing what he had done, or despaired of being able to make such an attempt with success, and retired to a monastery among the hills, where he led a life of piety and mortification for seven years. He died in the odour of sanctity, and his bones were long afterwards removed to the cathedral of Toledo by the care of Alphonso, surnamed the Wise.—See Mariana, L. VI. c. 12, 13, 14, 15.

woman's head-gear, but only clapped upon his crown a white quilted cap which he used to wear at night, and bound his forehead with one of his garters, that was of black taffety, making himself a kind of vizard mask to cover his beard and face with the other: then he half-buried his head under his hat, pulling it down to squeeze in his ears: and as the broad brim flapped down over his eyes, it seemed a kind of sunshade. This done, he wrapped his cloak about him, and seated himself on his mule, sideways like a woman: then the barber clapped on his ox-tail beard, half-red and half-grizzled, which hung from his chin down to his waist; and, having mounted his mule, they took leave of their host and hostess, as also of the good-natured Maritornes, who vowed, though she was a sinner, to tumble her beads, and say a rosary to the good success of so arduous, and truly Christian an undertaking.

But scarce were they got out of the inn, when the curate began to be troubled with a scruple of conscience about his putting on woman's apparel, being apprehensive of the indecency of the disguise in a priest, though the goodness of his intention might well warrant a dispensation from the strictness of decorum: therefore he desired the barber to change dresses, for that in his habit of a squire, he should less profane his own dignity and character, to which he ought to have a greater regard than to Don Quixote; withal assuring the barber, that unless he consented to this exchange, he was absolutely resolved to go no farther, though it were to save Don Quixote's soul from hell. Sancho came up with them just upon their demur, and could not forbear laughing at the sight of these strange masqueraders. In short, the barber consented to be the damsel, and to let the curate be the squire. Now while they were thus changing sexes, the curate offered to tutor him how to behave himself in that female attire, so as to be able to wheedle Don Quixote out of his penance; but the barber desired him not to trouble himself about that matter, assuring him, that he was well enough versed in female affairs to be able to act a damsel without any directions; however, he said he would not now stand fiddling and

managing his pins, to prick himself up, seeing it would be time enough to do that, when they came near Don Quixote's hermitage; and, therefore, having folded up his clothes, and the curate his beard, they spurred on, while their guide Sancho entertained them with a relation of the mad tattered gentleman whom they had met in the mountain,—however, without mentioning a word of the portmanteau or the gold; for, as much a fool as he was, he loved money, and knew how to keep it when he had it, and was wise enough to keep his own counsel.

They got the next day to the place where Sancho had strewed the boughs to direct them to Don Quixote; and therefore he advised them to put on their disguises, if it were, as they told him, that their design was only to make his master leave that wretched kind of life, in order to become an emperor. Thereupon they charged him on his life not to take the least notice who they were. As for Dulcinea's letter, if Don Quixote asked him about it, they ordered him to say he had delivered it; but that by reason she could neither write nor read, she had sent him her answer by word of mouth; which was, that, on pain of her indignation, he should immediately put an end to his severe penance, and repair to her presence. This, they told Sancho, together with what they themselves designed to say, was the only way to oblige his master to leave the desert, that he might prosecute his design of making himself an emperor; assuring him they would take care he should not entertain the least thought of an archbishopric.

Sancho listened with great attention to all these instructions, and treasured them up in his mind, giving the curate and the barber a world of thanks for their good intention of advising his master to become an emperor, and not an archbishop; for, as he said, he imagined in his simple judgment, that an emperor-errant was ten times better than an archbishop-errant, and could reward his squire a great deal better.

He likewise added, that he thought it would be proper for him to go to his master somewhat before them, and give him an account of his lady's kind answer; for, perhaps, that alone would be sufficient to fetch him out of

that place, without putting them to any further trouble. They liked this proposal very well, and therefore agreed to let him go, and wait there till he came back to give them an account of his success. With that Sancho rode away, and struck into the clefts of the rock, in order to find out his master, leaving the curate and the barber by the side of a brook, where the neighbouring hills, and some trees that grew along its banks, combined to make a cool and pleasant shade. There they sheltered themselves from the scorching beams of the sun, that commonly shines with intolerable heat in those parts at that time, being about the middle of August, and hardly three o'clock in the afternoon. While they quietly refreshed themselves in that delightful place, where they agreed to stay till Sancho's return, they heard a voice, which, though unattended by any instrument, ravished their ears with its melodious sound: and what increased their surprise and their admiration was to hear such artful notes, and such delicate music, in so unfrequented and wild a place, where scarce any rustics ever straggled, much less skilful songsters, as the person whom they heard unquestionably was; for though the poets are pleased to fill the fields and woods with swains and shepherdesses, that sing with all the sweetness and delicacy imaginable, yet it is well enough known, that those gentlemen deal more in fiction than in truth, and love to embellish the descriptions they make with things that have no existence but in their own brain. Nor could our two listening travellers think it the voice of a peasant, when they began to distinguish the words of the song, for they seemed to relish more of a courtly style than a rural composition. These were the verses.

What makes me languish and complain?
O 'tis disdain!
What yet more fiercely tortures me?
'Tis jealousy.
How have I my patience lost?
By absence crost.
Then hopes farewell, there's no relief;
I sink beneath oppressing grief;
Nor can a wretch, without despair,
Scorn, jealousy, and absence bear.

What in my breast this anguish drove?
Intruding love.
Who could such mighty ills create?
Blind fortune's hate.
What cruel powers my fate approve?
The powers above.
Then let me bear, and cease to moan;
'Tis glorious thus to be undone:
When these invade, who dares oppose?
Heaven, Love, and Fortune are my foes.

Where shall I find a speedy cure?
Death is sure.
No milder means to set me free?
Inconstancy.
Can nothing else my pains assuage?
Distracting rage.
What, die or change? Lucinda lose;
O rather let me madness choose!
But judge, ye gods, what we endure,
When death or madness is a cure!

The time, the hour, the solitariness of the place, the voice and agreeable manner with which the unseen musician sang, so filled the hearers' minds with wonder and delight, that they were all attention; and when the voice was silent, they continued so too a pretty while, watching with listening ears to catch the expected sounds, expressing their satisfaction best by that dumb applause. At last, concluding the person would sing no more, they resolved to find out the charming songster: but as they were going so to do, they heard the wished-for voice begin another air, which fixed them where they stood till it had sung the following sonnet:

SONNET.

O sacred Friendship, heaven's delight,
Which, tired with man's unequal mind,
Took to thy native skies thy flight,
While scarce thy shadow's left behind!

From thee, diffusive good below,
Peace and her train of joys we trace;
But falsehood with dissembled show
Too oft usurps thy sacred face.

Bless'd genius, then resume thy seat!
Destroy imposture and deceit,
Which in thy dress confound the ball!
Harmonious peace and truth renew,
Show the false friendship from the true,
Or Nature must to Chaos fall.

This sonnet concluded with a deep sigh, and such doleful throbs, that the curate and the barber, now out of pity as well as curiosity before, resolved instantly to find out who this mournful songster was. They had not gone far, when by the side of a rock, they discovered a man, whose shape and aspect answered exactly to the description Sancho had given them of Cardenio. They observed he stopped short as soon as he spied them, yet without any signs of fear; only he hung down his head, like one abandoned to sorrow, never so much as lifting up his eyes to mind what they did. The curate, who was a good and a well-spoken man, presently guessing him to be the same of whom Sancho had given them an account, went towards him, and, addressing himself to him with great civility and discretion, earnestly entreated him to forsake this desert, and a course of life so wretched and forlorn, which endangered his title to a better, and from a wilful misery might make him fall into greater and everlasting woes. Cardenio was then free from the distraction that so often disturbed his senses; yet seeing two persons in a garb wholly different from that of those few rustics who frequented those deserts, and hearing them talk as if they were no strangers to his concerns, he was somewhat surprised at first; however, having looked upon them earnestly for some time, "Gentlemen," said he, "whoever ye be, I find Heaven, pitying my misfortunes, has brought you to these solitary regions, to retrieve me from this frightful retirement, and recover me to the society of men: but because you do not know how unhappy a fate attends me, and that I never am free from one affliction but to fall into a greater, you perhaps take me for a man naturally endowed with a very small stock of sense, and, what is worse, for one of those wretches who are altogether deprived of reason. And indeed I cannot blame any one that entertains such thoughts of me; for even I myself am convinced, that the

bare remembrance of my disasters often distracts me to that degree, that, losing all sense of reason and knowledge, I unman myself for the time, and launch into those extravagancies which nothing but the height of frenzy and madness would commit: and I am the more sensible of my being troubled with this distemper, when people tell me what I have done during the violence of that terrible accident, and give me too certain proofs of it. And after all, I can allege no other excuse but the cause of my misfortune, which occasioned that frantic rage, and therefore tell the story of my hard fate to as many as have the patience to hear it; for men of sense, perceiving the cause, will not wonder at the effects; and though they can give me no relief, yet at least they will cease to condemn me; for a bare relation of my wrongs must needs make them lose their resentment at the effects of my disorder in compassion for my miserable fate. Therefore, gentlemen, if you came here with that design, I beg that before you give yourselves the trouble of reproving or advising me, you will be pleased to attend to the relation of my calamities; for perhaps when you have heard it, you will think them past redress, and so will save yourselves the labour you would take." The curate and the barber, who desired nothing more than to hear the story from his own mouth, were extremely glad of his proffer; and, having assured him they had no design to aggravate his miseries with pretending to remedy them, nor would they cross his inclinations in the least, they entreated him to begin his relation.

The unfortunate Cardenio then began his story, and went on with the first part of it, almost in the same words, as far as when he related it to Don Quixote and the goat-herd, when the knight, out of superstitious niceness to observe the decorum of chivalry, gave an interruption to the relation, by quarrelling about Master Elizabad, as we have already said. Then he went on with that passage concerning the letter sent him by Lucinda, which Don Ferdinand had unluckily found between the leaves of the book of Amadis de Gaul, when Lucinda sent it back to Cardenio; which Cardenio told them that he recollected well, and that it was as follows:

LUCINDA TO CARDENIO.

"I discover in you every day so much merit that I am obliged, or rather forced, to esteem you more and more. If you think this acknowledgment to your advantage, make that use of it which is most consistent with your honour and mine. I have a father that knows you, and is too kind a parent ever to obstruct my designs, when he shall be satisfied with their being just and honourable: so that it is now your part to show you love me, as you pretend, and I believe."

"This letter," continued Cardenio, "made me resolve once more to demand Lucinda of her father in marriage, and was the same that increased Don Ferdinand's esteem for her, by that discovery of her sense and discretion, which so inflamed his soul, that from that moment he secretly resolved to destroy my hopes e'er I could be so happy as to crown them with success. I told that perfidious friend what Lucinda's father had advised me to do, when I had rashly asked her for my wife before, and that I durst not now impart this to my father, lest he should not readily consent I should marry yet. Not but that he knew that her quality, beauty, and virtue were sufficient to make her an ornament to the noblest house in Spain, but because I was apprehensive he would not let me marry till he saw what the duke would do for me. Don Ferdinand, with a pretended officiousness, proffered me to speak to my father, and persuade him to treat with Lucinda's. Ungrateful man! deceitful friend! ambitious Marius! cruel Catiline! wicked Sulla! perfidious Galalon! faithless Vellido! malicious Julian![1] treacherous, covetous

[1] Of Galalon, the traitor of Roncesvalles, I have already spoken (see p. 24 and Additional Note III.). The name of Vellido had passed into a bye-word among the Spaniards on account of a better authenticated atrocity—his murder of Don Sancho, the King of Castile. According to Mariana, King Sancho's father had divided the royal inheritance, but the eldest of the princes soon overcame in war his two brothers, and deprived them of the territories which had been bequeathed to them. His sister Uracca had obtained possession of Zamora and the adjoining country, and it was she who next engaged his attention. He laid siege to her city (in 1068), and must have succeeded in taking it had not one Vellido Astolfo, a partizan of Uracca, found means to slay him on the eve of his expected triumph. This man left the town, entered the

Judas! oh, cruel traitor, revengeful and perfidious! what wrongs had that fond confiding wretch done thee, who thus to thee unbosomed all his cares, all the delights, and secrets of his soul? What injury did I ever utter, or advice did I ever give, which were not all directed to advance thy honour and profit? But oh! I rave, unhappy wretch! I should rather accuse the cruelty of my stars, whose fatal influence pours mischiefs on me, which no earthly force can resist, or human art prevent. Who would have thought that Don Ferdinand, whose quality and merit entitled him to the lawful possession of beauties of the highest rank, and whom I had engaged by a thousand endearing marks of friendship and services, should forfeit thus his honour and his truth, and lay such a treacherous design to deprive me of all the happiness of my life? But I must leave expostulating, to end my story. The traitor Ferdinand, thinking his project impracticable while I stayed near Lucinda, bargained for six fine horses the same day he promised to speak to my father, and presently desired me to ride away to his brother for money to pay for them. Alas! I was so far from suspecting his treachery, that I was glad of doing him a service. Accordingly I went that very evening to take my leave of Lucinda, and to tell her what Don Ferdinand had promised to do. She bade me return with all the haste of an expecting lover, not doubting but our lawful wishes might be crowned, as soon as my father had spoke for me to be her's. When she had said this, I marked her trickling tears, and a sudden grief so

---

king's camp, told a long story of the ill-treatment he had received from Uracca, and offered to give the king information of a secret passage, by which he might easily enter Zamora during the night. As Mariana tells the story, he rode out alone with the king, and despatched him with his javelin, in a solitary part of the forest which lay contiguous to the city. But a very ancient ballad, a translation of which will be found in the Additional Notes (Note XVI.), represents the murder as having taken place within the camp of Sancho.

The story of Count Julian has been so effectually immortalised in English by Mr. Southey's Roderick, that I need not trouble the reader with any notice of it in this place. I have translated, however, what appears to be the most ancient of all the Spanish ballads upon the Moorish Conquest of Spain.—See Additional Note XVI.

obstructed her speech, that though she seemed to strive to tell me something more, she could not give it utterance. This unusual scene of sorrow strangely amazed and distressed me; yet because I would not murder hope, I chose to attribute this to the tenderness of her affection, and unwillingness to part with me. In short, away I went, buried in deep melancholy, and full of fears and imaginations, for which I could give no manner of reason. I delivered Don Ferdinand's letter to his brother, who received me with all the kindness imaginable, but did not despatch me as I expected. For to my sorrow, he enjoined me to tarry a whole week, and to take care the duke might not see me, his brother having sent for money unknown to his father: but this was only a device of false Ferdinand's; for his brother did not want money, and might have despatched me immediately, had he not been privately desired to delay my return.

"This was so displeasing an injunction, that I was ready to come away without the money, not being able to live so long absent from my Lucinda, principally considering in what condition I had left her. Yet at last I forced myself to stay, and my respect for my friend prevailed over my impatience: but e'er four tedious days were expired, a messenger brought me a letter, which I presently knew to be Lucinda's hand. I opened it with trembling hands and an aching heart, justly imagining it was no ordinary concern that could urge her to send thither to me: and before I read it, I asked the messenger who had given it him? he answered me, 'That going by accidentally in the street about noon in our town a very handsome lady, all in tears, had called him to her window, and with great precipitation, "Friend," said she, "if you be a Christian, as you seem to be, for Heaven's sake take this letter, and deliver it with all speed into the person's own hand to whom it is directed: I assure you in this, you will do a very good action; and that you may not want means to do it, take what is wrapped up in this;" and saying so, she threw a handkerchief, wherein I found a hundred reals, this gold ring which you see, and the letter which I now brought you: which done, I having made her signs to let her know I would do as she desired,

without so much as staying for an answer, she went from the window. This reward, but much more that beautiful lady's tears, and earnest prayers, made me post away to you that very minute: and so in sixteen hours I have travelled eighteen long leagues.'—While the messenger spoke, I was seized with sad apprehensions of some fatal news; and such a trembling shook my limbs, that I could scarce support myself. At length, however, I ventured to read the letter, which contained these words:

"'Don Ferdinand, according to his promise, has desired your father to speak to mine; but he has done that for himself which you had engaged him to do for you: for he has demanded me for his wife; and my father, allured by the advantages which he expects from such an alliance, has so far consented, that two days hence the marriage is to be performed, and with such privacy, that only Heaven and some of the family are to be witnesses. Judge of the affliction of my soul by that concern, which, I guess, fills your own; and therefore haste to me, my dear Cardenio. The issue of this business will show you how much I love you: and grant, propitious Heaven, this may reach your hand e'er mine is in danger of being joined with his who keeps his promises so ill.'

"I had no sooner read the letter," added Cardenio, "but away I flew, without waiting for my despatch; for then I too plainly discovered Don Ferdinand's treachery, and that he had only sent me to his brother to take advantage of my absence. Revenge, love, and impatience gave me wings, so that I got home privately the next day just when it grew duskish, in good time to speak with Lucinda; and leaving my mule at the honest man's house who brought me the letter, I went to wait upon my mistress, whom I luckily found at the window,[1] the only witness of our loves. She presently knew me, and I her, but she did not welcome me as I expected, nor did I find her in such a dress as I thought suitable to our circumstances. But what man has assurance enough to but pretend to know

[1] [*A la reja*, at the iron grating which in Spain protects the lower windows of a large house.]

thoroughly the riddle of a woman's mind, and who could ever hope to fix her mutable nature?—'Cardenio,' said Lucinda to me, 'my wedding-clothes are on, and the perfidious Ferdinand, with my covetous father, and the rest, stay for me in the hall, to perform the marriage-rites; but they shall sooner be witnesses of my death than of my nuptials. Be not troubled, my dear Cardenio; but rather strive to be present at that sacrifice. I promise thee, if entreaties and words cannot prevent it, I have a dagger that shall do me justice; and my death, at least, shall give thee undeniable assurances of my love and fidelity.'—'Madam,' cried I to her with precipitation, and so disordered, that I did not know what I said: 'let your actions verify your words; let us leave nothing unattempted which may serve our common interest; and, I assure you, if my sword does not defend them well, I will turn it upon my own breast, rather than outlive my disappointment.' I cannot tell whether Lucinda heard me, for she was called away in great haste, the bridegroom impatiently expecting her. My spirit forsook me when she left me, and my sorrows and confusion cannot be expressed. Methought I saw the sun set for ever; and my eyes and senses partaking of my distraction, I could not so much as spy the door to go into the house, and seemed rooted to the place where I stood. But at last, the consideration of my love having roused me out of this stupefying astonishment, I got into the house without being discovered, everything being there in a hurry; and going into the hall, I hid myself behind the hangings, where two pieces of tapestry met, and gave me liberty to see, without being seen. Who can describe the various thoughts, the doubts, the fears, the anguish that perplexed and tossed my soul while I stood waiting there! Don Ferdinand entered the hall, not like a bridegroom, but in his usual habit, with only a cousin-german of Lucinda's, the rest were the people of the house: some time after came Lucinda herself, with her mother, and two waiting-women. I perceived she was as richly dressed as was consistent with her quality and the solemnity of the ceremony; but the distraction that possessed me lent me no time to note particularly the apparel she had on. I only marked the

colours, that were carnation and white, and the splendour of the jewels that enriched her dress in many places; but nothing equalled the lustre of her beauty,[1] that adorned her person much more than all those ornaments. Oh memory! thou fatal enemy of my ease, why dost thou now so faithfully represent to the eyes of my mind Lucinda's incomparable charms! why dost thou not rather show me what she did then, that, moved by so provoking a wrong, I may endeavour to revenge it, or at least to die! Forgive me these tedious digressions, gentlemen; alas! my woes are not such as can or ought to be related with brevity, for to me, every circumstance seems worthy to be enlarged upon."

The curate assured Cardenio, that they attended every word with a mournful pleasure, that made them greedy of hearing the least passage. With that Cardenio went on. "All parties being met," said he, "the priest entered, and, taking the young couple by the hands, he asked Lucinda whether she were willing to take Don Ferdinand for her wedded husband? With that, I thrust out my head from between the two pieces of tapestry, listening with anxious heart to hear her answer, upon which depended my life and happiness. Dull, heartless wretch that I was! Why did I not then show myself! why did I not call to her aloud, 'Consider what thou dost, Lucinda; thou art mine, and canst not be another man's: nor canst thou now speak the fatal yes, without injuring Heaven, thyself, and me, and

[1] The translation is imperfect here, for the original has "la belleza singular de sus hermosos y rubios cabellos," literally, as old Shelton renders it, "the singular beauty of her fair and golden tresses." It is worthy of remark, that among almost all dark nations, the poetical style of loveliness is *blonde*. It was so among the ancient Romans, and it is still so among the Spaniards; indeed, I have often heard British officers, who served during the Peninsular war, expatiate upon the extraordinary admiration which the Spanish ladies bestowed upon such of their comrades as had that sort of fierce red hair, which is commonly reckoned the reverse of lovely in this country. In Cervantes' time the ladies, and even the gentlemen of the Spanish court, were accustomed to medicate their hair, in order to give it the appearance of this "rubia belleza."

[In Venice, too, in the sixteenth century, the ladies were accustomed to bleach their hair by sitting in the sun the face alone being protected by the *solana*, a crownless hat, which left the hair and top of the head exposed.]

murdering thy Cardenio! And thou, perfidious Ferdinand, who darest to violate all rights, both human and divine, to rob me of my treasure! canst thou hope to deprive me of the comfort of my life with impunity? Or thinkest thou that any consideration can stifle my resentment when my honour and my love lie at stake?' Fool that I am! now that it is too late, and danger is far distant, I say what I should have done, and not what I did then. After I have suffered the treasure of my soul to be stolen, I exclaim against the thief whom I might have punished for the base attempt, had I had but so much resolution to revenge, as I have now to complain. Then let me rather accuse my faint heart that durst not do me right, and let me die here like a wretch, void both of sense and honour, the outcast of society and nature. The priest stood waiting for Lucinda's answer a good while before she gave it; and all that time I expected she would have pulled out her dagger, or unloosed her tongue to plead her former engagement to me. But alas! to my eternal disappointment, I heard her at last, with a feeble voice, pronounce the fatal *yes;* and then Don Ferdinand saying the same, and giving her the ring, the sacred knot was tied, which death alone can dissolve. Then did the faithless bridegroom advance to embrace his bride; but she, laying her hand upon her heart, in that very moment swooned away in her mother's arms. Oh! what confusion seized me, what pangs, what torments racked me, seeing the falsehood of Lucinda's promises, all my hopes shipwrecked, and the only thing that made me wish to live, for ever ravished from me! Confounded, and despairing, I looked upon myself as abandoned by heaven to the cruelty of my destiny; and the violence of my griefs stifling my sighs, and denying a passage to my tears, I felt myself transfixed with killing anguish, and burning with jealous rage and vengeance. In the mean time the whole company was troubled at Lucinda's swooning; and as her mother unclasped her gown before, to give her air, a folded paper was found in her bosom, which Don Ferdinand immediately snatched; then, stepping a little aside, he opened it and read it by the light of one of the tapers; and as soon as he had done, he as it were let himself fall upon a chair,

and there he sat with his hand upon the side of his face, with all the signs of melancholy and discontent, as unmindful of his bride as if he had been insensible of her condition. For my own part, seeing all the house thus in an uproar, I resolved to leave the hated place, without caring whether I were seen or not, and in case I were seen, I resolved to act such a desperate part in punishing the traitor Ferdinand, that the world should at once be informed of his perfidiousness, and the severity of my just resentment; but my destiny, that preserved me for greater woes (if greater can be) allowed me then the use of the small remainder of my senses, which afterwards quite forsook me, so that I left the house, without revenging myself on my enemies, whom I could easily have sacrificed to my rage in this unexpected disorder; and I chose to inflict upon myself the punishment which their infidelity deserved. I went to the messenger's house where I had left my mule, and without so much as bidding him adieu, I mounted, and left the town like another Lot, without turning to give it a parting look; and as I rode along the fields, darkness and silence round me, I vented my passion in execrations against the treacherous Ferdinand, and in as loud complaints of Lucinda's breach of vows and ingratitude. I called her cruel, ungrateful, false, but above all, covetous and sordid, since the wealth of my enemy was what had induced her to forego her vows to me. But then, again, said I to myself, it is no strange thing for a young lady, that has been so strictly educated, to yield herself up to the guidance of her father and mother, who had provided her a husband of that quality and fortune. But yet with truth and justice she might have pleaded that she was mine before. In fine, I concluded that ambition had got the better of her love, and made her forget her promises to Cardenio. Thus abandoning myself to these tempestuous thoughts, I rode on all that night, and about break of day I struck into one of the passes that lead into these mountains, where I wandered for three days together without keeping any road, till at last, coming to a certain valley that lies somewhere hereabouts, I met some shepherds, of whom I inquired the way to the most craggy and inaccessible part of these rocks. They

directed me, and I made all the haste I could to get thither, resolved to linger out my hated life far from the converse of false, ungrateful mankind. When I came among these deserts, my mule, through weariness and hunger, or rather to get rid of so useless a load as I was, fell down dead, and I myself was so weak, so tired and dejected, being almost famished, and withal destitute and careless of relief, that I soon laid myself down, or rather fainted on the ground, where I lay a considerable while, I do not know how long, extended like a corpse. When I came to myself again, I got up, and could not perceive I had any appetite to eat: I found some goat-herds by me, who, I suppose, had given me some sustenance, though I was not sensible of their relief; for they told me in what a wretched condition they found me, staring, and talking so strangely, that they judged I had quite lost my senses. I have indeed since that had but too much cause to think that my reason sometimes leaves me, and that I commit those extravagancies which are only the effects of senseless rage and frenzy; tearing my clothes, howling through these deserts, filling the air with curses and lamentations, and idly repeating a thousand times Lucinda's name; all my wishes at that time being to breathe out my soul with the dear word upon my lips; and when I come to myself, I am commonly so weak and so weary, that I am scarce able to stir. As for my place of abode, it is usually some hollow cork-tree, into which I creep at night; and there some few goat-herds, whose cattle browse on the neighbouring mountains, out of pity and Christian charity, sometimes leave some victuals for the support of my miserable life; for, even when my reason is absent, nature performs its animal functions, and instinct guides me to satisfy it. Sometimes these good people meet me in my lucid intervals, and chide me for taking that from them by force and surprise, which they are always so ready to give me willingly; for which violence I can make no other excuse but the extremity of my distraction. Thus must I drag on a miserable being, until Heaven, pitying my afflictions, will either put a period to my life, or blot out of my memory perjured Lucinda's beauty and ingratitude, and Ferdinand's per-

fidiousness. Could I but be so happy e'er I die, I might then hope to be able, in time, to compose my frantic thoughts; but if I must despair of such a favour, I have no other way but to recommend my soul to Heaven's mercy; for I am not able to extricate my body or my mind out of that misery into which I have unhappily plunged myself.

"Thus, gentlemen, I have given you a faithful account of my misfortunes. Judge now whether it was possible I should relate them with less concern. And pray do not lose time to prescribe remedies to a patient who will make use of none. I will, and can, have no health without Lucinda; since she forsakes me, I must die. She has convinced me, by her infidelity, that she desires my ruin; and by my unparallelled sufferings to the last, I will strive to convince her that I deserved a better fate. Let me then suffer on, and may I be the only unhappy creature whom despair could not relieve, while the impossibility of receiving comfort brings cure to so many other wretches."[1]

Here Cardenio made an end of his mournful story; and just as the curate was preparing to give him his best advice and consolation, he was prevented by a voice that saluted his ears, and in mournful accents pronounced what will be rehearsed in the fourth book of this narration; for at this point the third is brought to an end by that learned and discreet historian Cid Hamet Ben Engeli.

[1] [Pellicer compares Virgil's line, "Una salus victis nullam sperare salutem.]

FOURTH BOOK.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

The pleasant new Adventure the Curate and Barber met with in the Sierra Morena, or Black Mountain.

MOST fortunate and happy was the age that ushered into the world that most daring knight Don Quixote de la Mancha! for from his generous resolution to revive and restore the ancient order of knight-errantry, that was not only wholly neglected, but almost lost and abolished, our age, barren in itself of pleasant recreations, derives the pleasure it reaps from his true history, and the various tales and episodes thereof, in some respects no less pleasing, artful, and authentic, than the history itself. We told you that as the curate was preparing to give Cardenio some seasonable consolation, he was prevented by a voice, whose doleful complaints reached his ears. "O heavens," cried the unseen mourner, "is it possible I have at last found out a place that will afford a private grave to this miserable body, whose load I so repine to bear? Yes, if the silence and solitude of these deserts do not deceive me, here I may die concealed from human eyes. Ah me! ah, wretched creature! to what extremity has affliction driven me, reduced to think these hideous woods and rocks a kind retreat! it is true, indeed, I may here freely complain to Heaven, and beg for that relief which I might ask in vain of false mankind: for it is vain, I find, to seek below either counsel, ease, or remedy." The curate and his company, who heard all this distinctly, justly conjectured that they were very near the person who thus expressed his grief, and therefore rose to find him out. They had not gone twenty paces, before they

spied a youth in a country habit, sitting at the foot of a rock behind an ash-tree; but they could not well see his face, being bowed almost upon his knees, as he sat washing his feet in a rivulet that glided by. They approached him so softly that he did not perceive them: and, as he was gently paddling in the clear water, they had time to discern that his feet were like nothing so much as two pieces of white crystal disposed amongst the other stones of the rivulet. Our observers, amazed at their beauty and whiteness, rightly imagined that such tender feet were not used to trudge in rugged ways, or measure the steps of oxen at the plough, the common employments of people in such apparel; and therefore the curate, who went before the rest, whose curiosity was heightened by this sight, beckoned to them to step aside, and hide themselves behind some of the little rocks that were by; which they did, and from thence making a stricter observation, they found he had on a grey double-skirted jerkin, girt tight about his body with a linen towel. He wore also a pair of breeches, and gamashes of grey cloth, and a grey huntsman's cap on his head. His gamashes were now pulled up to the middle of his leg, which really seemed to be of snowy alabaster. Having made an end of washing his beauteous feet, he immediately wiped them with a handkerchief, which he pulled out from under his cap; and with that, looking up, he discovered so charming a face, so accomplished a beauty, that Cardenio could not forbear saying to the curate, that since this was not Lucinda, it was certainly no human form, but an angel. And then the youth taking off his cap, and shaking his head, an incredible quantity of lovely hair flowed down upon his shoulders, and not only covered them, but almost all his body; by which they were now convinced, that what they at first took to be a country lad, was a young woman, and one of the most beautiful creatures in the world. Cardenio was not less surprised than the other two, and once more declared, that no face could vie with her's but Lucinda's. To part her dishevelled tresses, she only used her slender fingers, and at the same time discovered so fine a pair of arms, and hands so white and lovely, that our three admiring gazers

grew more impatient to know who she was, and moved forward to accost her. At the noise they made, the pretty creature started; and peeping through her hair, which she hastily removed from before her eyes with both her hands, she no sooner saw three men coming towards her but in a mighty fright she snatched up a little bundle that lay by her, and fled as fast as she could, without so much as staying to put on her shoes, or do up her hair. But alas! scarce had she gone six steps, when her tender feet not being able to endure the rough encounter of the stones, the poor affrighted fair fell on the hard ground; whilst those from whom she fled, hastened to help her. "Stay, madam," cried the curate, "whoever you be you have no reason to fly; we have no other design but to do you service." With that, approaching her, he took her by the hand, and perceiving she was so disordered with fear and confusion, that she could not answer a word, he strove to compose her mind with kind expressions. "Be not afraid, madam," continued he; "though your hair has betrayed what your disguise concealed from us, we are but the more disposed to assist you, and do you all manner of service. Then pray tell us how we may best do it. I imagine it was no slight occasion that made you obscure your singular beauty under so unworthy a disguise, and venture into this desert, where it was the greatest chance in the world that ever you met with us. However, we hope it is not impossible to find a remedy for your misfortunes; since there are none which reason and time will not at last surmount: and therefore, madam, if you have not absolutely renounced all human comfort, I beseech you tell us the cause of your affliction, and assure yourself we do not ask this out of mere curiosity, but from a real desire to serve you, and either to condole with or assuage your grief."

While the curate endeavoured thus to remove the trembling fair one's apprehension, she stood amazed, staring, without speaking a word, sometimes upon one, sometimes upon another, like one scarce well awake, or like an ignorant clown who happens to see some strange sight. But at last the curate, having given her time to recollect herself, and persisting in his earnest and civil

entreaties, she fetched a deep sigh, and then unclosing her lips, broke silence in this manner. "Since this desert has not been able to conceal me, and my hair has betrayed me, it would be needless now for me to dissemble with you; and since you desire to hear the story of my misfortunes, I cannot in civility deny you, after all the obliging offers you have been pleased to make me: but yet, gentlemen, I am much afraid, that what I have to say will but make you sad, and afford you little satisfaction; for you will find my disasters are not to be remedied. There is one thing that troubles me yet more; it shocks my nature to think I must be forced to reveal to you some secrets which I had a design to have buried in my grave: yet considering the garb and the place you have found me in, I fancy it will be better for me to tell you all, than to give occasion to doubt of my past conduct and my present designs, by an affected reserve." The disguised lady having made this answer, with a modest blush and extraordinary discretion, the curate and his company, who now admired her the more for her sense, renewed their kind offers and pressing solicitations; and then they modestly let her retire a moment to some distance to put herself in decent order. Which done, she returned, and being all seated on the grass, after she had used no small violence to smother her tears, she thus began her story.

"I was born in a certain town of Andalusia, from which a duke takes his title, that makes him a grandee of Spain.[1] This duke has two sons, the eldest heir to his

[1] The high nobility of Spain is divided into two classes. The first consists of those who are styled grandees—the second, of those who have the title of count or marquess in Castile or Arragon, without being grandees. It is supposed that the grandees are, properly, the descendant of those *Ricos-Hombres*, who received in the old time from the king, what was called *Merced de pendon y caldera*; i.e. *the right of banner and cauldron*, or of commanding and entertaining their own vassalage. These persons had the right of being covered in the royal presence, and sat nearest the throne in the Cortes. By degrees, all those whose lands had been erected into duchies, marquisates, or counties, assumed the title of grandee, which the cadets of their families also bore, although without any territorial title. But the German and Flemish courtiers, who came into Spain with Charles V., prevailed on him to restrict more accurately the quality of grandee; and he accordingly issued an edict at the commencement of his reign,

estate, and, as it may be presumed, of his virtues; the youngest heir to nothing I know of, but the treachery of Vellido, and the deceitfulness of Galalon.[1] My father, who is one of his vassals, is but of low degree; but so very rich, that had fortune equalled his birth to his estate he could have wanted nothing more, and I, perhaps, had never been so miserable; for I verily believe, my not being of noble blood is the chief occasion of my ruin. True it is my parents are not so meanly born, as to have any cause to be ashamed of their original, nor so high as to alter the opinion I have that my misfortune proceeds from their lowness. It is true, they have been farmers from father to son, yet without any mixture or stain of infamous or scandalous blood. They are old rusty[2] Christians (as we call our true primitive Spaniards), and the antiquity of their family, together with their large possessions, and the style they live in, raises them much above their profession, and has little by little almost universally gained them the name of gentlemen, setting

---

by which all were ordered to lay down that title, with the exception of sixteen noblemen, of whom twelve were dukes, two marquesses, and two counts, in Castile and Arragon. In the families of most of these nobles, the title of grandee still remains, being capable of transmission in the female line. But in the case of those whom Charles himself, and his successors, have since elevated to the rank of grandee, the title is, almost without exception, limited to the male heirs. The old grandees, or those whose ancestors were recognised as such by Charles V., have several distinctions over and above those which they share with the others; for example, the king addresses them as his *Primos* (cousins-germain), while the rest are styled his *Parientes* (remoter kinsmen). The most ancient grandees of Spain, are the descendants of the Dukes of Medina-Sidonia, Albuquerque, Alva, Escalonna, l'Infantado, Nagera, Béjar, d'Arcos, Segorvia, and Montalto; the Marquesses of Astorga and Aguilar, and the Counts of Lemos and Benevente—these being the families whose *grandeza* was acknowledged by the reforming edict of Charles V. in 1520. The title of Don was, by an edict of Philip II. in 1586 (renewed, with mention of severe penalties, in 1596), declared to be unlawfully borne, unless by those who could prove four descents of pure nobility; but how ill this law was at all times obeyed, we may gather from many passages in Cervantes himself.

[1] [See above, p. 271, note.]

[2] [*Ranciosos* in the original: a metaphor taken from rusty bacon, yellow and mouldy, as it were, with age.]

them, in a manner, equal to many such in the world's esteem. As I am their only child, they ever loved me with all the tenderness of indulgent parents; and their great affection made them esteem themselves happier in their daughter, than in the peaceable enjoyment of their large estate. Now as it was my good fortune to be possessed of their love, they were pleased to trust me with their substance. The whole house and estate was left to my management, and I took such care not to abuse the trust reposed in me, that I never forfeited their good opinion of my discretion. The time I had to spare from the care of the family, I commonly employed in the usual exercises of young women, sometimes making bone-lace, or at my needle, and now and then reading some good book, or playing on the harp; having experienced that music was very proper to recreate the wearied mind: and this was the innocent life I led. I have not descended to these particulars out of vain ostentation, but merely that when I come to relate my misfortunes, you may observe I do not owe them to my ill conduct. While I thus lived the life of a nun, unseen, as I thought, by any body but our own family, and never leaving the house but to go to church, which was commonly betimes in the morning, and always with my mother, and so close hid in a veil that I could scarce find my way; notwithstanding all the care that was taken to keep me from being seen, it was unhappily rumoured abroad that I was handsome, and to my eternal disquiet, love intruded into my peaceful retirement. Don Ferdinand, second son to the duke I have mentioned, had a sight of me"——Scarce had Cardenio heard Don Ferdinand named, but he changed colour, and betrayed such a disorder of body and mind, that the curate and the barber were afraid he would have fallen into one of those frantic fits that often used to take him; but by good fortune it did not come to that, and he only set himself to look stedfastly on the country maid, presently guessing who she was; while she continued her story, without taking any notice of the alteration of his countenance.

"No sooner had he seen me," said she, "but, as he since told me, he felt in his breast that violent passion of

which he afterwards gave me so many proofs. But not to tire you with a needless relation of every particular, I will pass over all the means he used to inform me of his love: he purchased the good-will of all our servants with private gifts: he made my father a thousand kind offers of service: every day seemed a day of rejoicing in our neighbourhood, every evening ushered in some serenade, and the continual music was even a disturbance in the night. He got an infinite number of love-letters transmitted to me, I do not know by what means, every one full of the tenderest expressions, promises, vows and protestations. But all this assiduous courtship was so far from inclining my heart to a kind return, that it rather moved my indignation; insomuch, that I looked upon Don Ferdinand as my greatest enemy, and one wholly bent on my ruin: not but that I was well enough pleased with his gallantry, and took a secret delight in seeing myself thus courted by a person of his quality. Such demonstrations of love are never altogether displeasing to women, and the most disdainful, in spite of all their coyness, reserve a little complaisance in their hearts for their admirers. But the disproportion between our qualities was too great to suffer me to entertain any reasonable hopes, and his gallantry too singular not to offend me. Besides, my father, who soon put a right construction on Don Ferdinand's pretensions, with his prudent admonitions concurred with the sense I ever had of my honour, and banished from my mind all favourable thoughts of his addresses. However, like a kind parent, perceiving I was somewhat uneasy, and imagining the flattering prospect of so advantageous a match might still please me, he told me one day he reposed the utmost trust in my virtue, esteeming it the strongest obstacle he could oppose to Don Ferdinand's dishonourable designs; yet if I would marry, to rid me at once of his unjust pursuit, and prevent the ruin of my reputation, I should have liberty to make my own choice of a suitable match, either in our own town or the neighbourhood; and that he would do for me whatever could be expected from a loving father. I humbly thanked him for his kindness, and told him, that as I had never yet had any thoughts of marriage,

I would try to rid myself of Don Ferdinand some other way. Accordingly I resolved to shun him with so much precaution, that he should never have the opportunity to speak to me: but all my reservedness, far from tiring out his passion, strengthened it the more. In short, Don Ferdinand, either hearing or suspecting I was to be married, thought of a contrivance to cross a design that was likely to cut off all his hopes. One night, therefore, when I was in my chamber, nobody with me but my maid, and the door double-locked and bolted, that I might be secured against the attempts of Don Ferdinand, whom I took to be a man who would stick at nothing to compass his designs, unexpectedly I saw him just before me; which amazing sight so surprised me, that I was struck dumb, and fainted away with fear. So I had not power to call for help, nor do I believe he would have given me time to have done it, had I attempted it; for he presently ran to me, and taking me in his arms, while I was sinking with the fright, he spoke to me in such endearing terms, and with so much address, and pretended tenderness and sincerity, that I did not dare to cry out when I came to myself. His sighs, and yet more his tears, seemed to me undeniable proofs of his vowed integrity; and I being but young, bred up in perpetual retirement from all society but my virtuous parents, and unexperienced in those affairs, in which even the most knowing are apt to be mistaken, my reluctancy abated by degrees, and I began to have some sense of compassion, yet none but what was consistent with my honour. However, when I was pretty well recovered from my first fright, my former resolution returned; and then, with more courage than I thought I should have had, 'My lord,' said I, 'if at the same time that you offer me your love, and give me such strange demonstrations of it, you would also offer me poison, and leave to take my choice, I would soon resolve which to accept, and convince you by my death, that my honour is dearer to me than my life. To be plain, I can have no good opinion of a presumption that endangers my reputation; and unless you leave me this moment, I will so effectually make you know how much you are mistaken in me, that if you have but the least sense of honour left,

you will refrain from driving me to that extremity as long as you live. I was born your vassal, but not your slave; nor does the greatness of your birth privilege you to injure your inferiors, or exact from me more than the duties which all vassals pay; that excepted, I do not esteem myself less in my low degree, than you have reason to value yourself in your high rank. Do not then think to awe or dazzle me with your grandeur, or fright or force me into a base compliance; I am not to be tempted with titles, pomp and equipage; nor weak enough to be moved with vain sighs and false tears. In short, my will is wholly at my father's disposal, and I will not entertain any man as a lover, but by his appointment. Therefore, my lord, as you would have me believe you so sincerely love me, give over your vain and injurious pursuit; suffer me peaceably to enjoy the benefits of life in the free possession of my honour, the loss of which for ever embitters all life's sweets; and since you cannot be my husband, do not expect from me that affection which I cannot pay to any other.'—'What do you mean, charming Dorothea?' cried the perfidious lord. 'Cannot I be yours by the sacred title of husband? Who can hinder me, if you'll but consent to bless me on those terms? Too happy if I have no other obstacle to surmount. I am yours this moment, beautiful Dorothea: see, I give you here my hand to be yours and yours alone for ever: and let all-seeing Heaven, and this holy image here on your oratory, witness the solemn truth.'"

Cardenio, hearing her call herself Dorothea, was now fully satisfied she was the person whom he took her to be; however, he would not interrupt her story, being impatient to hear the end of it; only addressing himself to her, "Is then your name Dorothea madam?" cried he. "I have heard of a lady of that name, whose misfortunes have a great resemblance with yours. But proceed, I beseech you, and when you have done, I may perhaps surprise you with an account of things that have some affinity with those you relate." With that Dorothea made a stop to study Cardenio's face, and his wretched attire, and then earnestly desired him, if he knew anything that concerned her, to let her know it presently; telling him, that all

the happiness she had left, was only the courage to bear with resignation all the disasters that might befall her, well assured that no new one could make her more unfortunate than she was already. "Truly, madam," replied Cardenio, "I would tell you all I know, were I sure my conjectures were true; but so far as I may judge by what I have heard hitherto, I do not think it material to tell it you yet, and I shall find a more proper time to do it." Then Dorothea resuming her discourse: "Don Ferdinand," said she, "repeated his vows of marriage in the most serious manner; and giving me his hand, plighted me his faith in the most binding words, and sacred oaths. But before I would let him engage himself thus, I advised him to have a care how he suffered an unruly passion to get the ascendant over his reason, to the endangering of his future happiness. 'My lord,' said I, 'let not a few transitory and imaginary charms, which could never excuse such an excess of love, hurry you to your ruin. Spare your noble father the shame and displeasure of seeing you married to a person so much below your birth; and do not rashly do a thing of which you may repent, and that may make my life uncomfortable.' I added several other reasons to dissuade him from that hasty match, but they were all unregarded. Don Ferdinand, deaf to every thing but to his desires, engaged and bound himself like an inconsiderate lover, who sacrifices all things to his passion, or rather like a cheat, who does not value a breach of vows. When I saw him so obstinate, I began to consider what I had to do. I am not the first, thought I to myself, whom marriage has raised to unhoped for greatness, and whose beauty alone has supplied her want of birth and merit. Thousands besides Don Ferdinand have married merely for love, without any regard to the inequality of wealth and birth.—The opportunity was fair and tempting; and as fortune is not always favourable, I thought it an imprudent thing to let it slip. Thought I to myself, while she kindly offers me a husband who assures me of an inviolable affection, why should I, by an unreasonable denial, make myself an enemy of such a friend?—And then there was one thing more; I apprehended it would be dangerous to drive him to despair by

an ill-timed refusal; nor could I think myself safe alone in his hands, lest he should resolve to satisfy his passion by force; which done, he might think himself free from performing a promise which I would not accept; and then I should be left without either honour or an excuse: for it would be no easy matter to persuade my father, and the censorious world, that this nobleman was admitted into my chamber without my consent. All these reasons, which in a moment offered themselves in my mind, shook my former resolves; and Don Ferdinand's sighs, his tears, his vows, and the sacred witnesses by which he swore, together with his graceful mien, his extraordinary accomplishments, and the love which I fancied I read in all his actions, helped to bring on my ruin, as I believe they would have prevailed with any one's heart as free and as well guarded as was mine. Then I called my maid to be witness to Don Ferdinand's vows and sacred engagements, which he reiterated to me, and confirmed with new oaths and solemn promises; he called again on Heaven, and on many particular saints, to witness his sincerity, wishing a thousand curses might fall on him, in case he ever violated his word. Again he sighed, again he wept, and moved me more and more with fresh marks of affection; and the treacherous maid having left the room, the perfidious lord, presuming on my weakness, completed his pernicious design. The day which succeeded that unhappy night, had not yet begun to dawn, when Don Ferdinand, impatient to be gone, made all the haste he could to leave me. For after the gratifications of brutish appetite are past, the greatest pleasure then is, to get rid of that which entertained it. He told me, though not with so great a show of affection, nor so warmly as before, that I might rely on his honour, and on the sincerity of his vows and promises; and as a further pledge, he pulled off a ring of great value from his finger, and put it upon mine. In short, he went away, and my maid, who, as she confessed to me, let him in privately, took care to let him out into the street by break of day, while I remained so strangely concerned at the thoughts of all these passages, that I cannot well tell whether I was sorry or pleased. I was in a manner quite distracted, and either forgot, or

had not the heart, to chide my maid for her treachery, not knowing yet whether she had done me good or harm. I had told Don Ferdinand before he went, that seeing I was now his own, he might make use of the same means to come again to see me, till he found it convenient to do me the honour of owning me publicly for his wife; but he came to me only the next night, and from that time I never could see him more, either at church or in the street, though for a whole month together I tired myself in endeavouring to find him out. Being credibly informed he was still near us, and went a-hunting almost every day, I leave you to think with what uneasiness I passed those tedious hours, when I perceived his neglect, and had reason to suspect his breach of faith. So unexpected a slight, which I looked upon as the most severe affliction that could befall me, had like to have quite overwhelmed me. Then it was that I found my maid had betrayed me. I broke out into severe complaints of her presumption, which I had smothered till that time. I exclaimed against Don Ferdinand, and exhausted my sighs and tears without assuaging my sorrow. What was worse, I found myself obliged to set a guard upon my very looks, for fear my father and mother should inquire into the cause of my discontent, and so occasion my being guilty of shameful lies and evasions to conceal my more shameful disaster. But at last I perceived it was in vain to dissemble, and I gave a loose to my resentment; for I could no longer hold, when I heard that Don Ferdinand was married in a neighbouring town to a young lady of rich and noble parentage, and extremely handsome, whose name is Lucinda."—Cardenio hearing Lucinda named, felt his former disorder, but by good fortune it was not so violent as it used to be; and he only shrugged up his shoulders, bit his lips, knit his brows, and a little while after let fall a shower of tears, which did not hinder Dorothea from going on.

"This news," continued she, "instead of freezing up my blood with grief and astonishment, filled me with burning rage. Despair took possession of my soul, and in the transports of my fury I was ready to run raving

through the streets, and publish Don Ferdinand's disloyalty, though at the expense of my reputation. I do not know whether a remnant of reason stopped these violent motions, but I found myself mightily eased as soon as I had pitched upon a design that presently came into my head. I discovered the cause of my grief to a young country fellow that served my father, and desired him to lend me a suit of man's apparel, and to go along with me to the town where I heard Don Ferdinand was. The fellow used the best arguments he had to hinder me from so strange an undertaking; but finding I was inflexible in my resolution, he assured me he was ready to serve me. Thereupon I put on this habit which you see, and taking with me some of my own clothes, together with some gold and jewels, not knowing but I might have occasion for them, I set out that very night, attended with that servant, and many anxious thoughts, without so much as acquainting my maid with my design. To tell you the truth, I did not well know myself what I went about; for as there could be no remedy, Don Ferdinand being actually married to another, what could I hope to get by seeing him, unless it were the wretched satisfaction of upbraiding him with his infidelity? In two days and a half we got to the town, where the first thing I did was to inquire where Lucinda's father lived. That single question produced a great deal more than I desired to hear; for the first man I addressed myself to, showed me the house, and informed me of all that had happened at Lucinda's marriage, which it seems was grown so public, that it was the talk of the whole town. He told me how Lucinda had swooned away as soon as she had answered the priest that she was contented to be Don Ferdinand's wife; and how after he had approached to open her stays, to give her more room to breathe, he found a letter under her own hand, wherein she declared she could not be Don Ferdinand's wife, because she was already contracted to a considerable gentleman of the same town, whose name was Cardenio; and that she had only consented to that marriage in obedience to her father. He also told me, that it appeared by the letter, and a dagger which was found about her, that she

designed to have killed herself after the ceremony was over: and that Don Ferdinand, enraged to see himself thus deluded, would have killed her himself with that very dagger, had he not been prevented by those that were present. He added, it was reported that upon this Don Ferdinand immediately left the town; and that Lucinda did not come to herself till next day, and then she told her parents that she was really Cardenio's wife, and that he and she were contracted before she had seen Don Ferdinand. I heard also that this Cardenio was present at the wedding; and that as soon as he saw her married, which was a thing he never could have believed, he left the town in despair, leaving a letter behind him, full of complaints of Lucinda's breach of faith, and to inform his friends of his resolution to go to some place where they should never hear of him more. This was all the discourse of the town when we came thither, and soon after we heard that Lucinda also was missing, and that her father and mother were grieving almost to distraction, not being able to learn what was become of her. For my part, this news revived my hopes, having reason to be pleased to find Don Ferdinand unmarried. I flattered myself that heaven had perhaps prevented this second marriage, to make him sensible of violating the first, and to touch his conscience, in order to his acquitting himself in his duty like a Christian, and a man of honour. So I strove to beguile my cares with an imaginary prospect of a far distant change of fortune, amusing myself with vain hopes that I might not sink under the load of affliction, but prolong life; though this was only a lengthening of my sorrows, since I have now but the more reason to wish to be eased of the trouble of living. But while I stayed in that town, not knowing what I had best do, seeing I could not find Don Ferdinand, I heard a crier publicly describe my person, my clothes, and my age, in the open street, promising a considerable reward to any that could bring tidings of Dorothea. I also heard that it was rumoured I was run away from my father's house with the servant who attended me; and that report touched my soul as much as Don Ferdinand's perfidiousness; for thus I saw my reputation wholly lost,

and that too for a subject so base and so unworthy of my nobler thoughts. Thereupon I made all the haste I could to get out of the town with my servant, who even then, to my thinking, began by some tokens to betray a faltering in the fidelity he had promised me. Dreading to be discovered, we reached the most desert part of this mountain that night: but, as it is a common saying, that misfortunes seldom come alone, and the end of one disaster is often the beginning of a greater, I was no sooner got to that place, where I thought myself safe, but the fellow, whom I had hitherto found to be modest and respectful, now, rather incited by his own villany than my beauty, and the opportunity which that place offered, than by anything else, had the impudence to talk to me of love; and seeing I answered him with anger and contempt, he would no longer lose time in clownish courtship, but resolved to use violence to compass his wicked design. But just Heaven, which seldom or never fails to succour just designs, so assisted mine, and his brutish passion so blinded him, that, not perceiving he was on the brink of a steep rock, I easily pushed him down, and then, without looking to see what was become of him, and with more nimbleness than could be expected from my surprise and weariness, I ran into the thickest part of the desert to secure myself. The next day I met a countryman, who took me to his house amidst these mountains, and employed me ever since in quality of his shepherd. There I have continued some months, making it my business to be as much as possible in the fields, the better to conceal my sex. But notwithstanding all my care and industry, he at last discovered I was a woman, which made him presume to importune me with beastly offers; so that fortune not favouring me with the former opportunity of freeing myself, I left his house, and chose to seek a sanctuary among these woods and rocks, there with sighs and tears to beseech heaven to pity me, and to direct and relieve me in this forlorn condition; or at least to put an end to my miserable life, and bury in this desert the very memory of an unhappy creature, who, more through ill fortune than ill intent, has given the idle world occasion to be too busy with her fame."

CHAPTER XXIX.

Which treats of the pleasant stratagem used to free our enamoured Knight from the rigorous penance which he had undertaken.

"This, gentlemen," continued Dorothea, "is the true story of my tragical adventure; and now be you judges whether I had reason to make the complaint you overheard, and whether so unfortunate and hopeless a creature be in a condition to admit of comfort. I have only one favour to beg of you; be pleased to direct me to some place where I may pass the rest of my life secure from the search and inquiry of my parents; not but their former affection is a sufficient warrant for my kind reception, could the sense I have of the thoughts they must have of my past conduct permit me to return to them; but when I think they must believe me guilty, and can now have nothing but my bare word to assure them of my innocence, I can never resolve to endure their sight." Here Dorothea stopped, and the blushes that overspread her cheeks were certain signs of the discomposure of her thoughts, and the unfeigned modesty of her soul. Those who had heard her story were deeply moved with compassion for her hard fate, and the curate would not delay any longer to give her some charitable comfort and advice. But scarce had he begun to speak, when Cardenio, addressing himself to her, interrupted him. "How, madam," said he, taking her by the hand, "are you then the beautiful Dorothea, the only daughter of the rich Cleonardo?" Dorothea was strangely surprised to hear her father named, and by one in so tattered a garb. "And pray who are you, friend," said she to him, "that know so well my father's name? for I think I did not mention it once throughout the whole narration of my afflictions."—"I am Cardenio," replied the other, "that unfortunate person, whom Lucinda, as you told us, declared to be her husband. I am that miserable Cardenio, whom the perfidiousness of

the man who has reduced you to this deplorable condition, has also brought to this wretched state, to rags, to nakedness, to despair, nay, to madness itself, and all hardships and want of human comforts; only enjoying the privilege of reason by short intervals, to feel and bemoan my miseries the more. I am the man, fair Dorothea, who was the unhappy eye-witness of Don Ferdinand's unjust nuptials, and who heard my Lucinda give her consent to be his wife; that heartless wretch, who, unable to bear so strange a disappointment, lost in amazement and trouble, flung out of the house, without staying to know what would follow her trance, and what the paper that was taken out of her bosom would produce. I abandoned myself to despair, and having left a letter with a person whom I charged to deliver it into Lucinda's own hands, I hastened to hide myself from the world in this desert, resolved to end there a life which from that moment I had abhorred as my greatest enemy. But fortune has preserved me, I see, that I may venture it upon a better cause; for from what you have told us now, which I have no reason to doubt, I am emboldened to hope that Providence may yet reserve us both for a better fate than we durst have expected. Heaven will restore to you Don Ferdinand, who cannot be Lucinda's, and to me Lucinda, who cannot be Don Ferdinand's. For my part, though my interests were not linked with yours, as they are, I have so deep a sense of your misfortunes, that I would expose myself to any dangers to see you righted by Don Ferdinand; and here, on the word of a gentleman and a Christian, I vow and promise not to forsake you till he has done you justice, and to oblige him to do it at the hazard of my life, should reason and generosity prove ineffectual to force him to be blest with you."

Dorothea, ravished with joy, and not knowing how to express a due sense of Cardenio's obliging offers, would have thrown herself at his feet, had he not civilly hindered it. At the same time the curate, discreetly speaking for them both, highly applauded Cardenio for his generous resolution, and comforted Dorothea. He also very heartily invited them to his house, where they might furnish themselves with necessaries, and consult

together how to find out Don Ferdinand, and bring Dorothea home to her father, which kind offer they thankfully accepted. Then the barber, who had been silent all this while, put in for a share, and handsomely assured them, he would be very ready to do them all the service that might lie in his power. After these civilities, he acquainted them with the design that had brought the curate and him to that place, and gave them an account of Don Quixote's strange kind of madness, and of their staying there for his squire. Cardenio, hearing him mentioned, remembered something of the scuffle he had had with them both, but only as if it had been a dream; so that though he told the company of it, he could not let them know the occasion. By this time they heard somebody call, and by the voice they knew it was Sancho Panza, who, not finding them where he had left them, tore his very lungs with hollowing. With that, they all went to meet him; which done, they asked him what was become of Don Quixote? "Alas!" answered Sancho, "I left him yonder, in an ill plight. I found him in his shirt, lean, pale, and almost starved, sighing and whining for his lady Dulcinea. I told him, how that she would have him come to her presently to Toboso, where she looked for him out of hand; yet for all this he would not budge a foot, but even told me he was resolved he would never set eyes on her sweet face again, till he had done some feats that might make him worthy of her goodness. So that," added Sancho, "if he leads this life any longer, I fear me my poor master is never like to be an emperor, as he is bound in honour to be, nay, not so much as an archbishop, which is the least thing he can come off with; therefore, good sir, see and get him away by all means, I beseech you."—The curate bade him be of good cheer, for they would take care to make him leave that place whether he would or not; and then turning to Cardenio and Dorothea, he informed them of the design which he and the barber had laid, in order to his cure, or at least to get him home to his house. Dorothea, whose mind was much eased with the prospect of better fortune, kindly undertook to act the distressed lady herself, which she said she thought would better become her than the barber,

having a dress very proper for that purpose; besides, she had read many books of chivalry, and knew how the distressed ladies used to express themselves when they came to beg some knight-errant's assistance. "This is obliging, madam," said the curate, "and we want nothing more; so let us to work as fast as we can; we may now hope to succeed, since you thus happily facilitate the design." Presently Dorothea took out of her bundle a petticoat of very rich stuff, and a gown of very fine green silk; also a necklace, and several other jewels out of a box; and with these in an instant she so adorned herself, and appeared so beautiful and glorious, that they all stood in admiration that Don Ferdinand should be so injudicious as to slight so accomplished a beauty. But he that admired her most was Sancho Panza; for he thought he had never set eyes on so fine a creature, and perhaps he thought right: which made him earnestly ask the curate who that fine dame was, and what wind had blown her thither among the woods and rocks?—"Who is that fine lady, Sancho?" answered the curate; "she is the only heiress in a direct line to the vast kingdom of Micomicon. Moved by the fame of your master's great exploits, that spreads itself over all Guinea, she comes to seek him out, and beg a boon of him; that is, to redress a wrong which a wicked giant has done her."—"Why, that's well," quoth Sancho; "a happy seeking, and a happy finding. Now, if my master be but so lucky as to right that wrong, by killing that son of a whore of a giant you tell me of, I am a made man. Yes, he will kill him, that he will, if he can but come at him, an he be not a hobgoblin, for my master can do no good with hobgoblins. But, Mr. Curate, an it please you, I have a favour to ask of you. I beseech you put my master out of conceit with all archbishoprics, for that is what I dread; and therefore, to rid me of my fears, put it into his head to clap up a match with this same princess; for by that means it will be past his power to make himself archbishop, and he will come to be emperor, and I a great man, as sure as a gun. I have thought well of the matter, and I find it is not at all fitting he should be an archbishop for my good; for what should I get by it?

I am not fit for church preferment, I am a married man; and for me now to go and trouble my head with getting a licence to hold church livings, it would be an endless piece of business; therefore it will be better for him to marry out of hand this same princess, whose name I cannot tell, for I never heard it."—"They call her the Princess Micomicona," said the curate; "for her kingdom being called Micomicon, it is a clear case she must be called so."—"Like enough," quoth Sancho; "for I have known several men in my time go by the names of the places where they were born, as Pedro de Alcala,[1] Juan de Ubeda, Diego de Valladolid; and mayhap the like is done in Guinea, and the queens go by the name of their kingdoms."—"It is well observed," replied the curate. "As for the match, I'll promote it to the utmost of my power." Sancho was heartily pleased with this promise; and, on the other side, the curate was amazed to find the poor fellow so strangely infected with his master's mad notions, as to rely on his becoming an emperor. By this time Dorothea being mounted on the curate's mule, and the barber having clapped on his ox-tail beard, nothing remained but to order Sancho to show them the way, and to renew their admonitions to him, lest he should seem to know them, and to spoil the plot, which, if he did, they told him it would be the ruin of all his hopes and his master's empire. As for Cardenio, he did not think fit to go with them, having no business there; besides, he could not tell but that Don Quixote might remember their late fray. The curate, likewise, not thinking his presence necessary, resolved to stay to keep Cardenio company; so, after he had once more given Dorothea her cue, she and the barber went before with Sancho, while the two others followed on foot at a distance.

Thus they went on for about three-quarters of a league, and then among the rocks they spied Don Quixote, who had by this time put on his clothes, though not his armour. Immediately Dorothea, understanding he was the person, whipped her palfrey, and when she drew near

[1] A person of this name wrote a book, entitled "Arte para ligeramente saber la lingua Araliga," which was published at Salamanca.

Don Quixote, her squire alighted and took her from her saddle. When she was upon her feet, she gracefully advanced towards the knight, and, with her squire, falling on her knees before him, in spite of his endeavours to hinder her; "Thrice valorous and invincible knight," said she, "never will I rise from this place, till your generosity has granted me a boon[1] which shall redound to your honour, and the relief of the most disconsolate and most injured damsel that the sun ever saw: and indeed if your valour and the strength of your formidable arm be answerable to the extent of your immortal renown, you are bound by the laws of honour, and the knighthood which you profess, to succour a distressed princess, who, led by the resounding fame of your marvellous and redoubted feats of arms, comes from the remotest regions, to implore your protection."—"I cannot," said Don Quixote, "make you any answer, most beautiful lady, nor will I hear a word more, unless you vouchsafe to rise."—"Pardon me, noble knight," replied the petitioning damsel; "my knees shall first be rooted here, unless you will courteously condescend to grant me the boon which I humbly request."—"I grant it then, lady," said Don Quixote, "provided it be nothing to the disservice of my king, my country, and that beauty who keeps the key of my heart and liberty."—"It shall not tend to the prejudice or detriment of any of these," cried the lady. With that Sancho closing up to his master, and whispering him in the ear, "Grant it, sir," quoth he, "grant it, I tell ye; it is but a trifle next to nothing, only to kill a great looby of a giant; and she that asks this, is the high and mighty Princess Micomicona, Queen of the huge kingdom

[1] "La Jayana se lanzo a los pies de Amadis: Agora vos supplico, Senor, que *me otorguez un don* que, para que yo sea enmendada de un tuerto que recebi, conviene que me lo otorgues. Yo lo otorgo dixo el Rey." *Amadis de Grecia*, P. 1. c. 39.—(The gift here demanded, by the way, was, as in the case of the Princess Micomicona, "the head of a certain usurping giant.")

> "*Io non mi levero dei questi piedi*
> (Diss' ella) Signor mio, se del fellone
> Ch' uccise il mio fratel non mi concedi
> Di vendicare."——
>
> ARIOSTO, *Canto* XLV. 16.

of Micomicon in Ethiopia."—"Let her be what she will," replied Don Quixote, "I will discharge my duty, and obey the dictates of my conscience, according to the rules of my profession." With that, turning to the damsel, "Rise, lady, I beseech you," cried he; "I grant you the boon which your singular beauty demands."—"Sir," said the lady, "the boon I have to beg of your magnanimous valour, is, that you will be pleased to go with me instantly whither I shall conduct you, and promise not to engage in any other adventure, till you have revenged me on a traitor who usurps my kingdom, contrary to all laws both human and divine."—"I grant you all this, lady," quoth Don Quixote; "and therefore from this moment shake off all desponding thoughts that sit heavy upon your mind, and study to revive your drooping hopes; for by the assistance of Heaven, and my strenuous arm, you shall see yourself restored to your kingdom, and seated on the throne of your ancestors, in spite of all the traitors that dare oppose your right. Let us then hasten our performance; delay always breeds danger; and to defer a great design is often to ruin it." The thankful princess, to speak her grateful sense of his generosity, strove to kiss the knight's hand; however, he who was in every thing the most gallant and courteous of all knights, would by no means admit of such submission;[1] but having gently raised her up, he embraced her with an awful grace and civility, and then called to Sancho for his arms. Sancho went immediately and having fetched them from a tree, where they hung like trophies,[2] armed his master in a moment. And now the champion being completely accoutred, "Come on," said he, "let us go and vindicate

[1] "La Donzella de lagreme coperse
Gli occhi, et la vaga guancia colorita,
Vuol bacciargli la man; ma no'l sofferse
Il Brun Cortese."

GYROLE, L. vii. 95.

[2] "La su spada e l'altre arme,
Vidi un cavalier cortese e pio
Che le ando raccogliendo da ogni parte.
E poi de tutte quelle *un' Arboscello*
Fe, *a guisa di Trofeo*, pomposo e bello."

ARIOSTO, *Canto* XIII.

the rights of this dispossessed princess." The barber was all this while upon his knees, and had enough to do to keep himself from laughing, and his beard from falling, which, if it had dropped off, as it threatened, would have betrayed his face and their whole plot at once. But being relieved by Don Quixote's haste to put on his armour, he rose up, and taking the princess by the hand, they both together set her upon her mule. Then the knight mounted his Rozinante, and the barber got on his beast. Only poor Sancho was forced to foot it, which made him fetch many heavy sighs for the loss of his dear Dapple: however, he bore his crosses patiently, seeing his master in so fair a way of being next door to an emperor; for he did not question but he would marry that princess, and so be at least King of Micomicon. But yet it grieved him to think his master's dominions were to be in the land of the negroes, and that, consequently, the people over whom he was to be governor were all to be black. But he presently bethought himself of a good remedy for that; "What care I," quoth he, "though they be blacks? best of all; it is but loading a ship with them, and having them into Spain, where I shall find chapmen enough to take them off my hands, and pay me ready money for them; and so I'll raise a good round sum, and buy me a title or an office to live upon frank and easy all the days of my life. Hang him that has no shifts, say I; it is a sorry goose that will not baste herself. Why, what if I am not so book-learned as other folks, sure I have a head-piece good enough to know how to sell thirty or ten thousand slaves in the turn of a hand.[1] Let them even go higgledy-piggledy, little and great. What though they be as black as the devil in hell, let me alone to turn them into white and yellow boys; I think I know how to lick my own fingers."

Big with these imaginations, Sancho trudged along so pleased and light-hearted, that he forgot his pain of travelling a-foot. Cardenio and the curate had beheld the pleasant scene through the bushes, and were at a loss

[1] [Literally, "While one may say, Give me those straws;" *en decirme esas pajas*, i.e. in a moment.]

what they should do to join companies. But the curate, who had a contriving head, at last bethought himself of an expedient; and pulling out a pair of scissors, which he used to carry in his pocket, he snipped off Cardenio's beard in a trice; and having pulled off his black cloak and a sad-coloured riding-coat which he had on, he equipped Cardenio with them, while he himself remained in his doublet and breeches. In which new garb Cardenio was so strangely altered, that he would not have known himself in a looking-glass. This done, they made to the highway, and there stayed till Don Quixote and his company were got clear of the rocks and bad ways, which did not permit horsemen to go so fast as those on foot. When they came near, the curate looked very earnestly upon Don Quixote, as one that was in a study whether he might not know him; and then, like one that had made a discovery, he ran towards the knight with open arms, crying out, "Mirror of chivalry, my noble countryman Don Quixote de la Mancha! the cream and flower of gentility! the shelter and relief of the afflicted, and quintessence of knight-errantry! how overjoyed am I to have found you!" At the same time he embraced his left leg.

Don Quixote, wondering what adorer of his heroic worth this should be, looked on him earnestly; and at last calling him to mind, would have alighted to have paid him his respects, not a little amazed to meet him there. But the curate hindering him, "Reverend sir," cried the knight, "I beseech you, let me not be so rude as to sit on horseback, while a person of your worth and character is on foot."—"Sir," replied the curate, "you shall by no means alight. Let your Excellency be pleased to keep your saddle, since, thus mounted, you every day achieve the most stupendous feats of arms and adventures that were ever seen in your age. It will be honour enough for an unworthy priest like me to get up behind some of your company, if they will permit me; and I will esteem it as great a happiness as to be mounted upon Pegasus, or the Zebra, or the fleet mare of the famous Moor Muzaraque, who to this hour lies enchanted in the dreary cavern of

Zulema,[1] not far distant from the great Compluto.[2]—"Truly, good sir, I did not think of this," answered Don Quixote; "but I suppose my lady the princess will be so kind as to command her squire to lend you his saddle and to ride behind himself, if his mule be used to carry double."—"I believe it will," cried the princess; "and my squire, I suppose, will not stay for my commands to offer his saddle, for he is too courteous and well-bred to suffer an ecclesiastical person to go a-foot, when we may help him to a mule."—"Most certainly," cried the barber; and with that dismounting, he offered the curate his saddle, which was accepted without much entreaty. By ill fortune the mule was a hired beast, and consequently unlucky; so, as the barber was getting up behind the curate, the resty jade gave two or three jerks with her hinder legs, that, had they met with Master Nicholas's skull or ribs, would have made him bequeath his rambling after Don Quixote to the devil. However, he flung himself nimbly off, and was more afraid than hurt; but yet as he fell his beard dropped off, and being presently sensible of that accident, he could not think of any better shift than to clap both his hands before his cheeks, and cry out he had broke his jaw-bone. Don Quixote was amazed to see such an overgrown bush of beard lie on the ground without jaws and bloodless. "Bless me," cried he, "what an amazing miracle is this! here is a beard as cleverly taken off by accident, as if a barber had mowed it." The curate, perceiving the danger they were in of being discovered, hastily caught up the beard, and, running to the barber, who lay all the while roaring and complaining, he pulled his head close to his own breast, and

[1] See Primaleon, Book III. Chap. 56.

[2] This is Complutum, the old Latin name of Alcala de Henares (and therefore used in preference by Don Quixote). This city was famous in those days for its university (the second in rank after Salamanca), the magnificent foundation of Cardinal Ximenes, whose extraordinary epitaph, still visible in the choir of its chapel, records, that "he added the purple to the frock, the helmet to the hood, and the diadem to the tonsure." Alcala has since owed not a little of its celebrity to the circumstances of its being the birthplace of Cervantes himself, whose statue in marble adorns its market-place, as that of Erasmus does a similar situation in his native city of Rotterdam.

then muttering certain words, which he said were a charm appropriated to the fastening on of fallen beards, he fixed it on again so handsomely, that the squire was presently then as bearded and as well as ever he was before; which raised Don Quixote's admiration, and made him engage the curate to teach him the charm at his leisure, not doubting but its virtue extended further than to the fastening on of beards, since it was impossible that such a one could be torn off without fetching away flesh and all; and consequently such a sudden cure might be beneficial to him upon occasion. And now, every thing being set to rights, they agreed that the curate should ride first by himself, and then the other two by turns relieving one another, sometimes riding, sometimes walking, till they came to their inn, which was about two leagues off. So Don Quixote, the princess, and the curate, being mounted, and Cardenio, the barber, and Sancho ready to move forwards on foot, the knight, addressing himself to the distressed damsel, "Now, lady," said he, "let me entreat your greatness to tell me which way we must go, to do your service?" The curate, before she could answer, thought fit to ask her a question, that might the better enable her to make a proper reply. "Pray, madam," said he, "towards what country is it your pleasure to take your progress?—is it not towards the kingdom of Micomicon? I am very much mistaken if that be not the part of the world whither you desire to go." The lady having got her cue, presently understood the curate, and answered that he was in the right. "Then," said the curate, "your way lies directly through the village where I live, from whence we have a straight road to Carthagena, where you may conveniently take shipping; and if you have a fair wind and good weather, you may in something less than nine years, reach the vast lake Meona, I mean the Palus Maeotis, which lies somewhat more than a hundred days' journey from your kingdom."—"Surely, sir," replied the lady, "you are under a mistake; for it is not quite two years since I left the place; and besides, we have had very little fair weather all the while, and yet I am already got thither, and have so far succeeded in my designs, as to have

obtained the sight of the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, the fame of whose achievements reached my ears as soon as I landed in Spain, and moved me to find him out, to throw myself under his protection, and commit the justice of my cause to his invincible valour."—"No more, madam, I beseech you," cried Don Quixote; "spare me the trouble of hearing myself praised, for I mortally hate whatever may look like adulation; and though your compliments may deserve a better name, my ears are too modest to be pleased with any such discourse: it is my study to deserve and to avoid applause. All I will venture to say is, that whether I have any valour or no, I am wholly at your service, even at the expense of the last drop of my blood; and therefore, waiving all these matters till a fit opportunity, I would gladly know of this reverend clergyman, what brought him hither, unattended by any of his servants, alone, and so slenderly clothed; for I must confess that I am not a little surprised to meet him in this condition."—"To tell you the reason in few words," answered the curate, "you must know, that Master Nicholas, our friend and barber, went with me to Seville, to receive some money which a relation of mine sent me from the Indies, where he has been settled these many years. Neither was it a small sum, for it was no less than seventy thousand pieces of eight, and all of due weight, which is no common thing, you may well judge; but upon the road hereabouts we met four highwaymen, that robbed us of all we had, even to our very beards, so that the poor barber was forced to get him a chin periwig. And for that young gentleman whom you see there," continued he, pointing to Cardenio, "after they had stripped him to his shirt, they transfigured him as you see. Now everybody hereabouts says, that those who robbed us were certainly a pack of rogues condemned to the galleys, who, as they were going to punishment, were rescued by a single man, not far from that place, and that with so much courage, that in spite of the king's officer and his guards, he alone set them all at liberty. Certainly this man was either mad, or as great a rogue as any of them: for would any one that had a grain of sense or honesty, have let

loose a company of wolves among sheep, foxes among innocent poultry, and wasps among the honey-pots? He has hindered public justice from taking its course, broke his allegiance to his lawful sovereign, disabled the strength of his galleys, rebelled against him, and opposed his officers in contempt of the law, and alarmed the Holy Brotherhood, that had lain quiet so long; nay, what is yet worse, he has endangered his life upon earth, and his salvation hereafter." Sancho had given the curate an account of the adventure of the galley-slaves, and this made him lay it on thick in the relation, to try how Don Quixote would bear it. The knight changed colour at every word, not daring to confess he was the pious knight-errant who had delivered those worthy gentlemen out of bondage. "These," said the curate, by way of conclusion, "were the men that reduced us to this condition; and may Heaven in mercy forgive him who freed them from the punishment they so well deserved!"

CHAPTER XXX.

Treating of the beautiful Dorothea's discretion, with other pleasant passages.

Scarce had the curate made an end, when Sancho addressing himself to him, "Faith and truth," quoth he, "Master Curate, he that did that rare job was my master his own self, and that not for want of fair warning; for I bid him have a care what he did, and told him over and over, it would be a grievous sin to put such a gang of wicked wretches out of durance, and that they all went to the galleys for their roguery."—"You buffle-headed clown," cried Don Quixote, "is it for a knight-errant, when he meets with people laden with chains, and under oppression, to examine whether they are in those circumstances for their crimes, or only through misfortune? We are only to relieve the afflicted, to look on their distress, and not on their crimes. I met a company of poor wretches, who went along sorrowful, dejected, and linked

together like the beads of a rosary; thereupon I did what my conscience and my profession obliged me to. And what has any man to say to this? If any one dares say otherwise, saving this reverend clergyman's presence and the holy character he bears, I say, he knows little of knight-errantry, and lies like a son of a whore, and a base-born villain; and this I will make him know more effectually, with the convincing edge of my sword!" This said with a grim look, he fixed himself in his stirrups, and pulled his helm over his brows; for the basin, which he took to be Mambrino's helmet, hung at his saddle-bow, in order to have the damage repaired which it had received from the galley-slaves. Thereupon Dorothea, by this time well acquainted with his temper, seeing him in such a passion, and that every body, except Sancho Panza, made a jest of him, resolved with her native sprightliness and address, to carry on the humour.—"I beseech you, sir," cried she, "remember the promise you have made me, and that you cannot engage in any adventure whatsoever, till you have performed that we are going about. Therefore, pray assuage your anger; for had Master Curate known the galley-slaves were rescued by your invincible arm, I am sure he would rather have stitched up his lips, or bit off his tongue, than have spoken a word that should make him incur your displeasure."—"Nay, I assure you," cried the curate, "I would sooner have twitched off one of my mustachios [1] into the bargain."—"I am satisfied, madam,"

[1] Philip II., by an edict of 1597, commanded "that all councillors of all the royal councils should wear the beard long, untouched, so as to cover the whole chin." By the same edict, military and clerical personages were commanded to shave all but the mustachios. The most common of all Spanish oaths was, "*by my mustachio;*" but Dom Joam de Castro, Viceroy in India for King John III. of Portugal, did more than swear by his mustachios; he *pledged* them. When he wished to raise money among the citizens of Goa, for his expedition to raise the siege of Diu, he cut off one of his mustachios, and left it, by way of hostage, in the town-house. Such security could not be questioned. He received the sum he asked for, and honourably relieved his whisker on his return. *Vigote*, which is the word used in the text for mustachio, is said, by the Spanish lexicographers, to be no other than our own Gothic, *By God*—in old German, *Bey Gott*—applied, of course, to the mustachio, from the universal custom of swearing by it.

cried Don Quixote, "and for your sake the flame of my just indignation is quenched; nor will I be induced to engage in any quarrel, till I have fulfilled my promise to your highness. Only, in recompense of my good intentions, I beg you will give us the story of your misfortunes, if this will not be too great a trouble to you: and let me know who and what, and how many are the persons of whom I must have due and full satisfaction on your behalf."—"I am very willing to do it," replied Dorothea; "but yet I fear a story like mine, consisting wholly of afflictions and disasters, will prove but a tedious entertainment."—"Never fear that, madam," cried Don Quixote.—"Since then it must be so," said Dorothea, "be pleased to lend me your attention." With that Cardenio and the barber gathered up to her, to hear what kind of story she had provided so soon; Sancho also hung his ears upon her side-saddle, being no less deceived in her than his master; and the lady having seated herself well on her mule, after coughing once or twice, and other preparations, very gracefully began her story.

"First, gentlemen," said she, "you must know my name is"—here she stopped short, and could not call to mind the name the curate had given her; whereupon finding her at a nonplus, he made haste to help her out. "It is not at all strange," said he, "madam, that you should be so discomposed by your disasters, as to stumble at the very beginning of the account you are going to give of them; extreme affliction often distracts the mind to that degree, and so deprives us of memory, that sometimes we for a while can scarce think on our very names: no wonder, then, that the Princess Micomicona, lawful heiress to the vast kingdom of Micomicon, disordered with so many misfortunes, and perplexed with so many various thoughts for the recovery of her crown, should have her imagination and memory so encumbered; but I hope you will now recollect yourself, and be able to proceed."—"I hope so too," said the lady, "and I will try to go through with my story, without any further hesitation. Know then, gentlemen, that the king, my father, who was called Tinacrio the sage, having great skill in the magic art, understood by his profound knowledge in that science,

that Queen Xaramilla, my mother, should die before him, that he himself should not survive her long, and I should be left an orphan. But he often said that this did not so much trouble him, as the foresight he had by his speculations, of my being threatened with great misfortunes, which would be occasioned by a certain giant, lord of a great island near the confines of my kingdom; his name Pandafilando, surnamed of the Gloomy Sight; because though his eye-balls are seated in their due place, yet he affects to squint and look askew on purpose to fright those on whom he stares. My father, I say, knew that this giant, hearing of his death, would one day invade my kingdom with a powerful army, and drive me out of my territories, without leaving me so much as the least village for a retreat; though he knew withal that I might avoid that extremity, if I would but consent to marry him; but so far as he understood by his art, he thought I never would incline to such a match. And indeed I never had any thoughts of marrying this giant, nor really any other giant in the world, how unmeasurably great and mighty soever he were. My father therefore charged me patiently to bear my misfortunes, and abandon my kingdom to Pandafilando for a time, without offering to keep him out by force of arms, since this would be the best means to prevent my own death and the ruin of my subjects, considering the impossibility of withstanding the devilish force of the giant. But withal, he ordered me to direct my course towards Spain, where I should be sure to meet with a powerful champion, in the person of a knight-errant, whose fame should at that time be spread over all the kingdom; and his name, my father said, should be, if I forget not, Don Azote, or Don Gigote"—"An it please you, forsooth," quoth Sancho, "you would say Don Quixote, otherwise called the Knight of the Doleful Countenance."—"You are right," answered Dorothea, "and my father also described him, and said he should be a tall thin-faced man, and that on his right side, under the left shoulder, or somewhere thereabouts, he should have a tawny mole overgrown with a tuft of hair, not much unlike that of a horse's mane."[1]—With that Don Quixote, calling for his

[1] In the old "Chronicle of King Roderick, and the Loss of Spain"

squire to come to him, "Here," said he, "Sancho, help me off with my clothes, for I am resolved to see whether I be the knight of whom the necromantic king has prophesied."—"Pray, sir, why would you pull off your clothes?" cried Dorothea.—"To see whether I have such a mole about me as your father mentioned," replied the knight.—"Your worship need not strip to know that," quoth Sancho, "for to my knowledge, you have just such a mark as my lady says, on the small of your back, which betokens you to be a strong-bodied man."—"That's enough," said Dorothea; "friends may believe one another without such a strict examination; and whether it be on the shoulder or on the back-bone, it is not very material. In short, I find my father aimed right in all his predictions, and so do I in recommending myself to Don Quixote, whose stature and appearance so well agree with my father's description, and whose renown is so far spread, not only in Spain, but over all La Mancha, that I had no sooner landed at Ossuna, but the fame of his prowess reached my ears; so that I was satisfied in myself he was the person in quest of whom I came."

"But pray, madam," cried Don Quixote, "how did you do to land at Ossuna, since it is no seaport town?"—"Doubtless, sir," said the curate, before Dorothea could answer for herself, "the princess would say, that after she landed at Malaga, the first place where she heard of your feats of arms was Ossuna."—"That is what I would have said," replied Dorothea.—"It is easily understood,"

---

written by Miguel de Luna (and pretended to be translated from the Arabic of one Abulcacen), among other wonderful stories, it is related, that "when the Moor Tarif was at Tarifa with Count Julian, an old Spanish woman was brought into their presence, who said, that when she was a child, she remembered her father saying there was an old prophecy that Spain must pass into the hands of the Moors, and that the captain who should overcome Spain, must be a strong and valorous man, and that, by the same mark, he must have on his right shoulder a hairy mole, as big as a bean. On hearing the which, Tarif forthwith stripped himself, and made manifest in the eyes of all the same great mole of which the old woman had spoken." There is no doubt Cervantes alludes to this story in the text.

said the curate; "then pray let your majesty be pleased to go on with your story."—"I have nothing more to add," answered Dorothea, "but that fortune has at last so far favoured me, as to make me find the noble Don Quixote, by whose valour I look upon myself as already restored to the throne of my ancestors; since he has so courteously and magnanimously vouchsafed to grant me the boon I begged, to go with me wheresoever I should guide him. For all I have to do is, to show him this Pandafilando of the Gloomy Sight, that he may slay him, and restore that to me of which he has so unjustly deprived me. For all this will certainly be done with the greatest ease in the world, since it was foretold by Tinacrio the sage, my good and royal father, who has also left a prediction written either in Chaldean or Greek characters (for I cannot read them) which denotes, that after the knight of the prophecy has cut off the giant's head, and restored me to the possession of my kingdom, if he should ask me to marry him, I should by no means refuse him, but instantly put him in possession of my person and kingdom."—"Well, friend Sancho," said Don Quixote, hearing this, and turning to the squire, "what thinkest thou now? Dost thou not hear how matters go? Did not I tell thee as much before? See now, whether we have not a kingdom which we may command, and a queen whom we may espouse."—"Ah, marry have you," replied Sancho, "and a pox take the son of a whore, I say, that will not wed her as soon as Master Pandafilando's windpipe is slit. Look what a dainty bit she is! ha! would I never had a worse flea in my bed!" With that, to show his joy, he cut a couple of capers in the air; and turning to Dorothea, laid hold on her mule by the bridle, and flinging himself down on his knees, begged she would be graciously pleased to let him kiss her hand, in token of his owning her for his sovereign lady.

There was none of the beholders but was ready to burst for laughter, having a sight of the master's madness and the servant's simplicity. In short, Dorothea was obliged to comply with his entreaties, and promised to make him a grandee, when fortune should favour her with the recovery of her lost kingdom. Whereupon Sancho

gave her his thanks, in such a manner as obliged the company to fresh laughter. Then going on with her relation, "Gentlemen," said she, "this is my history; and among all my misfortunes, this only has escaped a recital, that not one of the numerous attendants I brought from my kingdom has survived the ruins of my fortune, but this good squire with the long beard: the rest ended their days in a great storm, which dashed our ship to pieces in the very sight of the harbour; and he and I had been sharers in their destiny, had we not laid hold of two planks, by which assistance we were driven to land, in a manner altogether miraculous, and agreeable to the whole series of my life, which seems, indeed, but one continued miracle. And if in any part of my relation I have been tedious, and not so exact as I should have been, you must impute it to what Master Curate observed to you, in the beginning of my story, that continual troubles oppress the senses, and weaken the memory."—"Those pains and afflictions, be they ever so intense and difficult," said Don Quixote, "shall never deter me, most virtuous and high-born lady, from adventuring for your service, and enduring whatever I shall suffer in it: and therefore I again ratify the assurances I have given you, and swear that I will bear you company, though to the end of the world, in search of this implacable enemy of yours, till I shall find him; whose insulting head, by the help of Heaven, and my own invincible arm, I am resolved to cut off, with the edge of this (I will not say good) sword; a curse on Gines de Passamonte, who took away my own!" This he spoke murmuring to himself, and then prosecuted his discourse in this manner: "And after I have divided it from the body, and left you quietly possessed of your throne, it shall be left at your own choice to dispose of your person, as you shall think convenient: for as long as I shall have my memory full of her image, my will captivated, and my understanding wholly subjected to her, whom I now forbear to name, it is impossible I should in the least deviate from the affection I bear to her, or be induced to think of marrying, though it were a Phœnix."

The close of Don Quixote's speech, which related to his

not marrying, touched Sancho so to the quick, that he could not forbear bawling out his resentments: "Body o' me, Sir Don Quixote," cried he, "you are certainly out of your wits, or how is it possible you should stick at striking a bargain with so great a lady as this? Do you think, sir, fortune will put such dainty bits in your way at every corner? Is my lady Dulcinea handsomer, do you think? No, marry, is she not half so handsome: I could almost say she is not worthy to fasten this lady's shoe-latchets. I am likely, indeed, to get the earldom I have fed myself with hopes of, if you spend your time in fishing for mushrooms in the bottom of the sea. Marry, marry out of hand, or Old Nick take you for me. Lay hold of the kingdom which is ready to leap into your hands; and as soon as you are a king, e'en make me a marquis, or a peer of the land, and afterwards, let things go at sixes and sevens, it will be all a case to Sancho."—Don Quixote, quite divested of all patience at the blasphemies which were spoken against his lady Dulcinea, could bear with him no longer: and therefore, without so much as a word to give him notice of his displeasure, gave him two such blows with his lance, that poor Sancho measured his length on the ground, and had certainly there breathed his last, had not the knight desisted, through the persuasions of Dorothea. "Thinkest thou," said he, after a considerable pause, "most infamous peasant, that I shall always have leisure and disposition to put up with thy affronts; and that thy whole business shall be to study new offences, and mine to give thee new pardons? Dost thou not know, excommunicated traitor (for certainly excommunication is the least punishment that can fall upon thee, after such profanations of the peerless Dulcinea's name), and art thou not assured, vile slave and ignominious vagabond, that I should not have strength sufficient to kill a flea, did not she give strength to my nerves, and infuse vigour into my sinews? Speak, thou villain with the viper's tongue; who dost thou imagine has restored the queen to her kingdom, cut off the head of a giant, and made thee a marquis (for I count all this as done already), but the power of Dulcinea, who makes use of my arm as the instrument of her act in me? She fights and over-

comes in me, and I live and breathe in her, holding life and being from her. Thou base-born wretch! art thou not possessed of the utmost ingratitude, thou who seest thyself exalted from the very dregs of the earth, to nobility and honour, and yet dost repay so great a benefit with obloquies against the person of thy benefactress."

Sancho was not so mightily hurt, but he could hear what his master said well enough; wherefore, getting upon his legs in all haste, he ran for shelter behind Dorothea's palfrey, and being got thither, "Hark you, sir," cried he to him, "if you have no thought of marrying this same lady, it is a clear case that the kingdom will never be yours; and if it be not, what good can you be able to do me? Then let any one judge whether I have not cause to complain. Therefore, good your worship, marry her once for all, now we have her rained down, as it were, from heaven to us, and you may after keep company with my lady Dulcinea; for I guess you will not be the only king in the world that has kept a miss or two in a corner. As for beauty, do you see, I'll not meddle nor make; for (if I must say the truth), I like both the gentlewomen well enough in conscience; though now I think on it, I have never seen the lady Dulcinea."—"How, not seen her, blasphemous traitor!" replied Don Quixote; "when just now thou broughtest me a message from her!"—"I say," answered Sancho, "I have not seen her so leisurely as to take notice of her features and good parts one by one; but yet, as I saw them at a blush, and all at once, methought I had no reason to find fault with them."—"Well, I pardon thee now," quoth Don Quixote, "and thou must excuse me for what I have done to thee; for the first motions are not in our power."—"I perceive that well enough," said Sancho, "and that is the reason my first motions are always in my tongue; and I cannot for my life help speaking what comes uppermost."—"However, friend Sancho," said Don Quixote, "thou hadst best think before thou speakest; for the pitcher never goes so oft to the well—I need say no more."—"Well, what must be must be," answered Sancho; "there is somebody above who sees all, and will one day judge which has most to answer for, whether I for speaking amiss, or you for

doing so."—"No more of this, Sancho," said Dorothea; "but run and kiss your lord's hands, and beg his pardon; and, for the time to come, be more advised and cautious how you run into the praise or dispraise of any person; but especially take care you do not speak ill of that lady of Toboso, whom I do not know, though I am ready to do her any service; and for your own part trust in Heaven; for you shall infallibly have a lordship, which shall enable you to live like a prince." Sancho shrugged up his shoulders, and in a sneaking posture went and asked his master for his hand, which he held out to him with a grave countenance; and after the squire had kissed the back of it, the knight gave him his blessing, and told him he had a word or two with him, bidding him come nearer, that he might have the better convenience of speaking to him. Sancho did as his master commanded, and going a little from the company with him; "Since thy return," said Don Quixote, applying himself to him, "I have neither had time nor opportunity to inquire into the particulars of thy embassy, and the answer thou hast brought; and therefore, since fortune has now befriended us with convenience and leisure, deny me not the satisfaction thou mayest give me by the rehearsal of thy news."—"Ask what you will," cried Sancho, "and you shall not want for an answer; but, good your worship, for the time to come, I beseech you, do not be too hasty."—"What occasion hast thou, Sancho, to make this request?" replied Don Quixote.—"Reason good enough, truly," said Sancho; "for the blows you gave me even now, were rather given me on account of the quarrel which the devil stirred up between your worship and me the other night, than for your dislike of anything which was spoken against my lady Dulcinea."—"Pr'ythee, Sancho," cried Don Quixote, "be careful of falling again into such irreverent expressions; for they provoke me to anger, and are highly offensive. I pardoned thee then for being a delinquent, but thou art sensible that a new offence must be attended with a new punishment."

As they were going on in such discourse as this, they saw at a distance a person riding up to them on an ass,

who, as he came near enough to be distinguished, seemed to be a gipsy by his habit. But Sancho Panza, who, whenever he got sight of any asses, followed them with his eyes and his heart, as one whose thoughts were ever fixed on his own, had scarce given him half an eye, but he knew him to be Gines de Passamonte, and by the looks of the gipsy found out the visage of his ass; as really it was the very same which Gines had got under him; who to conceal himself from the knowledge of the public, and have the better opportunity of making a good market of his beast, had clothed himself like a gipsy;[1] the cant of that sort of people, as well as the languages of other countries, being as natural and familiar to him as their own. Sancho saw him and knew him; and scarce had he seen and taken notice of him, when he cried out as loud as his tongue would permit him: "Ah! thou thief Genesillo, leave my goods and chattels behind thee: get off from the back of my own dear life: thou hast nothing to do with my poor beast, without whom I cannot enjoy a moment's ease: away from my Dapple, away from my comfort; take to thy heels, thou villain; hence, thou hedge bird, leave what is none of thine!" He had no occasion to use so many words; for Gines dismounted as soon as he heard him speak, and taking to his heels, got from them, and was out of sight in an instant. Sancho ran immediately to his ass, and embraced him: "How hast thou done," cried he, "since I saw thee, my darling and treasure, my dear Dapple, the delight of my eyes, and my dearest companion?" And then he stroked and slobbered him

[1] It is to be wished that this picturesque race, who maintained, and still maintain in the Peninsula, the same sort of manners and habits with which we are familiar, had attracted more of Cervantes' observation than they seem to have done. He has, however, left a pretty novel, under the name of *La Gitana*, where their fortune-telling tricks are made the vehicle of much amusement. The "quicksilver in the ears of the ass," page 324, seems to have been a common trick among the Spanish gipsies. Thus, "Los Gitanos son grandes trucacburras y en su poder parecen las bestias unas Zebras, y en llevandoles el que los compia, son mas lerdas que tortugas."—*Cov.* And in Cervantes' novel of the *Frengona*, "Aunque el Asturiano hallo muchos asnos, ninguno le satisfezo, puesto que *un Gitano* anduvo muy solicito por encaxalle uno, que *mas caminaba por el azotue que le habia echado en sus oidos, que por legireza suya.*"

with kisses, as if the beast had been a rational creature. The ass, for his part, was as silent as could be, and gave Sancho the liberty of as many kisses as he pleased, without the return of so much as one word to the many questions he had put to him. At sight of this the rest of the company came up with him, and paid their compliments of congratulation to Sancho, for the recovery of his ass, especially Don Quixote, who told him, that though he had found his ass again, yet would not he revoke the warrant he had given him for three asses; for which favour Sancho returned him a multitude of thanks.

While they were travelling together, and discoursing after this manner, the curate addressed himself to Dorothea, and gave her to understand, that she had excellently discharged herself of what she had undertaken, as well in the management of the history itself, as in her brevity, and adapting her style to the particular terms made use of in books of knight-errantry. She returned for answer that she had frequently conversed with such romances, but that she was ignorant of the situation of the provinces, and the sea-ports, which occasioned the blunder she had made, by saying that she landed at Ossuna. "I perceived it," replied the curate, "and therefore I put in what you heard, which brought matters to rights again. But is it not an amazing thing, to see how ready this unfortunate gentleman is to give credit to these fictitious reports, only because they have the air of the extravagant stories in books of knight-errantry?" Cardenio said, that he thought this so strange a madness, that he did not believe the wit of man, with all the liberty of invention and fiction, capable of hitting so extraordinary a character."— "The gentleman," replied the curate, "has some qualities in him, even as surprising in a madman, as his unparallelled frenzy: for, take him but off his romantic humour, discourse with him of any other subject, you will find him to handle it with a great deal of reason, and show himself, by his conversation, to have very clear and entertaining conceptions: insomuch, that if knight-errantry bears no relation to his discourse, there is no man but will esteem him for his vivacity of wit, and strength of judgment." While they were thus discoursing, Don

Quixote, prosecuting his converse with his squire, "Sancho," said he, "let us lay aside all manner of animosity; let us forget and forgive injuries;[1] and answer me as speedily as thou canst, without any remains of thy last displeasure, how, when, and where didst thou find my lady Dulcinea? What was she doing when thou first paid'st thy respects to her? How didst thou express thyself to her? What answer was she pleased to make thee? What countenance did she put on at the perusal of my letter? Who transcribed it fairly for thee? And every thing else which has any relation to this affair, without addition, lies or flattery. On the other side, take care thou losest not a tittle of the whole matter, by abbreviating it, lest thou rob me of part of that delight, which I propose to myself from it."—"Sir," answered Sancho, "if I must speak the truth, and nothing but the truth, nobody copied out the letter for me; for I carried none at all."—"That's right," cried Don Quixote, "for I found the pocket-book, in which it was written, two days after thy departure, which occasioned exceeding grief in me, because I knew not what thou could'st do, when thou found'st thyself without the letter; and I could not but be induced to believe that thou would'st have returned, in order to take it with thee," —"I had certainly done so," replied Sancho, "were it not for this head of mine, which kept it in remembrance ever since your worship read it to me, and helped me to say it over to a parish-clerk, who writ it out for me word for word so purely, that he swore, though he had written out many a letter of excommunication in his time, he never in all the days of his life had read or seen any thing so well spoken as it was."—"And dost thou still retain the memory of it, my dear Sancho?" cried Don Quixote.—"Not I," quoth Sancho; "for as soon as I had given it her, and your turn was served, I was very willing to forget it. But if I remember any thing, it is what was on the top; and it was thus: High and superficial, I would say, sovereign lady: and at the bottom, Yours until death, the Knight of the Doleful Countenance; and I put between these two things, three hundred souls and lives and pigsnyes."

[1] [*Echemos pelillos á la mar:* i. e. let us throw trifles (literally small hairs) into the sea.]

CHAPTER XXXI.

The pleasant Dialogue between Don Quixote and his Squire continued, with other Adventures.

"ALL this is mighty well," said Don Quixote; "proceed therefore: you arrived, and how was that queen of beauty then employed? On my conscience, thou found'st her stringing of orient pearls, or embroidering some curious device in gold for me her captive knight; was it not so, my Sancho?"—"No faith," answered the squire, "I found her winnowing a parcel of wheat very seriously in the back-yard."—"Then," said the Don, "you may rest assured, that every corn of that wheat was a grain of pearl, since she did it the honour of touching it with her divine hand. Didst thou observe the quality of the wheat, was it not of the finest sort?"—"Very indifferent, I thought," said the squire.—"Well, this, at least, you must allow; it must make the finest whitest bread, if sifted by her white hands. But go on; when you delivered my letter, did she kiss it? Did she treasure it in her bosom, or what ceremony did she use worthy such a letter? How did she behave herself?"—"Why truly, sir," answered Sancho, "when I offered her the letter, she was very busy handling her sieve; 'and, pr'ythee, honest friend,' said she, 'do so much as lay that letter down upon that sack there; I cannot read it till I have winnowed out what is in my hands.'"—O unparalleled discretion!" cried Don Quixote; "she knew that a perusal required leisure, and therefore deferred it, for her more pleasing and private hours. But oh! my squire, while she was thus employed, what conference passed? What did she ask about her knight, and what did you reply? Say all, say all, my dearest Sancho, let not the smallest circumstance escape the tongue; speak all that thought can frame, or pen describe."—"Her questions were easily answered, sir," said Sancho, "for she asked me none at all: I told her, indeed, in what a sad pickle I had left you for her sake, naked to the waist;

that you ate and slept like the brute beasts; that you would let a razor as soon touch your throat as your beard; that you were still blubbering and crying, or swearing and cursing your fortune."—"There you mistook," replied Don Quixote, "I rather bless my fortune, and always shall, while life affords me breath, since I am thought to merit the esteem of so high a lady as Dulcinea del Toboso."—"There you hit it," said Sancho; "she is a high lady indeed, sir, for she is taller than I am by half a foot."[1]—"Why, how now, Sancho," said the knight, "hast thou measured with her!"—"Ah, marry did I, sir," said the squire; "for you must know that she desired me to lend her a hand in lifting a sack of wheat on an ass; so we buckled about it, and I came so close to her, that I found she was taller than I by a full span at least."—"Right," answered Don Quixote; "but thou art also conscious that the uncommon stature of her person is adorned with innumerable graces and endowments of soul. But, Sancho, when you approached near to her, did not an aromatic smell strike thy sense, a scent so odoriferous, pleasing and sweet, that I want a name for it; sweet as —— you understand me, as the richest fragrancy diffused around a perfumer's magazine of odours? This, at least, you must grant me."—"I did indeed feel a sort of scent a little unsavoury," said Sancho, "somewhat vigorous or so; for I suppose she had wrought hard, and sweated somewhat."—"It is false," answered the knight, "thy smelling has been debauched by thy own scent, or some canker in thy nose: if thou could'st tell the scent of opening roses, fragrant lilies, or the choicest amber, then thou might'st guess at her's."—"Cry mercy, sir," said Sancho; "it may be so indeed, for I remember that I myself have smelt very oft just as Madam Dulcinea did then; and it is no such wondrous thing neither that one devil should be like another."

"But now," said the knight, "supposing the corn winnowed and despatched to the mill, what did she after she had read my letter?"—"Your letter, sir," answered Sancho, "your letter was not read at all, sir; as for her part, she said, she could neither read nor write, and she would trust

[1] [In the original *Coto;* i.e. the breadth of four fingers, and the height of the thumb when raised up in clenching the fist.]

nobody else, lest they should tell tales, and so she cunningly tore your letter. She said, that what I told her by word of mouth of your love and penance was enough: to make short now, she gave her service to you, and said she had rather see you than hear from you; and she prayed you, if ever you loved her, upon sight of me, forthwith to leave your madness among the bushes here, and come straight to Toboso (if you be at leisure), for she has something to say to you, and has a huge mind to see you: she had like to burst with laughing, when I called you the Knight of the Doleful Countenance. She told me the Biscayan whom you mauled so was there, and that he was a very honest fellow; but that she heard no news at all of the galley-slaves."

"Thus far all goes well," said Don Quixote; "but tell me, pray, what jewel did she present you at your departure, as a reward for the news you brought? for it is a custom of ancient standing among knights and ladies errant, to bestow on squires, dwarfs, or damsels, who bring them good news of their ladies or servants, some precious jewel as a grateful reward of their welcome tidings."—"Ah! sir," said Sancho, "that was the fashion in the days of yore, and a very good fashion, I take it: but all the jewels Sancho got was a luncheon of bread and a piece of cheese, which she handed to me over the wall, when I was taking my leave, by the same token (I hope there's no ill luck in it), the cheese was made of sheep's milk."—"It is strange," said Don Quixote, "for she is liberal, even to profuseness; and if she presented thee not a jewel, she had certainly none about her at that time; but what is deferred is not lost, sleeves are good after Easter.[1] I shall see her, and matters shall be accommodated. Knowest thou, Sancho, what raises my astonishment? it is thy sudden return; for, proportioning thy short absence to the length of thy journey, Toboso being, at least, thirty leagues distant, thou must have ridden on the wind. Certainly the sagacious enchanter, who is my guardian and friend (for doubtless such a one there is and ought to be, or I should not be a true knight-errant), certainly I

[1] [A proverbial expression, signifying that a good thing is always seasonable.—JARVIS.]

say, that wise magician has furthered thee on thy journey unawares; for there are sages of such incredible power, as to take up a knight-errant sleeping in his bed, and waken him next morning a thousand leagues from the place where he fell asleep. By this power knights-errant succour one another in their most dangerous exigencies, when and where they please. For instance, suppose me fighting in the mountains of Armenia, with some hellish monster, some dreadful sprite, or fierce gigantic knight, where perhaps I am like to be worsted (such a thing may happen), when just in the very crisis of my fate, when I least expect it, I behold on the top of a flying cloud, or riding in a flaming chariot, another knight, my friend, who, but a minute before, was in England perhaps—he sustains me, delivers me from death, and returns that night to his own lodging, where he sups with a very good appetite after his journey, having ridden two or three thousand leagues that day; and all this performed by the industry and wisdom of these knowing magicians, whose only business and charge is glorious knight-errantry. Some such expeditious power, I believe, Sancho, though hidden from you, has promoted so great a despatch in your late journey."—"I believe, indeed," answered Sancho, "that there was witchcraft in the case, for Rozinante went without spur all the way, and was as mettlesome as though he had been a gipsy's ass, with quicksilver in his ears."—"Quicksilver! you coxcomb," said the knight, "ay, and a troop of devils besides; and they are the best horse-coursers in nature, you must know, for they must needs go whom the devil drives; but no more of that.—What is thy advice as to my lady's commands to visit her? I know her power should regulate my will. But then my honour, Sancho, my solemn promise has engaged me to the princess's service that comes with us, and the law of arms confines me to my word. Love draws me one way, and glory the other: on this side Dulcinea's strict commands, on the other my promised faith: but——it is resolved. I'll travel night and day, cut off this giant's head, and, having settled the princess in her dominions, will presently return to see that sun which enlightens my senses. She will easily condescend to excuse my absence,

when I convince her it was for her fame and glory; since the past, present, and future success of my victorious arms, depends wholly on the gracious influences of her favour, and the honour of being her knight."—"Oh sad! oh sad!" said Sancho; "I doubt your worship's head is much the worse for wearing. Are you mad, sir, to take so long a voyage for nothing? why don't you catch at this preferment that now offers, where a fine kingdom is the portion, twenty thousand leagues round, they say; nay, bigger than Portugal and Castile both together. Good your worship, hold your tongue, I wonder you are not ashamed. Take a fool's counsel for once, marry her by the first priest you meet; here is our own curate can do the job most curiously.[1] Come, master, I have hair enough in my beard to make a counsellor, and my advice is as fit for you as your shoe for your foot:—a bird in hand is worth two in the bush, and

> 'He that will not when he may,
> When he would, he shall have nay.'"

"Thou advisest me thus," answered Don Quixote, "that I may be able to promote thee according to my promise; but that I can do without marrying this lady; for I shall make this the condition of entering into battle, that after my victory, without marrying the princess, she shall leave part of her kingdom at my disposal, to gratify whom I please; and who can claim any such gratuity but thyself?"—"That's plain," answered Sancho; "but pray, sir, take care that you reserve some part near the sea-side for me; that if the air does not agree with me, I may transport my black slaves, make my profit of them, and go live somewhere else; so that I would have you resolve upon it presently, leave the lady Dulcinea for the present, and go kill this same giant, and make an end of that business first; for I dare swear it will yield you a good market."—"I am fixed in thy opinion," said Don Quixote; "but I admonish thee not to whisper to any person the least hint of our conference; for since Dulcinea is so cautious and

[1] [In the original, *lo hará de perlas:* as if it was done with pearl, i.e. to a nicety.]

secret, it is proper that I and mine should follow her example."—"Why the devil then," said Sancho, "should you send every body you overcome, packing to Madam Dulcinea, to fall down before her, and tell her, they came from you to pay their obedience, when this tells all the world that she is your mistress, as much as if they had it under your own hand?"—"How dull of apprehension and stupid thou art," said the knight; "hast thou not sense to find that all this redounds to her greater glory? Know, that in proceedings of chivalry, a lady's honour is calculated from the number of her servants, whose services must not tend to any reward but the favour of her acceptance, and the pure honour of performing them for her sake, and being called her servants."—"I have heard our curate," answered Sancho, "preach up this doctrine of loving for love's sake, and that we ought to love our Maker so for His own sake, without either hope of good, or fear of pain: though, for my part, I would love and serve Him for what I could get."—"Thou art an unaccountable fellow," cried Don Quixote; "thou talkest sometimes with so much sense, that one would imagine thee to be something of a scholar."—"A scholar, sir?" answered Sancho, "lack-a-day, I do not know, as I am an honest man, a letter in the book."

Master Nicholas, seeing them so deep in discourse, called to them to stop and drink at a little fountain by the road. Don Quixote halted, and Sancho was very glad of the interruption, his stock of lies being almost spent, and he stood in danger besides of being trapped in his words, for he had never seen Dulcinea, though he knew she lived at Toboso. Cardenio by this had changed his clothes for those Dorothea wore when they found her in the mountains; and though they made but an ordinary figure, they looked much better than those he had put off.[1] They all stopped at the fountain, and fell aboard the curate's provision, which was but a snap among so many, for they were all very hungry. While they sat refreshing themselves, a young lad, travelling that way, observed them,

[1] [I.e. the ragged apparel he wore before he was dressed in the priest's short cassock and cloak.]—See Additional Note XVII.

and, looking earnestly on the whole company, ran suddenly and fell down before Don Quixote, addressing him in a very doleful manner. "Alas! good sir," said he, "don't you know me? don't you remember poor Andrew, whom you caused to be untied from the tree?"—With that the knight knew him; and, raising him up, turned to the company: "That you may all know," said he, "of how great importance, to the redressing of injuries, punishing vice, and the universal benefit of mankind, the business of knight-errantry may be, you must understand, that, riding through a desert some days ago, I heard certain lamentable shrieks and outcries. Prompted by the misery of the afflicted, and borne away by the zeal of my profession, I followed the voice, and found this boy, whom you all see, bound to a great oak. I am glad he is present, because he can attest the truth of my relation. I found him, as I told you, bound to an oak; naked from the waist upwards, and a bloody-minded peasant scourging his back unmercifully with the reins of a bridle. I presently demanded the cause of his severe chastisement. The rude fellow answered, that he had liberty to punish his own servant, whom he thus used for some faults that argued him more knave than fool. 'Good sir,' said the boy, 'he can lay nothing to my charge, but demanding my wages.' His master made some reply, which I would not allow as a just excuse, and ordered him immediately to unbind the youth, and took his oath that he would take him home and pay him all his wages upon the nail, in good and lawful coin. Is not this literally true, Andrew? did you not mark, besides, with what face of authority I commanded, and with how much humility he promised to obey all I imposed, commanded, and desired? Answer me, boy; and tell boldly all that passed to this worthy company, that it may appear how necessary the vocation of knights-errant is up and down the high roads."

"All you have said is true enough," answered Andrew; "but the business did not end after that manner you and I hoped it would."—"How!" said the knight, "has not the peasant paid you?"—"Ay, he has paid me with a vengeance," said the boy; "for no sooner was your back turned, but he tied me again to the same tree, and lashed

me so cursedly, that I looked like St. Bartholomew flayed alive; and at every blow he had some joke or another to laugh at you; and had he not laid on me as he did, I fancy I could not have helped laughing myself. At last he left me in so pitiful a case, that I was forced to crawl to an hospital, where I have lain ever since to get cured, so wofully the tyrant had lashed me. And now, I may thank you for this, for had you ridden on your journey, and neither meddled nor made, seeing nobody sent for you, and it was none of your business, my master, perhaps, had been satisfied with giving me ten or twenty lashes, and after that would have paid me what he owed me; but you were so huffy, and called him so many names, that it made him mad, and so he vented all his spite against you upon my poor back, as soon as yours was turned, insomuch that I fear I shall never be mine own man again."—"The miscarriage," answered the knight, "is only chargeable on my departure before I saw my orders executed; for I might by experience have remembered, that the word of a peasant is regulated, not by honour, but by profit. But you remember, Andrew, how I swore, if he disobeyed, that I would return and seek him through the universe, and find him, though hid in a whale's belly."—"Ah! sir," answered Andrew, "but that's no cure for my sore shoulders."—"You shall be redressed," answered the knight, starting fiercely up, and commanding Sancho immediately to bridle Rozinante, who was baiting as fast as the rest of the company.

Dorothea asked what he intended to do: he answered, that he intended to find out the villain, and punish him severely for his crimes, then force him to pay Andrew his wages to the last maravedi, in spite of all the peasants in the universe. She then desired him to remember his engagements to her, which withheld him from any new achievement till that was finished; that he must therefore suspend his resentments till his return from her kingdom. "It is but just and reasonable," said the knight; "and therefore Andrew must wait with patience my return: but when I do return, I do hereby ratify my former oath and promise, never to rest till he be fully satisfied and paid."—"I dare not trust to that," answered

Andrew; "but if you will bestow on me as much money as will bear my charges to Seville, I shall thank your worship more than for all the revenge you tell me of. Give me a snap to eat, and a bit in my pocket, and so heaven be with you and all other knights-errant, and may they prove as arrant fools in their own business as they have been in mine."

Sancho took a crust of bread and a slice of cheese, and, reaching it to Andrew, "There, friend," said he, "there is something for thee; on my word, we have all of us a share of thy mischance."—"What share?" said Andrew.—"Why, the curst mischance of parting with this bread and cheese to thee; for my head to a half-penny, I may live to want it; for thou must know, friend of mine, that we, the squires of knights-errant, often pick our teeth without a dinner, and are subject to many other things, which are better felt than told." Andrew snatched at the provender, and, seeing no likelihood of any more, he made his leg and marched off. But, looking over his shoulder at Don Quixote, "Hark ye, you Sir Knight-errant," cried he, "if ever you meet me again in your travels, which I hope you never shall, though I were torn in pieces, do not trouble me with your plaguy help, but mind your own business; and so fare you well, with a curse upon you and all the knights errant that ever were born."—The knight thought to chastise him, but the lad was too nimble for any there, and his heels carried him off, leaving Don Quixote highly incensed at his story, which moved the company to hold their laughter, lest they should raise his anger to a dangerous height.

CHAPTER XXXII.

What befell Don Quixote and his Company at the Inn.

WHEN they had eaten plentifully, they left that place, and travelled all that day and the next, without meeting any thing worth notice, till they came to the inn, which was so frightful a sight to poor Sancho, that he would

willingly not have gone in, but could by no means avoid it. The inn-keeper, the hostess, her daughter, and Maritornes, met Don Quixote and his squire with a very hearty welcome. The knight received them with a face of gravity and approbation, bidding them prepare him a better bed than their last entertainment afforded him. "Sir," said the hostess, "pay us better than you did then, and you shall have a bed for a prince."—And upon the knight's promise that he would, she promised him a tolerable bed, in the large room where he lay before. He presently undressed, and, being heartily crazed in body as well as in mind, he went to bed. He was scarcely got to his chamber, when the hostess flew suddenly at the barber, and, catching him by the beard, "On my life," said she, "you shall use my tail no longer for a beard: let me have my tail back; my husband's is lying all about, and a shame it is,—I mean his comb, that he sticks into my fine tail."—The barber held tug with her till the curate advised him to return it, telling him that he might now undisguise himself, and tell Don Quixote, that after the galley-slaves had pillaged him he fled to that inn; and if he should ask for the princess's squire, he should pretend that he was despatched to her kingdom before her, to give her subjects an account of her arrival, and of the power she brought to free them all from slavery. The barber, thus schooled, gave the hostess her tail, with the other trinkets which he had borrowed, to decoy Don Quixote out of the desert. Dorothea's beauty, and Cardenio's handsome shape, surprised every body. The curate bespoke supper, and the host, being pretty secure of his reckoning, soon got them a tolerable entertainment. They would not disturb the knight, who slept very soundly, for his distemper wanted rest more than meat; but they diverted themselves with the hostess's account of his encounter with the carriers, and of Sancho's being tossed in a blanket. Don Quixote's unaccountable madness was the principal subject of their discourse; upon which the curate insisting, and arguing it to proceed from his reading romances, the inn-keeper took him up.

"Sir," said he, "you cannot make me of your opinion; for, in my mind, it is the pleasantest reading that ever

was. I have now in the house two or three books of that kind, and some other pieces, that really have kept me, and many others, alive. In harvest time, a great many of the reapers come to drink here in the heat of the day, and he that can read best among us takes up one of these books, and all the rest of us, sometimes thirty or more, sit round about him, and listen with such pleasure, that we think neither of sorrow nor care. For my own part, when I hear the mighty blows and dreadful battles of those knights-errant, I have half a mind to be one myself, and am raised to such a life and briskness, that I could frighten away old age. I could sit and hear them from morning till night."—"I wish you would, husband," said the hostess; "for then we should have some rest; for at all other times you are so out of humour, and so snappish, that we lead a hellish life with you."—"That is true enough," said Maritornes; "and for my part, I think there are mighty pretty stories in those books, especially that one about the young lady who is hugged so sweetly by her knight under the orange-tree, when the damsel watches lest somebody comes, and stands with her mouth watering all the while; and a thousand such stories, which I would often forego my dinner and supper to hear."—"And what think you of this matter, young miss?" said the curate to the inn-keeper's daughter.—"Alack-a-day, sir," said she, "I do not understand those things, and yet I love to hear them: but I do not like that frightful ugly fighting, that so pleases my father. Indeed, the sad lamentations of the poor knights, for the loss of their mistresses, sometimes make me cry like any thing."—"I suppose, then, young gentlewoman," said Dorothea, "you will be tender-hearted, and will never let a lover die for you."—"I do not know what may happen as to that," said the girl; "but this I know, that I will never give anybody reason to call me tigress and lioness, and I do not know how many other ugly names, as those ladies are often called; and I think they deserve yet worse, so they do; for they can never have soul nor conscience, to let such fine gentlemen die or run mad for a sight of them. What signifies all their fiddling and coyness? If they are civil women, why do not they marry them; for that

is all their knights would be at?"—"Hold your prating, mistress," said the hostess, "how came you to know all this? It is not for such as you to talk of these matters."—"The gentleman only asked me a question," said she, "and it would be uncivil not to answer him."—"Well," said the curate, "do me the favour, good landlord, to bring out these books, that I may have a sight of them."

"With all my heart," said the inn-keeper; and with that, stepping to his chamber, he opened a little trunk that shut with a chain, and took out three large volumes, with a parcel of manuscripts, in a fair legible character. The title of the first was Don Cirongilio of Thrace; the second, Felixmarte of Hircania,[1] and the third was the History of the Great Captain Gonzalo Hernandez de Cordova, together with the Life of Diego Garcia de Paredes.[2] The curate, reading the title, turned to the barber, and told him, they wanted now Don Quixote's housekeeper and his niece. "I shall do as well with the books," said the barber, "for I can find the way to the back-yard, or to the chimney; there is a good fire that will do their business."—"Business!" said the inn-keeper, "I hope you would not burn my books?"—"Only two of them," said the curate; "this same Don Cirongilio, and his friend Felixmarte."—"I hope, sir," said the host, "they are neither heretics nor phlegmatics."—"Schismatics,

[1] The adventures of Cirongilio were celebrated in a folio, by Bernardo de Vargas. I have already spoken of the other; but I should have mentioned, when doing so, an anecdote of Dr. Samuel Johnson, told by Boswell, on the authority of Bishop Percy. The bishop informed Boswell that the doctor, when a boy, "was immoderately fond of reading romances of chivalry, and he retained his fondness for them through life; so that, spending part of a summer at my parsonage-house in the country, he chose for his regular reading the old Spanish romance of Felixmarte of Hyrcania, in folio, which he read quite through." Boswell, Chap. II.—The inn-keeper, therefore, may be excused, in spite of the curate's sarcasms.

[2] The rare folio referred to is entitled, "Chronica del gran Capitan Gonsalvo Hernandez de Cordova y Aguilar, con la vida del famoso D. Diego Garcia de Paredes. En Sevilla, 1582." The account it contains of the life of the great captain is exceedingly graphic and minute; and the modest memoir of Garcia de Paredes, at the end of the volume, is peculiarly interesting, by reason of its having been written by the distinguished soldier himself, of whose actions it treats. —See Additional Note XVIII.

you mean," said the barber.—"I mean so," said the inn-keeper; "and if you must burn any, let it be this of the Great Captain, and Diego Garcia; for you should sooner burn one of my children than the others."—"These books, honest friend," said the curate, "that you appear so concerned for, are senseless rhapsodies of falsehood and folly; and this which you so despise is a true history, and contains a true account of two celebrated men. The first, by his bravery and courage, purchased immortal fame, and the name of the Great Captain, by the universal consent of mankind; the other, Diego Garcia de Paredes, was of noble extraction, and born in Truxillo, a town of Estremadura, and was a man of singular courage, and of such mighty strength, that with one of his hands he could stop a mill-wheel in its most rapid motion; and with his single force defended the passage of a bridge against a great army. Several other great actions are related in the memoirs of his life, but all with so much modesty and unbiassed truth, that they easily pronounce him his own historiographer; and had they been written by any one else, with freedom and impartiality, they might have eclipsed your Hectors, Achilles, and Orlandos, with all their heroic exploits."—"Tell my grandfather!" said the inn-keeper. "Holding a mill-wheel! why is that such a mighty matter? Odds fish, do but turn over a leaf of Felixmarte there; you will find how with one single back-stroke he cut five swinging giants off by the middle, as if they had been so many bean-cods, of which the children make little puppet-friars;[1] and read how, at another time, he charged a most mighty and powerful army of above a million and six hundred thousand fighting men, all armed cap-a-pee, and routed them all like so many sheep. And what can you say of the worthy Cirongilio of Thrace? who, as you may read there, going by water one day, was assaulted by a fiery serpent in the middle of the river; he presently leaped nimbly upon her back, and hanging by her scaly neck, grasped her

[1] [An annotator explains that children in Spain make playthings, resembling friars, out of bean-cods, by breaking enough of the upper end to show part of the first bean, which represents the bald head, and letting the broken part hang back like a cowl.]

throat fast with both his arms, so that the serpent, finding herself almost strangled, was forced to dive into the water to save herself, and carried the knight, who would not quit his hold, to the very bottom, where he found a stately palace, and such pleasant gardens, that it was a wonder; and straight the serpent turned into a very old man, and told him such things as were never heard nor spoken. Now, a fig for your Great Captain, and your Diego Garcia."—Dorothea, hearing this, said softly to Cardenio, that the host was capable of playing second part to Don Quixote. "I think so too," cried Cardenio, "for it is plain he believes every tittle contained in those books; nor can all the Carthusian friars in the world persuade him otherwise."—"I tell thee, friend," said the curate, "there were never any such persons as your books of chivalry mention, upon the face of the earth; your Felixmarte of Hircania, and your Cirongilio of Thrace, are all but chimeras, and fictions of idle and luxuriant wits, who wrote them for the same reason that you read them, because they had nothing else to do."—"Sir," said the inn-keeper, "you must angle with another bait, or you will catch no fish;[1] I know what's what, as well as another; I can tell where my own shoe pinches me; and you must not think, sir, to catch old birds with chaff. A pleasant jest, faith, that you should pretend to persuade me now that these notable books are lies and stories! why, sir, are they not in print? Are they not published according to order? licensed by authority from the Royal Council? And do you think that they would permit so many untruths to be printed, and such a number of battles and enchantments, to set us all a-madding?"—"I have told you already, friend," replied the curate, "that this is licensed for our amusement in our idle hours; for the same reason that tennis, billiards, chess, and other recreations are tolerated, that men may find a pastime for those hours they cannot find employment for. Neither could the government foresee this inconvenience from such books, that you urge, because they could not reasonably suppose any rational person would believe their absurdi-

[1] [In the original, *A otro perro con ese hueso, &c.*, i. e., give that bone to another dog.]

ties. And were this a proper time, I could say a great deal in favour of such writings; and how, with some regulations, they might be made both instructive and diverting. But I design, upon the first opportunity, to communicate my thoughts on this head to some that may redress it. In the mean time, honest landlord, you may put up your books and believe them true if you please, and much good may they do you. And I wish you may never halt of the same foot as your guest, Don Quixote." —"There's no fear of that," said the inn-keeper, "for I never design to turn knight-errant; because I find the customs when those famous knights went about the world are quite out of fashion now."

About the middle of their discourse entered Sancho, who was very uneasy at hearing that knights-errant were out of fashion, and books of chivalry full of nothing but folly and fiction; he resolved, however, in spite of all their contempt of chivalry, still to stick by his master; and if his intended expedition failed of success, then to return to his family and wonted labour. As the inn-keeper was carrying away the books, the curate desired his leave to look over those manuscripts which appeared in so fair a character; he reached them to him, to the number of eight sheets, on one of which there was written in a large hand, *The Tale of the Foolish Doubter.* "The title," said the curate, "promises something, perhaps it may be worth reading through."—"Your reverence," said the inn-keeper, "may be worse employed; for that tale has received the approbation of several ingenious guests of mine who have read it, and who would have begged it of me; but I would by no means part with it, till I deliver it to the owner of this trunk, who left it here with these books and papers; I may, perhaps, see him again, and restore them honestly; for I am as much a Christian as my neighbours, though I am an inn-keeper."—"But I hope," said the curate, "if it pleases me, you will not deny me a copy of it."—"Nay, as to that matter," said the host, "we shall not fall out."—Cardenio having by this perused it a little, recommended it to the curate, and entreated him to read it for the entertainment of the company. The curate would have excused himself, by urging the unseasonable

time of night, and that sleep was then more proper, especially for the lady. "A pleasant story," said Dorothea, "will prove the best repose for some hours to me; for my spirits are not composed enough to allow me to rest, as I ought." Master Nicholas and Sancho joined in the request.—Seeing that it would please them as well as himself, the curate said, "If you will give your attention then, I will begin."

CHAPTER XXXIII.

In which is narrated the Tale of the Foolish Doubter.[1]

Anselmo and Lothario, considerable gentlemen of Florence, the capital city of Tuscany in Italy, were so eminent for their friendship, that they were called nothing but the Two Friends. They were both young and unmarried, of the same age and humour, which did not a little concur to the continuance of their mutual affection, though, of the two, Anselmo was the most amorously inclined, and Lothario the greater lover of hunting; yet they loved one another above all other considerations; and mutually quitted their own pleasure for their friend's; and their very wills, like the different motions of a well-regulated watch, were always subservient to their unity, and still kept time with one another. Anselmo, at last, fell desperately in love with a beautiful lady of the same city; so eminent for her fortune and family, that he resolved, by the consent of his friend (for he did nothing without his advice), to demand her in marriage. Lothario was the person employed in this affair, which he managed with that address, that in few days he put his friend in possession of Camilla, for that was the lady's name; and this so much to their satisfaction, that he received a thousand acknowledgments from both, for the equal happiness they derived from his endeavours. Lothario, as long as the nuptials lasted, was every day at Anselmo's, and did all he could to add to the sports and diversions of the occasion. But as soon as the new-married pair had received the congratulations of their

[1] [*El Curioso Impertinente.*]

friends, and the nuptial ceremonies were over, Lothario retired with the rest of their acquaintance, and forbore his visits, because he prudently imagined that it was not at all proper to be so frequent at his friend's house after marriage as before; for though true friendship entirely banishes all suspicion and jealousy, yet the honour of a married man is of so nice and tender a nature, that it has been sometimes sullied by the conversation of the nearest relations, and therefore more liable to suffer from that of a friend. Anselmo observed this remissness of Lothario; and, fond as he was of his wife, showed by his tender complaints how much it affected him. He told him, that if he could have believed he must also have left so dear a correspondence by marriage, much as he loved, he would never have paid so great a price for the satisfaction of his passion; and that he would never, for the idle reputation of a cautious husband, suffer so tender and agreeable a name to be lost, as that of the Two Friends, which, before his marriage, they had so happily obtained; and therefore he begged him, if that were a term lawful to be used betwixt them two, to return to his former familiarity and freedom of conversation; assuring him, that his wife's will and pleasure were entirely formed by his; and that being acquainted with their ancient and strict friendship, she was equally surprised at so unexpected a change.

Lothario replied to these endearing persuasions of his friend, with such prudence and discretion, that he convinced him of the sincerity of his intentions in what he had done; and so, in conclusion, they agreed that Lothario should dine twice a-week at his house, besides holidays. Yet Lothario's compliance with this resolution being only not to disoblige his friend, he designed to observe it no farther than he should find it consistent with Anselmo's honour, whose reputation was as dear to him as his own: and he used to tell him, that the husband of a beautiful wife ought to be as cautious of the friends whom he carried home to her himself, as of her female acquaintance and visitants. For a friend's or relation's house often renders the contrivance of those things easy and not suspected, which could not not be compassed either in the church,

the markets, or at public entertainments and places of resort, which no man can entirely keep a woman from frequenting. To this Lothario said also, that every married man ought to have some friend to put him in mind of the defects of his conduct; for a husband's fondness many times makes him either not see, or at least, for fear of displeasing his wife, not command or forbid her what may be advantageous or prejudicial to his reputation. In all which, a friend's warning and advice might supply him with a proper remedy. But where shall we find a friend so qualified with wisdom and truth as Anselmo demands? I must confess I cannot tell, unless it were Lothario, whose care of his friend's honour made him so cautious as not to comply with his promised visiting days, lest the malicious observers should give a scandalous censure of the frequent admission of a gentleman so well qualified both in wit, fortune, youth and address, to the house of a lady of such celebrated beauty as Camilla: for though his virtue was sufficiently known to check the growth of any malignant report, yet he would not suffer his friend's honour, nor his own, to run the hazard of being called in question; which made him spend the greatest part of those days he had by promise devoted to his friend's conversation, in other places and employments; yet excusing his absence so agreeably, that Anselmo could not deny the reasonableness of what he alleged. And thus the time passed away in pathetic accusations of want of love and friendship on one side, and plausible excuses on the other.

"I know very well," said Anselmo, walking one day in the fields with his friend, "that of all the favours and benefits for which heaven commands my gratitude, as the advantage of my birth, fortune, and nature, the greatest and most obliging is the gift of such a wife, and such a friend: being both of you pledges of so great value, that though it is impossible for me to raise my esteem and love equal to your deserts, yet I do so as far as I can. And yet while I am in possession of all that can or usually does make a man happy, I live the most discontented life in the world. I am not able to tell you when my misery began, which now inwardly torments me with so strange, extravagant, and singular a desire, that I never

reflect on it, but I wonder at myself, and condemn and curb my folly, and would fain hide my desires even from myself: and thus it has been possible for me to reveal this secret, even as if I would strive to have it published to all the world. Since therefore it is evident that it will at last break out, dear Lothario, I would have it go no farther than thy known fidelity and secrecy; for that and my own industry, which as my friend thou wilt turn to my assistance, will quickly, I hope, free me from the anguish it now gives me, and restore me that tranquillity of which my own folly has now deprived me."

Lothario stood in great suspense, unable to guess at the consequence of so strange and prolix an introduction. In vain he racked his imagination for the causes of his friend's affliction, the truth was the last thing he could think of; but no longer to remain in doubt, he told Anselmo, that he did his friendship a particular injury, in not coming directly to the point in the discovery of his thoughts to him, since his counsels might enable him to support, and, perhaps, to lose or compass such importunate desire.

"It is very true," replied Anselmo; "and with that assurance I must inform you, that the desire that gives me so much pain, is to know whether Camilla be really as virtuous as I think her. Nor can this be made evident but by such a trial, that, like gold by the fire, the standard and degree of her worth be discovered. For, in my opinion, no woman has more virtue than she retains, after the force of the most earnest solicitations; and she only may be said to be strong, who has withstood the force of tears, vows, promises, gifts, and all the importunities of lovers not easily denied: for where is the praise of a woman's virtue whom nobody has ever endeavoured to corrupt? Where is the wonder if a wife be reserved, when she has no temptation nor opportunity of being otherwise, especially if she have a jealous husband, with whom the least suspicion goes for a reality, and who therefore punishes the least appearance with death. Now I can never so much esteem her who owes her virtue merely to fear or want of opportunity of being false, as I would one who victoriously surmounts all the assaults

of a vigorous and watchful lover, and yet retains her virtue entire and unshaken. These, and many other reasons, which I could urge to strengthen my opinion, make me desire that my Camilla's virtue may pass through the fiery trial of vigorous solicitations and addresses, and these offered by a gallant who may have merit enough to deserve her good opinion; and if, as I am confident she will, she be able to resist so agreeable a temptation, I shall think myself the most happy man in the world, and attain to the height and utmost aim of my desires, and shall say, that a virtuous woman is fallen to my lot, of whom the wise man says, *who can find her?* If she yields, I shall, at least, have the satisfaction of finding my opinion of women justified; and not be imposed on by a foolish confidence that abuses most men; which consideration will be sufficient to make me support the grief I shall derive from so expensive an experiment. And assuring myself, that nothing which you can say can dissuade me from my resolution, I desire that you yourself, my dear friend, would be the person to put my design in execution. I will furnish you with opportunities enough of making your addresses, in which I would have you omit nothing you may suppose likely to prevail with, and work upon a woman of quality, who is modest, virtuous, reserved, and discreet by nature. The most prevailing reason that makes me choose you for this affair above all others, is, because if she should prove so frail, as to be overcome by addresses and importunities, the victory will not cost me so dear, since I am secured from your taking that advantage, of which another might make no scruple.

"And so my honour will remain untouched, and the intended injury a secret, in the virtue of thy silence; for I know my friend so well, that death and the grave will as soon divulge my affairs. Wherefore, if you would give me life indeed, and deliver me from the most perplexing torment of doubt, you will immediately begin this amorous assault, with all that warmth, assiduity, and courage, I expect from that confidence I put in your friendship."

Lothario gave so great an attention to Anselmo's reasons,

that he gave him no other interruption than what we mentioned. But now, finding his discourse was at an end, full of amazement at the extravagance of the proposal, he thus replied: "Could I, my dear Anselmo, persuade myself that what you have said were any more than a piece of raillery, I should not have been so long silent; no, I should have interrupted you at the beginning of your speech. Sure you know neither yourself nor me, Anselmo, or you would never have employed me on such an affair, if you had not thought me as much altered from what I was, as you seem to be; for as the poet has it, *usque ad aras;* a true friend ought to desire nothing of his friend that is offensive to Heaven. If a pagan held thought thus of friendship, how much more should a Christian: but should a man go so far as to put aside religion, in compliance to his friend, no trifling motives can excuse the transgression, but such only as concern, at least, his friend's life and honour. Which therefore of these, Anselmo, is in danger, to warrant my undertaking so detestable a thing as you desire? Neither, I dare engage. On the contrary, you would make me the assaulter of both, in which my own is included; for to rob you of your reputation, is to take away your life, since an infamous life is worse than death; and by making me the guilty instrument of this, as you would have me, you make me worse than a dead man, by the murder of my reputation. Therefore I desire you would hear with patience what I have to urge against your extravagant desire, and I shall afterwards hear your reply without interruption."

Anselmo having promised his attention, Lothario proceeded in this manner. "In my opinion, you are not unlike the Moors, who are incapable of being convinced of the error of their religion, by scripture, speculative reasons, or those drawn immediately from the articles of our faith; and will yield to nothing but demonstrations, as evident as those of the mathematics, and which can as little be denied, as when we say, if from two equal parts, we take away two equal parts, the parts that remain are also equal. And when they do not understand this proposition, which they seldom do, we are obliged by ocular demonstration to make it yet more plain and obvious to

their senses: and yet all this labour will at last prove ineffectual to the convincing them of the verities of our religion. The same must be my method with you, since your strange desire is so very foreign to all manner of reason, that I very much fear I shall spend my time and labour in vain, in endeavouring to convince you of your own folly, for I can afford it no other name. Nay, did I not love you as I do, I should leave you to the prosecution of your own odd humour, which certainly tends to your ruin. But to lay your folly a little more open, you bid me, Anselmo, attempt a woman of honour, cautious of her reputation, and one who is not much inclined to love; for all these good qualifications you allowed her. If therefore you already know your wife is possessed of all these advantages of prudence, discretion, honour, and reservedness, what have you more to inquire after? And if you believe, as I myself do, that she will be impregnable to all my assaults; what greater and better names will you give her, than she already deserves? Either you pretend to think better of her, than really you do, or else you desire you know not what yourself. But then if you do not believe her as virtuous as you pretend, why would you put it to the trial, why do you not rather use her as you think she deserves? On the other hand, if she be as good as you profess you believe her, why would you go to tempt truth and goodness itself, without any reasonable prospect of advantage? For when the trial is over, she will be but the same virtuous woman she was before. Wherefore it is allowed that it is the effect of temerity, and want of reason, to attempt what is likely to produce nothing but danger and detriment to the undertaker, especially when there is no necessity for it, and when we may easily foresee the folly of the undertaking. There are but these motives to incite us to difficult attempts: religion, interest, or both together. The first makes the saints endeavour to lead angelic lives in these frail bodies. The second makes us expose ourselves to the hazards of long voyages and travels in pursuit of riches. The third motive is compounded of both, and prompts us to act as well for the honour of God, as for our own particular glory and interest; as for example, the daring adventures of the valiant soldier,

who, urged by his duty to God, his prince, and his country, fiercely runs into the midst of a dreadful breach, unterrified with any considerations of the danger that threatens him. These are things done every day, and let them be never so dangerous, they bring honour, glory, and profit to those that attempt them. But by the project you design to reduce to an experiment, you will never obtain either the glory of heaven, profit, or reputation: for should the experiment answer your expectation, it will make no addition either to your content, honour, or riches; but if it disappoint your hopes, it makes you the most miserable man alive. And the imaginary advantage of no man's knowing your disgrace will soon vanish, when you consider, that to know it yourself, will be enough to supply you perpetually with all the tormenting thoughts in the world. A proof of this is what the famous poet Luigi Tansilo, at the end of his first part of St. Peter's Tears,[1] says, in these words:

'Shame, grief, remorse in Peter's breast increase,
Soon as the blushing morn his crime betrays.
When most unseen, then most himself he sees,
And with due horror all his soul surveys.

For a great spirit needs no censuring eyes
To wound his soul, when conscious of a fault;
But self-condemn'd and even self-punish'd lies,
And dreads no witness like upbraiding thought.'

"So that your boasted secrecy, far from alleviating your grief, will only serve to increase it; and if your eyes do not express it by outward tears, they will flow from your very heart in blood. So wept that simple doctor, who, as our poet tells us, made that experiment on the brittle vessel, which the more prudent Reynaldus excused himself from doing.[2] This, indeed, is but a poetical fiction, but yet the moral which it enforces is worthy of being

[1] This was a pious work, written by the Neapolitan poet in his old age, by way of atonement for the more celebrated, and extremely licentious production of his younger years, entitled, "Il Vendemmiatore."

[2] It seems certain that Cervantes took his first idea of the exquisite novel of the Impertinent Curiosity, from that adventure in Ariosto, to which he here alludes. The properties of the "brittle vessel," to which

observed and imitated. And accordingly I hope you will discover the strange mistake into which you would run, principally when you have heard what I have farther to say to you.

"Suppose, Anselmo, you had a diamond, as valuable, in the judgment of the best jewellers, as such a stone could be, would you not be satisfied with their opinion, without trying its hardness on the anvil? You must own, that should it be proof against your blows, it would not be one jot the more valuable than really it was before your foolish trial; but should it happen to break, as well it might, the jewel was then entirely lost, as well as the sense and reputation of the owner. This precious diamond, my friend, is your Camilla, for so she ought to be esteemed in all men's opinions as well as your own, Why then would you imprudently put her in danger of falling, since your trial will add no greater value to her than she has already? But if she should prove frail, reflect with yourself on the unhappiness of your condition, and how justly you might complain of your being the cause of both her ruin and your own. Consider, that as a modest and honest woman is the most valuable jewel in the world, so all women's virtue and honour consist in the

---

the experiment referred, are thus explained by the host, at the end of the 42nd Canto of the Orlando.

"Se bei con questo, vedrai grande effetto;
Chè, se porti *il cimier di Cornuaglia*,
Il vin te spargerai tutto sul petto,
Nè gocciola sarà che in bocca saglia.
Ma s' hai moglie fedel, tu berrai netto;
Or di veder tua sorte ti travaglia.
—Così dicendo, per mirar tien gli occhi,
Che in seno il vin Rinaldo si trabocchi."

But Rinaldo was of the prudent opinion, that the experiment might produce evil, could certainly produce no good; and he therefore avoided gratifying his host according to his suggestion. It was on witnessing this wise forbearance of Rinaldo, that the host burst into the tears of which mention is made in the text, and proceeded to tell the melancholy story of his own impertinent curiosity;—which, without doubt, is very much the same sort of story with that of Anselmo and Lothario. See Canto 43rd of the Orlando Furioso, *throughout*.

opinion and reputation they maintain with other people; and since that of your wife is perfect, both in your own and all other men's opinion, why will you go, to no purpose, to call the reality of it in question? you must remember, my friend, that the nature of women is, at best, but weak and imperfect; and for that reason we should be so far from casting stumbling-blocks in its way, that we ought, with all imaginable care, to remove every appearance that might hinder its course to that perfection it wants, which is virtue.

"If you believe the naturalists, the ermine is a very white little creature; when the hunters have found its haunts, they surround it almost with dirt and mire, towards which the ermine being forced to fly, rather than sully its native white with dirt, it suffers itself to be taken, preferring its colour to its liberty and life. The virtuous woman is our ermine, whose chastity is whiter than snow; but to preserve its colour unsullied, you must observe just a contrary method: the addresses and services of an importunate lover, are the mire into which you should never drive a woman; for it is ten to one she will not be able to free herself and avoid it, being but too apt to stumble into it; and therefore that should be always removed, and only the candour and beauty of virtue, and the charms of a good fame and reputation placed before her. A good woman is also not unlike a mirror of crystal, which will infallibly be dimmed and stained by breathing too much upon it: she must rather be used like the reliques of saints, adored but not touched; or like a garden of curious tender flowers, that may at a distance gratify the eye, but are not permitted by the master to be trampled on or touched by every beholder. I shall add but a few verses which I remember from a modern play, very apt for our present purpose, where a prudent old man advised his neighbour, that had a daughter, to lock her up close; and gives these reasons for it, besides several others:

'Since nothing is frailer than woman and glass,
He that would expose them to fall is an ass;
And sure the rash mortal is yet more unwise,
Who on bodies so ticklish experiments tries.

With ease both are damaged; then keep that with care
Which no art can restore, nor no solder repair.
Fond man, take my counsel, watch what is so frail;
For, where Danaes lie, golden showers will prevail.'

"All I have hitherto urged relates only to you: I may now at last be allowed to consider what regards myself, and if I am tedious, I hope you will pardon me: for, to draw you out of a labyrinth into which you have run yourself, I am forced on that prolixity. You call me friend, yet, which is absolutely inconsistent with friendship, you would rob me of my honour; nay, you stop not here, but would oblige me to destroy yours. First, that you would rob me of mine is evident; for what will Camilla think, when I make a declaration of love to her, but that I am a perfidious villain, that makes no scruple of violating the most sacred laws of friendship, and who sacrifices the honour and reputation of my friend to a criminal passion. Secondly, that I destroy yours is as evident; for, when she sees me take such a liberty with her, she will imagine that I have discovered some weakness in her, that has given me assurance to make her so guilty a discovery, and while she esteems herself injured in her honour, the disgrace will affect you as part of her. For this is the reason why the husband, though never so deserving, cautious, and careful, suffers the infamy of a scandalous name if his wife goes astray; whereas, in reason, he ought rather to be an object of compassion than contempt, seeing the misfortune proceeds from the vice and folly of a wife, not his own defects. But since the reason and justice of the man's suffering for the wife's transgression may be serviceable to you, I'll give you the best account of it I can; and pray, do not think me tedious, since this is meant for your good.

"When woman was given to man, and marriage first ordained in paradise, man and wife where made and pronounced one flesh; the husband, therefore, being of a piece with the wife, whatever affects her affects him, as a part of her; though as I have said, he has been no occasion of it: for, as the whole body is affected by the pain of any part, as the head will share the pain of the foot, though it never caused that pain, so is the husband

touched with his wife's infamy, because she is part of him. And since all worldly honours and dishonours are derived from flesh and blood, and the scandalous baseness of an unfaithful wife proceeds from the same principle, it necessarily follows, that the husband, though no party in the offence, and entirely ignorant and innocent of it, must have his share of the infamy. Let what I have said, my dear Anselmo, make you sensible of the danger into which you would run by endeavouring thus to disturb the happy tranquillity and repose that your wife at present enjoys; and for how vain a curiosity, and extravagant a caprice, you would rouse and awake those peccant humours which are now lulled asleep by the power of an unattempted chastity. Reflect farther, how small a return you can expect from so hazardous a voyage, and such valuable commodities as you venture; for the treasure you will lose is so great, and ought to be so dear, that all words are too inexpressive to show how much you ought to esteem it. But if all I have said be too weak to destroy your foolish resolve, employ some other instrument of your disgrace and ruin: for though I should lose your friendship, a loss which I must esteem the greatest in the world, I will have no hand in an affair so prejudical to your honour."

Lothario said no more; and Anselmo, disclosing a desponding melancholy in his face, remained a great while silent and confounded. At last he said, "I have, my friend, listened to your discourse, as you might observe, with all the attention in nature, and every part of what you have said convinces me of the greatness of your wisdom and friendship: and I must own, that if I suffer my desires to prevail over your reasons, I shun the good and pursue the evil. But yet, my friend, you ought, on the other side, to reflect, that my distemper is not much unlike that of those women, who sometimes long for coals, lime, nay some things that are loathsome to the very sight; and therefore some little arts should be used to attempt my cure, which might easily be affected, if you would but consent to solicit Camilla, though it were but weakly and remissly; for I am sure she will not be so frail as to surrender at the first assault, which yet will be sufficient

to give me the satisfaction I desire; and in this you will fulfil the duty of our friendship, in restoring me to life, and securing my honour, by your powerful and persuasive reasons. And you are indeed bound as my friend to do thus much to secure me from betraying my defects and follies to a stranger, which would hazard that reputation which you have taken so much pains to preserve; since I am so bent on this experiment, that, if you refuse me, I shall certainly apply myself elsewhere: and though a while your reputation may suffer in Camilla's opinion, yet, when she has once proved triumphant, you may cure that wound, and recover her good opinion, by a sincere discovery of your design. Wherefore, I conjure you to comply with my importunity, in spite of all the obstacles that may present themselves to you, since what I desire is so little, and the pleasure I shall derive from it so great; for, as I have promised, your very first attempt shall satisfy me as much as if you had gone through the whole experiment."

Lothario plainly saw that Anselmo's resolution was too much fixed for anything he could say to alter it, and finding that he threatened to betray his folly to a stranger, if he persisted in a refusal, to avoid greater inconveniences, he resolved to seem to comply with his desires, privately designing to satisfy Anselmo's caprice, without giving Camilla any trouble; and therefore he desired him to break the matter to nobody else, since he would himself undertake it, and begin as soon as he pleased. Anselmo embraced him with all the love and tenderness imaginable, and was as prodigal of his thanks, as if the very promise had been the greatest obligation that could be laid on him. They immediately agreed on the next day for the trial, at which time Anselmo should give him the opportunity of being alone with her, and gold and jewels to present her with. He advised him to omit no point of gallantry, as serenades and songs and verses in her praise; offering to make them himself, if Lothario would not be at the trouble. But Lothario promised him to do all himself, though his design was far different from Anselmo's.

Matters being thus adjusted, they returned to Anselmo's

house, where they found the beautiful Camilla sad with concern for the absence of her husband beyond his usual hour. Lothario left him there, and retired home, as pensive as to how to come off handsomely in this ridiculous affair, as he had left Anselmo pleased and contented with his undertaking it. But that night he contrived a way of imposing on Anselmo to his satisfaction, without offending Camilla. So next day he went to Anselmo's, and was received by Camilla with a civility and respect answerable to the uncommon friendship she knew was between him and her husband. Dinner being over, Anselmo desired his friend to keep his lady company till his return from an important affair, that would require his absence about an hour and a half. Camilla desired him not to go; Lothario offered to go with him; but he pleaded peculiar business, entreated his friend to stay, and enjoined his wife not to leave him alone till his return. In short, he knew so well how to counterfeit a necessity for his absence, though that necessity proceeded from his own folly, that no one could perceive it was feigned. And so he left them together, without any one to observe their actions, all the servants being retired to dinner.

Thus Lothario found himself entered the lists, his adversary before him terribly armed with a thousand piercing beauties, sufficient to overcome all the men she should encounter, which gave him cause enough to fear his own fate. The first thing he did in this first onset was to lean his head carelessly on his hand and beg her leave to take a nap in his chair till Anselmo came back. Camilla told him she thought he might rest with more ease on the couch[1] in the next room; he declared himself satisfied with the place where he was, and so slept till his friend came back. Anselmo finding his wife in her chamber, and Lothario asleep at his return, concluded that he had given them time enough both for discourse and repose; and therefore waited with a great deal of

[1] [*Estrado.* An alcove, or space of the visiting-room, raised a foot above the floor of the rest of the room, covered with carpets or mats, on which the ladies sit on cushions laid along by the wall, or on low stool; probably a Moorish fashion retained by the Spaniards.]

impatience for his friend's awaking, that he might go out with him and inquire as to his success.

Lothario at last awaked, and going out with his friend, he answered his inquiry to this purpose, that he did not think it convenient to proceed farther, at that time, than some general praise of her wit and beauty, which would best prepare his way for what he might do hereafter, and dispose her to give a more easy and willing ear to what he should say to her : as the devil, by laying a pleasing and apparent good at first before us, insinuates himself into our inclinations, so that he generally gains his point before we discover the cloven foot, if his disguise pass on us in the beginning. Anselmo was extremely satisfied with what Lothario said, and promised him every day as good an opportunity; and though he could not go every day abroad, yet he would manage his conduct so well, that Camilla should have no cause of suspicion. He took care to do as he said. But Lothario wilfully lost the frequent opportunities he gave him; however, he soothed him still with assurances, that his lady was inflexible, her virtue not to be surmounted, and that she had threatened to discover his attempts to her husband, if ever he presumed to be so insolent again; so far was she from giving the least hope of encouragement. "Thus far it is well," said Anselmo; "but yet Camilla has resisted nothing but words, we must now see what proof she is against more substantial temptations. To-morrow I will furnish you with two thousand crowns in gold, to present her with; and as a further bait you shall have as much more for jewels. For women, especially if they are handsome, naturally love to go gaily and richly dressed, be they never so chaste and virtuous; and if she have power to overcome this temptation, I will give you no farther trouble."—"Since I have begun this adventure," replied Lothario, "I will make an end of it, though I am sure her repulses will tire out my patience, and her virtue overcome any temptation, and baffle my endeavours."

The next day Lothario received the four thousand crowns, and with them as many perplexing thoughts, not knowing how to supply his invention with some new story to amuse his friend. However, at last he resolved to

return the money, with assurance that Camilla was as unmoved with presents as with praise, and as untouched with promises as with vows and sighs of love; and therefore all farther attempts would be but a fruitless labour. This was his intention; but fortune, that meddled too much in these affairs, disappointed his design. For Anselmo having left him alone with his wife one day as he used to do, privately conveyed himself into the closet, and through the chinks of the door set himself to observe what they did. He found that for one half hour Lothario said not one word to Camilla, from whence he concluded that all the addresses, importunities, and repulses with which he had amused him, were pure fictions. But that he might be fully satisfied in the truth of his surmise, coming from his covert he took his friend aside, and inquired of him what Camilla had then said to him, and how he now found her inclined? Lothario replied, that he would make no further trial of her, since her answer had now been so severe and awful, that he durst not for the future venture upon a discourse so evidently her aversion.

"Ah! Lothario, Lothario!" cried Anselmo, "is it thus that you keep your promises? is this what I should expect from your friendship? I observed you through that door, and found that you said not a word to Camilla; and from thence I am very well satisfied, that you have only imposed on me all the answers and relations you have made. Why did you hinder me from employing some other, if you never intended to satisfy my desire?" Anselmo said no more, but this was enough to confound Lothario, and cover him with shame for being found in a lie. Therefore, to appease his friend, he swore to him, from that time forward, to set in good earnest about the matter, and that so effectually, that he himself, if he would again give himself the trouble of observing him, should find proof enough of his sincerity. Anselmo believed him; and to give him the better opportunity, he arranged with a friend of his to send for him, with a great deal of importunity, to come to his house at a village near the city, where he meant to spend eight days, and thus account for his absence to Camilla.

Was ever man so unhappy as Anselmo, who industriously contrived the plot of his own ruin and dishonour? he had a very good wife, and possessed her in quiet, without any other man's mingling in his pleasures; her thoughts were bounded with her own house, and her husband, the only earthly good she hoped or thought on, and her only pleasure and desire; his will the rule of hers, and measure of her conduct. When he possessed love, honour, beauty and discretion, without pain or toil, what should provoke him to seek with so much danger and hazard of what he had already, that which was not to be found in nature! He that aims at things impossible, ought justly to lose those advantages which are within the bounds of possibility, as the poet sings:

"In death I seek for life,
In a disease for health,
For quietness in strife,
In poverty for wealth,
And constant truth in an inconstant wife.

But sure the fates disdain
My mad desires to please,
Nor shall I e'er obtain
What others get with ease,
Since I demand what no man e'er could gain."

The next day Anselmo went out of town; having first informed Camilla, that his friend Lothario would look after his affairs, and keep her company in his absence, and desired her to make as much of him as of himself. His lady, like a discreet woman, begged him to consider how improper a thing it was for any other to take his place in his absence; and told him, that if he doubted her ability in managing her house, he should try her but this time, and she questioned not but he would find she had capacity to acquit herself to his satisfaction in greater matters.

Anselmo replied, that it was her duty not to dispute, but obey his command: to which she returned, that she would comply, though much against her will. In short, her husband left the town; Lothario, the next day, was

received at her house with all the respect that could be paid a friend so dear to her husband; but yet with so much caution, that she never permitted herself to be left alone with him, but kept perpetually some of her maids in the room, and chiefly Leonela, for whom she had a particular love, as having been bred in her father's house with her from her infancy.

Lothario said nothing to her the three first days, notwithstanding he might have found an opportunity when the servants were gone to dinner; for though the prudent Camilla had ordered Leonela to dine before her, that she might have no occasion to go out of the room; yet she, who had other affairs to employ her thoughts, more agreeable to her inclinations (to gratify which that was usually the only convenient time she could find) was not so very punctually obedient to her lady's commands, but that she sometimes left them together. Lothario did not yet make use of these advantages, as I have said, being awed by the virtue and modesty of Camilla. But this silence which she thus imposed on Lothario, had at last a quite contrary effect. For though he said nothing, his thoughts were active, his eyes were employed to see and survey the outward charms of a form so perfect, that it was enough to fire the most cold, and soften the most obdurate heart. In these intervals of silence, he considered how much she deserved to be beloved; and these considerations little by little undermined and assaulted the faith which he owed to his friend. A thousand times he resolved to leave the city and retire where Anselmo should never see him, and where he should never more behold the dangerous face of Camilla; but the extreme pleasure he found in seeing her, soon destroyed so feeble a resolve. When he was alone, he would accuse his want of friendship and religion, and run into frequent comparisons betwixt himself and Anselmo, which generally concluded that Anselmo's folly and madness were greater than his own breach of faith; and that, would Heaven as easily excuse his intentions as man, he had no cause to fear any punishment for the crime he was going to commit. In fine, Camilla's beauty, and the opportunity given him by the husband himself, wholly vanquished his faith and friend-

ship. And now, having an eye only to the means of obtaining that pleasure, to which he was prompted with so much violence; after he had spent the three first days of Anselmo's absence, in a conflict betwixt love and virtue, he attempted, by all means possible, to prevail with Camilla, and discovered so much passion in his words and actions, that Camilla, surprised with the unexpected assault, flung from him out of the room, and retired with haste to her chamber. Hope is always born with love, nor did this repulse in the least discourage Lothario from further attempts on Camilla, who by this appeared more charming, and more worthy his pursuit. She, on the other hand, knew not what to do upon the discovery of that in Lothario which she never could have imagined. The result of her reflexions was this, that since she could not give him any opportunity of speaking to her again, without the hazard of her reputation and honour, she would send a letter to her husband to solicit his return to his house. The letter she sent by a messenger that very night; and it was to this purpose.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

In which the History of the Foolish Doubter is pursued.

"As it is wont to be said that an army looks ill without its general, and a garrison without its governor; so to me it seems much worse to leave a young married woman without her husband; especially when there are no affairs of consequence to plead for his absence. I find myself so ill in your's, and so impatient, and unable to endure it any longer, that if you come not home very quickly, I shall be obliged to return to my father's house, though I leave yours without any one to look after it: for the person to whom you have entrusted the care of your family, has, I believe, more regard to his own pleasure than your concerns. You are wise and prudent, and therefore I shall say no more, nor is it convenient I should."

Anselmo was not a little satisfied at the receipt of this

letter, which assured him that Lothario had begun the attempt, which she had repelled according to his hopes; and therefore he sent her word not to leave his house, assuring her it should not be long before he returned. Camilla was surprised with his answer, and more perplexed than before, being equally afraid of going to her father, and of staying at home; in the former case she disobeyed her husband, in the latter ran the risk of her honour. The worse resolution prevailed, which was to stay at her own house, and not avoid Lothario's company, lest it should give some cause of suspicion to her servants. And now she repented her writing to Anselmo, lest he should suspect that Lothario had observed some indiscretion in her, that made him lose the respect due to her, and gave him assurance to offer at the corrupting her virtue; but confiding in Heaven and her own innocence, which she thought proof against all Lothario's attempts, she resolved to make no answer to whatever he should say to her, and never more trouble her husband with complaints, for fear of engaging him in disputes and quarrels with his friend. For that reason she considered how she might best excuse him to Anselmo, when he should examine the cause of her writing to him in that manner. With a resolution so innocent and dangerous, the next day she gave ear to all that Lothario said: and he gave the assault with such force and vigour, that Camilla's constancy could not stand the shock unmoved, and her virtue could do no more than guard her eyes from betraying that tender compassion, of which his vows and entreaties, and all his sighs and tears, had made her heart sensible.

Lothario discovered all this, and it all added to his flame; and he found that he ought to make use of this opportunity, of Anselmo's absence, with all his force and importunity to win so valuable a fortress. He began with the powerful battery of the praise of her beauty, which being directly pointed on the weakest part of woman, her vanity, with the greatest ease and facility in the world makes a breach as great as a lover can desire. Lothario was not unskilful or remiss in the attack, but followed his fire so close, that let Camilla's integrity be built on never so obdurate a rock, it must at last have

fallen. He wept, praved, flattered, promised, swore, vowed, and showed so much passion and truth in what he said, that beating down the care of her honour, he, at last, triumphed over what he scarce durst hope, though what he most of all desired; for she at last surrendered, even Camilla surrendered! Nor ought we to wonder if she yielded, since even Lothario's friendship and virtue were not able to withstand the terrible assault; an evident proof that love is a power too strong to be overcome by anything but flight, and that no mortal creature ought to be so presumptuous as to stand the encounter, since there is need of something more than human, and indeed a heavenly force, to confront and vanquish that human passion. Leonela was the only confidante of this amour, which these new lovers and faithless friends could not by any means conceal from her knowledge. Lothario would not discover to Camilla that her husband, for her trial, had designedly given him this opportunity, to which he owed so extreme a happiness; because she should not think he lacked love to solicit her himself, or suppose that it was done otherwise than by chance.

Anselmo came home in a few days, but discovered not what he had lost, though it was what he most valued and esteemed: from thence he went to Lothario, and embracing him, begged of him to let him know his fate. "All I can tell you, my friend," answered Lothario, "is that you may boast yourself of the best wife in the world, the ornament of her sex, and the pattern which all virtuous women ought to follow. Words, offers, presents, all are ineffectual; the tears I pretended to shed, moved only her laughter. Camilla is not only mistress of the greatest beauty, but of modesty, discretion, sweetness of temper, and every other virtue and perfection, that add to the charms of a woman of honour. Therefore, my friend, take back your money; I have had no occasion to lay it out, for Camilla's integrity cannot be corrupted by such base and mercenary things as gifts and promises. And now, Anselmo, be at last content with the trial you have already made: and having so luckily got over the dangerous quicksands of doubts and suspicions that are to be met with in the ocean of matrimony, do not venture out again, with another pilot,

that vessel, whose strength you have sufficiently experienced; but believe yourself, as you are, securely anchored in a safe harbour, at pleasure and ease, till death, from whose force no title, power, nor dignity can secure us, shall come and cut the cable."

Anselmo was extremely satisfied with Lothario's discourse, and believed it as firmly as if it had been an oracle; yet desired him to continue his pursuit, if it were but to pass away the time; he did not require he should press Camilla with those importunities he had before used, but only make some verses in her praise, under the name of Cloris; and he would make Camilla believe he celebrated a lady he loved, under that name, to secure her honour and reputation from the censure which a more open declaration would expose her to; he added, that if Lothario would not be at the expense of so much trouble and time, as to compose them himself, he would do it for him with a great deal of pleasure. Lothario told him there was no need of that, since he himself was sometimes poetically given; "Do you but tell Camilla of my pretended love, as you say you will, and I will make the verses as well as I can, though not so well as the excellency of the subject requires."

The foolish man, and his treacherous friend, having agreed on this matter, Anselmo went home, and then asked Camilla on what occasion she sent him the letter? Camilla, who wondered that this question had not been asked her before, replied, that the motive that prevailed with her to write in that manner to him, was a jealousy she had entertained, that Lothario, in his absence, looked on her with more criminal and desiring eyes than he used to do when he was at home; but that since she had reason to believe that suspicion but weakly grounded, seeing he discovered rather an aversion than love, as avoiding all occasions of being alone with her. Anselmo told her she had nothing to apprehend from Lothario on that account, since he knew his affections engaged on one of the noblest young ladies of the city, whose praise he writ under the name of Cloris; but were he not thus engaged, there was no reason to suspect Lothario's virtue and friendship.

Camilla, at this discourse, without doubt, would have been very jealous of Lothario, had he not told his design of abusing her husband with the presence of another love, that he might, with the greater liberty and security, express her praise and his passion. The next day, at dinner, Anselmo desired him to read some of the verses he had made on his beloved Cloris; telling him, he might say anything of her before Camilla, since she did not know who the lady was. "Did Camilla know her," replied Lothario, "that should not make me pass over in silence any part of that praise which was her due; for if a lover complains of his mistress's cruelty while he is praising her perfections, she can never suffer in her reputation. Therefore, without any fear, I shall repeat a sonnet which I made yesterday on the ingratitude of Cloris."

SONNET.[1]

"At dead of night, when every troubled breast
By balmy sleep is eased of anxious pain,
When slaves themselves, in pleasing dreams are blest,
To heaven and Cloris, restless I complain.

The rosy morn dispels the shades of night,
The sun, the pleasures, and the day return;
All nature's cheer'd with the reviving light;
I, only I, can never cease to mourn.

At noon, in vain, I bid my sorrow cease,
The heat increases, and my pains increase,
And still my soul in the mild evening grieves:

The night returns, and my complaints renew,
No moment sees me free; in vain I sue,
Heaven ne'er relents, and Cloris ne'er relieves."

Camilla was mightily pleased with the sonnet, but Anselmo was transported: he was lavish of his commendation and added that the lady must be barbarously cruel that made no return to so much truth, and so violent a passion. "What! must we then believe all that a poet in love tells us for truth?" said Camilla.

"Madam," replied Lothario, "though the poet may exceed, yet the lover corrects his fondness for fiction, and

[1] This sonnet occurs again in the second act of Cervantes' comedy, "La casa de los Zelos."

makes him speak truth." Anselmo, to advance Lothario's credit with Camilla, confirmed whatever he said; but she not minding her husband's confirmations, was sufficiently persuaded, by her passion for Lothario, to an implicit faith in all he said; and therefore pleased with this composition, and more satisfied in the knowledge she had that all was addressed to herself, as the true Cloris, she desired him to repeat some other verses he had made on that subject, if he could remember any. "I remember some," replied Lothario; "but, madam, in my opinion, they are not so good as, or rather not less bad than the former; but you shall judge yourself"

SONNET.

"I know that I am dying, cruel fair!
And die more certainly, without reprieve,
If thou imaginest thy slave can bear
Thy thankless cruelty and longer live.

Deep in oblivion's gloom I'd rather be,
Bereft of life, of glory, and of grace:
So thou within my open breast shalt see
The lines engraven of thy lovely face.

This relic will I keep religiously,
For that dire peril which my hardihood
Has brought upon me as a penalty,
Made sterner by thine unrelenting mood.

Ah! woe to him who on the deep doth sail,
When storm-clouds in the firmament prevail:
His path midst perils of the unknown tide,
No port to shelter, and no star to guide!

Anselmo was not less profuse in his praise of this sonnet, than he had been of the other, and so added new fuel to the fire that was to consume his reputation. He contributed to his own abuse, in commending his false friend's attempts on his honour, as the most important service he could do it; and this made him believe, that every step Camilla made downwards to contempt and disgrace, was a degree she mounted towards that perfection of virtue which he desired she should attain.

Some time after, Camilla being alone with her maid,

"I am ashamed," said she, "my Leonela, that I gave Lothario so easy a conquest over me, and did not know my own worth enough to make him undergo some greater fatigues, before I made him so entire a surrender. I am afraid he will think my hasty consent the effect of the looseness of my temper, and not at all consider that the force and violence he used, deprived me of the power of resisting."—"Ah! madam," returned Leonela, "let not that disquiet you; for the speedy bestowing a benefit of an intrinsic value, and which you design to bestow at last, can never lessen the favour, for according to the proverb, He that gives quickly gives twice."—"To answer your proverb with another," replied Camilla, "That which costs little is less valued."—"But this has nothing to do with you," answered Leonela, "since it is said of love that it sometimes walks, sometimes flies; runs with one, goes gravely with another; turns a third into ice, and sets a fourth into a flame; it wounds one, another it kills: like lightning, it begins and ends in the same moment: it makes that fort yield at night which is besieged but in the morning; for there is no force able to resist it. Since this is evident, what cause have you to be surprised at your own frailty? And why should you apprehend anything from Lothario, who has felt the same irresistible power, and yielded to it as soon? For love, to gain a conquest, took the short opportunity of my master's absence, which being so short and uncertain, love, that had before determined this should be done, added force and vigour to the lover, not to leave anything to time and chance, which might, by Anselmo's return, cut off all opportunities of accomplishing so agreeable a work. The best and most officious servant of love's retinue, is occasion or opportunity: this it is that love improves in all its progress, but most in the beginning and first rise of an amour. I trust not in what I have said to the uncertainty of report, but to experience, which affords the most certain and most valuable knowledge, as I will inform you, madam, some day or other; for I am, like you, made of frail flesh and blood, fired by youth and youthful desires. But, madam, you did not surrender to Lothario till you had sufficient

proof of his love, from his eyes, his vows, his promises, and gifts; till you had seen the merit of his person, and the beauty of his mind; all which convinced you how much he deserved to be loved. Then trouble yourself no more, madam, with these fears and jealousies; but thank your stars, that since you were doomed a victim to love, you fell by the force of such valour and merit that cannot be doubted. You yielded to one who has not only the four S's, which are required in every good lover,[1] but even the whole alphabet; as for example, he is, in my opinion, Agreeable, Bountiful, Courteous, Devoted, Earnest, Faithful, Gallant, Honourable, Illustrious, Kind, Loyal, Mild, Noble, Open, Princely, Quiet, Rich, the S's as I have said, and then Trusty, Valiant: the X, indeed, is too harsh a letter to agree with him, but he is Young and Zealous for your honour and service."

Camilla laughed at her woman's alphabet, and thought her (as indeed she was) more learned in the practical art of love than she had yet confessed. She then informed her mistress of an affair that had been betwixt her and a young man of the town. Camilla was not a little concerned at what she said, being apprehensive that her honour might suffer by her woman's indiscretion; and therefore asked her if the amour had passed any farther than words; Leonela, without any fear or shame, owned her guilty correspondence with all the freedom in the world; for the mistress's guilt gives the servant impudence; and generally they imitate their ladies' frailties without any fear of public censure.

Camilla, finding her error past remedy, could only beg Leonela to disclose nothing of her affair to her lover, and manage her amour with secrecy and discretion, for fear Lothario or Anselmo should hear of it. Leonela promised to obey her; but she did it in such a manner, that Camilla was perpetually in fear of the loss of her

[1] *Sabio, Solo, Solicito, Segreto.*
Sabio en servir, y nunca descuydado,
Solo en amar, y á otra alma no sugeto,
Solicito en buscar sus desengaños,
Segreto en sus favores y en sus daños.
BARAHONA, C. 4. 14.

reputation by her folly; for she grew so confident on her knowledge of her lady's transgression, that she admitted the gallant into the house, not caring if her lady knew it, being certain that she durst not make any discovery to her master; for when once a mistress has suffered her virtue to be vanquished, and admits of any criminal correspondence, it subjects her to her own servants, and makes her subservient to their lewd practices, which she is slavishly bound to conceal. Thus it was with Camilla, who was forced to wink at the visible assignations, which Leonela had with her lover, in a certain chamber of the house which she thought proper for the occasion; nor was that all, she was constrained to give her the opportunity of hiding him, that he might not be seen by her husband.

But all this caution did not secure him from being seen by Lothario one morning, as he was going out of the house by break of day. His surprise had made him think it a spirit, had not his hastening away, and his muffling himself up as he did, that he might not be known, convinced him of his error, and thrown him into a fit of jealousy, that had certainly undone them all, had not Camilla's wit and address prevented it. For Lothario concluded that Camilla, that had made no very obstinate resistance to him, had as easily surrendered to some other; and he fancied that the person he saw come from her house was the newly favoured lover; never remembering there was such a person as Leonela in the house, and that he might be a lover of her's. For when once a woman parts with her virtue, she loses the esteem even of the man whose vows and tears won her to abandon it; and he believes she will with as little, if not less difficulty, yield to another; he perverts the least suspicions into reality, and takes the slightest appearance for the most evident matter of fact.

Thus Lothario, distracted by the most violent jealousy in the world, without allowing himself time to consider, gave way to the transports of his rage and desire of revenge on Camilla, who had not injured him. He went immediately to Anselmo, and having found him a-bed: "I have, my friend," said he to him, "these several days

undergone a most severe conflict within my mind, and used all the force and violence I was capable of to conceal an affair from you, which I can no longer forbear discovering, without an apparent wrong to justice, and my friendship. Know, then, that Camilla is now ready to do whatsoever I shall desire of her; and the reason that most prevailed with me to delay this discovery, was, that I would be satisfied whether she were in earnest, or only pretended this compliance to try me; but had she been so virtuous as you and I believed her, she would, by this time, have informed you of that importunity which, by your desire, I used; but finding that she is silent, and takes no notice of that to you, I have reason to believe that she is but too sincere in those guilty promises she has made me, of meeting me to my satisfaction in the wardrobe, the next time your absence from the town should furnish her with an opportunity." This was true indeed, for that was the place of their common rendezvous. "Yet I would not have you," continued he, "take a rash and inconsiderate revenge, since it is possible, before the time of assignation, her virtue may rally, and she repent her folly. Therefore, as you have hitherto taken my advice, be ruled by me now, that you may not be imposed on, but have a sufficient conviction before you to put your resolves into execution. Pretend two or three days' absence, and then privately convey yourself behind the hangings in the wardrobe, as you easily may, whence you may, without difficulty, be an eye-witness with me of Camilla's conduct; and if it be as criminal as we may justly fear, then you may with secrecy and speed punish her as the injury deserves."

Anselmo was extremely surprised at so unexpected a misfortune, to find himself deceived in those imaginary triumphs he pleased himself with, in Camilla's supposed victory over all Lothario's assaults. A great while he was in a silent suspense, with his eyes dejected, without force, and without spirit; but turning at last to his friend, "You have done all," said he, "Lothario, that I could expect from so perfect a friendship; I will therefore be entirely guided by your advice: do therefore what you

please, but use all the secrecy a thing of this nature requires." Lothario, assuring him of that, left him; but full of repentance for the rashness he had been guilty of in telling him so much as he had, since he might have taken a sufficient revenge, by a less cruel and dishonourable way. He cursed his want of sense, and the weakness of his resolution, but could not find out any way to produce a less fatal event of his treachery, than he could justly expect from the experiment. But at last he concluded to inform Camilla of all he had done; which his freedom of access gave him opportunity to do that very day, when he found her alone; and she began thus to him:—"I am so oppressed, my Lothario, with a misfortune which I lie under, that it will certainly for ever destroy my quiet and happiness, if there be not some speedy remedy found for it: Leonela is grown so presumptuous, on her knowledge of my affairs, that she admits her lover all night to her chamber, and so exposes my reputation to the censure of any that shall see him go out at unseasonable hours from my house; and the greatest part of my grief is, that I dare not correct or chide her for her imprudence and impudence; for, being conscious of our correspondence, she obliges me to conceal her failings, which I am extremely apprehensive will in the end be very fatal to my happiness." Lothario was at first jealous that Camilla designed cunningly to pretend that the man he had seen was not hers but Leonela's; but being convinced by her tears, and the apparent concern in her face, he began to believe her, and at the same time to be infinitely confounded and grieved for what he had done. Yet he comforted Camilla, assuring her he would take effectual care for the future, that Leonela's impudence should do her no prejudice, and therefore begged her not to torment herself any more about it. Then he told all the unhappy effects of his jealous rage, and that her husband had agreed to be witness behind the arras of her weakness. He asked her pardon for the folly, and her counsel how to redress and prevent the ill effect of it, and bring them out of those difficulties into which his madness had plunged them.

Camilla expressed her resentment and her fears; and

accused his treachery, baseness, and want of consideration; yet her anger and fears being appeased, and a woman's wit being always more pregnant in difficulties than a man's, she immediately thought of a way to deliver them from the dangers that bore so dismal and helpless a face. She therefore bid him engage Anselmo to be there the next day, assuring him she did not question but by that means to get a more frequent and secure opportunity of enjoying one another than they hitherto had had. She would not make him privy to her whole design, but bid him be sure to come after her husband was hid, as soon as Leonela should call him, and that he should answer as directly to whatsoever she should ask him, as if Anselmo were not within hearing. Lothario spared no importunity to get from her her whole design, that he might act his part with the greater assurance, and the better to contribute to the imposing on her husband.—"All you have to do," replied Camilla, "is to answer me directly what I shall demand." Nor would she discover any more, for fear he should not acquiesce in her opinion, which she was so well satisfied in, but raise difficulties, and by consequence, obstacles, that might hinder her design from having the desired event, or run her upon some less successful project. Lothario complied, and Anselmo in appearance left the town to retire to his friend in the country, but secretly returned to hide himself in the wardrobe, which he did with the greater ease, because Camilla and Leonela purposely gave him opportunity.

We may easily imagine the grief with which Anselmo hid himself, since it was to be a spectator of his own dishonour, and the loss of all that happiness he possessed in the embraces of his beautiful and beloved Camilla. On the other hand, she being now certain that Anselmo was hid, entered the wardrobe with Leonela, and fetching a deep and piteous sigh, thus addressed herself to her.—"Ah, my Leonela! would it not be much better that thou pierce this infamous bosom with Anselmo's dagger, before I execute what I design, which I have kept from thee that thou might'st not endeavour to disappoint me? Yet not so; for, where is the justice that I should suffer for another's offence? No, I will first know of Lothario what

action of mine has given him assurance to make me a discovery of a passion so injurious to his friend, and my honour. Go to the window, Leonela, and call the wicked man to me, who doubtless is awaiting in the street the signal for his admission to accomplish his villainous design; yet, first my resolution shall be performed, which, though it be cruel, is what my honour strictly demands of me."—"Alas! my dear lady," cried the cunning Leonela, "alas! what do you intend to do with that dagger? Is your fatal design against yourself or Lothario? Alas! you can attack neither without the ruin of your fame and reputation. You had better give no opportunity to that bad man by admitting him while we are thus alone in the house: consider, madam, we are but two weak and helpless women, he a strong and resolute man, whose force is redoubled by the passion and desire that possess him; so that before you may be able to accomplish what you design, he may commit a crime that will be more injurious to you than the loss of your life. We have reason to curse my master Anselmo, who gives such frequent opportunities to impudence and dishonesty to pollute our house. But, madam, suppose you should kill him, as I believe you design, what shall we do with his dead body?"—"What!" said Camilla, "why we would leave him in this place to be buried by Anselmo; for it must be a grateful trouble to him to bury with his own hand his own infamy and dishonour. Call him therefore quickly, for methinks every moment my revenge is deferred, I injure that loyalty I owe to my husband."

Anselmo gave great attention to all that was said, and every word of Camilla's made a strange alteration in his sentiments, so that he could scarce forbear coming out to prevent his friend's death, when he heard her desperate resolution against his life; but his desire of seeing the end of so brave a resolve withheld him, till he saw an absolute necessity of discovering himself, to hinder the mischief. Now Camilla put on a fear and weakness which resembled a swoon; and having thrown herself on a bed in the room, Leonela began a most doleful lamentation over her.—"Alas!" said she, "how unfortunate should I be, if my lady, so eminent for virtue and chastity, as well as beauty,

should thus perish in my arms?" This, and much more she uttered with that force of perfect dissimulation, that whoever had seen her would have concluded her one of the most innocent virgins in the world; and her lady a second persecuted Penelope.—Camilla soon came to herself, and cried to Leonela, "Why do not you call the most treacherous and unfaithful of friends? Go, fly, and let not thy delays waste my revenge and anger in mere words, and idle threats and curses."—"Madam," replied Leonela, "I will go, but you must first give me that dagger, lest you commit some outrage upon yourself in my absence, which may give an eternal cause of sorrow to all your friends that love and value you."—"Let not those fears detain you," said Camilla, "but assure yourself I will not do anything till you return; for though I shall not fear to punish myself in the highest degree, yet I shall not, like Lucretia, punish myself, without killing him that was the principal cause of my dishonour. If I must die, I shall not refuse it: but I will first satisfy my revenge on him that has tempted me to come to this guilty assignation, to make him lament his crime without being guilty of any myself."

Camilla could scarce prevail with Leonela to leave her alone, but at last she obeyed her and withdrew; when Camilla entertained herself with this following soliloquy. "Good Heaven," said she, "had I not better have continued my repulses, than by this seeming consent suffer Lothario to think scandalously of me, till my actions shall convince him of his error? That, indeed, might have been better in some respects, but then I should have wanted this opportunity of revenge, and the satisfaction of my husband's injured honour, if he were permitted, without any correction, to go off with the insolence of offering such criminal assaults to my virtue. No, no; let the traitor's life atone for the guilt of his false and unfaithful attempts, and his blood quench that lewd fire he was not content should burn in his own breast. Let the world be witness, if it ever comes to know my story, that Camilla thought it not enough to preserve her virtue and loyalty to her husband entire, but also revenged the hateful affront, and the intended destruction of

it. But it might be most convenient, perhaps, to let Anselmo know of this before I put my revenge in execution; yet, on the first attempt, I sent him word of it to the village, and I can attribute his not resenting so notorious an abuse, to nothing but his generous temper, and confidence in his friend, incapable of believing so tried a friend could be guilty of so much as a thought against his honour and reputation. Nor is this incredulity so strange, since I for so long together could not persuade myself of the truth of what my eyes and ears conveyed to me; and nothing could have convinced me of my generous error, had his insolence kept within any bounds, and not dared to proceed to large gifts, large promises, and a flood of tears which he shed, as the undissembled testimony of his passion. But to what purpose are these considerations? or is there indeed any need of considering, to persuade me to a brave resolve? Avaunt, false thoughts! Revenge is now my task; let the treacherous man approach; let him come, let him die, let him perish: Let him but perish, no matter what is the fatal consequence. He whom Heaven gave to me received me to his bosom spotless and chaste, and so shall I go from him. Let the event be as fatal as it will, the worse pollution I can this way suffer, is of mingling my own chaste blood with the impure and corrupted blood of the most false and treacherous of friends."—Having said this, she traversed the room in so passionate a manner, with the drawn dagger in her hand, and showed such an agitation of spirits in her looks and motion, that she appeared like one distracted, or more like a desperado, than a tender and delicate lady.

Anselmo, not a little to his satisfaction, very plainly saw and heard all this from behind the arras, which, with the greatest reason and evidence in the world, removed all his past doubts and jealousies; and, with abundance of concern, he wished that Lothario would not come, that he might by that means escape the danger that so apparently threatened him; to prevent which he had discovered himself, had he not seen Leonela at that instant bring Lothario into the room. As soon as Camilla saw him enter, she described a line with the poniard on the ground, and told him the minute he presumed to pass that, she would strike

the dagger to his heart. "Hear me," said she, "and observe what I say without interruption; when I have done, you shall have liberty to make what reply you please. Tell me first, Lothario, do you know my husband, and do you know me? The question is not so difficult, but you may give me immediate answer; there is no need of considering, speak, therefore, without delay." Lothario was not so dull as not to guess at her design in having her husband hid behind the hangings, and therefore adapted his answers so well to her questions, that the fiction was lost in the appearance of reality.—"I did not imagine, fair Camilla," said Lothario, "that you would make this assignation, to ask questions so distant from the dear end of my coming. If you had a mind still to delay my promised happiness, you should have prepared me for the disappointment; for the nearer the hope of possession brings us to the good we desire, the greater is the pain to have those hopes destroyed. But, to answer your demands, I must own, madam, that I do know your husband, and he me: that this knowledge has grown up with us from our childhood; and that I may be a witness against myself for the injury I am compelled by love to do him, I do also own, divine Camilla, that you too well know the tenderness of our mutual friendship; yet love is a sufficient excuse for all my errors, if they were much more criminal than they are. And, madam, that I know you is evident, and love you as much as he does, for nothing but your charms could have power enough to make me forget what I owe to my own honour, and what to the holy laws of friendship, all which I have been forced to break by the resistless tyranny of love."

"If you confess all this," said Camilla, "if you know us both, how dare you violate so sacred a friendship, injure so true a friend, and appear thus confidently before me, whom you know to be esteemed by him the mirror of his love, in which that love so often views itself with pleasure and satisfaction, and in which you ought to have surveyed yourself so far, as to have seen how small the temptation is, that has prevailed on you to wrong him. But alas! this points me to the cause of your transgression; some suspicious action of mine,

when I have been least on my guard, as thinking myself alone; but assure yourself whatever it was, it proceeds not from looseness or levity of principle, but a negligence and liberty which the sex sometimes innocently fall into, when they think themselves unobserved. If this were not the cause, say, traitor, when did I listen to your prayers, or in the least regard your tears and vows, so that you might derive thence the smallest hope of accomplishing your infamous desires? Did I not always with the last aversion and disdain reject your criminal passion? Did I ever betray a belief in your lavish promises, or admit of your prodigal gifts? But since, without some hope, no love can long subsist, I will lay that hateful guilt on some unhappy inadvertency of mine, and therefore will inflict the same punishment on myself that your crime deserves. And to show you that I, who will not spare myself, cannot but be cruel to you, I sent for you to be a witness of that just sacrifice I shall make to my dear husband's injured honour, which you have injured with the greatest possible deliberation; and which I, alas, have sullied too by my thoughtless neglect of depriving you of the occasion, if indeed, I did give any, of nourishing your wicked intentions. Once more I tell you, the bare suspicion that my want of due carefulness has made you harbour such wild and infamous intentions, is the sharpest of my afflictions, and is what I resolve to punish with my own hands. For, should I leave that punishment to another, it would but increase the publicity of my guilt. Yes, I will die: but first to satisfy my revenge and impartial justice, I will, unmoved and unrelenting, destroy the fatal cause that has reduced me to this desperate condition."

At these words she flew with so much violence, and so well-acted a fury, on Lothario, with her naked dagger, that he could scarce think it feigned, and therefore secured himself from her blow by avoiding it, and holding her hand. Thereupon, to give more life to the fiction, as in a rage at her disappointed revenge on Lothario, she cried out, "Since my malicious fortune denies a complete satisfaction to my just desires, at least it shall not be in its power entirely to defeat my resolution."—With that,

drawing back her dagger-hand from Lothario who held it, she struck it into that part of her body where it might do her the least damage, and then fell down, as fainting away with the wound. Lothario and Leonela, surprised at the unexpected event, knew not yet what to think, seeing her still lie all bloody on the ground. Lothario, pale and trembling, ran to take out the dagger; but was delivered of his fears when he saw so little blood follow it; and more than ever admired the cunning and wit of the beautiful Camilla. Yet, to play his part as well, and show himself a friend, he lamented over Camilla's body in the most pathetic manner in the world, as if she had been really dead; he cursed himself, and cursed his friend, that had put him on that fatal experiment; and knowing that Anselmo heard him, he said such things that were able to draw a greater pity for him than even for Camilla, though she seemed to have lost her life in the unfortunate adventure. Leonela removed her body to the bed, and begged Lothario to seek some surgeon, that might with all the secrecy in the world cure her lady's wound. She also asked his advice how to excuse it to her master, if he should return before it was perfectly cured. He replied, "They might say what they pleased, that he was not in a humour of advising, but bid her endeavour to staunch her mistress's blood, for he would go where they should never hear more of him." And so he left them, with all the appearance of grief and concern that the occasion required. He was no sooner gone, but he had leisure to reflect, with the greatest wonder imaginable, on Camilla's and her woman's conduct in this affair, and on the assurance which this scene had given Anselmo of his wife's virtue; since now, he could not but believe, he had a second Portia; and he longed to meet him, to celebrate together the imposture and the best dissembling of truth that could ever be imagined.

Leonela staunched the blood, which was no more than necessary for covering the cheat, and washing the wound with wine only as she bound it up, her discourse was so moving, and so well acted, that it had been alone sufficient to have convinced Anselmo that he had the most virtuous wife in the world. Camilla was not silent, but

added fresh confirmations. In every word she spoke, she complained of her cowardice and baseness of spirit, that denied her time and force to despatch that life which was now so hateful to her. She asked her too, whether she should inform her husband of what had passed, or not? Leonela was for her concealing it, since the discovery must infallibly engage her husband in a revenge on Lothario, which must expose him to risk; for those things were never accomplished without the greatest danger; and that a good wife ought to the best of her power to prevent involving her husband in quarrels. Camilla yielded to her reasons; but added, that they must find out some pretended cause of her wound, which he would certainly see at his return. Leonela replied, that it was a difficult task, since she was incapable, even in jest, of dissembling the truth. "Am I not," answered Camilla, "under the same difficulty, who cannot save my life by the odious refuge of a falsehood? Had we not better, then, confess the real truth, than be caught in a lie?"—"Well, madam," returned Leonela, "let this give you no further trouble; by to-morrow morning I shall find out some expedient or other; though I hope the place where the wound is, may conceal it enough from his observation to secure us from all apprehension; leave, therefore, the whole event to Heaven, which always favours and assists the innocent."

Anselmo saw and heard this formal tragedy of his ruined honour with all the attention imaginable, in which all the actors performed their parts so to the life, that they seemed the reality of what they represented. He longed impatiently for the night, that he might convey himself from his hiding-place to his friend's house, and there rejoice for this happy discovery of his wife's tried virtue. Camilla and her maid took care to furnish him with an opportunity of departing, of which he soon took hold, for fear of losing it. It is impossible to tell you all the embraces he gave Lothario, and the joy and extreme stisfaaction he expressed at his good fortune, or the extravagant praises he gave Camilla. Lothario heard all this without taking a friend's share in the pleasure, for he was shocked with the concern he had to see his friend

so grossly imposed on, and the guilt of his own treachery in injuring his honour. Though Anselmo easily perceived that Lothario was not touched with any pleasure at his relation, yet he believed Camilla's wound, caused by him, was the true motive of his not sharing his joy; and therefore assured him, he need not too much trouble himself for it, since it could not be dangerous, she and her woman having agreed to conceal it from him. This cause of his fear being removed, he desired him to put on a face of joy, since, by his means, he should now possess a perfect happiness and content; and he would that they should spend their time henceforth in conveying Camilla's virtue to posterity, by writing her praise in verse. Lothario approved his resolution, and promised to assist him. Thus Anselmo remained the most delightfully deceived of any man alive. He carried Lothario immediately to his house, as the instrument of his glory, though he was, indeed, the only cause of his infamy and dishonour. Camilla received him with a face that ill expressed the satisfaction of her mind, being forced to put on frowns in her looks, while her heart prompted nothing but smiles of joy for his presence.

For some months the fraud was concealed; but then fortune, turning her wheel, discovered to the world the wickedness they had so long and artfully disguised; and Anselmo's foolish doubting cost him his life.

CHAPTER XXXV.

The conclusion of the Tale of the Foolish Doubter; with the dreadful Battle betwixt Don Quixote and certain Wineskins.

THE novel was come near a conclusion, when Sancho Panza came running out of Don Quixote's chamber in a terrible fright, crying out, "Help, help, good people, help my master! He is just now at it, tooth and nail, with that same giant, the Princess Micomicona's foe: I never saw a more dreadful battle in my born days. He has lent

him such a sliver, that whip off went the giant's head, as round as a turnip."—"You are mad, Sancho," said the curate, interrupted in his reading; "is thy master such a devil of a hero, as to fight a giant at two thousand leagues distance?" Upon this, they presently heard a noise and bustle in the chamber, and Don Quixote bawling out, "Stay, villain, robber, stay; since I have thee here, thy scimitar shall but little avail thee;" and with this, they heard him strike with his sword, with all his force, against the walls.—"Good folks," said Sancho, "my master does not want your hearkening; why do not you run in and help him? though I believe there's no need now, for sure the giant is by this time dead, and giving an account of his ill life: for I saw his blood run all about the house, and his head sailing in the middle on it: but such a head! it is bigger than any wine-skin in Spain."—"Death and hell!" cries the inn-keeper, "I will be cut like a cucumber, if this Don Quixote, or Don Devil, has not been hacking my wine-skins that stood filled at his bed's-head, and this coxcomb has taken the spilt liquor for blood."[1] Then running with the whole company into the room, they found the poor knight in the most comical posture imaginable.

He was standing in his shirt; the fore part of it scarcely availed to cover his thighs, and about a span shorter behind: this added a very peculiar air to his long lean legs, as dirty and hairy as a beast's. To make him all of a piece, he wore on his head a little red greasy cast nightcap of the inn-keeper's; he had wrapped one of the bed-blankets about his left arm for a shield; and wielded his drawn sword in the right, laying about him pell-mell; with now and then a start of some military expression, as

[1] The hint of this adventure seems evidently to be taken from one of the best stories in the Golden Ass of Apuleius, which I shall quote from Mr. Dunlop's abstract. See Additional Note XIX.

Cervantes, in many parts of his work, shows himself to have been an attentive reader of this old Latin romance; but Le Sage (that boldest of borrowers), owes to it by far the most picturesque and splendid passage of his Gil Blas, viz., the whole description of the habitation of the robbers—the revelry of these banditti—the old woman that attends on them—the arrival of the new troop during the entertainment—the captivity and escape of the young lady, &c. &c.

if he had been really engaged with some giant. But the best jest of all, he was all this time fast asleep; for the thoughts of the adventure he had undertaken had so wrought on his imagination, that his depraved fancy had in his sleep represented to him the kingdom Micomicon, and the giant; and dreaming that he was then fighting him, he assaulted the wine-skins so desperately, that he set the whole chamber afloat with good wine. The inn-keeper, enraged to see the havoc, flew at Don Quixote with his fists; and had not Cardenio and the curate taken him off, he had proved a giant indeed against the knight. All this could not wake the poor knight, till the barber, throwing a bucket of cold water on him, wakened him from his sleep, though not from his dream.

The shortness of her champion's shirt gave Dorothea a surfeit of the battle. Sancho ran up and down the room searching for the giant's head, till, finding his labour fruitless, "Well, well," said he, "now I see plainly that this house is haunted, for when I was here before, in this very room was I beaten like any stock-fish, but knew no more than the man in the moon who struck me; and now the giant's head that I saw cut off with these eyes, is vanished; and I am sure I saw the body spout blood like a pump."—"What a prating and a nonsense does this damned son of a whore keep about blood and a pump, and I know not what," said the inn-keeper; "I tell you, rascal, it is my wine-skins that are slashed, and my wine that runs about the floor here, and I hope to see the soul of him that spilt it swimming in hell for his pains."—"Well, well," said Sancho, "do not trouble me; I only tell you, that I cannot find the giant's head, and my earldom is gone after it, and so I am undone, like salt in water." And truly Sancho's waking dream was worse than his master's when asleep. The inn-keeper was almost mad to see the foolish squire harp so on the same string with his frantic master, and swore they should not come off now as before; that their chivalry should be no satisfaction for his wine, but that they should pay him sauce for the damage, and for the very leathern patches which the wounded wine-skins would want.

Don Quixote, in the meanwhile, believing he had finished

his adventure, and mistaking the curate, that held him by the arms, for the Princess Micomicona, fell on his knees before him, and with a respect due to a royal presence: "Now may your highness," said he, "great and illustrious princess, live secure, free from any further apprehensions from your conquered enemy; and now I am acquitted of my engagement, since, by the assistance of Heaven, and the influence of her favour, by whom I live and conquer, your adventure is so happily achieved." —"Did not I tell you so, gentlefolks?" said Sancho; who is drunk or mad now? See if my master has not already put the giant in pickle? Here are the bulls,[1] and I am an earl." The whole company (except the inn-keeper, who gave himself to the devil) were like to split at the extravagances of master and man. At last, the barber, Cardenio, and the curate, having, with much ado, got Don Quixote to bed, he presently fell asleep, being heartily tired; and then they left him, to comfort Sancho Panza for the loss of the giant's head; but it was no easy matter to appease the inn-keeper, who was at his wit's end for the unexpected and sudden fate of his wine-skins.

The hostess, in the meantime, ran up and down the house crying and roaring: "In an ill hour," said she, "did this unlucky knight-errant come into my house; I wish, for my part, I had never seen him, for he has been a dear guest to me. He and his man, his horse and his ass, went away last time without paying me a cross for their supper, their bed, their litter and provender; and all, forsooth, because he was seeking adventures, and therefore was not bound to pay for anything. Bad luck to him! what have I to do with his statutes of chivalry? It was upon this score that the t'other fellow took away my good tail; it is clear spoiled, the hair is all torn off, and my husband can never use it again. And now to come upon me again, with destroying my wine-skins, and spilling my liquor; may somebody spill his

[1] [In allusion to the joy of the mob in Spain, when they see the bulls coming.] It is not to be doubted that the Spaniards derived their passion for the bull-fights from the Moors. Indeed, in most of their old ballads, descriptive of bull-fights, the personages are Moorish. See the specimen, Additional Note XX.

heart's blood for it for me! But I will be paid, so I will, to the last maravedi, or I will disown my name [1] and forswear the mother that bore me." Her honest maid Maritornes seconded her fury; but Master Curate stopped their mouths by promising that he would see them satisfied for their wine and their skins, but especially for the tail which they kept such a clatter about. Dorothea comforted Sancho, assuring him, that whenever it appeared that his master had killed the giant and restored her to her dominions, he should be sure of the best earldom in her disposal. With this he huckled up again, and swore "that he himself had seen the giant's head, by the same token that it had a beard that reached down to his middle; and if it could not be found it must be hid by witchcraft, for everything went by enchantment in that house, as he had found to his cost when he was there before."—Dorothea answered, that she believed him; and desired him to pluck up his spirits, for all things would be well. All parties being quieted, Cardenio, Dorothea and the rest entreated the curate to finish the novel, which was so near a conclusion; and he, in obedience to their commands, took up the book and read on.

Anselmo grew so satisfied of Camilla's virtue, that he lived with all the content and security in the world; to confirm which, Camilla ever in her looks seemed to discover her aversion to Lothario, which made him desire Anselmo to dispense with his coming to his house, since he found how averse his wife was to him, and how great a disgust she had to his company; but Anselmo would not be persuaded to yield to his request; and was so blind, that, seeking his content, he perpetually promoted his dishonour. He was not the only person pleased with the condition he lived in; Leonela was so transported with her amour, that secured by her lady's connivance, she perfectly abandoned herself to the indiscreet enjoyment of her gallant; so that one night her master heard somebody in her chamber, and coming to the door to discover

[1] In the original, "by the bones of my father."

"Giuro a te per l'ossa di Pipino."
MORG. MAGG. Canto 25.

who it was, he found it held fast against him; but at last forcing it open, he saw one leap out of the window the instant he entered the room: he would have pursued him, but Leonela clinging about him, begged him to appease his anger and concern, since the person that made his escape was her husband. Anselmo would not believe her, but drawing his dagger, threatened to kill her if she did not immediately make full discovery of the matter. Distracted with fear, she begged him to spare her life, and she would discover things that more nearly related to him than he imagined.—"Speak quickly, then," replied Anselmo, "or you die."—"It is impossible," returned she, "that in this confusion and fright I should say anything that can be understood; but give me but till to-morrow morning, and I will lay such things before you, as will surprise and amaze you; but believe me, sir, the person that leaped out of the window is a young man of this city, who is betrothed to me." This something appeased Anselmo, and prevailed with him to allow her till the next morning to make her confession; for he was too well assured of Camilla's virtue, by the past trial, to suspect that there could be anything relating to her in what Leonela had to tell him: wherefore fastening her in her room, and threatening that she should not come out till she had done what she had promised, he returned to his chamber to Camilla, and told her all that had passed, without omitting the promise she had given him to make some strange discovery the next morning. You may easily imagine the concern this gave Camilla; she made no doubt but that the discovery Leonela had promised was of her disloyalty; and without waiting to know whether it was so or not, that very night, as soon as Anselmo was asleep, taking with her all her jewels, and some money, she got undiscovered out of the house, and went to Lothario, informed him of all that had passed, and desired him either to put her in some place of safety, or to go with her where they might be safe from Anselmo.

This surprising relation so confounded Lothario, that for some time he knew not what he did, or what resolution to take; but at last, with Camilla's consent, he put her into a nunnery, where a sister of his was abbess,

and immediately, without acquainting anybody with his departure, left the city.

Anselmo, as soon as it was day, got up, without missing his wife, and hurried away to Leonela's chamber, to hear what she had to say to him; but he found nobody there, only the sheets tied together, and fastened to the window, showed which way she had made her escape; on which he returned very sad to tell Camilla the adventure, but was extremely surprised when he found her not in the whole house, nor could hear any news of her from his servants; but finding in his search her trunks open, and most of her jewels gone, he no longer doubted of his dishonour: so, pensive and half dressed as he was, he went to Lothario's lodging to tell him his misfortune; but when his servants informed him that he was gone that very night, with all his money and jewels, his pangs were redoubled, and his grief increased almost to madness. To crown all, when he returned home, he found his house empty, for fear had driven away all his servants. He knew not what to think, say, or do. He saw himself forsaken by his friend, his wife, and his very servants, with whom he imagined that Heaven itself had abandoned him; but his greatest trouble was to find himself robbed of his honour and reputation, for Camilla's crime was but too evident from all these concurring circumstances. After a thousand distracting thoughts, he resolved to retreat to that village whither he formerly retired, to give Lothario an opportunity to ruin him; wherefore, fastening up his doors, he took horse, full of languishing sorrow, the violence of which was so great, that he had scarce rid half way, when he was forced to alight, and tying his horse to a tree, he threw himself beneath it, and gave vent in that melancholy posture to pitiful and doleful sighs; till, a little before night, he discovered a passenger coming the same road, of whom he inquired what news at Florence? The traveller replied, that the most surprising news that had been heard of of late, was now all the talk of the city, which was, that Lothario had that very night carried away the wealthy Anselmo's wife Camilla, which was all confessed by Camilla's woman, who was apprehended that night as she slipped from the

window of Anselmo's house, by a pair of sheets. "The truth of this story I cannot affirm," continued the traveller; "but everybody is astonished at the accident; for no man could ever suspect such a crime from a person engaged in so strict a friendship with Anselmo as Lothario was; for they were called the Two Friends."—"Is it yet known," replied Anselmo, "which way Lothario and Camilla are gone?"—"No, sir," returned the traveller, "though the governor has made as strict a search after them as is possible."—Anselmo asked no more questions, but after they had taken their leaves of each other, the traveller left him and pursued his journey.

This mournful news so affected the unfortunate Anselmo, that he was struck with death almost that very moment. Getting therefore on his horse as well as he could, he arrived at his friend's house. He knew nothing yet of his disgrace; but seeing him so pale and melancholy, concluded that some great misfortune had befallen him. Anselmo desired to be immediately led to his chamber, and furnished with pen, ink, and paper, and to be left alone with his door locked; when, finding that his end approached, he resolved to leave in writing the cause of his sudden and unexpected death. Taking therefore the pen, he began to write; but, unable to finish what he designed, he died a martyr to his foolish doubtfulness. The gentleman, finding he did not call, and that it grew late, resolved to enter his chamber, and see whether his friend was better or worse. He found him half out of bed, lying on his face, with the pen in his hand, and a paper open before him. Seeing him in this posture, he drew near him, called and moved him, but soon found he was dead; which made him call his servants to behold the unhappy event; and then took up the paper, which he saw was written in Anselmo's own hand, and was to this effect.

"A foolish and impertinent desire has robbed me of life. If Camilla hear of my death, let her know that I forgive her; for she was not obliged to do miracles, nor was there any reason I should have desired or expected it; and since I contrived my own dishonour, there is no cause ——"

Thus far Anselmo writ; but life would not hold out till he could give the reasons he designed. The next day the gentleman of the house sent word of Anselmo's death to his relations, who already knew his misfortunes, as well as the nunnery whither Camilla was retired. She herself was indeed very near that death which her husband had passed; though not for the loss of him, but Lothario; of which she had lately heard a flying report; but though she was a widow now, she would neither take the veil, nor leave the nunnery; till, in a few days, the news was confirmed of his being slain in a battle betwixt Monsieur de Lautrec,[1] and the Great Captain, Gonzalo Fernandes de Cordova, in the kingdom of Naples.[2] This was the end of the offending, and too late penitent friend; the news of which made Camilla immediately profess herself, and soon after, overwhelmed with grief and melancholy, pay for her transgression with the loss of her life. This was the end that overtook them all, proceeding from so insensate a beginning.

"I like this novel well," said the curate; "yet, after all, I cannot persuade myself that there is anything of truth in it; and if it be purely invention, the author was in the wrong; for it is not be imagined there could ever be a husband so foolish, as to venture on so dangerous an experiment. Had he made his husband and wife a gallant and a mistress, the fable had appeared more probable; but, as it is, it is next to impossible. However, I must confess, I have nothing to object against his manner of telling it."

[1] The Mareschal de Lautrec (known, until the death of his father, by the name of M. de Barbasan), was one of the bravest, and withal most unfortunate, soldiers of the 16th century. See Additional Note XXI.

[2] The conquest of Naples, then the great object of Spanish ambition, having at last been attained, after a mighty expenditure of blood and treasure, Ferdinand the Catholic repaired to Italy, and was received by Gonsalvo with such splendour, that the description of processions, feasts, &c., fills many long pages in Mariana. There is, however, a very short and simple Spanish ballad, which may well deserve to be translated, on account of the contrast it presents to the triumphant and pompous language of the Jesuitical historian.—See Additional Note XXII.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Containing an Account of other surprising Accidents in the Inn.

At the same time the inn-keeper, who stood at the door, seeing company coming, "More guests," cried he; "a brave jolly troop, on my word. If they stop here, we may sing, O be joyful."—"What are they?" said Cardenio.—"Four men," said the host, "on horseback, jennet-wise,[1] with black masks[2] on their faces, and armed with lances and targets: a lady too all in white, that rides single and masked; and two running footmen."—"Are they near?" said the curate.—"Just at the door," replied the inn-keeper.—Hearing this, Dorothea veiled herself, and Cardenio had just time enough to step into the next room, where Don Quixote lay, when the strangers came into the yard. The four horsemen, who made a very genteel appearance, dismounted and went to help down the lady, whom one of them took in his arms, and carried into the house; where he seated her in a chair by the chamber-door, into which Cardenio had withdrawn. All this was done without discovering their faces, or speaking a word; only the lady, as she sat down in the chair, breathed out a deep sigh, and let her arms sink down, in a weak and fainting posture. The curate, marking their odd behaviour, which raised in him a curiosity to know who they were, went to their servants in the stable, and asked what their masters were. "Egad, sir," said one of them, "that is more than we can tell you; they seem of no mean quality, especially that gentleman who carried the lady into the house, for the rest pay him

[1] [*Á la gineta:* a style of riding with short stirrups, which the Spaniards took from the Arabians, and which is still used by African and Eastern nations.]

[1] [*Antifaz;* a piece of thin black silk, which the Spaniards wear before their faces in travelling, not for disguise, but to keep off the dust and sun.]

great respect, and his word is a law to them."—"Who is the lady?" said the curate.—"We know no more of her than the rest," answered the fellow, "for we could never see her face all the time, though we have often heard her sigh and groan desperately. They picked us up on the road, my comrade and myself, and prevailed with us to wait on them to Andalusia, promising to pay us well for our trouble; so that, bating the two days travelling in their company, they are utter strangers to us."—"Could you not hear them name one another all this time?" asked the curate.—"No, truly, sir," answered the footman, "for we heard them not speak a syllable all the way: the poor lady, indeed, used to sigh and grieve so piteously, that we are persuaded she has no stomach to this journey: whatever may be the cause we know not; by her garb she seems to be a nun, but by her grief and melancholy, one might guess they are going to make her one, when perhaps the poor girl has no choice for it."—"Very likely," said the curate; and with that leaving them, he returned to the place where he left Dorothea, who, hearing the masked lady sigh so frequently, moved by natural pity, could not forbear inquiring the cause of her sorrow. "Pardon me, madam," said she, "if I beg to know your grief; and assure yourself that my request does not proceed from mere curiosity, but an earnest inclination to serve and assist you, if your misfortune be any such as our sex is naturally subject to, and in the power of a woman to cure."—The melancholy lady made no return to her compliment, and Dorothea pressed her in vain with new reasons, when the gentleman, whom the foot-boy signified to be the chief of the company, interposed: "Madam," said he, "do not trouble yourself to throw away any generous offer on that ungrateful woman, whose nature cannot return an obligation; neither expect any answer to your demands, for her tongue is a stranger to truth."—"Sir," said the disconsolate lady, "my truth and honour have made me thus miserable, and my sufferings are sufficient to prove you the falsest and most base of men."—Cardenio being only parted from the company by Don Quixote's chamber-door, overheard these last

words very distinctly; and immediately cried out, "Good Heaven, what do I hear! what voice struck my ear just now?" The lady, startled at his exclamation, sprang from the chair, and would have bolted into the chamber whence the voice came; but the gentleman perceiving it, laid hold on her, to prevent her, which so disordered the lady that her mask fell off, and discovered an incomparable face, beautiful as an angel's, though very pale, and strangely discomposed, her eyes eagerly rolling on every side, which made her appear distracted. Dorothea and the rest, not guessing what her eyes sought by their violent motion, beheld her with grief and wonder. She struggled so hard, and the gentleman was so disordered by beholding her, that his mask dropped off too, and discovered to Dorothea, who was assisting to hold the lady, the face of her husband Don Ferdinand. Scarce had she known him, when, with a long and dismal oh! she fell in a swoon, and would have reached the floor with all her weight, had not the barber, by good fortune, stood behind and supported her. The curate ran presently to help her, and pulling off her veil to throw water in her face, Don Ferdinand presently knew her, and was struck almost as one dead at the sight; nevertheless, he did not quit Lucinda, who was the lady that struggled so hard to get out of his hands. Cardenio hearing Dorothea's exclamation, and imagining it to be Lucinda's voice, flew into the chamber in great disorder, and the first object he met was Don Ferdinand holding Lucinda, who presently knew him. They were all struck dumb with amazement: Dorothea gazed on Don Ferdinand; Don Ferdinand on Cardenio; and Cardenio and Lucinda on one another.

At last Lucinda broke silence, and addressing Don Ferdinand, "Let me go," said she; "unloose your hold, my lord: by the generosity you should have, or by your inhumanity, since it must be so, I conjure you, leave me, that I may cling like ivy to my old support: and from whom neither your threats, nor prayers, nor gifts, nor promises, could ever alienate my love. Contend not against Heaven, whose power alone could bring me to my real husband's sight, by such strange and unexpected

means; you have a thousand instances to convince you, that nothing but death can make me ever forget him: let this, at least, turn your love into rage, which may prompt you to end my miseries with my life, here before my dear husband, where I shall be proud to lose it, since my death may convince him of my unshaken love and honour till the last minute of my life." Dorothea by this time had recovered, and finding, by Lucinda's discourse who she was, and that Don Ferdinand would not unhand her, she made a virtue of necessity, and falling at his feet, "My lord," cried she, all bathed in tears, "if that beauty which you hold in your arms, has not altogether dazzled your eyes, you may behold at your feet the once happy, but now miserable Dorothea. I am the poor and humble villager, whom your generous bounty, I dare not say your love, did condescend to raise to the honour of calling you her own: I am she, who, once confined to peaceful innocence, led a contented life, till your importunity, your show of honour, and deluding words, charmed me from my retreat, and made me resign my freedom to your power. How I am recompensed may be guessed by my grief, and my being found here in this strange place, whither I was led, not through any dishonourable ends, but purely by despair and grief at being forsaken of you. It was at your desire I was bound to you by the strictest tie, and whatever you do, you can never cease to be mine. Consider, my dear lord, that my matchless love may balance the beauty and nobility of the person for whom you would forsake me: she cannot share your love, for it is only mine; and Cardenio's interest in her will not admit of yours. It is easier far, my lord, to recall your wandering desires, and fix them upon her that adores you, than to draw her to love who hates you. Remember how you did solicit my humble state, and conscious of my meanness, you paid a veneration to my innocence, which, joined with the honourable condition of my yielding to your desires, pronounce me free from ill design or dishonour. Consider these undeniable truths: have some regard to your honour! remember you are a Christian! Why should you then make her life end so miserably, whose beginning your favour made so happy? If I must not expect the usage

and respect of a wife, let me but serve you as a slave; so I belong to you, though in the meanest rank, I never shall complain: let me not be exposed to the slandering reflexions of the censorious world by so cruel a separation from my lord: afflict not the declining years of my poor parents, whose faithful services to you and yours have merited a more suitable return. If you imagine the current of your noble blood would be defiled by mixing with mine, consider how many noble houses have run in such a channel; besides, the woman's side is not essentially requisite to ennoble descent: but chiefly think on this, that virtue is the truest nobility, which if you stain by basely wronging me, you bring a greater blot upon your family than marrying me could cause. In fine, my lord, you cannot, must not disown me as your wife: to attest which truth, I call your own words, which must be true, if you prize yourself for honour, and that nobility, whose want you so despise in me. Witness your oaths and vows, witness that Heaven which you so oft invoked to ratify your promises; and if all these should fail, I make my last appeal to your own conscience, whose sting will always represent my wrongs fresh to your thoughts, and disturb your joys amidst your greatest pleasures."

These, with other such arguments, did the mournful Dorothea urge, appearing so lovely in her sorrow, that Don Ferdinand's friends, as well as all the rest, sympathized with her; Lucinda particularly,—as much admiring her wit and beauty, as moved by the tears, the piercing sighs and moans that followed her entreaties; and she would have gone nearer to have comforted her, had not Ferdinand's arms, that still held her, prevented it. He stood full of confusion, with his eyes fixed attentively on Dorothea a great while; at last, opening his arms he quitted Lucinda. "Thou hast conquered," cried he, "charming Dorothea, thou hast conquered me; it is impossible to resist so many united truths and charms."

Lucinda was still so disordered and weak, that she would have fallen when Ferdinand quitted her had not Cardenio, without regard to his safety, leaped forward and caught her in his arms, and embracing her with eagerness and joy; "Thanks, gracious Heaven!" cried he aloud; "my

dear, my faithful wife, thy sorrows are now ended; for where canst thou rest more safe than in my arms, which now support thee, as once they did when my blessed fortune first made thee mine?" Lucinda then opening her eyes, and finding herself in the arms of her Cardenio, without regard to ceremony or niceness, threw her arms about his neck, and laying her face to his, "Yes," said she, "thou art he, thou art my lord indeed! It is even you yourself, the right owner of this poor, harassed captive. Now, fortune, act thy worst; nor fears nor threats shall ever part me from the sole support and comfort of my life"

This sight was very surprising to Don Ferdinand and the other spectators. Dorothea perceiving, by Don Ferdinand's change of countenance, and laying his hand to his sword, that he prepared to assault Cardenio, fell suddenly on her knees, and, with an endearing embrace, held Don Ferdinand's legs so fast, that he could not stir. "What means," cried she, all in tears, "the only refuge of my hope? See here thy own and dearest wife at thy feet, and her you would enjoy in her true husband's arms. Think, then, my lord, how unjust is your attempt to dissolve that knot which Heaven has tied so fast. Can you ever think or hope success in your design on her, who contemning all dangers, and confirmed in strictest constancy and honour, before your face lies bathed in tears of joy and passion in her true lover's bosom? For Heaven's sake I entreat you, by your own words I conjure you, to mitigate your anger, and permit that faithful pair to consummate their joys, and spend their remaining days in peace. Thus may you make it appear that you are generous and truly noble, giving the world so strong a proof that you have your reason at command, and your passion in subjection." All this while Cardenio, though he still held Lucinda in his arms, had a watchful eye on Don Ferdinand, resolving, if he had made the least offer to his prejudice, to make him repent it, and all his party, if possible, though at the expense of his life. But Don Ferdinand's friends, and the curate, the barber, and all the company (not forgetting honest Sancho Panza), got together about Don Ferdinand, and entreated him to pity the beautiful Dorothea's tears; considering from what she had said, the truth of which

was plain, that it would be the highest injustice to frustrate her lawful hopes; that their strange and wonderful meeting could not be attributed to chance, but the peculiar and directing providence of Heaven; that nothing (as the curate very well urged) but death could part Cardenio from Lucinda; and that though the edge of his sword might separate them, he would make them happier by death, than he could hope to be by surviving; that, in irrecoverable accidents, a submission to fate, and a resignation of our wills, showed not only the greatest prudence, but also the highest courage and generosity; that he should not envy those happy lovers what the bounty of Heaven had conferred on them, but that he should turn his eyes on Dorothea's grief, view her incomparable beauty, which, with her true and unfeigned love, made large amends for the meanness of her parentage; but principally that it lay on him, if he gloried in the titles of nobility and Christianity, to keep his promise inviolate; and that the more reasonable part of mankind could not otherwise be satisfied, or have any esteem for him. Also, that it was the special prerogative of beauty, if heightened by virtue, and adorned with modesty, to lay claim to any dignity, without disparagement or scandal to the person that claims it; and that the strong dictates of delight having been once indulged, we are not to be blamed for following them afterwards, provided they be not unlawful. In short, to these reasons they added so many enforcing arguments, that Don Ferdinand, being really of noble blood, could no longer resist reason, but stooped down, and embracing Dorothea, "Rise, madam," said he, "it is not proper that she should lie prostrate at my feet, who triumphs over my soul. If I have not hitherto paid you all the respect I ought, it was perhaps so ordered by Heaven, that having by this a stronger conviction of your constancy and goodness, I may henceforth set the greater value on your merit. Let the future respects and services I shall pay you plead a pardon for my past transgressions; and let the violent passions of my love, that first made me yours, be an excuse for that which caused me to forsake you. View the now happy Lucinda's eyes, and there read a thousand further excuses;

but I promise henceforth never to disturb her quiet; and may she live long and contented with her dear Cardenio, as I hope to do with my dearest Dorothea."—Thus concluding, he embraced her again so lovingly, that it was with no small difficulty that he kept in his tears, which he endeavoured to conceal, being ashamed to discover so indubitable a proof of his love and repentance.

Cardenio, Lucinda, and the greater part of the company could not so well command their emotions, but all wept for joy: even Sancho Panza himself shed tears, though, as he afterwards confessed, it was not for downright grief, but because he found Dorothea not to be the Queen of Micomicona, as he supposed, of whom he expected so many favours and preferments. Cardenio and Lucinda fell at Don Ferdinand's feet, giving him thanks, with the strongest expressions which gratitude could suggest; he raised them up, and received their acknowledgments with much modesty; then begged to be informed by Dorothea how she came to that place. She related to him all she had told Cardenio, but with such a grace, that what were misfortunes to her, proved an inexpressible pleasure to those that heard her relation. When she had done, Don Ferdinand told all that had befallen him in the city, after he found the paper in Lucinda's bosom, which declared Cardenio to be her husband; how he would have killed her, had not her parents prevented him; how afterwards, mad with shame and anger, he left the city, to wait a more commodious opportunity of revenge; how, in a short time, he learned that Lucinda was fled to a nunnery, resolving to end her days there, if she could not spend them with Cardenio; that, having desired those three gentlemen to go with him, they went to the nunnery, and, waiting till they found the gate open, he left two of the gentlemen to secure the door, while he, with the other, entered the house, where they found Lucinda talking with a nun in the cloister. They forcibly brought her thence to a village, where they disguised themselves for their more convenient flight, which they more easily brought about, the nunnery being situate in the fields, distant a good way from any town. He likewise added, how Lucinda, finding herself in his power, fell into a swoon; and that

after she came to herself, she continually wept and sighed, but would not speak a syllable; and that, accompanied with silence only and tears, they had travelled till they came to that inn, which was to him as an arrival at heaven, which puts a happy conclusion to all earthly misfortunes.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

In which the History of the famous Princess Micomicona is continued, with other pleasant Adventures.

THE joy of the whole company was unspeakable at the happy conclusion of this perplexed business. Dorothea, Cardenio, and Lucinda thought the sudden change of their affairs too surprising to be real; and through a disuse of good fortune, could hardly be induced to believe their happiness. Don Ferdinand thanked Heaven a thousand times for its propitious conduct in leading him out of a labyrinth, in which his honour and virtue were like to have been lost. The curate, as he was very instrumental in the general reconciliation, had likewise no small share in the general joy; and that no discontent might sour their universal satisfaction, Cardenio and the curate engaged to see the hostess satisfied for all the damages committed by Don Quixote.

Only poor Sancho drooped pitifully. With very melancholy demeanour, he slipt into his master's chamber, who had slept on, and was just wakened, little thinking of what had happened.

"I hope your early rising will do you no hurt," said he, "Sir Knight of the Doleful Countenance; but you may now sleep on till doomsday if you will; nor need you trouble your head any longer about killing any giant, or restoring the princess, for all that is done to your hand."—"That is more than probable," answered the knight; "for I have had the most extraordinary, the most prodigious, and bloody battle with the giant, that I ever had, or shall have, during the whole course of my life. Yet with one cross stroke I laid his head thwack on the ground, whence

the great effusion of blood seemed like a violent stream of water."—"Of wine, you mean," said Sancho; "for you must know (if you know it not already), that your worship's dead giant is a broached wine-skin; and the blood some thirty gallons of wine which it held in its belly; and your head so cleverly struck off, is my mother the whore; and so the devil take both giant and head, and all together."

"What sayest thou, madman?" said Don Quixote; "thou art frantic, sure."—"Rise, rise, sir," said Sancho, "and see what fine work you have cut out for yourself; here is the devil-and-all to pay, and your great queen is changed into a private gentlewoman, called Dorothea, with some other such odd matters, that you will wonder with a vengeance."—"I can wonder at nothing here," said Don Quixote, "where, you may remember, I told you all things ruled by enchantment,"—"I believe it," quoth Sancho, "had my tossing in a blanket been of that kind; but sure it was the likest the tossing in a blanket of anything I ever knew in my life. And this same innkeeper, I remember very well, was one of those that tossed me into the air, and as cleverly and heartily he did it as a man could wish, I will say that for him: so that after all I begin to smell a rat, and do perilously suspect that all our enchantment ends in nothing but bruises and ill-luck."—"Heaven will retrieve all," said the knight; "I will therefore dress and march to the discovery of these wonderful transformations."—While Sancho made him ready, the curate gave Don Ferdinand and the rest an account of Don Quixote's madness, and of the device he used to draw him from the Barren Rock, to which the supposed disdain of his mistress had banished him in imagination. Sancho's adventures made also a part in the story, which proved very diverting to the strangers. He added, that since Dorothea's change of fortune had baulked their design that way, some other trick should be found to decoy him home. Cardenio offered his service in the affair, and that Lucinda should personate Dorothea. "No, no," answered Don Ferdinand; "Dorothea shall humour the jest still, if this honest gentleman's habitation be not very far off."—"Only two days' journey," said the

curate.—"I would ride twice as far," said Don Ferdinand, "for the pleasure of so good and charitable an action."—By this Don Quixote had sallied out, armed cap-a-pie, Mambrino's helmet (with a great bruise in it) on his head; his shield on his left arm, and with his right he leaned on his lance. His meagre, yellow, weather-beaten face, of half a league in length; the unaccountable medley of his armour, together with his grave and solemn port, struck Don Ferdinand and his companions dumb with amazement; while the champion, casting his eyes on Dorothea, with great gravity and solidity, broke silence with these words:

"I am informed by this my squire, beautiful lady, that your greatness is annihilated, and your majesty reduced to nothing; for of a queen and mighty princess, as you used to be, you are become a private damsel. If any express order from the necromantic king your father, doubting the ability and success of my arm in the reinstating you, has occasioned this change, I must tell him, that he is no conjurer in these matters, and does not know one half of his trade;[1] nor is he skilled in the relations of chivalry: for had he been conversant in the study of knight-errantry as I have been, he might have found, that in every age, champions of less fame than Don Quixote de la Mancha have finished more desperate adventures; since the killing of a pitiful giant, how arrogant soever he may be, is no such great achievement; for, not many hours past, I encountered one myself; the success I will not mention, lest the incredulity of some people might distrust the reality; but time, the discoverer of all things, will disclose it, when least expected."—"Hold there," said the host, "it was with two wine-skins, but no giant, that you fought."—Don Ferdinand silenced the inn-keeper, and bid him by no means interrupt Don Quixote, who thus went on. "To conclude, most high and disinherited lady, if your father, for the causes already mentioned, has caused this metamorphosis in your person, believe him not; for there is no peril on earth, through which my sword shall not open a way; and assure yourself that in a few days, by the overthrow of your enemy's head, it shall fix on yours that

[1] [*De la misa la media*: literally, one half of the mass.]

crown, which is your lawful inheritance." Here Don Quixote stopped, waiting the princess's answer; she, assured of Don Ferdinand's consent to carry on the jest, till Don Quixote was got home, and assuming a face of gravity, "Whosoever," answered she, "has informed you, valorous Knight of the Doleful Countenance, that I have altered or changed my condition, has imposed upon you; for I am just the same to-day as yesterday. It is true, some unexpected, but fortunate accidents, have varied some circumstances of my fortune, much to my advantage, and far beyond my hopes; but I am neither changed in my person, nor altered in my resolution of employing the force of your redoubtable and invincible arm in my favour. I therefore apply myself to your usual generosity, to have these words spoken to my father's dishonour recalled, and believe these easy and infallible means to redress my wrongs the pure effects of his wisdom and policy, as the good fortune I now enjoy has been the consequence of your surprising deeds, as this noble presence can testify. What should hinder us then from setting forward to-morrow morning, depending for a happy and successful conclusion on the will of Heaven, and the power of your unparalleled courage?"

The ingenious Dorothea having concluded, Don Quixote, turning to Sancho, with all the signs of fury imaginable, "Now must I tell thee, poor paltry hang-dog," said he, "thou art the veriest rascal in all Spain: tell me, rogue, scoundrel, did not you just now inform me, that this princess was changed into a little private damsel, called Dorothea, and the head which I lopped from the giant's shoulders, was the whore your mother, with a thousand other absurdities? Now, by all the powers of heaven," looking up, and grinding his teeth together, "I have a mind so to use thee, as to make thee appear a miserable example to all succeeding squires, that shall dare to tell a knight-errant a lie."—"Good your worship," cried Sancho, "have patience, I beseech you; mayhap I am mistaken or so, about my lady Princess Micomicona's concern there; but that the giant's head came off the wine-skin's shoulders, and that the blood was as good wine as ever was tipt over tongue, I will take my corporal oath

on it; Gadzookers, sir, are not the skins all hacked and slashed within there at your bed's-head, and the wine all in a puddle in your chamber? But the proof of the pudding is in the eating, master;[1] and if my landlord here do not let you know it to your cost, he is a very honest and civil fellow, that is all."—"Sancho," said the Don, "I pronounce thee *non compos;* I therefore pardon thee, and have done."—"It is enough," said Don Ferdinand; "we therefore, in pursuance of the princess's orders, will this night refresh ourselves, and to-morrow we will all of us set out to attend the lord Don Quixote, in prosecution of this important enterprise he has undertaken, being all impatient to be eye-witnesses of his celebrated and matchless courage."—"I shall be proud of the honour of serving and waiting upon you, my good lord," replied Don Quixote, "and reckon myself infinitely obliged by the favour and good opinion of so honourable a company; which I shall endeavour to improve and confirm, though at the expense of the last drop of my blood."

Many other compliments had passed between Don Quixote and Don Ferdinand, when the arrival of a stranger interrupted them. His dress represented him as a Christian newly returned from Barbary: he was clad in a short-skirted coat of blue cloth, with short sleeves, and no collar, his breeches were of blue linen, with a cap of the same colour, a pair of date-coloured stockings, and a Moorish scimitar hung by a scarf, in manner of a shoulder-belt. There rode a woman in his company, clad in a Moorish dress; her face was covered with a veil; she had on a little cap of gold-tissue, and a Turkish mantle that reached from her shoulders to her feet. The man was well-shaped and strong, his age about forty, his face somewhat tanned, his moustachios long, and his beard handsome. In short, his genteel

[1] [Literally: *It will be seen in the frying of the eggs: i.e.* when eggs are to be fried, their quality will be discovered when they are broken. It is also given as an explanation that a thief stole a frying-pan, and the woman, who owned it, meeting him, asked him what he was carrying away: whereupon he answered, You will know when your eggs are to be fried.]

mien and person were too distinguishable to let the gentleman be hid by the meanness of his habit. He called presently for a room, and, being answered that all were full, seemed a little troubled; however, he went to the woman who came along with him, and took her down from her ass. The women, being all surprised at the oddness of the Moorish dress, had the curiosity to flock about the stranger; and Dorothea, very discreetly imagining that both she and her conductor were tired, and took it ill that they could not have a chamber, said, "I hope, madam, you will bear your ill fortune patiently," "for want of room is an inconvenience incident to all public inns; but if you please, madam, to take up with us," pointing to Lucinda, "you may perhaps find that you have met with worse entertainment on the road than what this place affords."—The unknown lady made her no answer, but, rising up, laid her hands across her breast, bowed her head, and inclined her body, as a sign that she acknowledged the favour. By her silence they conjectured her to be undoubtedly a Moor, and that she could not speak Spanish. The Captive was now come back from the stable, and told them, "Ladies, I hope you will excuse this gentlewoman from answering any questions, for she is very much a stranger to our language."—"We are only, sir," answered Lucinda, "making her an offer which civility obliges us to make to all strangers, especially of our own sex, that she would make us happy in her company all night, and fare as we do: we will make very much of her, sir, and she shall want for nothing that the house affords."—"I return you humble thanks, dear madam," answered the stranger, "in the lady's behalf and my own; and I infinitely prize the favour, which the present exigence and the worth of the donors make doubly engaging."—"Is the lady, pray, sir, a Christian or a Moor?" asked Dorothea. "Our charity would make us hope she were the former; but by her attire and silence, we are afraid she is the latter."—"Outwardly, madam," answers he, "she appears and is a Moor, but in her heart a zealous Christian, which her longing desires of being baptized have expressly testified. I have had no opportunity of

having her christened since she left Algiers, which was her habitation and native country; nor has any imminent danger of death as yet obliged her to be brought to the font, before she be better instructed in the principles of our religion; but I hope, by Heaven's assistance, to have her shortly baptized with all the decency suiting her quality, which is much above what her equipage or mine seem to show."

These words raised in them all a curiosity to be further informed who the Moor and the Captive were; but they thought it improper then to put them upon any more particular relation of their fortunes, because they wanted rest and refreshment after their journey. Dorothea, placing the lady by her, begged her to take off her veil. She looked on her companion, as if she required him to let her know what was said; which, when he had let her understand in the Arabic tongue, joining his own request also, she discovered so charming a face, that Dorothea imagined her more beautiful than Lucinda; she, on the other hand, fancied her handsomer than Dorothea; and most of the company believed her more beautiful than both of them. As beauty has always a prerogative, or rather charm, to attract men's inclinations, the whole company dedicated their desires to serve the lovely Moor. Don Ferdinand asked the Captive her name; he answered, "Lél-la Zorayda;" she, hearing him, and guessing what they asked, suddenly replied with great concern, though very gracefully, "No, no Zorayda, Maria, Maria;" giving them to understand that she called herself Maria, and not Zorayda. These words, spoken with so much eagerness, raised a concern in everybody, the ladies especially, whose natural tenderness showed itself by their tears; and Lucinda, embracing her very lovingly, "Ay, ay," said she, "Maria, Maria;" which words the Moorish lady repeated by way of answer. "Zorayda macange," added she, as much as to say, not Zorayda, but Maria, Maria.

The night coming on, and the inn-keeper, by order of Don Ferdinand's friends, having made haste to provide them the best supper he could, the cloth was laid on a long table, there being neither round nor square in the

house. Don Quixote, after much ceremony, was prevailed upon to sit at the head; he desired the Lady Micomicona to sit next him; and the rest of the company having placed themselves according to their rank and convenience, they ate their supper very heartily. Don Quixote, to raise the diversion, never minded his meat, but inspired with the same spirit that moved him to preach so much to the goat-herds, he began to hold forth in this manner. "Certainly, gentlemen, if we rightly consider it, those who make knight-errantry their profession, often meet with most surprising and stupendous adventures. For what mortal in the world, at this time entering within this castle, and seeing us sit together as we do, will imagine and believe us to be the same persons which in reality we are? Who is there that can judge, that this lady by my side is the great queen we all know her to be, and that I am that Knight of the Doleful Countenance, so universally made known by fame? It is then no longer to be doubted, but that this exercise and profession surpasses all others that have been invented by man, and is so much the more honourable, as it is more exposed to dangers. Let none presume to tell me that the pen is preferable to the sword; for be they who they will, I shall tell them they know not what they say: for the reason they give, and on which chiefly they rely is, that the labour of the mind exceeds that of the body, and that the exercise of arms depends only on the body, as if the use of them were the business of porters, which requires nothing but much strength. Or, as if this, which we who profess it call chivalry, did not include the acts of fortitude, which depend very much upon the understanding. Or else, as if that warrior, who commands an army or defends a city besieged, did not labour as much with the mind as with the body. If this be not so, let experience teach us whether it be possible by bodily strength to discover or guess the intentions of an enemy. The forming designs, laying of stratagems, overcoming of difficulties, and shunning of dangers, are all works of the understanding, wherein the body has no share. It being therefore evident, that the exercise of arms requires the help of the mind as

well as learning, let us see in the next place, whether the scholar or the soldier's mind undergoes the greater labour. Now this may be the better known, by regarding the end and object each of them aims at; for that intention is to be most valued, which makes the noblest end its object. The scope and end of learning, I mean human learning (in this place I speak not of divinity, whose aim is to guide souls to heaven, for no other can equal a design so infinite as that), is to give a perfection to distributive justice, bestowing upon every one his due, and to procure and cause good laws to be observed; an end really generous, great, and worthy of high commendation; but yet not equal to that which knight-errantry tends to, whose object and end is peace, which is the greatest blessing man can wish for in this life. And therefore the first good news that the world received, was that the angels brought in the night, which was the beginning of our day, when they sang in the air, *Glory be on high, and peace upon earth, to men of good-will.* And the only manner of salutation taught by the best Master in heaven, or upon earth, to His friends and favourites, was, that entering any house they should say, *Peace be to this house.* And at other times He said to them, *My peace I give to you, My peace I leave to you, Peace be with you.* A jewel and legacy worthy of such a Donor, a jewel so precious, that without it there can be no happiness either in earth or heaven. This peace is the true end of war; for arms and war are one and the same thing. Allowing then this truth, that the end of war is peace, and that in this it excels the end of learning, let us now weigh the bodily labours the scholar undergoes, against those the warrior suffers, and then see which are greater."

The method and language Don Quixote used in delivering himself were such, that none of his hearers at that time looked upon him as a madman. But on the contrary, most of them being gentlemen, to whom the use of arms properly appertains, they gave him a willing attention: and he proceeded in this manner. "These, then, I say, are the sufferings and hardships a scholar endures. First, poverty (not that they are all poor, but to urge the worst that may be in this case), and having said he endures poverty, me-

thinks nothing more need be urged to express his misery; for he that is poor enjoys no happiness, but labours under this poverty in all its parts, at one time in hunger, at another in cold, another in nakedness, and sometimes in all of them together, yet his poverty is not so great, but still he eats, though it be later than the usual hour, and of the scraps of the rich, or, which is the greatest of a scholar's misfortunes, does what is called among them *going a sopping*;[1] neither can the scholar miss of somebody's stove or fireside to sit by, where, though he be not thoroughly heated, yet he may gather warmth, and at last sleep away the night under a roof. I will not touch upon other less material circumstances, as the want of linen, and scarcity of shoes, thinness and baldness of their clothes, and their surfeiting when good fortune throws a feast in their way: this is the difficult and uncouth path they tread, often stumbling and falling, yet rising again and pushing on, till they attain the preferment they aim at; whither being arrived, we have seen many of them, who, having been carried by a fortunate gale through all these quicksands, govern the world from a chair; their hunger being changed into satiety, their cold into comfortable warmth; their nakedness into magnificence of apparel, and the mats they used to lie upon, into stately beds of costly silks and softest linen, a reward due to their virtue. But yet their sufferings being compared to those the soldier endures, appear much inferior, as I shall in the next place make out."

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Which continues Don Quixote's curious Discourse upon Arms and Learning.

"SINCE, speaking of the scholar, we began with his poverty, and its several parts," continued Don Quixote, "let us now observe whether the soldier be any richer than he; and we shall find that poverty itself is not poorer; for he

[1] [*Andar á la sopa.* The poor scholars who obtained soup at the doors of nonasteries were called *sopistas.* See Mr. Duffield's ed. vol. ii. p. 197.]

depends on his miserable pay, which he receives but seldom, or perhaps never; or else on that he makes by marauding, with the hazard of his life, and trouble of his conscience. Such is sometimes his want of apparel, that a slashed buff-coat is all his holiday raiment and shirt: and in the depth of winter being in the open field, he has nothing to cherish him against the sharpness of the season, but the breath of his mouth, which issuing from an empty place, I am persuaded must, against all nature, come out cold.

But now see how he expects night to make amends for all these hardships in the bed prepared for him, which unless it be his own fault, never proves too narrow; for he may freely lay out as much of the ground as he pleases, and tumble to his content without danger of losing the sheets. But above all, when the day shall come, wherein he is to put in practice the exercise of his profession, and strive to gain some new degree; when the day of battle shall come, then, as a mark of honour, shall his head be dignified with a cap made of lint, to stop a hole made by a bullet, or be perhaps carried off maimed, at the expense of a leg or arm. And if this do not happen, but merciful Heaven preserve his life and limbs, it may fall out that he shall remain as poor as before, and must run through many encounters and battles, nay, always come off victorious, to obtain some little preferment; and these miracles too are rare. But, I pray you tell me, gentlemen, if ever you made it your observation, how few are those who obtain due rewards in war, in comparison with those numbers that perish? Doubtless you will answer, that there is no parity between them; that the dead cannot be reckoned up; whereas, those who live and are rewarded, may be numbered with three figures.[1] It is quite otherwise with scholars, not only those who follow the law, but others also, who all either by hook or by crook get a livelihood, so that though the soldier's sufferings be much greater, yet his reward is much less. To this it may be answered, that it is easier to reward two thousand scholars, than thirty thousand soldiers, because the former are recompensed at the expense of the public, by giving them employments, which of necessity must be granted to those of their profession, but

[1] [*i.e.* Do not exceed hundreds.]

the latter cannot be gratified otherwise than at the cost of the master that employs them; yet this very difficulty makes good my argument. But let us lay this matter aside, as a point difficult to be decided, and let us return to the preference due to arms above learning, a subject as yet in debate, each party bringing strong reasons to make out their pretensions. Among others, learning urges, that without it warfare itself could not subsist; because war, as other things, has its laws, and is governed by them, and laws are the province of learning and scholars. To this objection the soldiers make answer, that without them the laws cannot be maintained, for it is by arms that commonwealths are defended, kingdoms supported, cities secured, the highway made safe, and the sea delivered from pirates. In short, were it not for them, commonwealths, kingdoms, monarchies, cities, the roads by land, and the waters of the sea, would be subject to the ravages and confusion that attend war while it lasts and is at liberty to make use of its unbounded power and prerogative. Besides, it is past all controversy, that what costs dearest is and ought to be most valued. Now, for a man to attain to an eminent degree of learning costs him time, watching, hunger, nakedness, dizziness in the head, weakness in the stomach, and other inconveniences, which are the consequences of these, of which I have already in part made mention. But the rising gradually to be a good soldier, is purchased at the whole expense of all that is required for learning, and that in so surpassing a degree that there is no comparison betwixt them; for he is every moment in danger of his life. To what danger or distress can a scholar be reduced equal to that of a soldier, who, being besieged in some strong place, and at his post or upon guard in some ravelin or bastion, perceives the enemy carrying on a mine under him, and yet must upon no account remove thence, or shun the danger which threatens him so near? All he can do, is to give notice to his commander, that he may countermine, but must himself stand still, fearing and expecting when on a sudden he shall soar to the clouds without wings, and be again cast down headlong against his will. If this danger seem inconsiderable, let us see whether that be not

greater when two galleys shock one another with their prows in the midst of the spacious sea. When they have thus grappled, and are clinging together, the soldier is confined to the narrow beak, being a board not above two feet wide; and yet though he sees before him as many ministers of death threatening as there are pieces of cannon on the other side pointing against him, and not half a pike's length from his body; and being sensible that the first slip of his feet sends him to the bottom of Neptune's dominions; still, for all this, inspired by honour, with an undaunted heart, he stands a mark to so much fire, and endeavours to make his way, by that narrow passage, into the enemy's vessel. But what is most to be admired is, that no sooner one falls, where he shall never rise till the end of the world, than another steps into the same place; and if he also drops into the sea, which lies in wait for him like an enemy, another, and after him another, still fills up the place, without suffering any interval of time to separate their deaths; a resolution and boldness scarce to be paralleled in any other trials of war. Blessed be those happy ages that were strangers to the dreadful fury of these devilish instruments of artillery, whose inventor I am satisfied is now in hell, receiving the reward of his cursed invention, which is the cause that very often a cowardly base hand takes away the life of the bravest gentleman, and that in the midst of that vigour and resolution which animates and inflames the bold, a chance bullet (shot perhaps by one that fled, and was frighted at the very flash the mischievous piece gave, when it went off) coming nobody knows how, or from where, in a moment puts a period to the brave designs, and the life, of one that deserved to have survived many years. This considered, I could almost say, I am sorry at my heart for having taken upon me this profession of a knight-errant, in so detestable an age; for though no danger daunts me, yet it affects me to think, whether powder and lead may not deprive me of the opportunity of becoming famous, and making myself known throughout the world by the strength of my arm and dint of my sword. But let Heaven order matters as it pleases; for if I compass my designs, I shall be the more honoured

by as much as the dangers to which I have exposed myself are greater than those the knights-errant of former ages underwent."

All this long preamble Don Quixote made, whilst the company supped, never minding to eat a mouthful, though Sancho Panza had several times advised him to mind his meat, telling him there would be time enough afterwards to talk as he thought fit. Those who heard him were afresh moved with compassion, to see a man, who seemed, in all other respects, to have a sound judgment and clear understanding, so absolutely mad and distracted when any mention was made of his cursed knight-errantry.

The curate told him, he was much in the right, in all he had said for the honour of arms; and that he, though a scholar and a graduate, was of the same opinion. Supper being ended and the cloth taken away, whilst the innkeeper, his wife, his daughter, and Maritornes, fitted up Don Quixote's loft for the ladies, that they might lie by themselves that night, Don Ferdinand entreated the Captive to give them an account of his life; conscious the relation could not choose but be very delightful and surprising, as might be guessed by his coming with Zorayda. The Captive answered, he would most willingly comply with their desires, and that he only feared the relation would not give them all the satisfaction he could wish; but that, however, rather than disobey, he would do it as well as he could. The curate and all the company thanked him, and made fresh instances to the same effect. Seeing himself besought by so many, "There is no need of entreaties," said he, "for what you may command; therefore," continued he, "give me your attention, and you shall hear a true relation, perhaps not to be paralleled by those fabulous stories which are composed with much art and study." This caused all the company to seat themselves, and observe a very strict silence; and then, with an agreeable and sedate voice, he began in this manner.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Wherein the Captive relates his Life and Adventures.

In the mountains of Leon my family had its first origin,[1] and was more kindly dealt withal by nature than by fortune, though my father might pass for rich among the inhabitants of those parts, who are but poorly provided for. To say truth, he had been so, had he had as much industry to preserve, as he had inclination to dissipate his income; but he had been a soldier, and the years of his youth spent in that employment, had left him in his old age a propensity to spend, under the name of liberality. War is a school where the covetous grow free, and the free prodigal: to see a soldier a miser, is a kind of prodigy which happens but seldom. My father was far from being one of them; for he passed the bounds of liberality, and came very near the excesses of prodigality; a thing which cannot suit well with a married life, where the children ought to succeed to the estate, as well as name of the family. We were three of us, all at man's estate; and my father, finding that the only way (as he said) to curb his squandering inclination, was to dispossess himself of that which maintained it, namely, his wealth (without which Alexander himself must have appeared needy), he called us one day all three to him in his chamber, and spoke to us in the following manner.

"My sons, to persuade you that I love you, I need only tell you I am your father, and you my children; and on the other side, you have reason to think me unkind, con-

[1] It has been very often supposed that the story told by this captive, is, in truth, that of Cervantes himself. There is, however, no sort of foundation for this. The captive is a Leonese, Cervantes was a Castilian. The former was made prisoner the day of the battle of Lepanto, in 1571—Cervantes' own captivity did not occur till the 20th of September, 1575. The only circumstances in which the imaginary and the true history coincide, are those of the confinement in the bagnio of Hassan Aga, and (so far as that goes) of an *attempt* having really been made by Cervantes, in a manner somewhat similar to that described as crowned with success in the case of Viedma.

sidering how careless I am in preserving what should one day be yours; but to convince you that I seek to be as a parent, and not a stepfather to you, I have taken a resolution, which I have well weighed and considered for many days. You are all now of an age to choose the kind of life you each of you incline to; or, at least, to enter upon some employment that may one day procure you both honour and profit: therefore I design to divide all I have into four parts, of which I will give three among you, and retain the fourth for myself, to maintain me in my old age, as long as it shall please Heaven to continue me in this life. After that each of you shall have received his part, I could wish you would follow one of the employments I shall mention to you, every one as he finds himself inclined. There is a proverb in our tongue, which I take to contain a great deal of truth, as generally those sorts of sayings do, being short sentences framed upon observation and long experience. This proverb runs thus, Either the church, the sea, or the court. As if it should plainly say, that whosoever desires to thrive must follow one of these three; either be a churchman, or a merchant and try his fortune at sea, or enter into the service of his prince in the court: for another proverb says, that King's chaff is better than Noble's corn. I say this, because I would have one of you follow his studies; another I desire, should be a merchant, and the third should serve the king in his wars; because it is a thing of some difficulty to get an entrance at court; and though war does not immediately procure riches, yet it seldom fails of giving honour and reputation. Within eight days time I will give each of you your portion, and not wrong you of a farthing of it, as you shall see by experience. Now therefore tell me if you are resolved to follow my advice about your settling in the world." And turning to me, as the eldest, he bade me answer first.

I told him, that he ought not upon our account to divide or lessen his estate, or way of living; that we were young men, and could shift in the world; and at last I concluded, that for my part I would be a soldier, and serve God and the king in that honourable profession. My second brother made the same regardful offer, and

chose to go to the Indies; resolving to lay out in goods the share that should be given him here. The youngest, and, I believe, the wisest of us all, said he would be a churchman; and in order to it, go to Salamanca, and there finish his studies. After this, my father embraced us all three, and in a few days performed what he had promised; and, as I remember, it was three thousand ducats apiece, which he gave us in money; for we had an uncle who bought all the estate, and paid for it in ready money, that it might not go out of the family. A little after, we all took leave of my father; and at parting I could not forbear thinking it a kind of inhumanity to leave the old gentleman in so strait a condition: I prevailed with him therefore to accept of two thousand of my three, the remainder being sufficient to make up a soldier's equipage. My example worked upon my other brothers, and they each of them presented him with a thousand ducats; so that my father remained with four thousand ducats in ready money, and three thousand more in land, which he chose to keep and not sell outright. To be short, we took our leave of my father and the uncle I have mentioned, not without much grief and tears on all sides; they particularly recommending us to let them know by all opportunities our good fortune or ill fortune. We promised to do so, and having received the blessing of our old father, one of us went straight to Salamanca, the other to Seville, and I to Alicante, where I was informed of a Genoese ship, which was loading wool for Genoa.

This year makes two-and-twenty since I first left my father's house, and in all that time, though I have writ several letters, I have not had the least news, either of him, or of my brothers. And now I will relate, in few words, my own adventures in all that course of years. I took shipping at Alicante, arrived safe and with a good passage at Genoa, from thence I went to Milan, where I bought my equipage, resolving to go and enter myself in the army of Piedmont; but being come as far as Alessandria del la Paglia, I was informed that the great Duke of Alva was on his way into Flanders;[1] this made me alter

[1] Ferdinand de Toledo, third Duke of Alva, first distinguished himself at the battle of Pavia, being then under twenty years of age.

my first resolution. I followed him, and was present at all his engagements, as well as at the deaths of the Counts Egmont and Horn; and at last I had a pair of colours under a famous captain of Guadalajara, whose

---

Charles V. was, from the beginning, sensible of his great merits; for, says Brantome, he came with him to France, when he was on his way to chastise those of Ghent, in 1549, on which occasion, in presenting him to a great lady of the French court, he used these expressions: "Madame, voilà le Duc d'Albe que j'aime beaucoup: il est d'une noble et valeureuse race (la Maison de Toledo): il est encore jeune, mais il sera un jour bon homme de guerre: je l'avancerai suivant ses merites. Je voudrai bien qu'il fût un peu moins froid et reservé; mais tel est le charactere de nos Espagnols. Vos François sont plus vifs et effrontés: par exemple Peloux—(this was a Frenchman, who had gone over to the emperor with the Duke de Bourbon, and become very useful to Charles V., in many mean enough capacities)—Peloux va et vient sans cesse et veut entrer partout. Je voudrai que le Duc d'Albe fût un peu de ce charactere." It was only in the presence of Charles V., however, that Alva's modesty was remarkable; he was the proudest, as well as the vainest of men,—harsh and cruel;—but withal brave as a lion, and a most skilful general. In 1567, Philip sent him as governor to the Low Countries, and it was at this time that our captive Viedma is represented to have joined him. He ruled these countries, for twelve years, with a rod of iron; the first step he took was to arrest and behead the Counts Egmont and Horn, who had revolted against Philip, or rather against Margaret of Austria, his sister, who preceded Alva in the government of the Low Countries. A captain, named Salines, was sent to arrest Egmont.—"What, *me?*" said the Count, sternly, "*me?* captain—take from me this sword that has so well served the king!" But immediately softening his tone, he added—"since the king wishes to take it, here it is, captain." The Prince of Orange-Nassau, however, escaped, and carried on a bloody war with Alva, the result of which was, in effect, the freedom of the United Provinces. Philip, ever jealous, recalled Alva after a time, and on some ridiculous pretext, banished him to his country seat, which he did not leave till his services were called for in Portugal, of which kingdom he completed the conquest for his tyrannical sovereign. He was as cruel in Portugal as he had been in the Netherlands, and died there in 1582, in the 74th year of his age. It was Alva that first placed musketeers among the pikemen, of which the infantry then consisted; and, at first, this novelty produced an astonishing effect:—every one fled when Alva's stern voice gave the word, "Salgan, salgan los Mosqueteros!" He was distinguished by the highest excellence in every warlike exercise; insomuch, that when the French and Spanish courts met at Bayonne, in 1565, not even the famous Constable Anne de Montmorenci ventured to joust with him.

name was Diego de Urbina.[1] Some time after my arrival in Flanders, there came news of the league concluded by Pope Pius V. of happy memory, in junction with Spain, against the common enemy the Turk, who at that time had taken the island of Cyprus from the Venetians; which was an unfortunate and lamentable loss to Christendom. It was also well known, that the general of this holy league was the most serene Don Juan of Austria, natural brother to our good King Don Philip. The great fame of the preparations for this war excited in me a vehement desire of being present at the engagement, which was expected to follow these preparations; and although I had certain assurance, and, as it were, an earnest of my being advanced to be a captain upon the first vacancy, yet I resolved to leave all those expectations, and return, as I did, to Italy. My good fortune was such, that I arrived just about the same time that Don Juan of Austria[2] landed at Genoa, in order to go to Naples, and join the Venetian fleet, as he did at Messina. In short, I was at that great action of the battle of Lepanto, being a captain of foot, to which post my good fortune, more than my desert, had now advanced me; and on that day, which was so happy to all Christendom, because the world was then disabused of the error they had entertained, that the Turk was invincible by sea, on that day, I say, in which the pride of the Ottomans was first broke, and which was so happy to all Christians, even to those who died in the fight, who were more so than those who remained alive and conquerors, I alone was unfortunate, since instead of a naval crown, which I might have hoped for in the time of the Romans, I found myself that very night a slave, with irons on my feet, and manacles on my hands. The thing happened thus: Uchali, King

[1] It was he who took the royal standard of Egypt, at the battle of Lepanto.

[2] This distinguished soldier was the natural son of Charles V.; but (unlike most natural sons), it is more easy to say who was his father than who was his mother. One Barbara Plomberg, a German peasant girl, had the honour or disgrace of being commonly talked of as having given birth to Don Juan; but there were not wanting abundance of people, who said he owed his being to the secret amours of Charles V. and a princess too near to his blood. See Additional Note XXIII.

of Algiers,[1] a brave and bold pirate, having boarded and taken the flag-galley of Malta, in which only three knights were left alive, and those desperately wounded, the galley of Juan Andrea bore up to succour them; in this galley I was embarked with my company, and doing my duty on this occasion, I leaped into the enemy's galley, which getting loose from ours, that had intended to board her, my soldiers were hindered from following me, and I remained alone among a great number of enemies; and not being able to resist, I was taken after having received several wounds. And Uchali, as you may have heard, having escaped with all his squadron, I found myself his prisoner; and was the only afflicted man among so many joyful ones, and the only captive among so many free; for on that day above 15,000 Christians, who rowed in the Turkish galleys, obtained their long-wished-for liberty. I was carried to Constantinople, where the Grand Turk Selim made my master general of the sea, he having behaved himself very well in the battle, and brought away with him the standard of the order of Malta, as a proof of his valour.

The second year, that of seventy-two, I was at Navarino, rowing in the flag-galley *The Three Beacons;* and I took notice of the opportunity that was lost of taking the whole Turkish fleet in that port;[2] and all the Levantines and Janisaries did so expect to be attacked, that they had made all in readiness to escape on shore without fighting; so great was the terror they had of our fleet; but it pleased God to order it otherwise, not by any fault of the Christian general, but for the sins of Christendom, and because it is His will we should always

[1] "Embistio el *Ochali* a esta capitana con siete galeras suyas, y no pudo ser soccorrida de las nuestras per haberse salido adelante de la ordinanza ó puesto dellas per señalarse aquel dia: de los *tres caballeros heridos* el uno era Frey Pedro Justiniano Prior de Mecina y general de Malta, el otro un Español, y el otro un Siciliano: á estos hallaran vivos enterrados entre los muchos muertos."—*Arroyo: Relacion de la Santa Liga*, p. 67.

[2] Arroyo says, that Don Juan of Austria bade the pilots steer for Navarino, on the night of the 16th September, 1572, but that they, from unskilfulness of the coast, made for an island called Prodano, some three leagues off that harbour, by means of which blunder the Algerine had time to draw out all his vessels, and place them under protection of the batteries of Modon.—*Ibid.* p. 90.

have some enemies to chastise us. Uchali made his way to Modon, which is an island not far from Navarino, and there landing his men, fortified the entrance of the harbour, remaining in safety there till Don Juan was forced to return home with his fleet. In this expedition, the galley called *La Presa*, of which Barbarossa's[1] own son was captain, was taken by the flag-galley of Naples, called the *She-Wolf*, which was commanded by that thunderbolt of war, that father of the soldiers, that happy and never-conquered captain, Don Alvaro de Bazan, Marquis of Santa Cruz;[2] and I cannot omit the manner of taking this galley. The son of Barbarossa was very cruel, and used his slaves with great inhumanity; they perceiving that the *She-Wolf* galley got up to them in the chase, all of a sudden laid by their oars, and seizing on their commander, as he was walking between them on the deck, and calling to them to row hard, they passed him on from hand to hand to one another, from one end of the galley to the other, and gave him such blows in the handling him, that before he got back to the mainmast, his soul had left his body, and was fled to hell. Such, as I have said, was his cruelty and the hatred they bore him.

After this we returned to Constantinople; and the next year, which was 1573, news came that Don Juan of Austria had taken Tunis and its kingdom from the Turks, and given the possession of it to Muley Hamet,[3] having

[1] Haradin, surnamed Barbarossa, was the most famous corsair of those days. He became tyrant of Algiers in 1534.

[2] See Herrera, cap. 26.

[3] Muley Hamida, and Muley Hamet, or Mahomet, were the two sons of Muley Hacan, King of Tunis. Muley Hamida, the elder, burnt out his father's eyes with hot iron, and took possession of his throne. The younger brother fled from the cruelty of the elder, and retired into Sicily. The Turks had driven Hamida from Tunis, but he had fortified himself in Goleta, and was in hopes soon to recover his empire, at the time when Don Juan of Austria landed in Barbary. The Turks were expelled in their turn from Tunis; the exiled Muley Hamet was brought from Sicily, and established as King of Tunis, tributary to Philip II. of Spain. The atrocious Hamida was given up to Don Carlos of Arragon, Viceroy of Sicily, who conducted him to Naples, where one of his sons who accompanied him underwent a very sudden and prudent conversion from the errors of Mahometanism. He was baptised by the name of Don Carlos de Austria, his godfather and godmother being Don Juan of Austria himself, and Donna Violante de Moscoso. The father died of grief and rage on being informed of his son's apostasy.

thereby defeated all the hopes of reigning of Muley Hamida, one of the cruellest, and withal one of the bravest Moors in the world. The Grand Seignor was troubled at this loss, and, using his wonted artifices with the Christians, he struck up a peace with the Venetians, who were much more desirous than he of it.

The year after, which was 1574, he attacked La Goleta,[1] and the fort which Don Juan had begun, but not above half finished, before Tunis. All this while I was a galley-slave, without any hopes of liberty; at least, I could not promise myself to obtain it by way of ransom; for I was resolved not to write my father the news of my misfortune.

La Goleta was taken, and the fort was taken, after some resistance; the Turkish army, consisting of 75,000 Turks in pay, and above 400,000 Moors and Arabs out of all Africa near the sea; with such provisions of war of all kinds, and so many pioneers, that they might have covered the Goleta and the fort with earth by handfuls. The Goleta was first taken, though always before reputed impregnable; and it was not lost by any fault of its defenders, who did all that could be expected from them; but because it was found by experience, that it was practicable to make trenches in that sandy soil, which was thought to have water under it within two spans; but the Turks sunk above two yards and found none; by which means, filling sacks with sand, and laying them on one another, they raised them so high, that they overtopt and commanded the fort, in which none could be safe, nor show themselves upon the walls.

It has been the opinion of most men, that we did ill to shut ourselves up in the Goleta; and that we ought to have been drawn out on the plain to hinder their landing; but they who say so talk without experience, and at random, of such things; for if in all there were not above 7000 men in the Goleta and the fort, how could so small a number, though never so brave, take the open field against such forces as those of the enemies?

[1] See, for a fuller account of all these transactions, Watson's 'History of Philip II.' Vol. I. p. 283, &c.

And how is it possible that a place can avoid being taken, which can have no relief, particularly being besieged by such numbers, and those in their own country? But it seemed to many others, and that is also my opinion, that God Almighty favoured Spain most particularly, in suffering that sink of iniquity and misery, as well as that sponge and perpetual drain of treasure, to be destroyed. For infinite sums of money were spent there to no purpose, without any other design than to preserve the memory of one of the Emperor's (Charles the Fifth's) conquests; as if it had been necessary to support the eternity of his glory, which will be permanent, that those stones should remain in being. The fort was likewise lost, but the Turks only got it inch by inch; for the soldiers who defended it, sustained two-and-twenty assaults, and in them killed above 25,000 of those barbarians; and when it was taken, of 300 which were left alive, there was not one man unwounded; a certain sign of the bravery of the garrison, and of their skill in defending places. There was likewise taken, on conditions, a small fort in the midst of a lake, which was under the command of Don Juan Zanoguerra, a knight of Valencia, and a soldier of great renown. Don Pedro Puertocarrero, General of the Goleta, was taken prisoner, and was so afflicted at the loss of the place, that he died of grief by the way, before he got to Constantinople, whither they were carrying him. They took also prisoner the commander of the fort, whose name was Gabriel Cervellon, a knight of Milan, a great engineer, as well as a valiant soldier. Several persons of quality were killed in those two fortresses, and amongst the rest was Pagan de Oria, a knight of the order of St. John, a noble-hearted gentleman, as well appeared by his liberality to his brother, the famous Juan Andrea de Oria; and that which made his death more worthy of compassion, was, that he received it from some Arabs, in whom he had confided after the loss of the fort, they having promised to carry him disguised in a Moor's habit to Tarbaca, which is a small fort held on that coast by the Genoese who practise diving for coral; but they cut off his head, and brought it to the Turkish general, who made good to them our Spanish proverb, that though the treason pleases, the traitors are

odious; for he ordered them to be hanged up immediately for not having brought him alive.

Amongst the Christians which were taken in the fort, there was one Don Pedro de Aguilar,[1] of some place in Andalusia, and who was an ensign in the fort; a very brave, and a very ingenious man, and one who had a rare talent in poetry. I mention him, because it was his fortune to be a slave in the same galley with me, and chained to the same bench. Before he left the port he made two sonnets, by way of epitaph for the Goleta and the fort, which I must beg leave to repeat here, having learned them by heart, and I believe they will rather divert than tire the company.—When the Captive named Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Ferdinand looked upon his companions and they all smiled; and when he talked of the sonnets, one of them said, "Before you go on to repeat the sonnets, I desire, sir, you would tell me what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar, whom you have mentioned."—"All that I know of him," answered the slave, "is, that after having been two years in Constantinople, he made his escape disguised like an Arnaut, and in company of a Greek trooper;[2] but I cannot tell whether he obtained his liberty or no, though I believe he did, because about a year after I saw the same Greek in Constantinople, but had not an opportunity to ask him about the success of his journey."—"Then I can tell you," replied the gentleman, "that the Don Pedro you speak of is my brother, and is at present at home, married, rich, and has three children."—"God be thanked," said the Captive, "for the favours He has bestowed on him; for in my mind there is no felicity equal to that of recovering one's lost liberty."—"And moreover," added the same gentleman, "I can say the sonnets you mentioned, which my brother made."—"Pray say them then," replied the slave, "for I question not but you can repeat them better than I."—"With all my heart," answered the gentleman. "That upon the Goleta was thus.

[1] The Andalusian family of Aguilar had derived great honour from producing, in the preceding age, those two distinguished warriors, Gonsalvo and Alonzo de Aguilar. It was on the death of the latter that some Spanish minstrel composed the famous ballad so elegantly translated by Bishop Percy) of *Rio verde, Rio verde.*

[2] [*Espay:* probably a *spahi*, or horse-soldier.]

CHAPTER XL.

The Story of the Captive continued.

SONNET.

"'Blest souls, discharged of life's oppressive weight,
Whose virtue proved your passport to the skies;
You there procured a more propitious fate,
When for your faith you bravely fell to rise.

When pious rage, diffused through every vein,
On this ungrateful shore inflamed your blood;
Each drop you lost was paid with crowds of slain,
Whose vital stream did tint the neighbouring flood.

O'erwhelmed twixt wall and scimitar, you claim
That perfect glory, that immortal fame,
Which, like true heroes, nobly you pursued;
On these you seized, even when of life deprived;
For still your courage even your strength survived;
And triumphed, being by death alone subdued.'"

"I know it is just as you repeat it," said the Captive.—"Well, then," said the gentleman, "I will give you, now, that which was made upon the fort, if I can remember it.

SONNET.

"'Amidst these barren fields, and ruin'd tow'rs,
The bed of honour of the fallen brave,
Three thousand champions of the Christian powers
Found a new life, and triumph in the grave.

Long did their arms their haughty foes repel,
Yet strew'd the fields with slaughter'd heaps in vain;
O'ercome by toils, the pious heroes fell,
Or but survived a better death to gain.

This dismal soil, ill-famed for woes of old,
In every age was fatal to the bold,
The seat of horror, and the warrior's grave!
But never yet did earth's obdurate breast
Resign more righteous souls to heavenly rest,
Or give a bier to mortal forms more brave.'"

The sonnets were applauded, and the Captive was pleased to hear such good news of his friend and companion. After that he pursued his relation in these terms.

The Turks ordered the dismantling of the Goleta, the fort being all but razed by the siege, and yet the mines they made could not blow up the old walls, which, nevertheless, were always thought the weakest part of the place; but the new fortification, made by the Friar,[1] came easily down. In fine, the Turkish fleet returned in triumph to Constantinople, where, not long after, my master Uchali died, whom the Turks used to call *Uchali Fartax*, which, in Turkish, signifies *the scurvy renegade*, as indeed he was; for the Turks give names among themselves, either from some virtue, or some defect that is in them. And this happens because there are but four names of families descended from the Ottoman house; all the rest, as I have said, take their names from some defect of the body, or some good quality of the mind. This scurvy knave was at the oar in one of the Grand Seignor's galleys for fourteen years, till he was four-and-thirty years old; at which time he turned renegade, to be revenged of a Turk, who gave him a box on the ear, as he was chained to the oar, forsaking his religion for revenge; after which he showed so much valour and conduct, that he came to be King of Algiers, and Admiral of the Turkish fleet, which is the third command in the whole empire. He was a Calabrian by birth, of humane disposition towards his slaves, and also of good morals. He had above three thousand slaves, who after his death were divided, as ordered by his will, between the Grand Seignor (who is heir to, and shares with the sons of any who die) and his renegades.

I fell to the share of a Venetian renegade, who was a cabin-boy in a Venetian ship which was taken by Uchali, who loved him so, that he became at last one of his favourite boys: and proved one of the cruellest renegades that ever was known. His name was Azan Aga,[2] and he obtained such riches, as to rise by them to be King of Algiers; and with him I left Constantinople, with some satisfaction to think, at least, that I was in a place so near

[1] [Jacome Palearo or Paleazzo, who served under Charles V. and Philip II.]

[2] Hassan Aga's story is told exactly as here in Haedo's *Historia de Argel*, p. 89.

Spain, not because I could give notice to any friend of my misfortunes, but because I hoped to try whether I should succeed better in Algiers than I had done in Constantinople, where I had tried a thousand ways of escaping, but could never execute any of them; I hoped also to find other means in Algiers, for hopes never forsook me upon all the disappointments I met with in the design of recovering my liberty. By this means I kept myself alive, shut up in a prison or house, which the Turks call a bagnio, where they keep their Christian slaves,[1] as well

[1] The following curious account of Christian slavery in Algiers is translated from the preliminary confession of a renegade, who was reconciled to the bosom of the church by the Spanish Inquisition in 1639. Pellicer, from whom I take it, had seen the MS. itself in the Royal Library at Madrid (see Vol. IX. p. 17).

"The Christians have four churches where they hear mass, and in my time there were twelve priests who said mass every day. In the greatest church, which is in the bagnio of the king, there were five priests, sent thither by his holiness. Every day a collection is made, and the captives give what they can for the buying of wax and ornaments, besides a real and a half to each priest, and another every time they partake of the eucharist. The Christians are very humble, particularly the priests, whom the boys always pursue in the streets with stones and other impurities. There are at this moment 200 Christian slaves in that city, who are treated most miserably, both men and women, receiving nothing more than a single loaf of bread every day—but especially, they are cruelly used by the Tagarinos, which are they that have been driven out of Spain. These make them labour without remission, being loaded with irons, and the strongest they carry with them to row in their galleys.

"The women of the Moors never enter into their mosques, from the towers of which, at noontide, there is a banner displayed, and voices are heard from one to another calling to prayer. Their worship is silent, and of gesticulation, there being little said, but an infinity of prostrations and uprisings. They eat off cakes of bread laid on the ground, without any service of covers. Their women wear trousers down to the feet, which is by no means a lascivious dress, although they themselves are so more than can be imagined. . . . The boys in their schools write with reeds on the sand, rubbing it smooth from time to time, so that it serves for a long while. The merchants do the same, keeping their accounts very accurately. . . . In law-suits they expend little, by reason of their speedy decisions; hence the abundance of wealth among the Moors."

One of Cervantes' most agreeable comedies is entitled, "Los Baños de Argel;" and in it very nearly the same characters and adventures are described as occur here in the story of the Captain de Viedma. The converted Moorish girl, the renegade, &c., play exactly the same parts.

those of the king, as those who belong to private persons, and also those who are said to be of the arsenal, that is, who belong to the council, and are employed by the city in works that belong to it. These latter with great difficulty obtain their liberty; for having no particular master, but belonging to the public, they can find nobody to treat with about their ransom, though they may have money to pay it. The king's slaves, who are ransomable, are not obliged to go out to work as the others do, except when their ransom is too long delayed; for then to hasten it, they make them work, and fetch wood with the rest, which is no small labour. I was one of those who were to be ransomed; for when they knew I had been a captain, though I told them the little possibility there was of my being redeemed, because of my poverty, yet they put me among the gentlemen that were to be ransomed. They put a chain on me, rather as a sign that I was for ransom, than to restrain me by it; and so I passed my life in that bagnio, with several other gentlemen of quality, who were marked and held for ransom; and, though hunger and nakedness might, as it did often, afflict us, yet nothing gave us such affliction, as to hear and see the excessive cruelties with which our master used the other Christian slaves; he would hang one one day, impale another, or cut off the ears of a third; and this upon such slight occasions, that often the Turks would own, that he did it only for the pleasure of doing it, and because he was naturally an enemy to mankind. Only one Spanish soldier knew how to deal with him, his name was Saavedra;[1] who though he had done many things which will not easily be forgotten by the Turks, and all to gain his liberty, his master never gave him a blow, nor used him ill either in word or deed; and yet we were always afraid that the least of his pranks would cause him to be impaled; nay, he himself sometimes was afraid of it too: and if it were not for taking up too much of your time, I could tell such passages of him, as would divert the company much better than the relation of my adventures, and cause more wonder in them.—But to go on; I say that the windows of the house of a very rich Moor looked

[1] Viz., Cervantes himself (see Life).

upon the court of our prison; which indeed, according to the custom of the country, were rather peeping-holes than windows, and yet even these had very thick and close lattices.

It happened one day, that being upon a kind of terrace of our prison, with only three of my comrades, diverting ourselves as well as we could, by trying who could leap farthest in his chains, all the other Christians being gone out to work, I chanced to look up to those windows, and saw that out of one of them there appeared a long cane, and to it was tied a bit of linen; and the cane was moved up and down, as if expecting that some of us should lay hold of it. We all took notice of it, and one of us went and stood just under it, to see if they would let it fall: but just as he came to it, the cane was drawn up, and shaked to and fro sideways, as if they had made the same sign as people do with their head when they deny. The Christian retired, and the same motion was made with it as before. Another of my comrades advanced, and had the same success as the former; the third man was used just as the rest; which I seeing, resolved to try my fortune too; and as I came under the cane, it fell at my feet: immediately I untied the linen, within which was a knot, which being opened, showed us about ten zianiis, which is a sort of gold of base alloy, used by the Moors, each of which is worth about ten reals of our money.

It is not to be questioned, whether the discovery was not as pleasant as surprising; we were astonished, not being able to guess whence this good fortune came to us, especially to me; for it was plain I was more meant than any of my comrades, since the cane was let go to me when it was refused to them. I took my money, broke the cane, and going upon the terrace saw a very fine white hand that opened and shut the window with haste. By this we imagined that some woman who lived in that house had done us this favour; and to return our thanks, we bowed ourselves after the Moorish fashion, with our arms across our breasts. A little after there appeared out of the same window, a little cross made of cane, which immediately was pulled in again. This confirmed us in our opinion,

that some Christian woman was a slave in that house, and that it was she that took pity on us; but the whiteness of the hand, and the richness of the bracelets upon the arm, which we had a glimpse of, seemed to destroy that thought again; and then we believed it was some Christian woman turned Mahometan, whom their masters often marry, and think themselves very happy; for our women are more valued by them than the women of their own country. But in all this guessing we were far enough from finding out the truth of the case; however, we were very diligent in observing the window as our north, in which the cane was our star. There passed above fifteen days before we saw either the hand or cane, or any other sign; though in all that time we endeavoured to find out who lived in that house, and if there were in it any Christian woman who was a renegade; yet all we could discover amounted to only this, that the house belonged to one of the chief Moors, a very rich man, called Agi Morato, who had been Alcayde of La Pata, which is an office much valued among them. But when we least expected our golden shower would continue, out of that window we saw on a sudden the cane appear again, with another piece of linen, and a bigger knot; and this was just at a time when the bagnio was without any other of the slaves in it. We all tried our fortunes as the first time, and it succeeded accordingly, for the cane was let go to none but me. I untied the knot, and found in it forty crowns of Spanish gold, with a paper written in Arabic, and at the top of the paper was a great cross. I kissed the cross, took the crowns, and returning to the terrace, we all made our Moorish reverences; the hand appeared again, and I having made signs that I would read the paper, the window was shut. We remained all overjoyed and astonished at what had happened, and were extremely desirous to know the contents of the paper; but none of us understood Arabic, and it was yet more difficult to find out an interpreter. At last I resolved to trust a renegade of Murcia, who had shown me great proofs of his kindness. We gave one another mutual assurances, and on his side he was obliged to keep secret all that I should reveal to him; for the renegades,

who have thoughts of returning to their own country, use to get certificates from such persons of quality as are slaves in Barbary, in which they make a sort of an affidavit, that such a one, a renegade, is an honest man, and has always been kind to the Christians, and has a mind to make his escape on the first occasion. Some there are who procure these certificates with an honest design, and remain among Christians as long as they live; but others get them on purpose to make use of them when they go a pirating on the Christian shores; for then if they are shipwrecked or taken, they show these certificates, and say, that thereby may be seen the intention with which they came in the Turks' company; to wit, to get an opportunity of returning to Christendom. By this means they escape the first fury of the Christians, and are seemingly reconciled to the church without being hurt; afterwards they take their time, and return to Barbary to be what they were before.

One of these renegades was my friend, and he had certificates from us all, by which we gave him much commendation: but if the Moors had caught him with those papers about him, they would have burnt him alive. I knew that not only he understood the Arabic tongue, but also that he could both speak and write it currently. But yet before I resolved to trust him entirely, I bid him read me that paper, which I had found by chance. He opened it, and was a good while looking upon it, and construing it to himself. I asked him if he understood it; he said, Yes, very well; and that if I would give him pen, ink, and paper, he would translate it word for word. We furnished him with what he desired, and he went to work. Having finished his translation, he said, "All that I have here put into Spanish is word for word what is in the Arabic; only observe, that wherever the paper says *Lél-la Marien*,[1] it means our Lady the Virgin Mary." The contents were thus:

[1] *Lél-la* is, in Arabic, equivalent to *Our Lady*. There is a great deal said concerning the Virgin Mary in the Koran, so that Zoraida might have known about her even before the old slave instructed her. Cervantes might almost be suspected of satire in representing the name of the Virgin as the part of the old slave's lessons which had made the

"When I was a child, my father had a slave, who taught me in my tongue the Christian worship, and told me a great many things of Lél-la Marien. The Christian slave died, and I am sure she went not to the fire, but is with Alla, for I have seen her twice since; and she bid me go to the land of the Christians to see Lél-la Marien, who had a great kindness for me. I do not know what is the matter; but though I have seen many Christians out of this window, none has appeared to me so much a gentleman as thyself. I am very handsome and young, and can carry with me a great deal of money, and other riches. Consider whether thou canst bring it to pass that we may escape together, and then thou shalt be my husband in thy own country, if thou art willing; but if thou art not, it is all one, Lél-la Marien will provide me a husband. I have written this; have a care to whom thou givest it to read; do not trust any Moor, because they are all treacherous; and in this I am much perplexed, and could wish there were not a necessity of trusting any one; because if my father should come to know it, he would certainly throw me into a well, and cover me over with stones. I will tie a thread to a cane, and with that thou mayest fasten thy answer; and if thou canst not find any one to write in Arabic, make me understand thy meaning by signs, for Lél-la Marien will help me to guess it. She and Alla keep thee, as well as this cross, which I often kiss, as the Christian slave bid me do."

You may imagine, gentlemen, that we were in astonishment at the contents of this paper, and withal overjoyed at them, which we expressed so openly, that the renegade came to understand that the paper was not found by chance, but that it was really writ to some one among us; and accordingly he told us his suspicion, and desired us to trust him entirely, and that he would venture his life with us to procure us our liberty. Having said this,

---

deepest impression on the young lady's mind; but his Spanish commentators are all very valiant in defending his catholicism from the slightest imputation.

he pulled a brass crucifix out of his bosom, and, with many tears, swore by the God which it represented, and in whom he, though a wicked sinner, did firmly believe, to be true and faithful to us with all secrecy in what we should impart to him; for he guessed, that by the means of the woman who had writ that letter, we might all of us recover our lost liberty; and he, in particular, might obtain what he had so long wished for, to be received again into the bosom of his mother the church, from whom, for his sins, he had been cut off as a rotten member. The renegade pronounced all this with so many tears, and such signs of repentance, that we were all of opinion to trust him, and tell him the whole truth of the business. We showed him the little window out of which the cane used to appear, and he from thence took good notice of the house, in order to inform himself who lived in it. We next agreed that it would be necessary to answer the Moorish lady's note. So, immediately the renegade writ down what I dictated to him, which was exactly as I shall relate; for I have not forgot the least material circumstance of this adventure, nor can forget them as long as I live. The words then were these:

"The true Alla keep thee, my dear lady, and that blessed Virgin, which is the true mother of God, and has inspired thee with the design of going to the land of the Christians. Do thou pray her that she would be pleased to make thee understand how thou shalt execute what she has commanded thee; for she is so good that she will do it. On my part, and on that of the Christians who are with me, I offer to do for thee all we are able, even to the hazard of our lives. Fail not to write to me, and give me notice of thy resolution, for I will always answer thee; the Great Alla having given us a Christian slave, who can read and write thy language, as thou mayest perceive by this letter; so that thou mayest, without fear, give us notice of all thy intentions. As for what thou sayest, that as soon as thou shalt arrive in the land of the Christians, thou designest to be my wife, I promise thee, on the word of a good Christian, to take thee for my wife;

and thou mayest be assured that the Christians perform their promises better than the Moors. Alla and his mother Mary be thy guard, my dear lady."

Having writ and sealed this note, I waited two days till the bagnio was empty, and then I went up on the terrace, the ordinary place of our conversation, to see if the cane appeared, and it was not long before it was shown. As soon as it appeared I showed my note, that the thread might be put to the cane, but I found that it was done to my hand; and the cane being let down, I fastened the note to it. Not long after the knot was let fall, and I, taking it up, found in it several pieces of gold and silver, above fifty crowns, which gave us infinite content, and fortified our hopes of obtaining at last our liberty. That evening our renegade came to us, and told us, he had found out that the master of that house was the same Moor we had been told of, called Agi Morato, extremely rich, and who had one only daughter to inherit all his estate; that it was the report of the whole city that she was the handsomest maid in all Barbary, having been demanded in marriage by many viceroys who came there, but that she had always refused to marry. He also learned that she had had a Christian slave who was dead, all which agreed with the contents of the letter. We immediately held a council with the renegade, about the manner we should use to carry off the Moorish lady, and go all together to Christendom; when at last we agreed to await the answer of Zorayda, for that is the name of the lady who now desires to be called Mary; as well knowing she could best advise the overcoming all the difficulties that were in our way; and after this resolution, the renegade assured us again, that he would lose his life, or deliver us out of captivity.

The bagnio was four days together full of people, and all that time the cane was invisible; but as soon as it returned to its solitude, the cane appeared, with a knot much bigger than ordinary; in which I found, besides other money, a letter, and a hundred crowns in gold. The renegade happened to be with us, and we

gave him the letter to read; which he said contained these words:

"I cannot tell, sir, how to contrive that we may go together for Spain; neither has Lél-la Marien told it me, though I have earnestly asked it of her. All I can do is to furnish you out of this window with a great deal of riches. Buy your ransom and your friends' with that, and let one of you go to Spain, and buy a bark there, and come and fetch the rest. As for me, you shall find me in my father's garden out of town, by the sea-side, not far from the gate of Babazon, where I am to pass all the summer with my father and my maids: from which you may take me without fear, in the night time, and carry me to your bark; but remember thou art to be my husband, and if thou failest in that, I will desire Marien to chastise thee. If thou canst not trust one of thy friends to go for the bark, pay thy own ransom and go thyself; for I trust thou wilt return sooner than another, since thou art a gentleman and a Christian. Find out my father's garden, and I will take care to watch when the bagnio is empty, and let thee have much money. Alla keep thee, my lord."

These were the contents of the second letter we received. Upon the reading of it, every one of us offered to be the man that should go and buy the bark, promising to return with all punctuality; but the renegade opposed that proposition, and said, he would never consent that any one of us should obtain his liberty before the rest; because experience had taught him, that people once free do not perform what they promise when captives; and that some slaves of quality had often used that remedy, to send one either to Valencia or Majorca, with money to buy a bark, and come back and fetch the rest; but that they never returned, because the joy of having obtained their liberty, and the fear of losing it again, made them forget what they had promised, and cancelled the memory of all obligations. To confirm which he related to us a story, the strangest that had happened in those parts, where marvels occur at every step. In effect, he said, that all that

could be done, was for him to buy a bark with the money which should redeem one of us; that he could buy one in Algiers, and pretend to turn merchant, and deal between Algiers and Tetuan; by which means he, being master of the vessel, might easily find out some way of getting us out of the bagnio, and taking us on board: and especially if the Moorish lady did what she promised, and gave us money to pay all our ransoms; for, being free, we might embark even at noon-day; but the greatest difficulty would be, that the Moors do not permit renegades to keep any barks but large ones, fit to cruise upon Christians; for they believe that a renegade, particularly a Spaniard, seldom buys a bark, but with a design of returning to his own country. However, he knew how to obviate that difficulty, by taking a Tagarine Moor for his partner both in the bark and trade, by which means he should still be master of her, and then all the rest would be easy. We durst not oppose this opinion, though we had more inclination every one of us to go to Spain for a bark, as the lady had advised; but were afraid that if we contradicted him, as we were at his mercy, he might betray us, and bring our lives to danger; particularly if the business of Zorayda should be discovered, for whose liberty and life we would all have given ours: so we determined to put ourselves under the protection of God and the renegade. At the same time we answered Zorayda, telling her, that we would do all she advised, which was very well, and just as if Lél-la Marien herself had instructed her; and that now it depended on her alone to give us the means of bringing this design to pass. I promised her once more to be her husband. After this, in two days that the bagnio happened to be empty, she gave us, by the means of the cane, two thousand crowns of gold; and withal a letter, in which she let us know that the next Juma, which is Friday, she was to go to her father's garden, and that, before she went, she would give us more money; and if we had not enough, she would, upon our letting her know it, give us what we should think sufficient: for her father was so rich that he would hardly miss it; and so much the less, because he entrusted her with the keys of all his treasure. We presently gave the renegade five hundred

crowns to buy the bark, and I paid my own ransom with eight hundred crowns, which I put into the hands of a merchant of Valencia, then in Algiers, who made the bargain with the king, and had me to his house upon parole, to pay the money upon the arrival of the first bark from Valencia; for if he had paid down the money immediately, the king might have suspected the money had been ready, and lain some time in Algiers, and that the merchant for his own profit had concealed it; and, in short, I durst not trust my master with ready money, knowing his distrustful and malicious nature. The Thursday preceding the Friday that Zorayda was to go to the garden, she let us have a thousand crowns more; desiring, at the same time, that if I paid my ransom, I would find out her father's garden, and contrive some way of seeing her there. I answered in few words, that I would do as she desired, and she should only take care to commend us to Lél-la Marien, by those prayers which the Christian slave had taught her. Having done this, order was taken to have the ransom of my three friends paid also; lest they, seeing me at liberty, and themselves not so, though there was money to set them free, should be troubled in mind, and give way to the temptation of the devil, in doing something that might redound to the prejudice of Zorayda; for though the consideration of their quality ought to have given me security of their honour, yet I did not think it proper to run the least hazard in the matter; so they were redeemed in the same manner, and by the same merchant, that I was, who had the money before-hand; but we never discovered to him the re-remainder of our intrigue, as not being willing to risk the danger there was in so doing.

CHAPTER XLI.

The Adventures of the Captive continued.

Our renegade had in a fortnight's time bought a very good bark, capable of carrying above thirty people; and to give no suspicion of any other design, he undertook a

voyage to a place upon the coast called Sargel, about thirty leagues to the eastward of Algiers towards Oran, where there is a great trade for dried figs. He made his voyage two or three times in company with the Tagarine Moor his partner. Those Moors are called in Barbary *Tagarines*, who were driven out of Arragon; as they call those of Granada, *Mudejares;* and the same in the kingdom of Fez are called *Elches*, and are the best soldiers the prince has.

Every time he passed with his bark along the coast, he used to cast anchor in a little bay that was not above two bow-shot from the garden where Zorayda awaited us; and there he used to exercise the Moors that rowed, either in performing their devotions, or in some other employment; by which he practised in jest what he was resolved to execute in earnest. So sometimes he would go to the garden of Zorayda and beg some fruit, and her father would give him some, though he did not know him. He had a mind to find an occasion to speak to Zorayda, and tell her, as he since owned to me, that he was the man who by my order was to carry her to the land of the Christians, and that she might depend upon it; but he could never get an opportunity of doing it, because the Moorish and Turkish women never suffer themselves to be seen by any of their own nation, but by their husband's, or by their father's command; but as for the Christian slaves, they let them see them, and that more familiarly than perhaps could be wished. I should have been very sorry that the renegade had seen or spoke to Zorayda, for it must needs have troubled her infinitely to see that her business was trusted to a renegade; and God Almighty, who governed our design, ordered it so, that the renegade was disappointed. He in the mean time seeing how securely, and without suspicion, he went and came along the coast, staying where and when he pleased by the way, and that his partner the Tagarine Moor was of his mind in all things; that I was at liberty, and that there wanted nothing but some Christians to help us to row; bid me consider whom I intended to carry with me besides those who were ransomed, and that I should make sure of them

for the first Friday, because he had pitched on that day for our departure. Upon notice of this resolution, I spoke to twelve lusty Spaniards, good rowers, and those who might easiest get out of the city: it was a great fortune that we got so many in such a conjuncture, because there were above twenty sail of rovers gone out, who had taken aboard most of the slaves fit for the oar; and we had not had these, but that their master happened to stay at home that summer, to finish a galley he was building to cruise with, that was then upon the stocks. I said no more to them, than only they should steal out of the town in the evening upon the next Friday, and stay for me upon the way that led to Agi Morato's garden. I spoke to every one by himself, and gave each of them order to say no more to any other Christian they should see, than that I had told them to await me there. Having done this, I had another thing of the greatest importance to do, which was to give Zorayda notice of our design, and how far we had carried it, that she might be ready at a short warning, and not to be surprised if we came upon the house on a sudden, and even before she could think that the Christian bark could be come. This made me resolve to go to the garden to try if it were possible to speak to her: so one day, upon pretence of gathering a few herbs, I entered the garden, and the first person I met was her father, who spoke to me in the language used all over the Turkish dominions, which is neither Moorish nor Castilian, but a mixture of all languages, by which we understand one another from Constantinople to Algiers, and asked me what I looked for in his garden, and who I belonged to? I told him I was a slave of Arnaut Mami (this man I knew was his intimate friend), and that I wanted a few herbs to make up a salad. He then asked me if I were a man to be redeemed or no, and how much my master asked for me? During these questions, the beautiful Zorayda came out of the garden-house hard by, having descried me a good while before; and as the Moorish women make no difficulty of showing themselves to the Christian slaves, she drew near, without scruple, to the place where her father and I were talking; neither did her father show any dislike of her coming,

but called to her to come nearer. It would be hard for me to express here the wonderful surprise and astonishment that the beauty, the rich dress, and the charming air of my beloved Zorayda put me in: she was all bedecked with pearls, which hung thick about her neck and on her ears and arms. Her feet and legs were naked, after the custom of that country, and she had upon her ankles a kind of bracelet of gold, and set with such rich diamonds that her father valued them, as she since told me, at ten thousand *doblas* a pair; and those about her wrists were of the same value. The pearls were of the best sort, for the Moorish women delight much in them, and have more pearls of all sorts than any nation. Her father was reputed to have the finest in Algiers, and to be worth, besides, above two hundred thousand Spanish crowns; of all which, this lady, who is now mine, was mistress. What she yet retains of beauty after all her sufferings, may help you to guess whether she was beautiful or not when thus adorned in the midst of her prosperity. The beauty of some ladies has its days and times, and is more or less according to accidents or passions, which naturally raise or diminish the lustre of it, and sometimes quite extinguish it. All I can say is, at that time she appeared to me the best-adorned and most beautiful woman I had ever seen; to which, adding the obligations I had to her, she passed with me for a goddess from heaven, descended upon earth for my relief and happiness.

As she drew near, her father told her, in his country's language, that I was a slave of his friend Arnaut Mami, and came to pick a salad in his garden. She presently took the hint, and asked me in the mixed language, whether I was a gentleman, and if I was, why I did not ransom myself? I told her I was already ransomed, and that by the price she might guess the value my master set upon me, since he had bought me for fifteen hundred *zoltanis*. To which she replied, "If thou hadst been my father's slave, I would not have let him part with thee for twice as much; for," said she, "you Christians never speak truth in anything you say, and make yourselves poor to deceive the Moors."—"That may be, madam," said I, "but in

truth I have dealt by my master, and do intend to deal by all those I shall have to deal with, sincerely and honourably."—"And when dost thou go home?" said she.—"To-morrow, madam," said I, "for here is a French bark that sails to-morrow, and I intend not to lose that opportunity."—"Is it not better," replied Zorayda, "to stay till there come some Spanish bark, and go with them, and not with the French, who, I am told, are no friends of yours?"—"No," said I; "yet if the report of a Spanish bark's coming should prove true, I would perhaps stay for it, though it is more likely I shall take the opportunity of the French, because the desire I have of being at home, and with those persons I love, will hardly let me wait for any other conveniency."—"Without doubt," said Zorayda, "thou art married in Spain, and impatient to be with thy wife."—"I am not," said I, "married, but I have given my word to a lady, to be so as soon as I can reach my own country."—"And is the lady handsome that has your promise?" said Zorayda. "She is so handsome," said I, "that to describe her rightly, and tell truth, I can only say she is like you." At this her father laughed heartily, and said, "By Allah, Christian, she must be very charming if she be like my daughter, who is the greatest beauty of all this kingdom: look upon her well, and thou wilt say I speak truth." Zorayda's father was our interpreter for the most of what we talked; for though she spoke, as I have said, the bastard tongue in use there, she explained herself more by signs than words.

While we were in this conversation, there came a Moor running hastily, and cried aloud that four Turks had leaped over the fence of the garden, and were gathering the fruit, though it was not ripe. The old man started at that, and so did Zorayda, for the Moors do naturally stand in awe of the Turks, particularly of the soldiers, who are so insolent on their side, that they treat the Moors as if they were their slaves. This made the father bid his daughter go in and shut herself up close, "whilst," said he, "I go and talk with these dogs; and for thee, Christian, gather the herbs thou want'st, and go thy ways in peace, and God conduct thee safe to thy own

country." I bowed to him, and he left me with Zorayda, to go and find out the Turks: she made also as if she were going away, as her father had bid her; but she was no sooner hid from his sight by the trees of the garden, but she turned towards me with her eyes full of tears, and said in her language, "*Tameji* Christian, *tameji?*" which is, Art thou going, Christian, art thou going? to which I answered, "Yes, madam, I am, but by no means without you; you may expect me next Friday, and be not surprised when you see us, for we will certainly go to the land of the Christians." I said this so passionately, that she understood me; and throwing one of her arms about my neck, she began to walk softly, and with trembling, towards the house. It pleased fortune that as we were in this posture walking together (which might have proved very unlucky to us) we met Agi Morato coming back from the Turks, and we perceived he had seen us as we were; but Zorayda, very readily and discreetly, was so far from taking away her arm from about my neck, that, drawing still nearer to me, she leaned her head upon my breast, and letting her knees give way, was in the posture of one that swoons; I at the same time made as if I had much ado to bear her up against my will. Her father came hastily to us, and seeing his daughter in this condition, asked her what was the matter? But she not answering readily, he presently said, "Without doubt these Turks have frighted her, and she faints away;" at which he took her in his arms. She, as it were coming to herself, fetched a deep sigh, and with her eyes not yet dried from tears, she said, "*Ameji* Christian, *ameji:*" Begone, Christian, begone. To which her father replied, "It is no matter, child, whether he go or no, he has done thee no hurt, and the Turks, at my request, are gone."—"It is they who frighted her," said I; "but since she desires I should be gone, I will come another time for my salad, by your leave; for my master says the herbs of your garden are the best of any he can have."—"Thou may'st have whatsoever thou wilt," said the father, "for my daughter does not think the Christians troublesome; she only wished the Turks away, and by mistake bid thee begone too, or make haste and gather thy herbs." With

this I immediately took leave of them both; and Zorayda, showing great trouble in her looks, went away with her father. I in the meantime, upon pretence of gathering my herbs here and there, walked all over the garden, observing exactly all the places of coming in and going out, and every corner fit for my purpose, as well as what strength there was in the house, with all other conveniences to facilitate our business. Having done this, I went my ways, and gave an exact account of all that had happened to the renegade and the rest of my friends, longing earnestly for the time in which I might promise myself my dear Zorayda's company, without any fear of disturbance. At last the happy hour came, and we had all the good success we could promise ourselves, of a design so well laid; for the Friday after my discourse with Zorayda, towards the evening, we came to an anchor with our bark, almost over against the place where my lovely mistress lived. The Christians, who were to work at the oar, were already at the rendezvous, and hidden up and down thereabouts. They were all in expectation of my coming, and very desirous to seize the bark which they saw before their eyes, for they did not know our agreement with the renegade, but thought they were by main force to gain their liberty, by killing the Moors on board.

As soon, therefore, as I and my friends appeared, all the rest came from their hiding-places to us. By this time the city-gates were shut, and no soul appeared in all the country near us. When we were all together, it was a question whether we should first fetch Zorayda, or fall upon those Tagarine Moors in the bark. As we were in this consultation, the renegade came to us, and asking what we meant to stand idle, told us his Moors were all gone to rest, and most of them asleep. We told him our difficulty, and he immediately said, that the most important thing was to secure the bark, which might easily be done, and without danger, and then we might go for Zorayda.

We were all of his mind, and so, without more ado, he marched at the head of us to the bark, and leaping into it, he first drew a scimitar, and cried aloud in the Moorish language, Let not a man of you stir, except he means it

should cost him his life; and while he said this, all the other Christians were got on board. The Moors, who are naturally timorous, hearing the master use this language, were frighted, and without any resistance, suffered themselves to be manacled, which was done with great expedition by the Christians, who told them at the same time, that if they made the least noise, they would immediately cut their throats. This being done, and half of our number left to guard them, the remainder, with the regenade, went to Agi Morato's garden; and our good fortune was such, that coming to force the gate, we found it open with as much facility as if it had not been shut at all. So we marched on with great silence to the house, without being perceived by anybody. The lovely Zorayda, who was at the window, asked softly, upon hearing us tread, whether we were *Nizarani*, that is Christians? I answered yes; and desired her to come down. As soon as she heard my voice she stayed not a minute; but, without saying a word, came down and opened the door, appearing to us all like a goddess, her beauty and the richness of her dress being not to be described. As soon as I saw her, I took her by the hand, which I kissed, the renegade did the same, and then my friends: the rest of the company followed the same ceremony; so that we all paid her a kind of homage for our liberty. The renegade asked her in Arabic, whether her father was in the garden? She said yes, and that he was asleep. Then said he, we must awake him, and take him with us, as also all that is valuable in the house. "No, no," said Zorayda, "my father must not be touched, and in the house there is nothing so rich as what I shall carry with me, which is enough to make you all rich and content." Having said this she stept into the house, bid us be quiet, and she would soon return. I asked the renegade what had passed between them, and he told me what he had said; to which I replied, that by no means anything was to be done, otherwise than as Zorayda should please. She was already coming back with a small trunk so full of gold, that she could hardly carry it, when, to our great misfortune, while this was doing, her father awaked, and hearing a noise in the garden, opened a

window and looked out: having perceived that there were Christians in it, he began to cry out in Arabic, "Christians, Christians! Thieves, Thieves!"

These cries of his put us all into a terrible disorder and fear; but the renegade seeing our danger, and how much it imported us to accomplish our enterprise before we were perceived, ran up to the place where Agi Morato was, and took with him some of our company; for I durst by no means leave Zorayda, who had swooned away in my arms. Those who went up bestirred themselves so well, that they brought down Agi Morato with his hands tied behind him, and his mouth stopped with an handkerchief, which hindered him from so much as speaking a word; and threatening him besides, that if he made the least attempt to speak, it should cost him his life. When his daughter, who was come to herself, saw him, she covered her eyes to avoid the sight, and her father remained the more astonished, for he knew not how willingly she had put herself into our hands. Diligence on our side being the chief thing requisite, we used it so as we came to our bark, when our men began to be in pain for us, as fearing that we had met with some ill accident. We got on board about two hours after it was dark; where the first thing we did was to untie the hands of Zorayda's father, and to unstop his mouth, but still with the same threatenings of the renegade, in case he made any noise. When he saw his daughter there, he began to sigh most bitterly, and more when he saw me embrace her with tenderness, and that she, without any resistance or struggling, seemed to endure it; he, for all this, was silent, for fear the threatenings of the renegade should be put in execution. Zorayda seeing us aboard, and that we were ready to handle our oars to be gone, bade the renegade tell me she desired I would set her father, and the other Moors, our prisoners, on shore; for else she would throw herself into the sea, rather than see a father, who had used her so tenderly, be carried away captive for her sake, before her eyes. The renegade told me what she said, to which I agreed; but the renegade was of another opinion; saying, that if we set them on shore there, they would raise the country, and give the alarm to the city,

by which some light frigates might be despatched in quest of us, and getting between us and the sea, it would be impossible for us to make our escape; and that all that could be done, was to set them at liberty in the first Christian land we could reach. This seemed so reasonable to us all, that Zorayda herself, being informed of the motives we had not to obey her at present, agreed to it. Immediately, with great silence and content, we began to ply our oars, recommending ourselves to providence with all our hearts, and endeavoured to make for Majorca, which is the nearest Christian land; but the north wind rising a little, and the sea with it, we could not hold that course, but were forced to drive along shore towards Oran, not without great fear of being discovered from Sargel, upon the coast, about sixty miles from Algiers. We were likewise apprehensive of meeting some of those galliots which came from Tetuan with merchandise. Though, to say truth, we did not so much fear these last; for except it were a cruising galliot, we all of us wished to meet such a one, which we should certainly take, and so get a better vessel to transport us in. Zorayda all this while hid her face between my hands, that she might not see her father; and I could hear her call upon Lél-la Marien to help us. By the time we had got about thirty miles the day broke, and we found ourselves within a mile of the shore, which appeared to us a desert solitary place, but yet we rowed hard to get off to sea, for fear of being discovered by somebody. When we were got about two leagues out to sea, we proposed the men should row by turns, that some might refresh themselves; but the men at the oar said it was not time yet to rest, and that they could eat and row too, if those who did not row would assist them, and give them meat and drink; this we did, and a little while after the wind blowing fresh, we ceased rowing, and set sail for Oran, not being able to hold any other course. We made above eight miles an hour, being in no fear of anything but meeting some cruisers. We gave victuals to our Moorish prisoners, and the renegade comforted them, and told them they were not slaves, but that they should be set at liberty upon the first opportunity. The same was said to Zorayda's father; who answered, "I might expect

from your courtesy anything else perhaps, O Christians; but that you should give me my liberty, I am not simple enough to believe; for you never would have run the hazard of taking it from me, if you intended to restore it me so easily; especially since you know who I am, and what you may get for my ransom, which if you will but name, I do from this moment offer you all that you can desire for me and for that unfortunate daughter of mine, or for her alone, since she is the better part of me."

When he had said this, he burst into tears so violently, that Zorayda could not forbear looking up at him, and indeed he moved compassion in us all, but in her particularly; insomuch, that starting from my arms, she flew to her father's, and putting her head to his, they began again so passionate and tender a scene, that most of us could not forbear accompanying their grief with our tears; but her father seeing her so richly dressed, and so many jewels about her, said to her, in his language, "What is the meaning of this, daughter? For last night, before this terrible misfortune befel us, thou wert in thy ordinary dress; and now, without scarce having had the time to put on such things, I see thee adorned with all the fineries that I could give thee, if we were at liberty and in full prosperity. This gives me more wonder and trouble than even our said misfortune; therefore answer me." The renegade interpreted all that the Moor said, and we saw that Zorayda answered not one word; but on a sudden, spying the little casket in which she was used to put her jewels, which he thought had been left in Algiers, he remained yet more astonished, and asked her how that box could come into our hands, and what was in it? to which the renegade, without awaiting Zorayda's answer, replied, "Do not trouble thyself to ask thy daughter so many questions, for with one word I can satisfy them all. Know, then, that she is a Christian, and it is she that has filed off our chains, and given us liberty; she is with us by her own consent, and I hope well pleased, as people should be who come from darkness into light, and from death to life."—"Is this true, daughter?" said the Moor.—"It is," replied Zorayda.—"How then," said the old man, "art thou really a Christian? and art thou she that has put thy father

into the power of his enemies?"—To which Zorayda replied, "I am she that is a Christian, but not she that has brought thee into this condition, for my design never was to injure my father, but only to do myself good."—"And what good hast thou done thyself?" said the Moor.—"Ask that of Lél-la Marien," replied Zorayda, "for she can tell thee best." The old man had no sooner heard this but he threw himself, with incredible fury, into the sea, where without doubt he had been drowned, had not his garments, which were long and wide, kept him some time above water. Zorayda cried out to us to help him, which we all did so readily, that we pulled him out by his vest, but half drowned, and without any sense. This so troubled Zorayda, that she threw herself upon her father, and began to lament and take on as if he had been really dead. We turned his head downwards, and by this means having disgorged a great deal of water, he recovered a little in about two hours time. The wind in the meanwhile was come about, and forced us toward the shore, so that we were obliged to ply our oars not to be driven upon the land. It was our good fortune to get into a small bay, which is made by a promontory, called the Cape of the Cava Rumia; which, in our tongue, is the Cape of the wicked Christian woman; and it is a tradition among the Moors, that Cava, the daughter of Count Julian, who was the cause of the loss of Spain, lies buried there; and they think it ominous to be forced into that bay, for they never go in otherwise than by necessity; but to us it was no unlucky harbour, but a safe retreat, considering how high the sea went by this time. We posted our sentries on shore, but kept our oars ready to be plied upon occasion, taking in the meantime some refreshment of what the renegade had provided, praying heartily to God and the Virgin Mary to protect us, and help us to bring our design to a happy conclusion. Here, at the desire of Zorayda, we resolved to set her father on shore, with all the other Moors whom we had bound; for she had not courage, nor could her tender heart suffer any longer, to see her father and her countrymen ill used before her face; but we did not think to do it before we were just ready to depart, and then they could not much hurt us, the place being a

solitary one, and no habitations near it. Our prayers were not in vain; the wind fell and the sea became calm, inviting us thereby to pursue our intended voyage: we unbound our prisoners and set them on shore, one by one, which they were mightily astonished at.

When we came to put Zorayda's father on shore, who by this time was come to himself, he said, "Why do you think, Christians, that this wicked woman desires I should be set at liberty? do you think it is for any pity she takes of me? No certainly, but it is because she is not able to bear my presence, which hinders the prosecution of her ill desires: I would not have you think either that she has embraced your religion because she knows the difference between yours and ours, but because she has heard that she may live more loosely in your country than at home." And then turning himself to Zorayda, while I and another held him fast by the arms, that he might commit no extravagance, he said, "O infamous and blind young woman, where art thou going, in the power of these dogs, our natural enemies? Cursed be the hour in which I begot thee, and the pleasures and delights with which I bred thee." But I, seeing he was not like to make an end of his exclamations soon, made haste to set him on shore, from whence he continued to give us his curses and imprecations; begging on his knees of Mahomet to beg of God Almighty to confound and destroy us; and when being under sail, we could no longer hear him, we saw his actions, which were tearing his hair and beard, and rolling himself upon the ground; but he once strained his voice so high, that we heard what he said, which was, "Come back, my dear daughter, for I forgive thee all; let those men have the treasure which is already in their possession, and do thou return to comfort thy disconsolate father, who must else lose his life in these sandy deserts!"

All this Zorayda heard, and shed abundance of tears, but could answer nothing, but beg that Lél-la Marien, who made her a Christian, would comfort him.—"God knows," said she, "I could not avoid doing what I have done; and that these Christians are not obliged to me, for I could not be at rest till I had done this, which to thee,

dear father, seems so ill a thing." All this she said, when we were got so far out of his hearing, that we could scarce so much as see him. So I comforted Zorayda as well as I could, and we all minded our sailing. The wind was now so right for our purpose, that we made no doubt of being the next morning upon the Spanish shore.

But as it seldom happens that any felicity comes so pure as not to be tempered and alloyed by some mixture of sorrow, either our ill fortune, or the Moor's curses, had such an effect (for a father's curses are to be dreaded, let the father be what he will), that about midnight, when we were under full sail, with our oars laid by, we saw by the light of the moon, hard by us, a broad-beamed vessel with all her sails out, so close upon us, that we were forced to strike our sail not to run foul of her: and the vessel likewise seemed to endeavour to let us go by. They had come so near us to ask from whence we came, and whither we were going? But doing it in French, the renegade forbade us to answer, saying without doubt, these are French pirates, to whom everything is prize. This made us all be silent; and as we sailed on, they, being under the wind, fired two guns at us, both, as it appeared, with chain-shot, for one brought our mast by the board, and the other went through us, without killing anybody; but we, perceiving we were sinking, called to them to come and take us, for we were going to be drowned; they then struck their own sails, and putting out their boat, there came about a dozen French on board us, all well armed, and with their matches lighted. When they were close to us, seeing we were but few, they took us aboard their boat, saying that this had happened to us for not answering their questions. The renegade had time to take a little coffer or trunk, full of Zorayda's treasure, and heave it overboard, without being perceived by anybody.

When we were on board their vessel, after having learnt from us all they could, they began to strip us, as if we had been their mortal enemies: they plundered Zorayda of all the jewels and bracelets she had on her hands and feet; but that did not so much trouble me, as the apprehension I was in for the rich jewel of her

chastity, which she valued above all the rest. But that sort of people seldom have any desires beyond the getting of riches, which they saw in abundance before their eyes; and their covetousness was so sharpened by it, that even our slaves' clothes tempted them. They consulted what to do with us, and some were of opinion to throw us overboard, wrapt up in a sail, because they intended to put into some of the Spanish ports, under the notion of being of Britany; and if they carried us with them, they might be punished and their roguery come to light: but the captain, who thought himself rich enough with Zorayda's plunder, said he would not touch at any port of Spain, but make his way through the Straits by night, and so return to Rochelle, from whence he came. This being resolved, they bethought themselves of giving us their long boat, and what provision we might want for our short passage. As soon as it was day, and that we descried the Spanish shore, at which sight, so desirable a thing is liberty, all our miseries vanished from our thoughts in a moment, they began to prepare things, and about noon they put us on board, giving us two barrels of water, and a small quantity of biscuit: and the captain, touched with some remorse for the lovely Zorayda, gave her, at parting, about forty crowns in gold, and would not suffer his men to take from her those clothes which now she has on. We went aboard, showing ourselves rather thankful than complaining. They got out to sea, making for the Straits, and we having the land before us for our north-star, plied our oars, so that about sunset we were near enough to have landed before it was quite dark; but considering the moon was hid in clouds, and the heavens were growing dark, and we ignorant of the shore, we did not think it safe to venture on it, though many among us were so desirous of liberty, and to be out of all danger, that they would have landed, though on a desert rock; and by that means, at least, we might avoid all little barks of the corsairs of Tetuan, who in the evening are in Barbary, and by morning are early upon the Spanish coast; where they often make a prize, and go home to sleep the same day. But the other opinion prevailed, which was to row gently

on, and if the sea and shore gave leave, to land quietly where we could. We did accordingly, and about midnight we came under a great hill, which had a sandy shore, convenient enough for our landing. Here we ran our boat in as far as we could, and being got on land, we all kissed it for joy, and thanked God with tears for our deliverance.[1] This done, we took out the little provision we had left, and climbed up the mountain, thinking ourselves more in safety there; for we could hardly persuade ourselves, nor believe that the land we were upon was the Christian shore.

We thought the day long a-coming, and then we got to the top of the hill, to see if we could discover any habitations: but we could nowhere descry either house, or person, or path. We resolved, however, to go farther on, as thinking we could not miss at last of somebody to inform us where we were: that which troubled me most was, to see my poor Zorayda go on foot among the sharp rocks, and I would sometimes have carried her on my shoulders; but she was as much concerned at the pains I took, as she could be at what she endured: so leaning on me she went on with much patience and content. When we were gone about a quarter of a league, we heard the sound of a little pipe, which we took to be a certain sign of some flock near us; and looking well about, we perceived, at last, at the foot of a cork-tree a young shepherd, who was cutting a stick with his knife with great attention and seriousness. We called to him, and he having looked up, ran away as hard as he could. It seems, as we afterwards heard, the first he saw were the renegade and Zorayda, who being in the Moorish dress, he thought all the Moors in Barbary were upon him; and running into the wood, cried all the way as loud as he could, "Moors, Moors! arm, arm, the Moors are landed." We hearing this outcry, did not well know what to do:

[1] There is in Depping's collection a Spanish ballad, which I shall translate, on account of the resemblance which, in several particulars, it bears to the story of these Christian captives. The idea of the gardener's disguise occurs so often in the stories of escapes from Barbary, that I take it for granted there had been some real story on which its adoption was founded.—See Additional Note XXIV.

but considering that the shepherd's roaring would raise the country, and the horse-guard of the coast would be upon us, we agreed that the renegade should pull off his Turkish habit, and put on a captive's coat, which one of us lent him, though he that lent it him remained in his shirt. Thus recommending ourselves to God, we went on by the same way that the shepherd ran, still expecting when the horse would come upon us; and we were not deceived, for in less than two hours, as we came down the hills into a plain, we discovered about fifty horse coming upon a half-gallop towards us; when we saw that, we stood still, expecting them.

As soon as they came up, and, instead of so many Moors, saw so many poor Christian captives, they were astonished. One of them asked us if we were the occasion of the alarm that a young shepherd had given the country? Yes, said I, and upon that began to tell him who we were, and whence we came; but one of our company knew the horseman that had asked us the question; and without letting me go on, said, "God be praised, gentlemen, for bringing us to so good a part of the country, for if I mistake not, we are near Velez Malaga; and if the many years of my captivity have not taken my memory from me too, I think that you, sir, who ask us these questions, are my uncle Pedro de Bustamente." The Christian slave had hardly said this, but the gentleman lighting from his horse, came hastily to embrace the young slave, saying, "Dear nephew, my joy, my life, I know thee, and have often lamented thy loss, and so has thy mother and thy other relations, whom thou wilt yet find alive. God has preserved them, that they may have the pleasure of seeing thee. We had heard thou wert in Algiers, and by what I see of thy dress, and that of all this company, you must all have had some miraculous deliverance."—"It is so," replied the young man, "and we shall have time enough now to tell all our adventures." The rest of the horsemen hearing we were Christians escaped from slavery, lighted likewise from their horses, offering them to us to carry us to the city of Velez Malaga, which was about a league and a half off. some of them went where we had left our boat, and got it

into the port, while others took us up behind them; and Zorayda rid behind the uncle of our captive.

All the people, who had already heard something of our adventure, came out to meet us; they did not wonder to see captives at liberty, nor Moors prisoners; for in all that coast they are used to it; but they were astonished at the beauty of Zorayda, which at that instant seemed to be in its point of perfection; for, what with the agitation of travelling, and what with the joy of being safe in Christendom, without the terrible thought of being retaken, she had such a beautiful colour in her countenance, that if affection did not deceive me, I durst say, there was not a more beautiful creature in the world, at least that I had seen.

We went straight to church, to thank God for his great mercy to us; and as we came into it, Zorayda said there were several faces there that were like Lél-la Marien's; we told her they were her pictures, and the renegade explained to her as well as he could the story of them, that she might adore them, as if in reality each of them had been the true Lél-la Marien, who had spoke to her; and she, who has a good and clear understanding, comprehended immediately all that was said about the pictures and images. After this, we were dispersed and lodged in different houses of the town; but the young Christian came with me, Zorayda, and the renegade, and took us to his father's house, where we were accommodated pretty well, according to their ability, and used with as much kindness as was their son. After six days' stay at Velez, the renegade having given such information as concerned himself, went away to Granada, there to be re-admitted by the holy Inquisition into the bosom of the church. The other Christians, being at liberty, went each whither he thought fit. Zorayda and I remained without other help than the forty crowns the pirate gave her, with which I bought the ass she rides on, and, since we landed, have been to her a father and a friend, but not a husband. We are now going to see whether my father be alive, or if either of my brothers has had better fortune than I; though since it hath pleased Heaven to give me Zorayda, and make me her companion, I reckon no better

fortune could befall me. The patience with which she bears the inconvenience of poverty, the desire she shows of being made a Christian, do give me subject of continual admiration, and oblige me to serve and love her all the days of my life. I confess the expectation of being hers is not a little alloyed with the uncertainties of knowing whether I shall find in my country any one to receive us, or a corner to pass my life with her; and perhaps time will have so altered the affairs of our family, that I shall not find any body that will know me, should my father and brothers be dead.

This is, gentlemen, the sum of my adventures, which, whether or no they are entertaining, you are best judges. I wish I had told them more compendiously; and yet, I assure you, the fear of being tedious has made me cut short many circumstances of my story.

CHAPTER XLII.

Which treats of what happened in the Inn, with several other Occurrences worthy of being known.

Here the Captive ended his story, and Don Ferdinand, by way of compliment, in the behalf of the whole company, said, "Truly, captain, the wonderful and surprising turns of your fortune are not only entertaining, but the pleasing and graceful manner of your relation is as extraordinary as the adventures themselves. We are all bound to pay you our acknowledgments, and I believe we could be delighted with a second recital, though it were to last till to-morrow, provided it were made by you." Cardenio[1] and the rest offered their utmost service, and that with so much love and sincerity, that the captain had reason to be satisfied of their good-will. Don Ferdinand particularly proposed to engage the Marquis his brother to stand godfather to Zorayda, if he would return with him; and farther, promised to provide him with all things necessary to support his figure and quality in town; but the Captive,

[1] [*D. Antonio* in the original: evidently a printer's error.]

making them a very handsome compliment for their obliging favours, excused himself from accepting those kind offers at that time.

It was now growing towards the dark of the evening, when a coach stopped at the inn, and with it some horsemen, who asked for a lodging. The hostess answered, they were as full as they could pack. "Were you ten times fuller," answered one of the horsemen, "here must be room made for my Lord Judge, who is in this coach." The hostess, hearing this, was very much concerned; said she, "The case, sir, is plain; we have not one bed empty in the house; but if his lordship brings a bed with him, as perhaps he may, he shall command my house with all my heart, and I and my husband will quit our own chamber to serve him,"—"Do so, then," said the man; and by this time a gentleman alighted from the coach, easily distinguishable for a man of dignity and office, by his long gown and great sleeves. He led a young lady by the hand, about sixteen years of age, dressed in a riding suit; her beauty and charming air attracted the eyes of everybody with admiration; and had not the other ladies been present, any one might have thought it difficult to have matched her outward graces.

Don Quixote, seeing them come near the door, "Sir," said he, "you may enter undismayed, and refresh yourselves in this castle, which, though little, and indifferently provided, must nevertheless allow a room, and afford accommodation to arms and learning; and more especially to arms and learning, that, like yours, bring beauty for their guide and conductor. For certainly, at the approach of this lovely damsel, not only castles ought to open and expand their gates, but even rocks divide their solid bodies, and mountains bow their ambitious crests and stoop to entertain her. Come in, therefore, sir; enter this paradise, where you shall find a bright constellation, worthy to shine in conjunction with that heaven of beauty which you bring. Here shall you find arms in their height, and beauty in perfection." Don Quixote's speech, mien, and garb, caused the judge great astonishment; and, unable to reply, he turned again to wonder at him, when he saw before him the three ladies, who, being informed of the judge's

coming, and the young lady's beauty, were come out to see and receive her. But Don Ferdinand, Cardenio, and the curate, addressing him in a style very different from the knight, soon convinced him that he had to do with gentlemen, and persons of note; though Don Quixote's figure, face, and behaviour put him to his wits' end.

After the usual civilities passed on both sides, they found, upon examination, that the women must all lie together in Don Quixote's apartment, and the men remain without to guard them. The judge consented that his daughter should go with the ladies, and so, what with half of the inn-keeper's spare bed, and what with half of that which the judge brought, they were accommodated for the night better than they expected.

The Captive, upon the first sight of the judge, had a strong presentiment that he was one of his brothers, and presently asked one of his servants his name and country. The fellow told him, his name was Juan Peres de Viedma, and that he had heard say that he was born in the highlands of Leon. This, with his own observation, confirmed his opinion, that this was the brother who had made study his choice; whereupon, calling aside Don Ferdinand, Cardenio, and the curate, he told them with great joy what he had learned, with what the servant further told him, that his master, being made a judge of the court of Mexico, was then upon his journey to the Indies; that the young lady was his only daughter, whose mother, dying in child-birth, settled her dowry upon her daughter for her portion, with which the father remained very rich. Upon the whole matter he asked their advice, whether he should discover himself presently to his brother, or try first to find out whether, after the discovery, he would be ashamed, on seeing that he was poor, or would receive him with compassion. "Why should you doubt of a kind one, sir?" said the curate. "Because I am poor, sir," said the captain, "and would therefore by some device fathom his affections; for, should he prove ashamed to own me, I should be more ashamed to discover myself."—"Then leave the management to me," said the curate; "the affable and courteous behaviour of the judge seems to me so very far from pride, that you need not doubt a welcome recep-

tion; but however, because you desire it, I will engage to find a way to sound him." Supper was now upon the table, and all the gentlemen sat down, but the Captive, who ate with the ladies in the next room.

In the middle of supper, "My Lord Judge," said the curate, "I remember about some years ago, I was happy in the acquaintance and friendship of a gentleman of your name, when I was a prisoner in Constantinople. He was a captain of as much worth and courage as any in the Spanish infantry, but as unfortunate as brave."—"What was his name, pray, sir?" said the judge. "Ruy Peres de Viedma," answered the curate, "of a town in the mountains of Leon. I remember he told me a very odd passage between his father, his two brothers, and himself, and truly had it come from any man of less credit and reputation, I should have thought it no more than a story. He said, that his father made a division of his estate among his three sons, giving them such advice as might have fitted the mouth of Cato; that he made arms his choice, and with such success, that within a few years, by the pure merit of his bravery, he was made captain of a foot-company, and had a fair prospect of being advanced to a colonel; but his fortune forsook him where he had most reason to expect her favour; for, in the memorable battle of Lepanto, where so many Christians recovered their liberty, he unfortunately lost his. I was taken at La Goleta, and, after different turns of fortune, we became companions at Constantinople; thence we were carried to Algiers, where one of the strangest adventures in the world befel this gentleman." The curate then briefly ran through the whole story of the brother and Zorayda (the judge sitting all the time more attentive than he ever did on the bench), to their being taken and stripped by the French; and that he had heard nothing of them after that, nor could ever learn whether they came into Spain or were carried prisoners into France.

The captain stood listening in a corner, and observed the motions of his brother's countenance, while the curate told his story; which, when he had finished, the judge breathing out a deep sigh, and the tears standing in his eyes, "O sir!" said he, "if you knew how nearly

your relation touches me, you would easily excuse these tears, so contrary to my habits. The captain you spoke of is my eldest brother, who, being of a stronger constitution of body, and more elevated soul, made the glory and fame of war his choice, which was one of the three proposals made by my father, as your companion told you. I applied myself to study, and my younger brother has purchased a vast estate in Peru, out of which he has transmitted to my father enough to support his liberal disposition; and to me, wherewithal to continue my studies, and advance myself to the rank and authority which I now maintain. My father is still alive, but dying for grief that he can learn nothing of his eldest son, and importuning Heaven incessantly, that he may once more see him before death close his eyes. It is very strange, considering his discretion in other matters, that neither prosperity nor adversity could draw one line from him, to give his father an account of his fortunes. For had he or we had the least hint of his captivity, he needed not have stayed for the miracle of the cane to achieve his deliverance. Now am I in the greatest uneasiness in the world, lest the French, the better to conceal their robbery, may have killed him; the thoughts of this will damp the pleasure of my voyage, which I thought to prosecute so pleasantly. Could but I guess, dear brother," continued he, "where you might be found, I would hazard life and fortune for your deliverance! Could our aged father once understand you were alive, though hidden in the deepest and darkest dungeon in Barbary,[1] his estate, mine, and my brother's, all should go for your ransom? And for the fair and liberal Zorayda, what thanks, what recompense could we provide? O might I see the happy day of her spiritual birth and baptism! to see her joined to him in faith and marriage, how should we all rejoice!" These and such like expressions the judge uttered with so much passion and vehemency, that he aroused the sympathy of every body.

The curate, foreseeing the happy success of his design,

[1] [*Mazmorra*, the word used in the original, is of Arabic origin. The castle-dungeon of our own ancestors probably derived its name of *Massiemore* from the same source.]

resolved to defer the discovery no further; and, to free the company from suspense, he went to the ladies' room, and, leading out Zorayda, followed by the rest, he took the captain by the other hand, and, presenting them to the judge, "Suppress your grief, my lord," said he, "and glut your heart with joy. Behold what you so passionately desired, your dear brother, and his fair deliverer; this gentleman is Captain Viedma, and this the beautiful Algerine. The French I spoke of have reduced them to these straits, to make room for your generous sentiments and liberality." The captain then approaching to embrace the judge, he held him off with both his hands, to view him well, but, once knowing him, he flew into his arms with such affection, and such abundance of tears, that all the spectators sympathized in his emotion. The brothers spoke so feelingly, and their mutual affection was so moving, the surprise so wonderful, and their joy so transporting, that it must be left purely to imagination to conceive. Now they tell one another the strange turns and mazes of their fortunes, then renew their caresses to the height of brotherly tenderness. Now the judge embraces Zorayda, then makes her an offer of his whole fortune; next makes his daughter embrace her; then the sweet and innocent converse of the beautiful Christian and the lovely Moor, so touched the whole company, that they all wept for joy. In the meantime, Don Quixote was very solidly attentive, and, wondering at these strange occurrences, attributed them purely to something answerable to the chimerical notions which are incident to chivalry. The captain and Zorayda, in concert with the whole company, resolved to return with their brother to Seville, and thence to advise their father of his arrival and liberty, that the old gentleman should make the best shift he could to get so far to see the baptism and marriage of Zorayda, while the judge took his voyage to the Indies, being obliged to make no delay, because the Indian fleet was ready at Seville, to set sail in a month for New Spain.

Everything being now settled to the universal satisfaction, and the night being half spent, they all agreed for bed except Don Quixote, who would needs guard the

castle while they slept, lest some tyrant or giant, covetous of the great treasure of beauty which it inclosed, should make some dangerous attempt. He had the thanks of the house, and the judge, being further informed of his humour, was not a little pleased. Sancho Panza only was desperate for want of sleep, though the best provided with a bed, bestowing himself on his pack-saddle; but he paid dearly for it, as we shall hear presently.

The ladies being retired to their chamber, and everybody else retired to rest, and Don Quixote planted sentinel at the castle gate, a voice was heard of a sudden singing so sweetly that it allured all their attentions, but chiefly Dorothea's, with whom the judge's daughter, Donna Clara de Viedma, lay. None could imagine who could make such pretty music without an instrument. Sometimes it sounded as from the yard, sometimes as from the stable. With this Cardenio knocked softly at their door: "Ladies, ladies," said he, "if you are awake listen, and you will hear how sweetly one of the muleteers sings?"—"Yes, sir," said Dorothea, "we hear him plainly." Then Dorothea, hearkening as attentively as she could, heard this song.

CHAPTER XLIII.

The pleasant Story of the young Muleteer, with other strange Adventures that happened in the inn.

THE SONG.

I.

"Toss'd in doubts and fears I rove
On the stormy seas of love;
Far from comfort, far from port,
Beauty's prize, and fortune's sport;
Yet my heart disclaims despair,
While I track my guiding star.

II.

Foolish coyness, like a cloud,
Does too oft her glories shroud

Clara, radiant star of light!
Be auspicious as you're bright.
As you hide or show your beams,
Your adorer sinks or swims."

Dorothea thought it would be much amiss not to give Donna Clara the opportunity of hearing so excellent a voice, wherefore jogging her gently, first on one side, and then on the other, and the young lady waking, "I ask your pardon, my dear," cried Dorothea, "for thus interrupting your repose; and I hope you will easily forgive me, since I only wake you that you may have the pleasure of hearing one of the most charming voices that possibly you ever heard in your life." Donna Clara, who was hardly awake, did not perfectly understand what Dorothea said, and therefore desired her to repeat what she had spoken to her. Dorothea did so; which then obliged Donna Clara also to listen; but scarce had she heard the early musician sing two verses, ere she was taken with a strange trembling, as if she had been seized with a violent fit of quartan ague, and then closely embracing Dorothea, "Ah! dear madam," cried she, with a deep sigh, "why did you wake me? Alas! the greatest happiness I could now have expected, had been to have stopped my ears! That unhappy musician!"—"How is this, my dear?" cried Dorothea: "have you not heard, that the young lad who sung now is but a muleteer?"—"Oh no, he is no such thing," replied Clara, "but a young lord, heir to a great estate, and has such a full possession of my heart, that if he does not slight it, it must be his for ever." Dorothea was strangely surprised at the young lady's passionate expressions, that seemed far to exceed those of persons of her tender years: "You speak so mysteriously, madam," replied she, "that I cannot rightly understand you, unless you will please to let me know more plainly what you would say of hearts and sighs, and this young musician, whose voice has caused so great an alteration in you. However, speak no more of them now; for I am resolved I will not lose the pleasure of hearing him sing. Hold," continued she, "I fancy he is going to entertain us with another song."—"With all my heart," returned Clara, and with that she stopped her ears, that

she might not hear him ; at which again Dorothea could not choose but wonder ; but listening to his voice, she heard the following song.

I.

"Unconquer'd Hope ! thou bane of fear,
And last deserter of the brave ;
Thou soothing ease of mortal care,
Thou traveller beyond the grave ;
Thou soul of patience, airy food,
Bold warrant of a distant good,
Reviving cordial, kind decoy :
Though fortune frowns, and friends depart,
And death should threaten every joy,
Nor thou, nor love, shall leave my doating heart.

II.

The phœnix, Hope, can wing her flight
Through the vast deserts of the skies,
And still defying fortune's spite,
Revive, and from her ashes rise.
Then soar, and promise, though in vain,
What reason's self despairs to gain.
Thou only, O presuming trust,
Canst feed us still, yet never cloy :
And, even a virtue when unjust,
Postpone our pain, and antedate our joy.

III.

No slave, to sluggish ease resign'd,
E'er triumph'd over noble foes ;
The monarch, Fortune, most is kind
To him who bravely dares oppose.
They say, Love sets his blessings high ;
But who would prize an easy joy !
Then I'll my scornful fair pursue,
Though the coy beauty still denies ;
I grovel now on earth, 'tis true,
But rais'd by her, the humble slave may rise."

Here the voice ended, and Clara's sighs began again, which caused the greatest curiosity imaginable in Dorothea, to know the occasion of so moving a song, and of so sad a complaint ; wherefore she again entreated her to pursue the discourse she had begun before. Then Clara fearing Lucinda would overhear her, getting as

near Dorothea as was possible, laid her mouth so close to Dorothea's ear, that she was out of danger of being understood by any other; and began in this manner. "He who sung is a gentleman's son of Arragon, his father is a great lord, and dwelt just over against my father's at Madrid; and though he had always linen curtains in winter and lattices in summer,[1] yet, I cannot tell by what accident, this young gentleman, who then went to school, had a sight of me, and whether it were at church, or at some other place, I cannot justly tell you; but, in short, he fell in love with me, and made me sensible of his passion from his own windows, which were opposite to mine, with so many signs, and such showers of tears, that at once forced me both to believe and to love him, without knowing for what reason I did so. Amongst the usual signs that he made me, one was that of joining his hands together, intimating by that his desire to marry me, which though I heartily wished it, I could not communicate to any one, being motherless, and having none near me whom I might trust with the disclosure of such an affair. I was therefore constrained to bear it in silence, without permitting him any other favour more than to let him gaze on me by lifting up the lattice or curtain a little, when my father and his were abroad. At which he would be so transported with joy, that you would certainly have thought he had been distracted. At last my father's business called him away; yet not so soon but that the young gentleman had notice of it some time before his departure; whence he had it I know not, for it was impossible for me to acquaint him with it. This so sensibly afflicted him, as far as I understand, that he fell sick; so that I could not get a sight of him all the day of our departure, so much as to look a farewell on him. But after two days' travel, just as we came into an inn in a village a day's journey hence, I saw him at the inn-door, dressed so exactly like a muleteer, that it had been utterly impossible for me to have known him, had not his perfect image been stamped in my soul. Yes, yes, dear madam, I knew him, and was amazed and overjoyed

[1] [Glass windows were unknown in Spain long after their partial adoption in more northern countries.]

at the sight of him; and he saw me unknown to my father, whose sight he carefully avoids, when we cross the ways in our journey, and when we come to any inn; and now since I know who he is, and what pain and fatigue it must necessarily be to him to travel thus afoot, I am ready to die myself with the thought of what he suffers on my account; and wherever he sets his feet, there I set my eyes. I cannot imagine what he proposes to himself in this attempt; nor by what means he could thus make his escape from his father, who loves him beyond expression, both because he has no other son and heir, and because the young gentleman's merits oblige him to it; which you must needs confess when you see him; and I dare affirm, beside, that all he has sung was made out of his own head: for as I have heard, he is an excellent scholar, and a good poet. And now whenever I see him, or hear him sing, I start and tremble, as at the sight of a ghost, lest my father should know him, and so be informed of our mutual affection. I never spoke one word to him in my life; yet I love him so dearly, that it is impossible I should live without him. This, dear lady, is all the account I can give you of this musician, with whose voice you have been so well entertained, and which alone might convince you that he is no muleteer, as you were pleased to say, but one who is master of a great estate, and of my poor heart, as I have already told you."

"Enough, dear madam," replied Dorothea, kissing her a thousand times: "it is very well, compose yourself till daylight; and then I trust in Heaven I shall so manage your affairs, that the end of them shall be as fortunate as the beginning is innocent."—"Alas, madam," returned Clara, "what end can I propose to myself; since his father is so rich, and of so noble a family, that he will hardly think me worthy to be his son's servant, much less his wife? And then again, I would not marry without my father's consent for the universe. All I can desire is, that the young gentleman would return home, and leave his pursuit of me: happily, by a long absence, and the great distance of place, the pain, which now so much afflicts me, may be somewhat mitigated though I fear

what I now propose as a remedy, would rather increase my distemper: though I cannot imagine whence, or by what means this passion for him seized me, since we are both so young, being much about the same age, I believe; and my father says I shall not be sixteen till next Michaelmas." Dorothea could not forbear laughing to hear the young lady talk so innocently.—"My dear," said Dorothea, "let us repose ourselves the little remaining part of the night, and when day appears, we will put a happy period to your sorrows, or my judgment fails me." Then they addressed themselves again to sleep, and there was a deep silence throughout all the inn: only the inn-keeper's daughter and Maritornes were awake, for knowing Don Quixote's humour very well, and that he sat armed on horseback keeping guard without doors, a fancy took them, and they agreed to have a little pastime with him, and hear some of his fine out-of-the-way speeches.

You must know, then, that there was but one window in all the inn that looked out into the field, and that was only a hole out of which they used to throw their straw: to this same hole, then, came these two demi-damsels, whence they saw Don Quixote mounted and leaning on his lance, and fetching such mournful and deep sighs, that his very soul seemed to be torn from him at each of them; they observed, besides, that he said in a soft amorous tone,—"O my divine Dulcinea del Toboso! the heaven of all perfections! the end and quintessence of all discretion! the treasury of sweet aspect and behaviour! the depositary of virtue! and in a word, the idea of all that is profitable, modest, or delightful in the universe! What noble thing employs thy excellency at this present? May I presume to hope that thy soul is entertained with the thoughts of thy captive-knight, who voluntarily exposes himself to so many dangers for thy sake? O thou triformed luminary, give me some account of her! perhaps thou art now gazing with envy on her, as she is walking either through some stately gallery of her sumptuous palaces, or leaning on her happy window, there meditating how, with safety of her honour and grandeur, she may sweeten and alleviate the torture which my poor afflicted heart suffers for love of her; with what glories she shall crown my

pains, what rest she shall give to my cares, what life to my death, and what reward to my services. And thou, more glorious planet, which by this time, I presume, art harnessing thy horses to pay thy earliest visit to my adorable Dulcinea; I entreat thee, as soon as thou dost see her, to salute her with my most profound respects; but take heed, that when thou look'st on her, and addressest thyself to her, that thou dost not kiss her face; for if thou dost, I shall grow more jealous of thee, than ever thou wert of the swift ingrate, who made thee run and sweat so over the plains of Thessaly, or the banks of Peneus.[1] I have forgotten through which of them thou rannest, so raging with love and jealousy." At these words the inn-keeper's daughter began to call to him softly:—"Sir knight," said she, "come a little nearer this way, if you please."—At these words Don Quixote turned his head, and the moon shining then very bright, he perceived somebody called him from the hole, which he fancied was a large window full of iron-bars, all richly gilt, suitable to the stately castle, for which he mistook the inn; and all on a sudden he imagined that the beautiful damsel, daughter to the lady of the castle, overcome by the charms of his person, returned to court him, as she did once before. In this thought, that he might not appear uncivil or ungrateful, he turned Rozinante and came to the hole; where seeing the two lasses, "Fair damsels," said he, "I cannot but pity you for your misplaced affection, since it is altogether impossible you should meet with any return from the object of your wishes proportionable to your great merits and beauty; but yet you ought not by any means to condemn this unhappy knight-errant for his coldness, since love has utterly incapacitated him to become a slave to any other but to her, who, at first sight, made herself absolute mistress of his soul. Pardon me, therefore, excellent lady, and retire to your apartment. Let not, I beseech you, any further arguments of love force me to be less grateful or civil than I would: but if in the passion you have for me you can bethink yourself of anything else wherein I may do you any service, love alone excepted, command it

[1] [Viz. Daphne.]

freely and I swear to you by my absent, yet most charming enemy, to sacrifice it to you immediately, though it be a lock of Medusa's hair, which was all of snakes, or the very sunbeams enclosed in a glass vial."

"My lady needs none of those things, sir knight," replied Maritornes.—"What then would she command?" asked Don Quixote.—"Only the honour of one of your fair hands," returned Maritornes, "to satisfy, in some measure, that violent passion which has obliged her to come hither with the great hazard of her honour: for if my lord, her father, should know it, the cutting off one of her beautiful ears were the least thing he would do to her."—"Oh that he durst attempt it!" cried Don Quixote; "but I know he dare not, unless he has a mind to die the most unhappy death that ever father suffered, for sacrilegiously depriving his amorous daughter of one of her delicate members." Maritornes made no doubt that he would comply with her desire, and having already laid her design, got in a trice to the stable, and brought Sancho Panza's ass's halter to the hole, just as Don Quixote was got on his feet upon Rozinante's saddle, more easily to reach the barred window, where he imagined the enamoured lady stayed; and lifting up his hand to her, said, "Here, madam, take the hand, or rather, as I may say, the executioner of all earthly miscreants; take, I say, that hand, which never woman touched before; no, not even she herself who has entire possession of my whole body; nor do I hold it up to you that you may kiss it, but that you may observe the contexture of the sinews, the ligament of the muscles, and the largeness and dilatation of the veins; whence you may conclude how strong that arm must be, to which such a hand is joined."—"We shall see that presently," replied Maritornes, and cast the noose she had made in the halter on his wrist; and then descending from the hole, she tied the other end of the halter very fast to the lock of the door. Don Quixote being sensible that the bracelet she had bestowed on him was very rough, cried, "You seem rather to abuse than compliment my hand; but I beseech you treat it not so unkindly, since that is not the cause of the wrong that my will does you; nor is it just or equal that you

should discharge the whole tempest of your vengeance on so small a part. Consider, those who love truly, can never be so cruel in their revenge." But not a soul regarded what he said; for as soon as Maritornes had fastened him, she and her confederate, almost dead with laughing, ran away, and left him so strongly tied, that it was impossible he should disengage himself.

He stood then, as I said, on Rozinante's saddle, with all his arm drawn into the hole, and the rope fastened to the lock, being under a fearful apprehension, that if Rozinante moved but never so little on any side, he should slip and hang by the arm, and therefore durst not use the least motion in the world, though he might reasonably have expected from Rozinante's patience and gentle temper, that if he were not urged, he would never have moved for a whole age together of his own accord. In short, the knight, perceiving himself fast, and that the ladies had forsaken him, immediately concluded that all this was done by way of enchantment, as in the last adventure in the very same castle, when the enchanted Moor of a carrier did so maul him. Then he began to curse to himself his want of discretion and conduct, since having once made his escape out of that castle in so miserable a condition, he should venture into it a second time; for, by the way, it was an observation among all knights-errant, that if they were once foiled in an adventure, it was a certain sign it was not reserved for them, but for some other to finish;[1] wherefore they would never prove it again. Yet, for all this, he ventured to draw back his arm, to try if he could free himself; but he was so fast bound, that his attempt proved fruitless. It is true, it was with care and deliberation he drew it, for fear Rozinante should stir: and then fain would he have seated himself on the saddle; but he found he must either stand, or leave his arm for a ransom. A hundred times

[1] Thus, "Juan Quixada vio la rica y adventurosa espada y tiro della, mas no le approvecho que arrancar la pudiesse, y dixo *de mas valor ha de ser que yo él que esta aventura acabara; cierte para mi no estava guardada.*"—Calvete, 194, 5. See also the account of the futile attempts to draw from the stone in which it was enchanted the famous sword of Merlin. Ellis's *Romances*, vol. i.

he wished for Amadis's sword on which no enchantment had power; then he fell a-cursing his stars; then reflected on the great loss the world would sustain all the time he should continue under his enchantment, as he really believed it; then his adorable Dulcinea came afresh into his thoughts; many a time did he call to his trusty squire Sancho Panza, who, buried in a profound sleep, lay stretched at length on his ass's pannel, and never so much as dreamed of his mother that bore him; then the aid of the necromancers Lirgandeo and Alquife was invoked by the unhappy knight. And, in fine, the morning surprised him, racked with despair and confusion, bellowing like a bull; for he could not hope from daylight any cure, or mitigation of his pain, which he believed would be eternal, being absolutely persuaded he was enchanted, since he perceived that Rozinante moved no more than a mountain: and therefore he was of opinion, that neither he nor his horse should eat, drink, or sleep, but remain in that state till the malignancy of the stars were overpast, or till some more powerful magician should break the charm.

But it was an erroneous opinion; for it was scarce day-break, when four horsemen, very well accoutred, their firelocks hanging at the pommels of their saddles, came thither, and finding the inn-gate shut, called and knocked very loud and hard; which Don Quixote perceiving from the post where he stood sentinel, cried out with a rough voice and a haughty mien, "Knights, or squires, or of whatsoever other degree you are, knock no more at the gates of this castle, since you may assure yourselves, that those who are within at such an hour as this, are either taking their repose, or not accustomed to open their fortress, till Phœbus has displayed himself upon the globe; retire, therefore, and wait till it is clear day, and then we will see whether it is just or no, that they should open their gates to you."—"What a devil," cried one of them, "what castle or fortress is this, that we should be obliged to so long a ceremony? Pr'ythee, friend, if thou art the inn-keeper, bid them open the door to us; for we ride post, and can stay no longer than just to bait our horses."—"Gentlemen," said Don Quixote, "do I look like an inn-

keeper then?"—"I cannot tell what thou art like," replied another, "but I am sure thou talkest like a madman, to call this a castle."—"It is a castle," returned Don Quixote, "ay, and one of the best in the province, and contains one who has held a sceptre in her hand, and worn a crown on her head."—"It might more properly have been said exactly contrary," replied the traveller, "a sceptre on her head, and a crown in her hand: yet it is not unlikely that there may be a company of strollers within, and those do frequently hold such sceptres, and wear such crowns as thou pratest of: for certainly no person worthy to sway a sceptre, or wear a crown, would condescend to take up a lodging in such a paltry inn as this, where I hear so little noise."—"Thou hast not been much conversant in the world," said Don Quixote, "since thou art so miserably ignorant of accidents so frequently met with in knight-errantry."—The companions of him that held this tedious discourse with Don Quixote, were tired with their foolish chattering so long together, and therefore they returned with greater fury to the gate, where they knocked so violently, that they waked both the inn-keeper and his guests: and so the host rose to ask who was at the door.

In the meantine Rozinante, pensive and sad, with ears hanging down, and motionless, bore up his outstretched lord, when one of the horses those four men rode upon, walked towards Rozinante, to smell him; and he truly being real flesh and blood, though very like a wooden block, could not choose but be sensible of it, nor forbear turning to smell the other, which so seasonably came to comfort and divert him; but he had hardly stirred an inch from his place, when Don Quixote's feet, that were close together, slipt asunder, and tumbling from the saddle, he had inevitably fallen to the ground, had not his wrist been securely fastened to the rope; which put him to so great a torture, that he could not imagine but that his hand was cutting off, or his arm tearing from his body; yet he hung so near the ground, that he could just reach it with the tips of his toes,[1] which added to his

[1] In the old romance of Virgilius we are told, that the great poet, being in love with a woman still more deeply skilled than himself in the arts of necromancy, sustained at her hands usage very similar to

torment; for, perceiving how little he wanted to the setting his feet wholly on the ground, he strove and tugged as much as he could to effect it: not much unlike those that suffered the strappado, who put themselves to greater pain in striving to stretch their limbs, deluded by the hopes of touching the ground, if they could but inch themselves out a little longer.

CHAPTER XLIV.

A Continuation of the unheard-of Adventures in the Inn.

THE miserable outcries of Don Quixote presently drew the inn-keeper to the door, which he hastily opening, was strangely affrighted to hear such a terrible roaring; and the strangers stood no less surprised. Maritornes, whom the cries had also roused, guessing the cause, ran straight to the loft, and slipping the halter, released the Don, who made her a very prostrate acknowledgment, by an unmerciful fall on the ground. The inn-keeper and strangers crowded immediately round him to know the cause of his

that of the poor Don in the text. She enchanted him into a box, and hung him up for a day and night on the outside of *the tower* in which he lived, to the vision of all Rome. A Spanish author, Alonzo Martinez de Toledo, tells a more authentic story of the same sort of adventure, in his book entitled, "Corvacho, ó libro de los vicios de malas mugeres."—Part I. cap. 18. While one Don Bernard de Cabrera, in the time of King Pedro of Arragon, was lying in prison, in expectation of being tried for some state offence of which he had been guilty, a lady, to whom he had offered some disagreeable attentions, entered into a plot against him with the officers of the law, and with the jailer under whose care he was placed. She made him believe that she had concerted measures for his escape, and invited him to descend from the window of his prison by means of a rope which she had cunningly conveyed to him. The prisoner did so at midnight, but ere he had reached the ground, the jailer arrested his progress from above; and "next morning," says my author, "all the people of the town and the neighbourhood, his friends and his enemies, beheld him, and they came form all parts to look upon him hanging there in mid-air, in his shirt, *like Virgil.*" The author adds, that he had himself conversed with several old people who remembered witnessing in their youth this strange display, and of course concludes with a very solemn *moral* concerning the viciousness of the feminine gender. [See also Mr. Duffield's note, vol. ii. p. 294.]

misfortune. He without regard to their questions, unmanacled his wrist, rose from the ground, mounted Rozinante, braced his target, couched his lance, and, taking a large circumference in the field, came up with a hand-gallop: "Whoever," said he, "dare affirm, assert, or declare that I have been justly enchanted, in case my lady the Princess Micomicona will but give me leave, I will tell him he lies, and will maintain my assertion by immediate combat." The travellers stood amazed at Don Quixote's words, till the host removed their wonder by informing them of his usual extravagances in this kind, and that his behaviour was not to be minded. They then asked the inn-keeper if a certain youth, near the age of fifteen, had set up at his house, clad like a muleteer; adding withal some further marks and tokens, denoting Donna Clara's lover.

He told them, that among the number of his guests, such a person might pass him undistinguished; but one of them accidentally spying the coach which the judge rid in, called to his companions, "O, gentlemen, gentlemen, here stands the coach which we were told my young master followed, and here he must be, that is certain; let us lose no time; one guard the door, the rest enter into the house to look for him. Hold—stay," continued he, "ride one about to the other side of the house, lest he escape us through the back yard."—"Agreed," says another, and they posted themselves, accordingly. The inn-keeper, though he might guess that they sought the young gentleman whom they had described, was nevertheless puzzled as to the cause of their so diligent search. By this time the daylight, and the outcries of Don Quixote, had raised the whole house, particularly the two ladies, Clara and Dorothea, who had slept but little, the one with the thought that her lover was so near her, and the other through the desire she had to see him. Don Quixote seeing the travellers neither regard him nor his challenge, was ready to burst with fury and indignation; and could he have dispensed with the rules of chivalry, which oblige a knight-errant to the finishing one adventure before he embarked in another, he had assaulted them all, and forced them to answer him to their

cost: but being unfortunately engaged to reinstate the Princess Micomicona, his hands were tied up, and he was compelled to desist, waiting to see where the diligent search of the four travellers would terminate. One of them found the youth fast asleep by the side of a muleteer little dreaming of being followed or discovered. The fellow, lugging him by the arm, cries out, "Ay, ay, Don Lewis, these are very fine clothes you have got on, and very becoming a gentleman of your quality: indeed, this scurvy bed too is very suitable to the care and tenderness your mother brought you up with." The youth, having rubbed his drowsy eyes, and fixed them steadfastly on the man, knew him presently for one of his father's servants, which struck him speechless with surprise. The fellow went on: "There is but one way, sir; pluck up your spirits, and return with us to your father, who is certainly a dead man unless you be recovered."—"How came my father to know," answered Don Lewis, "that I took this way, and this disguise?"—"One of your fellow students," replied the servant, "to whom you communicated your design, moved by your father's lamentation of your loss, discovered it. The good old gentleman despatched four of his servants in search of you; and here we are all at your service, sir, and the joyfullest men alive; for our old master will give us a hearty welcome, having so soon restored him what he loved so much."—"That, next to Heaven, is as I please," said Don Lewis.—"What would you, or Heaven either, please, sir, but return to your father? Come, come, sir, talk no more of it; home you must go, and home you shall go." The muleteer that lay with Don Lewis, hearing this dispute, rose, and related the business to Don Ferdinand, Cardenio, and the rest that were now dressed; adding withal, how the man gave him the title of Don, with other circumstances of their conference. They being already charmed with the sweetness of his voice, were curious to be informed more particularly of his circumstances, and resolving to assist him, in case any violence should be offered him, went presently to the place where he was still talking and contending with his servant

By this Dorothea had left her chamber, and with her

Donna Clara in great distress. Dorothea beckoning Cardenio aside, gave him a short account of the musician and Donna Clara; and he told her that his father's servants were come for him. Donna Clara overhearing him, was so exceedingly surprised, that had not Dorothea run and supported her, she had sunk to the ground. Cardenio promising to bring the matter to a fair and successful end, advised Dorothea to retire with the indisposed lady to her chamber. All the four that pursued Don Lewis were now come about him, pressing his return without delay, to comfort his poor father. He answered it was impossible, being engaged to put a business in execution first, on which depended nothing less than his life, his honour, and the welfare of his soul. They urged, that since they had found him, there was no returning for them without him, and if he would not go, he should be carried. "Not unless you kill me," answered the young gentleman; upon which all the company were joined in the dispute, Cardenio, Don Ferdinand and his companions, the judge, the curate, the barber, and Don Quixote, who thought it needless now to guard the castle any longer. Cardenio, who knew the young gentleman's story, asked the fellows upon what pretence, or by what authority, they could carry the youth away against his will.—"Sir," answered one of them, "we have reason good for what we do; no less than his father's life depends upon his return."—"Gentlemen," said Don Lewis, "it is not proper perhaps to trouble you with a particular relation of my affairs; only thus much, I am a gentleman, and have no dependence that should force me to anything beside my inclination."—"Nay but, sir," answered the servant, "reason, I hope, will force you; and though it cannot move you, it must govern us, who must execute our orders, and force you back; we only act as we are ordered, sir."—"Hold," said the judge, "and let us know the whole state of the case."—"O lord, sir," answered one of the servants that knew him, "my lord judge, does not your worship know your next neighbour's child? See here, sir, he has run away from his father's house, and has put on this dress, so unfitting the quality of his family, as your worship may see." The judge then viewing him more attentively

knew him, and saluting him, "What jest is this, Don Lewis?" cried he; "what mighty intrigue are you carrying on, young sir, to occasion this metamorphosis, so unbecoming your quality?" The young gentleman could not answer a word, and the tears stood in his eyes; the judge perceiving his disorder, desired the four servants to trouble themselves no further, but leave the youth to his management, engaging his word to act to their satisfaction; and retiring with Don Lewis, he begged to know the occasion of his flight.

During their conference, they heard a great noise at the inn-door, occasioned by two strangers, who, having lodged there over night, and seeing the whole family so busied in a curious inquiry into the four horsemen's business, thought to have made off without paying their reckoning; but the inn-keeper, who minded no man's business more than his own, stopped them on the threshold, and demanding his money, upbraided their ungenteel design very sharply: they returned the compliment with kick and cuff so roundly, that the poor host cried out for help. His wife and daughter saw none so idle as Don Quixote, whom the daughter addressing, "I conjure you, sir knight," said she, "by that virtue delivered to you from heaven, to succour my distressed father, whom two villains are beating to death."—"Beautiful damsel," answered Don Quixote, with a slow tone and profound gravity, "your petition cannot at the present juncture prevail, I being withheld from undertaking any new adventure by promise first to finish what I am engaged in; and all the service you can expect, is only my counsel in this important affair. Go with all speed to your father, with advice to continue and maintain the battle with his utmost resolution, till I obtain permission from the Princess Micomicona to come to his aid, which once granted, you need make no doubt of his safety."—"Unfortunate wretch that I am," said Maritornes, who overheard him, "before you can have this leave, my master will be sent to the other world."—"Then, madam," said he, "procure me the permission I mentioned, and though he were sent into the other world, I will bring him back in spite of hell and the devil, or at least so revenge his fall on his enemies, as

shall give you more than moderate satisfaction;" whereupon breaking off the discourse, he went and threw himself prostrate before Dorothea, imploring her, in romantic style, to grant him permission to march and sustain the governor of that castle, who was then placed in dangerous circumstances." The princess despatched him very willingly; whereupon presently buckling on his target, and taking up his sword, he ran to the inn-door, where the two guests were still handling their landlord very unmercifully: he there made a sudden stop, though Maritornes and the hostess pressed him twice or thrice to tell the cause of his delay in his promised assistance to his host.—"I make a pause," said Don Quixote, "because I am commanded by the law of arms to use my sword against none under the order of knighthood; but let my squire be called; this affair is altogether his province."—In the meantime drubs and bruises were incessant at the inn-gate, and the poor host was soundly beaten. His wife, daughter, and maid, who stood by, were like to run mad at Don Quixote's hanging back, and the inn-keeper's unequal combat; wherein we shall leave him, since he will not lack his assistance presently, or if he do, let him suffer in silence for attempting a thing he was not likely to go through with. We now return to hear what Don Lewis answered the judge, whom we left retired with him, and asking the reason of his travelling on foot, and in so mean a disguise. The young gentleman, grasping his hands very passionately as a sign of the greatness of his sorrow, not without tears, made this reply.

"Without ceremony or preamble, I must tell you, dear sir, that from the instant that Heaven made us neighbours, and I saw Donna Clara, your daughter and my mistress, I resigned to her the whole command of my affections; and unless you, whom I most truly call my father, prevent it, she shall be my wife this very day; for her sake I abandoned my father's house; for her have I thus disguised my quality; her would I thus have followed through the world; she was the pole-star, to guide my wandering course, and the mark at which my wishes flew. Her ears indeed are utter strangers to my passion; but yet her eyes may guess, by the tears she saw flowing from mine. You

know my fortune and my quality; if these can plead, sir, I lay them at her feet. Then make me this instant your happy son; and if my father, biassed by contrary designs, should not approve my choice, yet time may produce some favourable turn, and alter his mind."—The amorous youth having done speaking, the judge was much surprised at the handsome discovery he made of his affections, but was not a little puzzled how to behave himself in so sudden and unexpected a matter; he therefore, without any positive answer, advised him only to compose his thoughts, to divert himself with his servants, and to prevail with them to allow him that day to consider on what was proper to be done. Don Lewis expressed his gratitude by forcibly kissing the judge's hands, and bathing them with his tears, enough to move a heart of marble, much more a judge's, who being a man of the world, had presently the advantage of the match and preferment of his daughter in the wind; though he much doubted the consent of Don Lewis's father, who he knew designed to acquire a title for his son.

By this time Don Quixote's entreaties rather than threats had parted the fray at the inn-door; the strangers paying their reckoning went off, and Don Lewis's servants stood expecting the result of the judge's discourse with their young master; when, as the devil would have it, who should come into the inn but the barber whom Don Quixote had robbed of Mambrino's helmet, and Sancho of the pack-saddle. As this barber was leading his beast to the stable, he spies Sancho mending something about the pannel; he knew him presently, and settling upon him very boldly, "Ay, Don Thief," said he, "have I caught you at last! where is my basin and all my ass's furniture you stole from me?" Sancho finding himself so unexpectedly assaulted, and nettled at the dishonourable terms of his language, laying fast hold on the pannel with one hand, gave the barber such a blow on the chops with the other, as set all his teeth a-bleeding. For all this the barber stuck by his hold, and cried out so loud, that the whole house was alarmed at the noise and scuffle; "I command you, gentlemen," continued he, "to assist me, in the king's name; for this rogue has robbed me on the

king's highway, and would now murder me, because I seize upon my goods."—"That is a lie," cried Sancho, "it was no robbery on the king's highway, but lawful plunder, won by my lord Don Quixote, fairly in the field."—The Don himself was now come up, very proud of his squire's behaviour on this occasion, accounting him thenceforth a man of spirit, and designing him the honour of knighthood on the first opportunity, thinking his courage might prove a future ornament to the order. Among other things which the barber urged to prove his claim; "Gentleman," said he, "this pack-saddle is as certainly my pack-saddle, as I hope to die in my bed; I know it as well as if I had born and bred it; nay, my very ass will witness for me; do but try the saddle on him, and if it does not fit him as close as can be, call me then a liar. Nay, more than that, gentlemen, that very day when they robbed me of my pack-saddle, they took away a special new basin which was never used, and which was worth a crown."—Here Don Quixote could no longer contain himself; but thrusting between them, he parted them; and having caused the pack-saddle to be deposited on the ground to open view, till the matter came to a final decision; "That this honourable company may know," cried he, "in what a manifest error this honest squire persists, take notice how he degrades that with the name of basin, which was, is, and shall be, the helmet of Mambrino, which I fairly won from him in the field, and lawfully made myself lord of by force of arms. As to the pack-saddle, it is a concern that is beneath my regard; all I have to urge in that affair is, that my squire begged my permission to strip that vanquished coward's horse of his trappings, to adorn his own. He had my authority for the deed, and he took them. And now for his converting it from a horse's furniture to a pack-saddle, no other reason can be brought, but that such transformations frequently occur in the affairs of chivalry. For a confirmation of this, despatch, run, Sancho, and produce the helmet, which this squire would maintain to be a basin."—"O' my faith, sir," said Sancho, "if this be all you can say for yourself, such basin is as much Mambrino's helmet as this good man's harness is a

pack-saddle."—"Obey my orders," said Don Quixote; "I cannot believe that every thing in this castle will be guided by enchantment."—Sancho brought the basin, which Don Quixote, holding up in his hands, "Behold, gentlemen," continued he, "with what face can this impudent squire affirm this to be a basin, and not the helmet I mentioned? Now, I swear before you all, by the order of knighthood which I profess, that that is the same individual helmet which I won from him, without the least addition or diminution."—"That I will swear," said Sancho: "for since my master won it, he never fought but once in it, and that was the battle wherein he freed those unlucky galley-slaves, who, by the same token, would have knocked out his brains with a shower of stones, had not this same honest basin-helmet saved his skull."

CHAPTER XLV.

In which is decided the doubt about Mambrino's Helmet and the Pack-saddle; with other Adventures that happened in all truth.

"PRAY, good gentlemen," said the barber, "let us have your opinion in this matter; I suppose you will grant this same helmet to be a basin."—"He that dares say so," said Don Quixote, "must know that he lies, if he be a knight; but if a squire, that he lies a thousand times."—Our barber, who was privy to the whole matter, to humour the jest, and carry the diversion a little higher, took up the other shaver.—"Master Barber,—you must pardon me, sir, if I do not give you your titles,—I must let you understand," said he, "that I have served an apprenticeship to your trade, and have been a freeman in the company more than twenty years,[1] and am therefore not to learn what belongs to shaving. You must likewise know that I have been a soldier too in my younger days, and consequently understand the differences between a

[1] The barber says in the original, "*tengo* mas de veinte años *carta de exámen*;" which shows, that in Spain, as with ourselves, the barber was, in the old time, entitled to consider himself as belonging to "the three black graces."

helmet, a morion, and a close-helmet,[1] with all other accoutrements belonging to a man-at-arms. Yet I say, with submission still to better judgment, that this piece, here in dispute before us, is as far from being a basin, as light is from darkness. Withal I affirm, on the other hand, that although it be a helmet, it is not a complete one."—"Right," said the Don, "for the half that is the beaver is wanting."—"A clear case, a clear case," said the curate, Cardenio, Don Ferdinand and his companions; and the judge himself, had not Lewis's concern made him thoughtful, would have humoured the matter.—"Lord have mercy upon us now!" said the poor barber, half distracted, "is it possible that so many honourable gentlemen should know a basin or a helmet no better than this comes to? 'Tis a thing to put a whole university, with all its scholarship, into astonishment. Well, if it must be a helmet, it must be a helmet, that is all. And by the same rule my pack-saddle must be horse's harness, as this gentleman says."—"I must confess," said Don Quixote, "as to outward appearance it is a pack-saddle; but, as I have already said, I will not pretend to determine the dispute as to that point."—"Nay," said the curate, "if Don Quixote speak not, the matter will never come to a decision; because in all affairs of chivalry, we must all give him the preference."—"I swear, worthy gentlemen," said Don Quixote, "that the adventures I have encountered in this castle are so strange and supernatural, that I must infallibly conclude them the effects of pure magic and enchantment. The first time I ever entered its gates, I was strangely embarrassed by an enchanted Moor that inhabited it, and Sancho himself had no better entertainment from his attendants; and last night I hung suspended almost two hours by this arm, without the power of helping myself, or of assigning

[1] See Captain Grose on Ancient Armour. It may be sufficient to mention here, that the *morion* was a low iron cap, worn by infantry alone. By the *helmet* the barber means the common open casque of the horseman. The *close helmet* is the complete head-piece, disused in European warfare long before the days of Cervantes. This, in its perfect form, has in front two moveable parts, which may at pleasure either be lifted up or down, viz., the *vizor* to look through, and the *bever*, which opened to admit sustenance—whence its name, literally interpreted, the *drinking-piece*.

any reasonable cause of my misfortune; so that for me to meddle or give my opinion in such confused and intricate events, would appear presumption. I have already given my final determination as to the helmet in controversy, but dare pronounce no definitive sentence on the pack-saddle, but shall remit it to the discerning judgment of the company; perhaps the power of enchantment may not prevail on you that are not dubbed knights, so that your understandings may be free, and your judicial faculties more piercing to enter into the true nature of these events, and not conclude upon them from their appearances."—"Undoubtedly," answered Don Ferdinand, "the decision of this process depends upon our sentiments, according to Don Quixote's opinion; that the matter, therefore, may be fairly discussed, and that we may proceed upon solid and firm grounds, we will put it to the vote. Let every one give me his suffrage in my ear, and I will oblige myself to report them faithfully to the board."

To those that knew Don Quixote, this proved excellent sport; but to others unacquainted with his humour, as Don Lewis and his four servants, it appeared the most ridiculous stuff in nature; three other travellers too, that happened to call in by the way, and were found to be officers of the Holy Brotherhood, thought the people were all bewitched in good earnest. But the barber was quite at his wit's end, to think that his basin, then and there present before his eyes, was become the helmet of Mambrino, and that his pack-saddle was likewise going to be changed into rich horse-furniture. Everybody laughed very heartily to see Don Ferdinand whispering each particular person very gravely to have his vote upon the important contention of the pack-saddle. When he had gone the rounds among his own faction, that were all privy to the jest, "Honest fellow," said he very loudly, "I grow weary of asking so many impertinent questions: every man has his answer at his tongue's end that it is mere madness to call this a pack-saddle, and that it is positively, *nemine contradicente*, right horse-furniture, and great horse-furniture, too; besides, friend, your allegations and proofs are of no force; therefore, in spite of your ass and you too, we give it for the defendant

that this is, and will continue, the furniture of a horse, nay, and of a good horse too."—"Now the devil take me," said the barber,[1] "if you be not all damnably deceived: and may I be hanged if my conscience does not plainly tell me it is a downright pack-saddle: but 'law is short when the king's in court,' and I say no more, though I am neither mad nor drunk, for I am fresh and fasting this morning from everything but sin."

The barber's strait was no less diverting than Don Quixote's clamours. "Sentence is passed," cried he; "and let every man take possession of his goods and chattels, and Heaven give him joy."—"This is a jest, a mere jest," said one of the four servants; "certainly, gentlemen, you cannot be in earnest, you are too wise to talk at this rate; for my part, I say and will maintain it, for there is no reason the barber should be wronged, that this is a basin, and that the pack-saddle of a he-ass."—"May not it be a she-ass's packsaddle, friend?" said the curate.—"That is all one, sir," said the fellow; "the question is not whether it be a he or she-ass's pack-saddle, but whether it be a pack-saddle or not, that is the matter sir."—One of the officers of the Holy Brotherhood, who had heard the whole controversy, very angry to hear such an error maintained, "Gentlemen," said he, "this is no more a horse's saddle than it is my father, and he that says the contrary is drunk or mad."—"You lie like an unmannerly rascal," said the knight; and at the same time with his lance, which he had always ready for such occasions, he offered such a blow at the officer's head, that had not the fellow leaped aside it would have laid him flat. The lance flew into pieces, and the rest of the officers, seeing their comrade so abused, cried out for help, charging everyone to aid and assist the Holy Brotherhood. The inn-keeper being one of the fraternity, ran for his sword and rod,[2] and then joined his fellows. Don Lewis's servants got round their master to defend him from harm

[1] [In the original it is *el sobrebarbero*, which may mean the supernumerary barber, though with more probability it is assumed to be a misprint for *el pobre barbaro*, the poor barber.]

[2] [All the troopers of the Holy Brotherhood carry wands or rods as a mark of their office.]

and secure him lest he should make his escape in the scuffle. The barber seeing the whole house turned topsy-turvy, laid hold again on his pack-saddle; but Sancho, who watched his motions, was as ready as he, and secured the other end of it.

Don Quixote drew and assaulted the officers pell-mell. Don Lewis called to his servants to join Don Quixote and the gentlemen that sided with him; for Cardenio, Don Ferdinand, and his other friends had engaged on his side. The curate cried out, the landlady shrieked, her daughter wept, Maritornes howled, Dorothea was distracted with fear, Lucinda could not tell what to do, and Donna Clara was strangely frighted; the barber pommelled Sancho, and Sancho belaboured the barber. One of Don Lewis's servants went to hold him, but he gave him such a rebuke on his jaws, that his teeth had like to have forsook their station; and then the judge took him into his protection. Don Ferdinand had got one of the officers down, and laid on him back and side. The inn-keeper still cried out, "Help the Holy Brotherhood!" so that the whole house was a medley of wailings, cries, shrieks, confusions, fears, terrors, disasters, slashes, buffets, blows, kicks, cuffs, battery, and bloodshed.

In the greatest heat of this hurly-burly it came into Don Quixote's head, that he was certainly involved in the disorder and confusion of King Agramante's camp; and calling out with a voice that shook the whole house; "Hold," said he, "all hold your furious hands, sheath all your swords, let none presume to strike on pain of death, but hear me speak."

The loud voice surprised everybody into obedience, and the Don proceeded: "I told you before, gentlemen, that this castle was enchanted, and that some legion of devils did inhabit it; now let your own eyes confirm my words: do not you behold the strange and horrid confusion of King Agramante's army removed hither,[1] and put in

[1] In the Orlando Furioso (Canto 27), the Archangel Michael is represented as finding Discord sitting in an assembly of divines,

——"dove altre volte l'aveva
Veduta"——

and severely rated for being absent a single moment from the camp of

execution among us? See, see how they fight for the sword, and yonder for the horse: behold how some contend for the helmet, and here others battle for the standard; and all fight we do not know how, nor can tell why. Let therefore my Lord Judge, and his reverence Master Curate, represent, one, King Agramante, and the other King Sobrino, and by their wisdom and conduct appease this tumult; for by the powers divine, it were a wrong to honour, and a blot on chivalry, to let so many worthies, as are here met, kill one another for such trifles."

Don Quixote's words were incomprehensible to the officers, who having been roughly handled by Cardenio, Ferdinand and his friends, would not give it over so. But the barber was content; for Sancho had demolished his beard and pack-saddle both in the scuffle; the squire dutifully retreated at the first sound of his master's voice; Don Lewis's servants were calm, finding it their best way to be quiet; but the inn-keeper was refractory. He swore that madman ought to be punished for his ill-behaviour, and that every hour he was making some disturbance or another in his house. But at last, the matter was made up, the pack-saddle was agreed to be horse-furniture, the basin a helmet, and the inn a castle, till the day of judgment, if Don Quixote would have it so. Don Lewis's business came next in play. The judge, in concert with Don Ferdinand, Cardenio, and the curate, resolved that Don Ferdinand should interpose his authority on Don Lewis's behalf, and let his servants know, that he would carry him to Andalusia, where he should be entertained according to his quality by his brother the marquis; and they should not oppose this design, seeing Don Lewis was positively resolved not to be forced to go back to his father yet. Don Ferdinand's quality, and Don Lewis's resolution, prevailed on the fellows to order matters so, that three of them might return to acquaint their old

this monarch, wherein "the divine messenger" had already appointed her station. The whole of Canto 27th is occupied with the tumults her arrival creates; which, however, are at last appeased in some measure by Agramante himself, and Sobrino, "il discreto e saggio."—See Additional Note XXV.

master, and the fourth wait on Don Lewis. Thus this monstrous heap of confusion and disorder was digested into form, by the authority of Agramante, and wisdom of King Sobrino.

But the enemy of peace, finding his project of setting them all by the ears so eluded, resolved once again to have another trial of skill, and play the devil with them all the second bout: for though the officers, understanding the quality of their adversaries, were willing to desist, yet one of them, whom Don Ferdinand had kicked most unmercifully, remembering that, among other warrants, he had one to apprehend Don Quixote, for setting free the galley-slaves, which Sancho was sadly afraid would come about, he resolved to examine if the marks and tokens given of Don Quixote agreed with this person; then drawing out a parchment, and opening his warrant, he made a shift to read it, and every other word looking cunningly on Don Quixote's face; whereupon having folded up the parchment, and taking his warrant in his left hand, he clapt his right hand in the knight's collar, so that he could hardly breathe, crying, "Gentlemen, I am an officer, here's my warrant. I charge you all to aid and assist the Holy Brotherhood." Don Quixote, finding himself used so rudely, by one whom he took to be a pitiful scoundrel, kindled up into such a rage, that he shook with indignation, and catching the fellow by the neck with both his hands, squeezed him so violently, that if his companions had not presently freed him, the knight would certainly have throttled him before he had quitted his hold.

The inn-keeper being obliged to assist his brother officer, presently joined him: the hostess seeing her husband engaging a second time, raised a new outcry, her daughter and Maritornes bore the burden of the song, sometimes praying, sometimes crying, sometimes scolding: Sancho, seeing what passed, "By the lord," said he, "my master is in the right; this place is haunted, that is certain; there is no living quietly an hour together." At last Don Ferdinand parted Don Quixote and the officer, who were both pretty well pleased to quit their bargain. However, the officers still demanded their

prisoner, and to have him delivered bound into their hands, commanding all the company a second time to help and assist them in securing that public robber upon the king's high road.

Don Quixote smiled at the supposed simplicity of the fellows; at last, with solemn gravity, "Come hither," said he, "you mean and base-born people! dare you call loosing the fettered, freeing the captive, helping the miserable, raising the fallen, and supplying the indigent, dare you, I say, base-spirited rascals, call these actions robbery? Your thoughts, indeed, are too grovelling and servile to understand, or reach the pitch of chivalry, otherwise you had understood, that even the shadow of a knight-errant had claim to your adoration. You a band of officers! you are a pack of rogues indeed, and robbers on the highway by authority. What blockhead of a magistrate durst issue out a warrant to apprehend a knight-errant like me? Could not his ignorance find out that we are exempt from all courts of judicature? That our valour is the bench, our will the common law, and our sword the executioner of justice? Who was the fool that knew not that no rank of nobility or peerage enjoys more immunities and privileges? Has he any precedent that a knight-errant ever paid taxes, subsidy, poll-money, or so much as fare or ferry?[1] What tailor ever had money for his clothes, or what constable ever made him a reckoning for lodging in his castle? What kings are not proud of his company; and what damsels of his love? And lastly, did you ever read of any knight-errant that ever was, is, or shall be, that could not, with his single force, cudgel four hundred troopers four hundred times, if they have the impudence to oppose him?"

[1] The several terms in the original are *pecho*, *alcavala*, *chapin de la Reina*, *moneda forera*, &c.—It is not easy to understand what was the precise nature of these taxes. The *alcavala* is described in the dictionaries as answering to the "Gabella exterorum;" it was, therefore, a *salt-tax*. The chapins de la Reina (*queen's pattens money*) was a certain subsidy levied on all crown-tenants at the time of a royal marriage. The *moneda forera* seems to have been a small sum of money, paid once in the seven years by the same species of proprietors, in recognition of the king's superiority over their lands. *Pecho* is Spanish for *breast*; so that its sense is probably well given by *poll-tax*.

CHAPTER XLVI.

Of the notable Adventure with the Troopers, and the great ferocity of our good Don Quixote.

WHILST Don Quixote talked at this rate, the curate endeavoured to persuade the officers that he was distracted, as they might easily gather from his words and actions; and therefore, though they should carry him before a magistrate, he would be presently acquitted, as being a madman. He that had the warrant made answer, that it was not his business to examine whether he were mad or not; he was an officer in commission, and must obey orders; and accordingly was resolved to deliver him up to the superior power, which once done, they might acquit him three hundred times if they would. But for all that, the curate persisted they should not carry Don Quixote away with them this time, adding, that the knight himself would by no means be brought to it; and in short, said so much, that they had been greater fools than he, could they not have plainly seen his madness. They therefore not only desisted, but offered their service in compounding the difference between Sancho and the barber. Their mediation was accepted, they being officers of justice, and they succeeded so well, that both parties stood to their arbitration, though not entirely satisfied with their award, which ordered them to change their pannels, but not their halters nor the girths. The curate made up the business of the basin, paying the barber, under-hand, eight reals for it, and getting a general release under his hand of all claims or actions concerning it, and all things else. These two important differences being so happily decided, the only obstacles to a general peace were Don Lewis's servants and the inn-keeper; the first were prevailed upon to accept the proposals offered, which were, that three of them should go home, and the fourth attend Don Lewis, where Don Ferdinand should appoint. Thus this difference was made up, to the visible joy of Donna Clara.

Zorayda, not well understanding any thing that passed, was sad and cheerful by turns, as she observed others to be by their countenances, especially her beloved Spaniard, on whom her eyes were more particularly fixed. The inn-keeper made complaint, having discovered that the barber had received money for his basin. "He knew no reason," he said, "why he should not be paid as well as other folks, and swore that Rozinante and Sancho's ass should pay for their master's extravagance before they should leave his stable." The curate pacified him, and Don Ferdinand paid him his bill. All things thus accommodated, the inn no longer resembled the confusion of Agramante's camp, but rather the universal peace of Augustus's reign: upon which the curate and Don Ferdinand had the thanks of the house, as a just acknowledgment for their eloquence and liberality.

Don Quixote being now free from the difficulties and delays that lately embarrassed him, held it high time to prosecute his voyage, and bring to some decision the general enterprise to which he had been called and chosen. He therefore fully resolved to press his departure, and fell on his knees before Dorothea, but she would not hear him in that posture, but prevailed upon him to rise; he then addressing her said:

"Beautiful lady, it is a known proverb, that diligence is the mother of success; and we have found the greatest successes in war still to depend on expedition and despatch by preventing the enemy's design, and forcing a victory, before an assault is expected. My inference from this, most high and illustrious lady, is, that our residence in this castle appears nothing conducive to our designs, but may prove dangerous; for we may reasonably suppose that our enemy the giant may learn by spies, or some other secret intelligence, the scheme of our intentions, and consequently fortify himself in some inexpugnable fortress against the power of our utmost endeavours, and so the strength of my invincible arm may be ineffectual. Let us, therefore, dear madam, by our diligence prevent any such his designs, and seek the good fortune, from which I keep your highness by delaying to meet your adversary.

Here he stopped, waiting the princess's answer. She,

with a grave aspect, and style suiting his extravagance, replied: "The great inclination and indefatigable desire you show, worthy knight, in assisting the injured, and restoring the oppressed, lay a fair claim to the praises and universal thanks of mankind; but your singular concern, and industrious application in assisting me, deserve my particular acknowledgments and gratification; and I shall make it my peculiar request to Heaven, that your generous designs in my favour may be soon accomplished, that I may be enabled to convince you of the honour and gratitude that may be found in some of our sex. As to our departure, I shall depend upon your pleasure, to whose management I have not only committed the care of my person, but also resigned the whole power of command." —"Then, by the assistance of the divine power," answered he, "I will lose no opportunity of reinstating your highness, since you condescend to humble yourself to my orders; let our march be sudden, for the eagerness of my desires, the length of the journey, and the dangers of delay, are great spurs to my despatch. Since, therefore, Heaven has not created, nor hell seen the man I ever feared, go Sancho, saddle Rozinante, make ready your ass, and the palfrey of the queen; let us take leave of the governor here, and these other lords, and set out hence immediately."

Sancho, hearing all that passed, shook his head. "Lord, lord, master," said he, "there is always more tricks in a town than are talked of, with reverence be it spoken."— "Ho! villain," cried Don Quixote, "what tricks can any town or city show to impair my credit?"—"Nay, sir," quoth Sancho, "if you grow angry, I can hold my tongue, if that be all: but there are some things which you ought to hear, and I should tell as becomes a trusty squire, and honest servant."—"Say what thou wilt," said the knight, "so it tend not to cowardice; for if thou art afraid, thou art like thyself, and if I am not, I act only as is my nature."—"That is not the matter," answered Sancho, "as I am a sinner before God! but I must tell you, sir, that which is certain and plain. This same madam here, that calls herself the queen of the great kingdom of

Micomicon, is no more a queen than my mother. For do but consider, sir, if she were such a fine queen as you believe, can you imagine she would always be snouting,[1] and kissing with a certain person in this company at every turn and corner?" Dorothea blushed at Sancho's words, for Don Ferdinand had, indeed, sometimes, and in private, taken the freedom with his lips to reap some part of the reward his affection deserved; which Sancho spying by chance made some constructions upon it, very much to the disadvantage of her royalty; for, in short, he concluded her no better than a woman of pleasure. She nevertheless would take no notice of his aspersion, but let him go on; "I say this, sir," continued he, "because after our trudging through all weathers, fair and foul, day after night, and night after day, this same person in the inn here, is like to divert himself at our expense, and to gather the fruit of our labours. I think, therefore, master, there is no reason, do you see, for saddling Rozinante, harnessing my ass, or making ready the lady's palfrey; for we had better stay where we are; and let every wench spin and we ourselves go to dinner."

Heavens! into what a fury did these disrespectful words of Sancho put the knight! His whole body shook, his tongue faltered, his eyes glowed. "Thou villainous, ignorant, rash, unmannerly, blasphemous detractor," said he, "how darest thou entertain such base and dishonourable thoughts, much more utter thy rude and contemptible suspicions before me and these honourable persons? Away from my sight, thou monster of nature, magazine of lies, cupboard of deceits, granary of guile, publisher of follies, foe of all honour! Away, and never let me see thy face again, on pain of my most furious indignation!" Then bending his angry brows, puffing his cheeks, and stamping on the ground, he gave Sancho such a look as almost frighted the poor fellow to annihilation.

In the height of this consternation, all that the poor squire could do, was to turn his back, and sneak out of the room. But Dorothea, knowing the knight's temper, undertook to mitigate his anger. "Sir Knight of the

[1] [In the original *hocicando*, from *hocico*, the snout of any beast.]

Doleful Countenance," said she, "assuage your wrath, I beseech you; it is below your dignity to be offended at these idle words of your squire; and I dare not affirm but that he has some colour of reason for what he said; for it were uncharitable to suspect his sincere understanding and honest principles of any false or malicious slander or accusation. We must therefore believe without any doubt that as you have found all transactions in this castle governed by enchantment, so some diabolical illusion has appeared to Sancho, and represented to his enchanted sight what he asserts to my dishonour."—"Now by the powers supreme," said the knight, "your highness has hit the mark. This misdemeanour of that poor fellow must be attributed purely to enchantment, and the power of some malicious apparition; for the good nature and simplicity of the poor wretch could never invent a lie, or be guilty of an aspersion to any one's disadvantage."—"It is evident," said Don Ferdinand; "we therefore all intercede in behalf of honest Sancho, that he may be again restored to your favour, *sicut erat in principio*, before these illusions had imposed upon his sense." Don Quixote complied, and the curate brought in poor Sancho trembling, who on his knees made an humble acknowledgment of his crime, and begged to have his pardon confirmed by a gracious kiss of his master's hand. Don Quixote gave him his hand and his blessing. "Now, Sancho," said he, "will you hereafter believe what I so often have told you, that the power of enchantment overrules everything in this castle?"—"I will, and like your worship," quoth Sancho, "all but my tossing in a blanket; for really, sir, that happened according to the ordinary course of things?"—"Believe it not, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "for were I not convinced of the contrary, you should have plentiful revenge; but neither then nor now could I ever find any object to wreak my fury or resentment on."

Every one desired to know what was the business of the blanket; whereupon the inn-keeper gave them an account of Sancho's tossing, which set them all a-laughing, and would have made Sancho angry, had not his master assured him that it was enchantment; though Sancho's

simplicity was not so great as to believe he had not been tossed. The whole company having passed two days in the inn, bethought themselves of departing; and the curate and barber found out a device to carry home Don Quixote, without putting Don Ferdinand and Dorothea to the trouble of humoring his impertinence any longer. They first agreed with a waggoner that went by with his team of oxen, to carry him home: then had a kind of a wooden cage made, so large that the knight might conveniently sit, or lie in it. Presently after all the company of the inn disguised themselves, some with masks, others by disfiguring their faces, and the rest by change of apparel, so that Don Quixote should not take them to be the same persons. This done, they all silently entered his chamber, where he was sleeping very soundly after his late fatigues; they immediately laid hold on him so forcibly, and held his arms and legs so hard, that he was not able to stir, or do anything but stare on those strange shapes which stood round him. This instantly confirmed him in the delusion that had so long disturbed his crazed understanding, and made him believe himself undoubtedly enchanted, and those frightful figures to be the spirits and demons of the enchanted castle. So far the curate's invention succeeded to his expectation. Sancho being the only person there in his right shape and senses, beheld all this very patiently, and though he knew them all very well, yet was resolved to see the end of it, before he ventured to speak his mind. His master likewise said nothing, patiently expecting his fate, and waiting the event of his misfortune. They had by this lifted him out of bed, and placing him in the cage, they shut him in, and nailed the bars of it so fast, that no small strength could force them open. Then mounting him on their shoulders, as they conveyed him out of the chamber-door, they heard as dreadful a voice as the barber's lungs could bellow, speak these words:

"Be not impatient, O Knight of the Doleful Countenance, at your imprisonment, since it is ordained by the fates, for the more speedy accomplishment of that most noble adventure, which your incomparable valour has intended. For accomplished it shall be, when the rampant Manchegan

lion,[1] and the white Tobosan dove shall be united, by humbling their lofty and erected necks to the soft yoke of wedlock, from whose wonderful coition shall be produced and spring forth brave whelps, which shall imitate the rampant paws of their valorous sire. And this shall happen before the bright pursuer of the fugitive nymph shall, by his rapid and natural course, take a double circumference in visitation of the luminous signs. And thou, the most noble and faithful squire that ever had sword on thigh, beard on face, or sense of smell in nose, be not dispirited or discontented at this captivity of the flower of all chivalry; for very speedily, by the eternal will of the world's Creator, thou shall find thyself ennobled and exalted beyond the knowledge of thy greatness, and I confirm to thee, from the wise Mendacia,[2] that thou shalt not be defrauded of thy salary, as thou shalt see indeed. I therefore conjure thee to follow closely the steps of the courageous and enchanted knight; for it is necessarily enjoined, that you both go where you both shall stay. The fates have commanded me no more, farewell. For I now return, I well know whither."[3]

The barber managed the cadence of his voice so artificially towards the latter end of his prophecy, that even those who were acquainted with the jest, had almost taken it for supernatural.

Don Quixote was much comforted at the prophecy, apprehending presently the sense of it, and applying it to his marriage with Dulcinea del Toboso, from whose happy womb should issue the cubs, signifying his sons, to the eternal glory of La Mancha; upon the strength of which belief, raising his voice, and heaving a profound sigh; "Whosoever thou art," said he, "whose happy prognostication I own and acknowledge, I desire thee to implore, in my name, the wise magician, whose charge I am, that his power may protect me in this captivity, and not

[1] [In the early Spanish editions the expression is *leon manchado*, the spotted lion, of course with an obvious allusion to *Manchego*, which word is, in fact, adopted by later editors.]

[2] [Lit. *Mentironiana*, a word framed from *mentira*, a lie.]

[3] The language of this prophecy is in the same strain with one recorded in Amadis de Gaul.—See Additional Note XXVI.

permit me to perish before the fruition of these grateful and incomparable promises made to me; for the confirmation of such hopes, I would think my prison a palace, my fetters freedom, and this litter on which I lie, no hard field-bed, but a luxurious couch and happy marriage-bed. And as to the consolation offered my squire Sancho Panza, I am so convinced of his honesty, and he has proved his honour in so many adventures, that I mistrust not his deserting me, through any change of fortune. And though his or my harsher stars should disable me from bestowing on him the island I have promised, or some equivalent, his wages at least are secured to him by my will already made, though what he will receive is more answerable, I confess, to my estate and ability, than to his services and great deserts." Sancho Panza made him three or four very respectful bows, and kissed both his hands, for one alone he could not, being both tied together, and in an instant the demons hoisted up the cage, and neatly disposed it on the ox-cart.

CHAPTER XLVII.

Of the strange manner of Don Qxixote's Enchantment, with other memorable Occurrences.

When Don Quixote found himself caged in this manner, and mounted in the cart: "Among all the grave volumes of chivalry that I have read," said he, "I never read before of knights-errant drawn in carts, or tugged along so leisurely, by such slothful animals as oxen.[1] For they used to be hurried along with prodigious speed, enveloped in some dark and dusky cloud; or in some fiery chariot, or on winged griffins, or some such expeditious creatures; but I must confess, to be drawn thus by a team of oxen, staggers

[1] Don Quixote is very oblivious here, for a great part of the history of Launcelot du Lac consists in the misfortunes which befell him in consequence of a journey performed in this mean species of conveyance. See the Morte Arthur—or Mr. Ellis's Specimens, Vol. I.—See Additional Note XXVII.

my understanding not a little; though perhaps the enchanters of our times take a different method from those in former ages. Or rather the wise magicians have invented some course in their proceedings for me, being the first reviver and restorer of arms, which have so long been lost in oblivion, and rusted through the disuse of chivalry. What is thy opinion, my dear Sancho?"—"Why truly, sir," said Sancho, "I cannot tell what to think, being not so well read in these errant writings as your worship; yet for all that, I am positive and can take my oath on it, that these same phantoms that run up and down here are not orthodox."—"Orthodox, my friend?" said Don Quixote, "how can they be orthodox, when they are devils, and have only assumed these phantastical bodies to surprise us into this condition? To convince you, endeavour to touch them, and you will find their substances are not material, but only subtile air, and outward appearance."—"Gadzookers, sir," said Sancho, "I have touched them, and touched them again, sir; and I find this same busy devil here, that is fiddling about, is as plump and fat as a capon: besides, he has another property very different from a devil; for the devils, they say, smell of brimstone and other filthy things, and this spark has such a fine scent of amber about him, that you may smell him at least half a league."—He meant Don Ferdinand, who, in all probability, like other gentlemen of his quality, had his clothes perfumed.

"Do not wonder at this, honest Sancho," answered Don Quixote, "the cunning of these fiends is great; for you must know, the spirits, as spirits, have no scent at all; and if they should, it must necessarily be some unsavoury stench, because they still carry their hell about them, and the least of a perfume or grateful odour were inconsistent with their torments; so that this mistake of yours must be attributed to some further delusion of your sense." Don Ferdinand and Cardenio, upon these discourses between master and man, were afraid that Sancho would spoil all, and therefore ordered the innkeeper privately to get ready Rozinante and Sancho's ass, while the curate agreed with the officers for so much a-day to conduct him home. Cardenio having hung Don Quixote's target on the pommel of Rozinante's saddle, and

the basin on the other side, he signified to Sancho by signs, that he should mount his ass, and lead Rozinante by the bridle; and lastly placed two officers with their fire-locks on each side of the cart.

Being just ready to march, the hostess, her daughter, and Maritornes, came to the door to take their leave of the knight, pretending unsupportable grief for his misfortune. "Restrain your tears, most honourable ladies," said Don Quixote, "for these mischances are incident to those of my profession; and from these disasters it is we date the greatness of our glory and renown; they are the effects of envy, which still attends virtuous and great actions, and are brought upon us by the indirect means of such princes and knights as are emulous of our dignity and fame; but spite of all oppression, spite of all the magic, that ever its first inventor Zoroaster understood, virtue will come off victorious; and triumphing over every danger, will at last shine out in its proper lustre, like the sun to enlighten the world. Pardon me, fair ladies, if, through ignorance or omission of the respects due to your qualities, I have not behaved myself to please you; for to the best of my knowledge, I never committed a wilful wrong. And I crave the assistance of your prayers, towards my enlargement from this prison, which some malicious magician has confined me to; and the first business of my freedom shall be a grateful acknowledgment for the many and obliging favours conferred upon me in this your castle."

Whilst the ladies were thus entertained by Don Quixote, the curate and barber were busy taking their leaves of their company; and after mutual compliments and embraces, they engaged to acquaint one another with their succeeding fortunes. Don Ferdinand entreated the curate to give him a particular relation of Don Quixote's adventures, assuring him, that nothing would be a greater obligation, and at the same time engaged to inform him of his own marriage and Lucinda's return to her parents; with an account of Zorayda's baptism, and Don Lewis's success in his amour.

The curate having given his word and honour to satisfy Don Ferdinand, and the last embraces and compliments being past, the inn-keeper came to him, and

offered him a bundle of papers found in the folds of the same trunk, where he got *The Foolish Doubter*, telling him withal, that they were all at his service, because the owner had not come again; and as he could not read, he did not want them. The curate thanked him heartily, and opening the papers, found them entitled, *The Story of Rinconete and Cortadillo.*[1] The title showing it to be a novel by the author of *The Foolish Doubter*, he put it in his pocket with a resolution to peruse it the very first opportunity: then mounting with his friend the barber, and both putting on their masks, they followed the procession, which marched in this order. The carter led the van, and next his cart, flanked on right and left with two officers with their firelocks; then followed Sancho on his ass, leading Rozinante; and lastly the curate and barber on their mighty mules brought up the rear of the body, all with a grave and solemn air, marching no faster than the heavy oxen allowed. Don Quixote sat leaning against the bars of the cage with his hands tied and his legs at length; but so silent and motionless, that he seemed rather a statue than a man.

They had travelled about two leagues this slow and leisurely pace, when their conductor stopping in a little valley, proposed it as a fit place to bait in; but being informed by the barber of a certain valley beyond a little hill in their view, better stored with grass, and more convenient for their purpose, they went on again. They had not travelled much further when the curate spied coming after them six or seven men very well accoutred; they appeared to be mounted on churchmen's mules, for they rode briskly, not with the sluggishness of the oxen; they endeavoured before the heat of the day to reach their inn, which was about a league farther. In short, they soon came up with our slow itinerants; and one of them, that was a canon of Toledo, and master of those that came along with him, marking the formal procession of the cart, guards, Sancho, Rozinante, the curate, and the barber, but chiefly the encaged Don

[1] [This is one of the "Exemplary Novels," as they are called, published in 1613. See the translation, p. 42.]

Quixote, could not forbear asking what meant their strange method of securing that man; though he already believed, having observed the guards, that he was some notorious criminal in custody of the Holy Brotherhood. One of the fraternity told him, that he could not tell the cause of that knight's imprisonment, but that he might answer for himself, because he best could tell.

Don Quixote overhearing their discourse, "Gentlemen," said he, "if you are conversant and skilled in matters of knight-errantry, I will communicate my misfortunes to you; if you are not, I have no reason to give myself the trouble."—"Truly, friend," answered the canon, "I am better acquainted with books of chivalry than with Villalpando's divinity;[1] and if that be all your objection, you may safely impart to me what you please."—"With Heaven's permission be it so," said Don Quixote. "You must then understand, sir knight, that I am borne away in this cage by the force of enchantments, through the envious spite and malice of some cursed magicians; for virtue is more zealously persecuted by ill men, than it is beloved by the good. I am by profession a knight-errant, and none of those, I assure you, whose deeds never merited a place in the records of fame; but one, who, in spite of Envy's self, in spite of all the magi of Persia, the brahmins of India, or the gymnosophists of Ethiopia, shall secure to his name a place in the temple of Immortality, as a pattern and model to following ages, that ensuing knights-errant, following my steps, may be guided to the top and highest pitch of heroic honour."—"The noble Don Quixote de la Mancha speaks truth," said the curate, coming up to the company; he is indeed enchanted in this cart, not through his own demerits or offences, but the malicious treachery of those whom virtue displeases and valour offends. This is, sir, the Knight of the Doleful Countenance, of whom you have undoubtedly heard, whose mighty deeds shall stand engraved in lasting brass and time-surviving marble, till envy grows tired with labouring to deface his fame, and malice to conceal him."

[1] "Las Sumulas de Dr. Gaspar Cardillo de Villalpando."—This work was used as a text-book in the University of Alcalá. The author makes a considerable figure in the histories of the Council of Trent.

The canon hearing the prisoner and his guard talk thus in the same style, was ready to cross himself for wonder, as were the rest of the company, till Sancho Panza coming up, to mend the matter, "Look ye, sirs," said he, "I will speak the truth, take it well or take it ill. My master here, is no more enchanted than my mother: he is in his sober senses, he eats and drinks and does his needs, like other folks, and as he used to do; and yet they will persuade me that a man, who can do all this, is enchanted forsooth! he can speak too, for if they will let him alone, he will talk more than thirty attorneys." —Then turning towards the curate, "O Master Curate, Master Curate," continued he, "do you think I do not know you, and that I do not guess what all these new enchantments drive at! Yes, I know you well enough, for all you hide your face: and understand your designs, for all your sly tricks, sir. In short, where envy rules, virtue can't live, and where there's pinching there's no liberality. The devil take the luck on it; had not your reverence spoiled our sport, my master had been married before now to the Princess Micomicona, and I had been an earl at least; nay, that I was sure of, had the worst come to the worst; but the proverb is true again, fortune turns round faster than a mill-wheel, and he that was yesterday at the top, lies to-day at the bottom. I wonder, Master Curate, you that are a clergyman, should not have more conscience; consider, sir, that I have a wife and family, who expect to see me a governor, and my master here is to do a world of good deeds: and do not you think, sir, that you will be made to answer for all this one day?"—"Snuff me those candles," said the barber, hearing Sancho talk at this rate: "what, Sancho, are you brain-sick of your master's disease too? If you be, you are like to bear him company in his cage, I will assure you, friend. What enchanted island is this that floats in your skull, or what succubus has been riding thy fancy,[1] and got it

[1] The translation of this passage ought to be simply, "In an evil hour wert thou impregnated with these promises—in an evil hour did this island come into thy noddle." But Coutarwek well remarks, that a great deal of the humour of all this story of the *Island* evaporates in every translation. Don Quixote never uses the common word *Isla*,

with child of these hopes ?"—"With child, sir! what do you mean, sir?" said Sancho, "I scorn your words, sir; the best lord in the land should not get me with child, no, not the king himself, Heaven bless him! For though I am a poor man, yet I am an honest man, and an old Christian, and do not owe any man a farthing: and though I desire islands, there are folks not far off that desire worse things. Every one is the son of his own works; I am a man, and may be pope of Rome, much more governor of an island; especially considering my master may gain so many that he may want persons to bestow them on. Therefore, pray Master Barber, take heed what you say; for all consists not in shaving of beards, and there is some difference between a hawk and a hand-saw. I say so, because we all know one another, and nobody shall put a false card upon me. As to my master's enchantment, let it stand as it is, Heaven knows best: and a stink is still worse for the stirring." The barber thought silence the best answer to Sancho's simplicity; and the curate, doubting that he might spoil all, entreated the canon to put on a little before, and he would unfold the mystery of the encaged knight, which perhaps he would find one of the pleasantest stories he had ever heard. The canon rid forward with him, and his men followed, while the curate made them a relation of Don Quixote's life and quality, his madness and adventures, with the original cause of his distraction, and the whole progress of his affairs, till his being shut up in the cage, to get him home in order to have him cured. They all admired at this strange account; and then the canon turning to the curate: "Believe me, Master Curate," said he, "I am fully convinced, that these they call books of knight-errantry are very prejudicial to the public. And though I have been led away with an idle and false pleasure, to read the beginning of almost as many of them as have been printed, I could never yet persuade myself to go through

---

but always the old majestic Latin *Insula*, as preserved in the original romances and chronicles. Sancho also uses this high-sounding word, and the barber taunts him by re-echoing it in the text. Indeed it is evident enough from the sequel that Sancho never has the least notion what an *insula* is.

with any one to the end; for to me they all seem to contain one and the same thing; and there is as much in one of them as in all the rest. The whole composition and style resemble that of the Milesian fables,[1] which are a sort of idle stories, designed only for diversion, and not for instruction. It is not so with those fables which are called apologues, that at once delight and instruct. But though the main design of such books is to please; yet I cannot conceive how it is possible they should effect it, being filled with such a multitude of unaccountable extravagancies. For the pleasure which strikes the soul, must be derived from the beauty and congruity it sees or conceives in those things the sight or imagination lay before it; and nothing in itself deformed or incongruous can give us any real satisfaction. Now what beauty can there be, or what proportion of the parts to the whole, or of the whole to the several parts, in a book, or fable, where a stripling of sixteen years of age at one cut of a sword cleaves a giant, as

[1] *Milesian fables.*—"The Milesians, who were a colony of Greeks, and spoke the Ionic dialect, excelled all the neighbouring nations in ingenuity, and first caught from the Persians their rage for fiction: but the tales they invented, and of which the name has become so celebrated, have all perished. There is little known of them, except that they were not of a very moral tendency, and were principally written by a person of the name of Aristides, whose tales were translated into Latin by Sisenna, the Roman historian, about the time of the civil wars of Marius and Sylla. Huet, Vossius [De Historicis Græcis. *Aristides*], and the other writers by whom the stories of Aristides have been mentioned, concur in representing them as short amatory narratives in prose; yet it would appear from two lines in Ovid's Tristia, that some of them, at least, had been written in verse:—

'Junxit Aristides Milesia carmina secum—
Pulsus Aristides nec tamen urbe sua est.'

"But though the Milesian tales have perished, of their nature some idea may be formed from the stories of Parthenius Nicenus,[1] many of which, there is reason to believe, are extracted from these ancient fables, or at least are written in the same spirit. The tales of Nicenus are about forty in number, but appear to be mere sketches. They chiefly consist of accounts of every species of seduction, and the criminal passions of the nearest relations. The principal characters generally come to a deplorable end, though seldom proportioned to what they merited by their vices."—DUNLOP.

[1] Παρθενίου Νικαέως περὶ ἐρωτικῶν παθημάτων.

tall as a steeple, through the middle as easily as if he were made of sugar-paste? Or when they give us the relation of a battle, having said the enemy's power consisted of a million of combatants, yet provided the hero of the book be against them, we must of necessity, though never so much against our inclination, conceive that the said knight obtained the victory only by his own valour, and the strength of his powerful arm? And what shall we say of the great ease and facility with which an absolute queen or empress casts herself into the arms of an errant and unknown knight? What mortal, not altogether barbarous and unpolished, can be pleased to read, that a great tower, full of armed knights, cuts through the sea like a ship before the wind, and setting out in the evening from the coast of Italy, lands by break of day in Prester John's country, or in some other, never known to Ptolemy, or seen by Marco Polo?[1] If it should be answered, that the persons who compose these books, write them as confessed lies; and therefore are not

[1] Mandeville, the old English traveller (the Scots satirical word *maundrell* is a corruption of his name), tells, among other wonderful things, that he came, I think in 1354, to that part of India (but he means Tartary) where the famous Prester John still reigned. The traveller gravely says, that this prince was the lineal descendant of Ogier the Dane—that that famous Paladin penetrated into the north of India with fifteen barons of his own country, among whom he divided his conquests; and established as their liege lord and sovereign the most pious of the party, one John. This John, says Mandeville, converted the natives, from which circumstance came his name of Priest John, which has descended to his heirs, as the title of Pharaoh did among the ancient Kings of Egypt. Marco Polo's travels took place earlier than Mandeville's, and acquired the greatest celebrity. This Venetian began his journeyings while Baldwin the Second, the last of the Latin Emperors of Constantinople, still kept possession of that imperial city. He travelled with his uncle, an ancient and experienced voyager, into Tartary, and from thence into China, Japan, &c. His work was begun to be written in 1292, but its information extends forty years back from that period, and forms, undoubtedly, one of the most interesting literary monuments of the middle ages. In *Much Ado about Nothing*, when Beatrice interrupts Benedict's conference with Don Pedro, he says, "I will go on the lightest errand now to the Antipodes, that you can devise to send me *on*: I will fetch you a toothpicker from the farthest inch of Asia; bring you the length of Prester John's foot; fetch you a hair of the great Cham's beard; do you any embassage to the Pigmies—rather than hold three words conference with this harpy."

obliged to observe niceties, or to have regard to truth, I shall make this reply that falsehood is so much the more commendable, by how much more it resembles truth; and is the more pleasing the more it is doubtful and possible. Fabulous tales ought to be suited to the reader's understanding, being so contrived, that all impossibilities ceasing, all great accidents appearing feasible, and the mind wholly hanging in suspense, they may at once surprise, astonish, please and divert; so that pleasure and admiration may go hand in hand. This cannot be performed by him that flies from probability and imitation, which is the perfection of what is written. I have not seen any book of knight-errantry that composes an entire body of a fable with all its parts, so that the middle is answerable to the beginning, and the end to the beginning and middle; but on the contrary, they form them of so many limbs, that they rather seem a chimæra or monster, than a well-proportioned figure. Besides all this, their style is uncouth, their exploits incredible, their love immodest, their civility impertinent, their battles tedious, their language absurd, their voyages preposterous; and in short, they are altogether void of solid ingenuity, and therefore fit to be banished a Christian commonwealth as useless and prejudicial." [1]

The curate was very attentive, and believed him a man of a sound judgment, and much in the right in all he had urged; and therefore told him, that being of the same opinion, and an enemy to the books of knight-errantry, he had burned all that belonged to Don Quixote, which were a considerable number. Then he recounted to him the scrutiny he had made among them, what he had condemned to the flames, and what spared; at which the canon laughed heartily, and said, "that notwithstanding all he had spoken against those books, yet he found one good thing in them, which was the subject they furnished a man of understanding with to exercise his parts, because they allow a large scope for the pen to dilate upon without any check, describing shipwrecks, storms, skirmishes and

[1] [Cervantes no doubt here expresses his own opinion on, at all events, the main body of the romances.]

battles; representing to us a brave commander, with all the qualifications requisite in such a one, showing his prudence in disappointing the designs of the enemy, his eloquence in persuading or dissuading his soldiers, his judgment in council, his celerity in execution, and his valour in assailing or repulsing an assault; laying before us sometimes a dismal and melancholy accident, sometimes a delightful and unexpected adventure; in one place, a beautiful, modest, discreet and reserved lady; in another, a Christian-like, brave, and courteous gentleman; here a boisterous, inhuman, boasting ruffian; there an affable, warlike and wise prince; now expressing the fidelity and loyalty of subjects, now the generosity and bounty of sovereigns. He may no less, at times, make known his skill in astrology, cosmography, music and policy: and if he pleases, he cannot want an opportunity of appearing knowing even in necromancy. He may describe the subtilty of Ulysses, the piety of Æneas, the valour of Achilles, the misfortunes of Hector, the treachery of Sinon, the friendship of Euryalus, the liberality of Alexander, the valour of Cæsar, the clemency and sincerity of Trajan, the fidelity of Zopyrus, the prudence of Cato; and in fine, all those actions that may make up a complete hero; sometimes attributing them all to one person, and at other times dividing them among many. This being so performed in a grateful style, and with ingenious invention, approaching as much as possible to truth, will doubtless compose so beautiful and various a work, that, when finished, its excellency and perfection must attain the best end of writing, which is at once to delight and instruct, as I have said before: for the loose method practised in these books, gives the author liberty to play the epic, the lyric, and the dramatic poet, and to run through all the parts of poetry and rhetoric; for epics may be as well writ in prose as in verse."

CHAPTER XLVIII.

In continuation of the Canon's Discourse upon Books of Knight-errantry, and other matter worthy of his ability.

"YOU are much in the right, sir," replied the curate; "and therefore those who have hitherto published books of that kind, are the more to be blamed, for having had no regard to good sense, art, or rules, by the observation of which they might have made themselves as famous in prose, as the two princes of Greek and Latin poetry are in verse."—"I must confess," said the canon, "I was once tempted to write a book of knight-errantry myself, observing all those rules; and to speak the truth, I writ above one hundred pages, which for the better trial whether they answered my expectation, I communicated to some learned and judicious men fond of those subjects, as well as to some of those ignorant persons, who are only delighted with extravagancies; and they all gave me a satisfactory approbation. And yet I made no further progress, as well because I look upon it to be a thing no way agreeable with my profession, as because I am sensible fools are much more numerous than wise men; and though it were of more weight to be commended by the small number of the wise, than scorned by the ignorant multitude, yet would I not expose myself to the confused judgment of the giddy vulgar, who principally are those who read such books. But the greatest motive I had to lay aside, and think no more of finishing it, was the argument I formed to myself deduced from the plays now usually acted; for, thought I, if plays now in use, as well

[1] The canon's dissertation concerning the state of the Spanish theatre, represents, without doubt, the opinions of Cervantes himself, and is therefore well entitled to serious consideration. More especially, however, in consequence of the fulness with which the criticism of the Spanish drama has been treated by several distinguished writers in our own time, it would be absurd to occupy much room in commenting on it in this place. As to the particular plays specified in the text—the *Phyllis*, the *Isabella*, and the *Alexandria*, were written by

those which are altogether of the poet's invention as those that are grounded upon history, be all of them, or, how-

---

Lupercio Leonardo of Argensola, a person, without doubt, of very considerable genius, whose name, nevertheless, does not form any remarkable epoch in the history of Spanish literature; the *Numancia* is a tragedy of Cervantes' own composition, never published in his lifetime; the *Mercader Amante* (the story of which bears a strong resemblance to that of the novel of the Curious Impertinent) was written by Gaspar de Avila; the *Enemiga Favorable*, by Francisco Tarrega, a canon of Valencia; the *Ingratitud Vengada* alone, among all the pieces enumerated, was composed by the great Spanish dramatist of Cervantes' time, Lope de Vega. It appears somewhat extraordinary that Cervantes should have mentioned this great master of the drama in a manner so little corresponding to his deserts,—when compared with those of the other dramatists classed and criticised in the same paragraph. But this is a trifle, in comparison with the strange doctrines laid down by our author, concerning the general subject on which he is descanting; and more particularly with the egregious mistake into which he had fallen, when he inculcates on his contemporaries the necessity of strict adherence to the Aristotelic rules (I mean to those rules as they were in his time interpreted), and represents the romantic liberty of the Spanish stage as the principal, if not the sole, source of its defectiveness. The best of Cervantes' own plays are precisely those in which that liberty is most distinctly exemplified; and the same freedom was preserved entire by Calderon, who, in the age immediately succeeding, carried the Spanish drama to its utmost limit of perfection. It was reserved for him to show, that even that *Sacred Comedy* which Cervantes utterly condemns, could, in the hands of true dramatic genius, furnish a form worthy of the noblest conceptions, and of execution very far superior to any thing Cervantes himself ever exhibited in his dramatic compositions, or had any opportunity of observing among the most favoured of his own contemporaries. For, in truth, he was, and is, to the theatre of Spain, what Cervantes himself was, is, and always must be, to her romance. Some of the licences on which the canon declaims, are, indeed, sufficiently extravagant; but, in reply to all he advances, it is quite enough to say, that the most extravagant of them all have been paralleled in the works of the two greatest dramatists the modern world has produced—Calderon and Shakespeare. Dryden was used to say, that he owed more to the Spanish critics, than to any others with which he was conversant; but it must be remembered, that the writers whose notions he adopted, did not appear until after the great productive era of Spanish genius was over—whereas Cervantes died almost before the first burst and tumult of its energies had subsided. In regard to the official control of stage-writers, which Cervantes recommends, it is scarcely necessary to observe, that the Spanish theatre was very soon subjected to this species of direction, and that to an extent the miserable consequences of which Cervantes may very well be pardoned for not having foreseen.

ever, the greatest part, made up of most absurd extravagancies and incoherencies; things that have neither head nor foot, side nor bottom; and yet the multitude sees them with satisfaction, esteems and approves them, though they are so far from being good; and if the poets who write, and the players who act them, say they must be so contrived and no otherwise, because they please the generality of the audience; and if those which are regular and according to art, serve only to please half a dozen judicious persons who understand them, whilst the rest of the company must fast so far as they know anything of the matter; and therefore the poets and actors say, they had rather get their bread by the greater number, than the applause of the less: then may I conclude the same will be the success of this book; so that when I have racked my brains to observe the rules, I shall reap no other advantage than to be laughed at for my pains. I have sometimes endeavoured to convince the actors that they are deceived in their opinion, and that they will draw more company and get more credit by regular plays, than by those preposterous representations now in use; but they are so positive in their humour, that no strength of reason, nor even demonstration, can beat this opinion into their heads. I remember I once was talking to one of those obstinate fellows; 'Do you not remember,' said I, 'that within these few years, three tragedies were acted in Spain, written by a famous poet of ours, which were so excellent, that they surprised, delighted, and raised the admiration of all that saw them, as well the ignorant and ordinary people, as the judicious and men of quality; and the actors got more by those three, than by thirty of the best that have been writ since?'—'Doubtless, sir,' said the actor, 'you mean the tragedies of *Isabella*, *Phillis*, and *Alexandra*.' 'The very same,' I replied, 'and do you judge whether they observed the rules of the drama; and whether by doing so, they lost anything of their esteem, or failed of pleasing all sorts of people. So that the fault lies not in the audience's desiring absurdities, but in those who know not how to give them anything else. Nor was there anything preposterous in several other plays; as for example, *Ingratitude Revenged*, *Nu-*

mancia,[1] *The Merchant in Love*, and *The Kind Enemy;* nor in some others, composed by judicious poets to their honour and credit, and to the advantage of those that acted them.' More I added, which seemed somewhat to confound him, but no way satisfied or convinced him, so as to make him change his erroneous opinion."—"You have hit upon a subject, sir," said the curate, "which has stirred up in me an old aversion I have for the plays now in use, which is not inferior to that I bear to books of knight-errantry. For whereas plays, according to the opinion of Tully, ought to be mirrors of human life, patterns of good manners, and the very representatives of truth; those now acted are mirrors of absurdities, patterns of follies, and images of ribaldry. For instance, what can be more absurd, than for the same person to appear on the stage, a child in swaddling-bands in the first scene of the first act, and in the second a grown man with a beard? What can be more ridiculous than to represent to us a fighting old fellow, a cowardly youth, a rhetorical footman, a politic page, a churlish king, and an unpolished princess? what shall I say of their regard to the time in which those actions they represent either might or ought to have happened; for I have seen a play, in which the first act began in Europe, the second was in Asia, and the third ended in Africa? probably, if there had been another act, they would have carried it into America; and thus it would have been acted in the four parts of the world. But if imitation is to be a principal part of the drama, how can any tolerable judgment be pleased, when representing an action that happened in the time of King Pepin or Charlemagne, they shall attribute it to the Emperor Heraclius, and bring him in carrying the cross into Jerusalem, or recovering the Holy Sepulchre, like Godfrey de Bouillon, there being a vast distance of time betwixt these actions? Thus they will clap together pieces of true history in a play of their own framing, and grounded upon fiction, mixing in it relations of things that have happened to different people, and in several

[1] [The *Numancia* was written by Cervantes himself, *La Ingratitud Vengada* by Lope de Vega.]

ages. This they do without any contrivance that might make it appear probable, and with such visible mistakes as are altogether inexcusable; but the worst of it is, that there are idiots who look upon this as perfection, and think everything else to be mere pedantry. But if we look into the religious plays, what a multitude of false miracles shall we find in them? how many errors and contradictions, how often the miracles wrought by one saint attributed to another? nay, even in the profane plays, they presume to work miracles upon the bare imagination and conceit that such a supernatural work, or pageant, as they call it, will be ornamental, and draw the common sort to see the play. These things are a reflexion upon truth itself, a lessening and depreciating of history, and a reproach to all Spanish wits; because strangers, who are very exact in observing the rules of the drama, look upon us as an ignorant and barbarous people, when they see the absurdities and extravagancies of our plays. Nor would it be any excuse to allege, that the principal design of all good governments, in permitting plays to be publicly acted, is to amuse the commonalty with some lawful recreation, and so to divert those ill humours which idleness is apt to breed: and that since this end is attained by any sort of plays, whether good or bad, it is needless to prescribe laws to them, or oblige the poets or actors to strict rules, since any, as I have said, will serve their end. To this I would answer, that this end would be infinitely better attained by good plays, than by bad ones. He who sees a play that is regular and answerable to the rules of poetry, is pleased with the comic part, informed by the serious, surprised at the variety of accidents, improved by the language, warned by the frauds, instructed by examples, incensed against vice, and enamoured with virtue; for a good play must cause all these emotions in the soul of him that sees it, though he were never so insensible and unpolished. And it is absolutely impossible, that a play which has these qualifications, should not infinitely divert, satisfy and please, beyond another that wants them, as most of them do which are now usually acted. Neither are the poets who write them in fault, for some of them are very

sensible of their errors, and extremely capable of performing their duty; but plays being now altogether vendible and a sort of merchandise, they say, and with reason, that the actors would not purchase them, unless they were of that stamp; and therefore the poet endeavours to suit the humour of the actors, who is to pay him for his labour. For proof of this let any man observe that infinite number of plays composed by an exuberant Spanish wit,[1] so full of gaiety and humour, in such elegant verse and choice language, so sententious, and to conclude, in such a majestic style, that his fame is spread through the universe: yet because he suited himself to the fancy of the actors, many of his pieces have fallen short of their due perfection, though some have reached it. Others write plays so inconsiderately, that after they have appeared on the stage, the actors have been forced to fly and abscond, for fear of being punished, as it has often happened, for having affronted kings, and dishonoured certain families. These, and many other ill consequences, which I omit, would cease, by appointing an intelligent and judicious person at court to examine all plays before they were acted, that is, not only those which are represented at court, but throughout all Spain; so that, without his licence, no magistrate should suffer any play to appear in public. Thus players would be careful in sending their plays to court, and might then act them with safety, and those who writ would be more circumspect, as standing in awe of an examiner that could judge of their works. By these means we should be furnished with good plays, and the end they are designed for would be attained, the people diverted, the Spanish wits esteemed, the actors safe, and the government spared the trouble of punishing them. And if the same person, or another, were entrusted to examine all the new books of knight-errantry, there is no doubt but some might be published with all that perfection, you, sir, have mentioned, to the increase of eloquence in our language, to the utter extirpation of the old books, which would be borne down by the new; and for the innocent pastime, not only of idle persons, but even of those who have most employment; for the bow cannot

[1] [Lope de Vega.]

always stand bent, nor can human frailty subsist without some lawful recreation."

The canon and curate were come to this period, when the barber overtaking them, told the latter, that this was the place he had pitched on for baiting, during the heat of the day. The canon, induced by the pleasantness of the valley, and the satisfaction he found in the curate's conversation, desiring also to be further informed of Don Quixote, bore them company, giving order to some of his men to ride to the next inn, and send down provisions enough for all to that valley, where he determined to spend the afternoon.

Being told that the mule, which carried enough for all, must have arrived at the inn, he ordered them to take all the other beasts there, and to bring back the mule.

In the meantime Sancho having disengaged himself from the curate and barber, and finding an opportunity to speak to his master alone, came up to the cage where the knight sate. "That I may clear my conscience, sir," said he, "it is fitting that I tell you the plain truth of your enchantment here. Who, would you think now, are these two fellows that ride with their faces covered? Even the parson of our parish and the barber; none else, I will assure you, sir. And they are in a plot against you, out of mere spite because your deeds will be more famous than theirs. This being supposed, it follows, that you are not enchanted, but only cozened and abused; and if you will but answer me one question fairly and squarely, you shall find this out to be a palpable cheat, and that there is no enchantment in the case, but merely your senses turned topsy-turvy."

"Ask me what questions you please, dear Sancho," said the knight, "and I will as willingly resolve them. But for thy assertion, that those who guard us are my old companions the curate and barber, it is illusion all. The power of magic, indeed, as it has an art to clothe anything in any shape, may have dressed these enchanters in their appearances to infatuate thy sense, and draw thee into such a labyrinth of confusion, that even Theseus's clue could not extricate thee out of it; and this with a design, perhaps, to plunge me deeper into doubts, and make me

endanger my understanding, in searching into the strange contrivance of my enchantment, which in every circumstance is so different from all I ever read. Therefore rest satisfied that these are no more what thou imaginest than I am a Turk. But now to thy questions: propose them, and I will answer, though thou questioned me till to-morrow."

"Bless me," said Sancho, "this is madness upon madness; but since it is so, answer me one question. Tell me, as you hope to be delivered out of this cage here, and as you hope to find yourself in my lady Dulcinea's arms, when you least think on it; as you ——" "Conjure me no more," answered Don Quixote, "but ask freely, for I have promised to answer punctually."—"That is what I want," said Sancho, "and you must tell me the truth, and the whole truth, neither more nor less, upon the honour of your knighthood."—"Prythee, no more of your preliminaries or preambles," cried Don Quixote, "I tell thee I will lie in nothing."—"Then," said Sancho, "I ask, with reverence be it spoken, whether your worship, since your being caged up, or enchanted, if you will have it so, has not had a desire for watering, greater or less, as a man may say?"—"I understand not that phrase of watering," answered the knight.—"Heighday!" quoth Sancho, "don't you know what I mean? Why, there is never a child at school that is not weaned on it. I mean, have you had a mind to do what cannot be avoided?"—"O now I understand thee, Sancho," said the knight; "and to answer directly to thy question, positively yes, very often, as indeed now: and therefore prythee help me out of this strait, which is not altogether a cleanly one.

CHAPTER XLIX.

Which treats of the wise Conference between Sancho Panza and his Master, Don Quixote.

"Ah! sir," said Sancho, "have I caught you at last? This is what I wanted to know from my heart and soul. Come, sir, you cannot deny, that when anybody is out of

sorts, so as not to eat, or drink, or sleep, or answer any question to the purpose, then we say commonly they are bewitched or so; from whence may be gathered, that those who can eat their meat, drink their drink, speak when they are spoken to, and go to the rear when they have occasion for it, are not bewitched or enchanted."—"Your conclusion is good," answered Don Quixote, "as to one sort of enchantment; but, as I said to thee, there is variety of enchantments, and the changes in them through the alterations of times and customs branch them into so many parts, that there is no arguing from what has been to what may be now. For my part I am verily persuaded of my enchantment, and this suppresses any uneasiness in my conscience, which might arise upon any suggestions to the contrary. To see myself thus idly and dishonourably borne about in a cage, and withheld like a lazy idle coward from succouring the weak and oppressed, who at this hour, perhaps, may want my assistance, would be unsupportable, if I were not enchanted."—"Yet, for all that, your worship should try to get out of this prison," said Sancho. "Come, sir, let me alone, I will set you free, I warrant you; and then do you try to get you on your trusty Rozinante's back. The poor thing here jogs on as drooping and heartless as if he were enchanted too. Take my advice for once now, and if things do not go as your heart could wish, you have time enough to creep into your cage again; and on the word of a loyal squire I will go in with you, and be content to be enchanted as long as you please."

"I am content to do as thou sayest, brother Sancho," answered Don Quixote; "lay hold on the opportunity, and thou shalt find me ready to be governed in all particulars, though I am still afraid thou wilt find thy cunning strangely over-reached in thy pretended discovery." The knight and squire had laid their plot, when they reached the place that the canon, curate, and barber had pitched upon to alight in. The cage was taken down, and the oxen unyoked to graze; when Sancho, addressing the curate, "Pray," said he, "will you do so much as let my lord and master come out a little to slack

a point, or else the prison will not be so clean as the presence of so worthy a knight as my master requires." The curate understanding him, answered that he would comply, but that he feared Don Quixote, finding himself once at liberty, would give them the slip. "I will be bail for him," said Sancho.—"And I and all of us," said the canon, "upon his bare parole of honour."—"That you shall have, said the knight; "besides, you need no security beyond the power of art, for enchanted bodies have no power to dispose of themselves, nor to move from one place to another, without permission of the necromancer, in whose charge they are; the magical charms might rivet them for three whole centuries to one place, and fetch them back through the air, should the enchanted have fled to some other region." Lastly, as a most convincing argument for his release, he urged, that unless they would free him, or get farther off, he should be necessitated to offend their sense of smelling. They received his word of honour, and gave him his liberty; and the first use he made of it, was to stretch his benumbed limbs three or four times; then marching up to Rozinante, slapped him twice or thrice on the haunches: "I trust in heaven, thou flower and glory of horse-flesh," said he, "that we shall soon be restored to our former circumstances; I mounted on thy back, and thou between my legs, while I exercise the function for which heaven has bestowed me on the world." Then walking a little aside with Sancho, he returned, after a convenient stay, much relieved, and very full of his squire's project.

The canon gazed on him, admiring his unparalleled sort of madness, the rather because in all his words and answers he displayed an excellent judgment; and, as we have already observed, he only raved when the discourse fell upon knight-errantry: which moving the canon to compassion, when they had all seated themselves on the grass, expecting the coming up of his sumpter-mule; "Is it possible, sir," said he, addressing himself to Don Quixote, "that the unhappy reading of books of knight-errantry should have such an influence over you as to destroy your reason, making you believe you are now enchanted, and

many other such extravagancies, as remote from truth, as truth itself is from falsehood? How is it possible that human sense should conceive there ever were in the world such multitudes of famous knights-errant, so many emperors of Trebizond, so many Amadises, Felixmartes of Hircania, palfreys, rambling damsels, serpents, monsters, giants, unheard-of adventures, so many sorts of enchantments, so many battles, terrible encounters, pompous habits and tournaments, amorous princesses, earls, squires, and jesting dwarfs, so many love-letters and gallantries, so many Amazonian ladies, and, in short, such an incredible number of extravagant passages, as are contained in books of knight-errantry? As for my own particular, I confess, that while I read them, and do not reflect that they are nothing but falsehood and folly, they give me some satisfaction; but I no sooner remember what they are, but I cast the best of them from me, and would deliver them up to the flames, if I had a fire near me, as well deserving that fate, because, like impostors, they act contrary to the common course of nature. They are like broachers of new sects, and a new manner of living, that seduce the ignorant vulgar to give credit to all their absurdities; nay, they presume to disturb the brains of ingenious and well-bred gentlemen, as appears by the effect they have wrought on your judgment, having reduced you to such a condition, that it is necessary to shut you up in a cage, and carry you in a cart drawn by oxen, like some lion or tiger that is carried about from town to town to be shown. Have pity on yourself, good Don Quixote, retrieve your lost judgment and make use of those abilities heaven has blest you with, applying your excellent talent to some other study, which may be safer for your conscience, and more for your honour: but if, led away by your natural inclination, you will read books of heroism and great exploits, read in the Holy Scripture the book of Judges, where you will find wonderful truths and glorious actions not to be questioned. Lusitania had a Viriatus,[1] Rome a Cæsar, Carthage an Hannibal, Greece an Alexander,

[1] See Livy and Florus for the history of this heroic antagonist of the Roman arms in Spain.

Castile a Count Fernan Gonzalez,[1] Valencia a Cid, Andalusia a Gonzalo Fernandez, Estremadura a Diego

[1] The story of Fernan Gonzalez is detailed in the *Chronica Antiqua de España*, with so many romantic circumstances, that certain modern critics have been inclined to consider it as entirely fabulous. Of the main facts recorded, there seems, however, to be no good reason to doubt; and it is quite certain, that, from the earliest times, the name of Fernan Gonzalez has been held in the highest honour by the Spaniards themselves, of every degree. He lived at the beginning of the 10th century. It was under his rule, according to the chronicles, that Castile first became a powerful and independent state, and it was by his exertions that the first foundations were laid of that system of warfare, by which the Moorish power in Spain was at last overthrown. He was so fortunate as to have a wife as heroic as himself, and both in the chronicles, and in the ballads, abundant justice is done to her merits. She twice rescued Fernan Gonzalez from confinement, at the risk of her own life. He had asked her hand in marriage of her father, Garcias, King of Navarre, and had proceeded so far on his way to that prince's court, when he was seized and cast into a dungeon, in consequence of the machinations of his enemy, the Amazonian Queen of Leon, sister to the King of Navarre.—Sancha, the young princess, whose alliance he had solicited, being informed of the cause of his journey, and of the sufferings to which it had exposed him, determined, at all hazards, to effect his liberation; and having done so by bribing his jailer, she accompanied his flight to Castile. Many years after he fell into an ambush prepared for him by the same implacable enemy, and was again a fast prisoner in Leon. His countess feigning a pilgrimage to St. James of Compostello, obtained leave, in the first place, to pass through the hostile territory, and afterwards, in the course of her progress, permission to pass one night in the castle where her husband was confined. She exchanged clothes with him; and he was so fortunate as to pass in his disguise through the guards who attended on him—his courageous wife remaining in his place—exactly in the same manner in which the Countess of Nithsdale effected the escape of her lord from the Tower of London, on the 23rd of February, 1715. There is, as might be supposed, a whole body of old ballads, concerning the adventures of Fernan Gonzalez. I shall, as a specimen, translate one of the shortest of these,—that in which the first of his romantic escapes is described.—See Additional Note XXVIII.

Of the Great Captain Gonzalo Fernandez, and most of the other chieftains here mentioned, something has already been said in the course of these annotations. The *Garcilasso* of Toledo, of whom Don Quixote speaks, is not (as Bowles says) the Great Poet (although he also was of Toledo, and distinguished for his military services), but that famous soldier of Ferdinand and Isabella, whose achievements are recorded at great length both in the *Historia de las Guerras Civiles de Grenada*, and in the *Historia de la Rebellion y Castigo de los Moriscos*. Pellicer says he is the hero of many ballads, but I have not been so fortunate as to see any of these; among others, he mentions

Garcia de Peredes, Xerez a Garcia Perez de Vargas, Toledo a Garcilasso, and Seville a Don Manuel de Leon, the reading of whose brave actions diverts, instructs, pleases, and surprises the most judicious readers. This will be a study worthy your talent, and by which you will become well read in history, in love with virtue, knowing in goodness, improved in manners, brave without rashness, and cautious without cowardice; all which will redound to the glory of God, your own advancement, and the honour of the province of La Mancha, whence I understand you derive your birth and origin."

Don Quixote listened with great attention to the canon's discourse, and perceiving he had done, after he had fixed his eyes on him for a considerable space, "Sir," said he, "all your discourse, I find, tends to signify to me, there never were any knights-errant; that all the books of knight-errantry are false, fabulous, useless, and prejudicial to the public; that I have done ill in reading, worse in believing, and been much to blame in imitating them, by taking upon me the most painful profession of

---

one giving the history of Garcilasso's armorial bearing. Some Moor, it seems, while the city of Sante Fé was beleaguered, had obtained possession of an ecclesiastical ornament, whereon the *Ave Maria* was embroidered, and was in the habit of carrying this at his bridle. Garcilasso, at that time a mere stripling, challenged the Moor, slew him, and brought the sacred trophy to the Christian camp; in reward of which gallant exploit the King of Arragon gave him leave to place the words *Ave Maria*, on a canton, in his paternal shield. Don Manuel de Leon was another distinguished soldier in the same army; the most picturesque incident recorded of him, forms the ground-work of an elegant and well-known poem of Schiller. His Dulcinea dropped her glove one day into the arena, where a huge lion was exhibited in presence of the King of Arragon and Queen Isabella. Manuel immediately descended, and drawing his sword, deliberately entered the enclosure, picked up the glove, and retired again unmolested.

"Mira aquel obediente enamorado,
Don Manuel de Leon tan esgogido,
Qu' entre Leones fieros rodeado,
Cobra un guante a su dama alli caydo."

So says Urrea; but Schiller gives the story a turn very unfavourable for the lady, who possessed the affections of this "obedient and chosen lover." I give a translation of another of the many ballads concerning Garcia Perez de Vargas, surnamed Machuca.—See Additional Note XXIX.

chivalry. And you deny that ever there were any Amadises of Gaul or Greece, or any of those knights mentioned in those books?"—"Even as you have said, sir," quoth the canon. "You also were pleased to add," continued Don Quixote, "that those books had been very hurtful to me, having deprived me of my reason and reduced me to be carried in a cage; that therefore, it would be for my advantage to take up in time, and apply myself to the reading of other books, where I might find more truth, more pleasure, and better instruction."—"You are in the right," said the canon.—"Then I am satisfied," replied Don Quixote, "you yourself are the man that raves and is enchanted, since you have thus boldly blasphemed against a truth so universally received, that whosoever presumes to contradict it, as you have done, deserves the punishment you would inflict on those books, which in reading offend and tire you. For it were as easy to persuade the world that the sun does not enlighten, the frost cool, and the earth bear us, as that there never was an Amadis, or any of the other adventurous knights, whose actions are the subjects of so many histories. What genius can persuade another, that there is no truth in what is recorded of the Infanta Floripes, and Guy of Burgundy; as also Fierabras at the bridge of Mantible in the reign of Charlemagne? which passages, I dare swear, are as true as that now it is day.[1] But if this be false, you may as well say there was no Hector, nor Achilles; nor a Trojan war, nor twelve peers of France, nor a King Arthur of Britain, who is now converted into a crow, and hourly expected in his kingdom.

[1] Floripes was the sister of Sir Fierabras. She came into Europe with the army of her unfortunate father Laban, but not having the same objection to being baptised, was happily settled at the court of Charlemagne, whose nephew Guy, according to the authorities, married her, although he was at first a little "confounded by the extravagant tokens of love she manifested on beholding him." The bridge of Mantible consisted, we are told, of thirty arches of black marble; it was the only bridge by which the river could be passed, and even Ogier the Dane was terrified by the appearance of the "fearful and huge giant" who guarded the *tête de pont*. Sir Fierabras slew this giant, and "an innumerable multitude of Pagans," who acted under his command.

Some also may presume to say that the History of Guarino Mezquino, [1] and that the Quest of the St. Graal [2] are both false; that the amours of Sir Tristan and Queen Iseult are apocryphal, as well as those of Guinever and Sir Lancelot of the Lake; [3] whereas there are people living who can almost remember they have seen the old lady Quintañona, who had the best hand at filling a glass of wine of any woman in all Britain. This I am so well assured of, that I can remember my grandmother, by my father's side, whenever she saw an old waiting-woman with her reverend veil, used to say to me, look yonder, grandson, there is a woman like the old Lady Quintañona; whence, I infer, she knew her, or at least had seen her picture. Now, who can deny the veracity of the History of Pierres, and the lovely Malagona, when to this day the pin, with which the brave Pierres turned his wooden horse that carried him through the air, [4] is to be seen in the king's

[1] This romance, which is half of the chivalric, and half of the spiritual class, was originally written in Italian, although the Spaniards also have laid claim to it. It was first printed at Padua, in 1473, and soon acquired very great popularity. A few passages from Mr. Dunlop's abridgment will give some idea of the most characteristic incidents of the romance.—See Additional Note XXX.

[2] When Merlin prepared the round table at Carduel, he left a place vacant for the St. Graal, the vessel from which our Saviour was supposed to have drunk at the last supper, and which was afterwards filled with the blood which flowed from the wounds with which he was pierced at the crucifixion. The early history of this relic, the quest of which is the most fertile source of adventures to the knights of the Round Table, is related in the romance entitled St. Graal, or Sangreal, so called from Grasal, which signifies a cup in old French, or from the Sanguis Realis, with which it was supposed to have been filled. This work is one of the dullest of the class to which it belongs; it seems written with a different intention, and on a different plan, from the other romances of the Round Table, and has much the appearance of having come from the pen of an ecclesiastic. The name of the author, however, and the sources whence his composition was derived, are involved in the same darkness and inconsistent information, which obscure the origin of so many similar productions.—See Additional Note XXXI.

[3] Boiardo well says,

"Sarán sempre in terra nominate
Tristano e *Isotta* fior d' ogni bellezza,
Ginevra e *Lancilloto*."

[4] The reader must remember the admirable tale of such a horse and

armou y ? which pin is somewhat bigger than the pole of a coach, and close by the pole is Bavieca's saddle. At Roncesvalles they keep Orlando's horn, which is as big as a great beam:[1] Whence it follows, that there were twelve peers, that there were such men as Pierres, and the famous Cid, besides many other adventurous knights, whose names are in the mouths of all people. You may as well tell me that the brave Lusitanian, Juan de Merlo[2] was no knight-errant; that he did not go

---

such a pin, in the Thousand and One Nights. The same machinery, without doubt Oriental in its origin, appears in that fine poem of Chaucer to which Milton alludes, when he talks of "calling up

——"him that left half told
The story of Cambuscan bold."

[1] "O for one blast of that dread horn,
On Fontarabian echoes born,
Which to King Charles did come;
When Roland brave, and Olivier,
And every Paladin and Peer,
On Roncesvalles died!"

"Peracto bello Rolandus ascendit in montem et rediit retro ad viam Runciavallis. Tunc insonuit *Tuba sua Eburnea;* et tanta virtute insonuit quod flatu omnis ejus Tuba per medium scissa, et venæ colli ejus et nervi rupti fuisse feruntur." The horn of Roland figures in a thousand passages of Boiardo and Ariosto: but I believe I have quoted the two finest passages in which it has ever been mentioned—from Marmion and old Turpin. According to the *Carlo Magno*, Roland was first interred at Blayes, in the church of St. Raymond, "Y a sus pies su cuerno de Marfil." His body was afterwards removed to Roncesvalles, where the monks of St. Austin used to boast, long centuries afterwards, of being able to show the gigantic bones of the Paladins.

[2] Juan de Merlo, or Melo, was of a Portuguese family, but born in Castile, at the beginning of the 15th century. He greatly distinguished himself by bravery and expertness in every then fashionable species of martial exercise. In particular, he gained great applause by his behaviour at a tournament held in the city of Ras, under the auspices of Philip, Duke of Burgundy, on which occasion he overthrew Pierre de Brecemont Sieur de Charni; as on another similar occasion at Basle (or, according to Mena, at Halle, in Saxony) he did a celebrated German jouster, by name Heinrich von Rabenstein. Some of these names are considerably corrupted in the text of Cervantes, and still more abominably so in that of the former translator, who does not seem to have been aware that the *Mosen*, which he renders *Moses*, is a mere abbreviation of Mio Señor, and a common Arragonian prefix exactly corresponding to the Castilian *Don*.—See Additional Note XXXII.

into Burgundy, where, in the city of Ras, he fought the famous Monseigneur Pierres, Lord of Charni; and in the city of Basle, Monseigneur Enrique de Remestan, coming off in both victorious, and loaded with honour. You may deny the adventures and combats of the two heroic Spaniards, Pedro Barba and Gutierre Quixada, from whose male line I am lineally descended,[1] who in Burgundy overcame the sons of the Count of San Polo. You may tell me that Don Fernando de Guevara never went into Germany to seek adventures, where he fought Messire George, a knight of the Duke of Austria's court. You may say the tilting of Suero de Quiñones del Paso,[2] and the exploits of Monseigneur Luis de Falces, against Don Gonzalo de Guzman, a Castilian knight, are mere fables; and so of many other brave actions performed by Christian knights, as well as foreign kings; which are so authentic and true, that I say it over again, he who denies them has neither sense nor reason."

The canon was much astonished at the medley Don Quixote made of truths and fables, and no less to see how well read he was in all things relating to the achievements of knights-errant; "And therefore I cannot deny, sir," answered he, "but that there is some truth in what you have said, especially in what relates to the Spanish knights-errant; and I will grant there were twelve peers

[1] Gutierre Quixada, Lord of Villagarcia, jousted, in 1435, at a tournament held at St. Omers, in Burgundy, with Pierre, Sire de Haburdin, a natural son of the Comte de St. Paul. Quixada discharged his javelin (for it was so they tilted) at a distance of fifteen paces, yet such was his strength, that the Sire de Haburdin was pierced quite through the left shoulder, and not only thrown from his horse, but pinned to the ground in such a way, that it was no easy matter to lift him up again. He had courage, notwithstanding all this, to demand the foot-combat, and maintained his ground for some minutes with great bravery; but was at length saved from death only by the Duke of Burgundy dropping his baton. Another bastard of the Count de St. Paul was engaged to tilt on the same day with Pedro Barba, the friend of Quixada; but illness preventing his attendance at St. Omers, the valiant ancestor of Don Quixote had the agreeable duty of overthrowing, in his friend's behalf, the brother of his own antagonist, De Haburdin.

[2] This was a gentleman of Leon, attached, like Juan de Melo, to the household of the celebrated and unfortunate statesman, Alvaro de Luna.—See Additional Note XXXIII.

of France, yet I will not believe they performed all those actions Archbishop Turpin ascribes to them: for the truth is they were brave gentlemen made choice of by the kings of France, and called peers, as being all equal in valour and quality; or if they were not, at least they ought to have been so; and these composed a sort of military order, like those of Santiago, or Calatrava among us, into which all that are admitted, are supposed, or ought to be, gentlemen of birth and known valour. And as now we say a knight of St. John, or of Alcantara, so in those times they said, a knight of the twelve peers, because there were but twelve of this military order. Nor is it to be doubted but that there were such men as Barnardo del Carpio and the Cid, yet we have reason to question whether ever they performed those great exploits that are ascribed to them. As to the pin, Count Pierres's pin which you spoke of, and which you say stands by Bavieca's saddle, I own my ignorance, and confess I was so short-sighted, that though I saw the saddle, yet I did not perceive the pin, which is somewhat strange, if it be so large as you describe it."—"It is there without doubt," replied Don Quixote; "by the same token, they say it is kept in a leathern case to keep it from rusting."—"That may very well be," said the canon; "but upon the word of a priest, I do not remember I ever saw it: yet grant it were there, that does not enforce the belief of so many Amadises, nor of such a multitude of knights-errant as the world talks of; nor is there any reason, so worthy a person, so judicious, and so well qualified as you are, should imagine there is any truth in the wild extravagancies contained in all the fabulous nonsensical books of knight-errantry."

CHAPTER L.

The notable Dispute between the Canon and Don Quixote; with other matters.

"Very well," cried Don Quixote, "then all those books must be fabulous, though licensed by kings, approved by the examiners, read with general satisfaction, and ap-

plauded by the better sort and the meaner, rich and poor, learned and unlearned, gentry and commonalty, and, in short, by all sorts of persons of what state and condition soever; and though they carry such an appearance of truth, setting down the father, mother, country, kindred, age, place and actions to a tittle, and day by day, of the knight or knights of whom they treat? For shame, sir," continued he, "forbear uttering such blasphemies; and believe me, in this I advise you to behave yourself as becomes a man of sense, or else read them and see what satisfaction you will receive.

"As for instance, pray tell me, can there be anything more delightful, than to read a lively description, which, as it were, brings before your eyes a vast lake of boiling and bubbling pitch, in which an infinite multitude of serpents, snakes, lizards, and other sorts of fierce and terrible creatures, are swimming and traversing backwards and forwards. Then from the midst of the lake a most doleful voice is heard to say these words: 'O knight, whoever thou art, who gazest on this dreadful lake, if thou wilt purchase the bliss concealed under these dismal waters, make known thy valour, by casting thyself into the midst of these black burning surges; for unless thou dost so, thou art not worthy to behold the mighty wonders enclosed in the seven castles of the seven fairies, that are seated under these gloomy waves.'—And no sooner have the last accents of the voice reached the knight's ear, but he, without making any further reflexion, or considering the danger to which he exposes himself, and even without laying aside his ponderous armour, only recommending himself to heaven and to his lady, plunges headlong into the middle of the burning lake; and when least he imagines it, or can guess where he shall stop, he finds himself on a sudden in the midst of verdant fields, to which the Elysian bear no comparison. There the sky appears to him more transparent, and the sun seems to shine with a newer brightness. Next he discovers a most delightful grove made up of beautiful shady trees, whose verdure and variety regale his sight, while his ears are ravished with the wild, and yet melodious notes

of an infinite number of little painted birds, that flit about and sport themselves on the twining boughs. Here he spies a little rivulet, whose sparkling waters glide along over the finest sand, and over the whitest pebbles, while through its liquid crystal, it feasts the eye with a semblance of sifted gold and orient pearl. There he perceives an artificial fountain, formed of party-coloured jasper and polished marble; and hard by another, contrived in grotesque, where the small cockle-shells, placed in orderly confusion among the white and yellow twisted dwellings of the snail, and mixed with pieces of bright crystal and counterfeit emeralds, yield a delectable sight; so that art imitating nature, seems here to out-do her. At a distance, on a sudden, he casts his eyes upon a strong castle, or stately palace, whose walls are of massy gold, the battlements of diamonds, and the gates of jacinth; in short, its structure is so wonderful, that though all the materials are no other than diamonds, carbuncles, rubies, pearls, gold, and emeralds, yet the workmanship exceeds them in value. But having seen all this, can anything be so charming as to behold a numerous train of beautiful damsels come out of the castle in such glorious and costly apparel, as would be endless for me to describe, were I to relate these things as they are to be found in history? Then to see the beauty that seems the chief of all the damsels, take the bold knight who cast himself into the burning lake by the hand, and without speaking one word, lead him into a sumptuous palace, where he is caused to strip as naked as he was born, then put into a delicious bath, and perfumed with precious essences and odoriferous oils; after which he puts on a perfumed shirt, of the finest sendal; and this done, another damsel throws over his shoulders a magnificent robe, worth at least a whole city, if not more.[1] What a

[1] The whole of this description of the reception of the ideal knight, by the ideal lady of romance, is as accurate as it is glowing. Most of the particulars are exactly copied from the Launcelot du Lac. The stripping of the knight by the hands of the damsel, is thus given in the *Espejo:* "Luego la fermosa Señora salio de la fuente con el Cavallero por la mano, y ambos se fueron a la fermosa tienda, y alli ella

sight is it, when in the next place they lead him into another room of state, where he finds the tables so orderly covered, that he is surprised and astonished! There they pour over his hands water distilled from amber and odoriferous flowers; he is seated in an ivory chair; and while all the damsels that attend him observe a profound silence, such variety of dainties is served up, and all so incomparably dressed, that his appetite knows not on which to satisfy his desire; at the same time his ears are sweetly entertained with variety of excellent music, none perceiving who makes it, or whence it comes. But above all, what shall we say to see, after the dinner is ended, and tables taken away, the knight left leaning back in his chair, perhaps picking his teeth, as is usual; and then another damsel, much more beautiful than any of the former, comes unexpectedly into the room, and sitting down by the knight, begins to inform him what castle that is, and how she is enchanted in it; with many other particulars, which surprise the knight, and astonish those that read his history. I will enlarge no more upon this matter, since from what has been said, it may sufficiently be inferred, that the reading of any passage in any history of knight-errantry, must be very delightful and surprising to the reader. And do you, good sir, believe me, and as I said to you before, read these books, which you may find will banish all melancholy, if you are troubled with it, and sweeten your disposition, if it be harsh. This I can say for myself, that since my being a knight-errant, I am brave, courteous, bountiful, well-bred, generous, civil, bold, affable, patient, a sufferer of hardships, imprisonment, and enchantment. And

---

por sus manos le desarmo, y le hizo *desnudar en carnes*, donde le hizo vestir de vestiduras quales a el pertenescian."—P. 1. c. 85.

Compare Boiardo, L. 1. c. 25.

"Havea la dama un bagno apparechiato
Troppo gentil, e di suave odore,
E di suo mano il conte hebbe *spogliato*,
Poi l'ongeva d'un oglio delicato—
* * * *
Entro nel fin in quel bagno odoroso,
Essa dal collo in giu tutto 'l lavava," &c.

though I have so lately been shut up in a cage, like a madman, I expect, through the valour of my arm, heaven favouring, and fortune not opposing my designs, to be a king of some kingdom in a very few days, that so I may give proofs of my innate gratitude and liberality. For on my word, sir, a poor man is incapable of exerting his liberality, though he be naturally never so well inclined. Now that gratitude which only consists in wishes, may be said to be dead, as faith without good works is dead. Therefore it is, I wish fortune would soon offer some opportunity for me to become an emperor, that I might give proofs of my generosity, by advancing my friends, but especially this poor Sancho Panza my squire, who is the best fellow in the world; and I would willingly give him a countship, which I have long since promised him, but that I fear he has not sense and judgment enough to manage it."

Sancho, hearing his master's last words, "Well, well, sir," said he, "never do you trouble your head about that matter; all you have to do is to get me this same countship, and let me alone to manage it: I can do as my betters have done before me; I can put in a deputy or a servant, that shall take all trouble off my hands, while I, as a great man should, loll at my ease, receive my rents, mind no business, live merrily, and so let the world rub for Sancho."—"As to the management of your revenue," said the canon, "a deputy may do well, brother Sancho: but the lord himself is obliged to stir in the administration of justice, to which there is not only an honest sincere intention required, but a judicious head also, to distinguish nicely, conclude justly, and choose wisely; for if this be wanting in the principal, all will be wrong in the mean and the end."—"I do not understand your philosophy," quoth Sancho; "all I said, and I will say it again, is, that I wish I had as good a county as I could govern; for I have as great a soul as another man, and as great a body as most men: And the first thing I would do in my government, I would have nobody to control me, I would be absolute; and who but I: now, he that is absolute can do what he likes; he that can do what he likes, can take his pleasure;

he that can take his pleasure, can be content; and he that can be content, has no more to desire; and having no more to desire, there's an end of it, and let the quality come, and then good-bye till we see each other again, as one blind man said to another."

"This is not bad philosophy of yours, as you call it, Sancho," said the canon, "though there is much more to be said on this topic of counties, than you imagine."—"Undoubtedly," said Don Quixote; "but I suit my actions to the example of Amadis de Gaul, who made his squire Gandalin count of the Firm-island; which is a fair precedent for preferring Sancho to the same dignity to which his merit also lays an unquestionable claim." The canon stood amazed at Don Quixote's methodical and orderly madness, in describing the adventure of the Knight of the Lake, and the impression made on him by the fabulous conceits of the books he had read; as likewise at Sancho's simplicity in so eagerly contending for his countship, which afforded the whole company very good sport.

By this time the canon's servants had brought the provisions, and spreading a carpet on the grass under the shady trees, they sat down to dinner; when presently they heard the tinkling of a little bell among the copses close by them, and immediately afterwards they saw bolt out of the thicket a very pretty she-goat, speckled all over with black, white, and brown spots, and a goatherd running after it; who, in his familiar dialect, called to it to stay and return to the fold; but the fugitive ran towards the company, frighted and panting, and stopt close by them, as if it had begged their protection. The goatherd overtaking it, caught it by the horns, and in a chiding way, as if the goat understood his resentments, "You little wanton nanny," said he, "you spotted elf, what has made you trip it so much of late? what wolf has scared you thus, hussy? tell me, little fool, what is the matter? But the cause is plain; thou art a female, and therefore never canst be quiet: curse on thy freakish humours, and all theirs whom thou so much resemblest! Turn back, my love, turn back, and though thou canst not be content with thy fold, yet there thou mayest be safe among the rest of thy kind; for if thou, that

shouldst guide and direct the flock, lovest wandering thus, what will they not do?"

The goatherd's talk to his goat was entertaining enough to the company, especially to the canon, who calling to him, "Prythee, honest fellow," said he, "have a little patience, and let your goat take its liberty a while; for since it is a female, as you say, she will follow her natural inclination the more for you striving to confine it; come then, and take a bit, and a glass of wine with us, you may be better humoured after that." He then reached him the leg of a cold rabbit, and, ordering him a glass of wine, the goatherd drank it off, and returning thanks, was pacified. "Gentlemen," said he, "I would not have you think me a fool, because I talk so seriously to this senseless animal, for my words want not a hidden meaning. I am indeed, as you see, rustical and unpolished, though not so ignorant, but that I converse with men as well as brutes."—"That is no miracle," said the curate, "for I have known the woods breed learned men, and simple sheepcots contain philosophers."—"At least," said the goatherd, "they harbour men that have some knowledge of the world: and to make good this truth, if I thought not the offer impertinent, or my company troublesome, you should hear an accident which confirms what this gentleman and I have said."—"For my part," answered Don Quixote, "I will hear you attentively, because, methinks, your coming has something in it that looks like an adventure of knight-errantry; and I dare answer, the whole company who are friends of curious novelties will not refuse to hear a story so pleasing, surprising and amusing, as I fancy yours will prove. Then prythee, friend, begin, for we will all give you our attention."

"You must excuse me for one," said Sancho, "I am going with this pasty to yon little brook; for I design to fill myself for three days; having often heard my master Don Quixote say, that whenever a knight-errant's squire finds ought to eat, he must fall to and feed till he can eat no more, because they may happen to be bewildered in a thick wood for five or six days together; so that if a man has not his belly full before-

hand, or his wallet well provided, he may make mummy's flesh of himself, as many times it falls out."—"You are in the right, Sancho," said the knight; "but I have, for my part, satisfied my bodily appetite, and now want only refreshment for my mind, which I hope this honest fellow's story will afford me." All the company agreed with Don Quixote: the goatherd then stroking his pretty goat once or twice; "Lie down, thou speckled fool," said he, "lie by me here; for we shall have time enough to return home." The creature seemed to understand him, for as soon as her master sat down, she stretched herself quietly by his side, and looked up in his face as if she would let him know that she minded what he said; and then he began thus.

CHAPTER LI.

What the Goatherd told to Don Quixote's Escort.

ABOUT three leagues from this valley there is a village, which, though small, yet is one of the richest hereabouts. In it there lived a farmer in very great esteem; and, though it is common for the rich to be respected, yet was this person more considered for his virtue, than for the wealth he possessed. But what he accounted himself happiest in, was a daughter of such extraordinary beauty, prudence, wit, and virtue, that all who knew or beheld her, could not but admire to see how heaven and nature had done their utmost to embellish her. When she was but little she was handsome, till at the age of sixteen she was most completely beautiful. The fame of her beauty began to extend to the neighbouring villages;—but why say I neighbouring villages? it extended to the remotest cities, and entered the palaces of kings, and the ears of all manner of persons, who from all parts flocked to see her, as something rare, or as a sort of prodigy. Her father was strictly careful of her, nor was she less careful of herself; for there are no guards, bolts or locks, which preserve a young woman like her own care and caution.

The father's riches, and the daughter's beauty, drew

a great many, as well strangers as inhabitants of that country, to sue for her in marriage; but such was the vast number of the pretenders, as did but the more confound and divide the old man in his choice upon whom to bestow so valuable a treasure. Among the crowd of her admirers was I; having good reason to hope for success, from the knowledge her father had of me, being a native of the same place, of a good family, and in the flower of my years, of a considerable estate, and not to be despised for my understanding. With the very same advantages there was another person of our village who made court to her at the same time. This put the father to a stand and held him in suspense, for it seemed that his daughter would be well off with either: to bring this affair therefore to the speedier issue, he resolved to acquaint Leandra, for so was this fair one called, that since we were equals in all things, he left her entirely free to choose which of us was most agreeable to herself. An example worthy of being imitated by all parents who wish to dispose of their children. I don't mean that they should be allowed to choose in things mean or mischievous, but only that proposing to them ever those things which are good, they should be allowed in them to gratify their inclination.

I don't know how Leandra approved this proposal; this I only know, that her father put us both off, with the excuse of his daughter's being too young to be yet disposed of; and that he treated us both in such general terms, as could neither well please nor displease us. My rival's name is Anselmo, mine Eugenio; for it is necessary you should know the names of the persons concerned in this tragedy, the conclusion of which, though depending yet, may easily be perceived likely to be unfortunate. About that time there came to our village one Vincent de la Rosa, the son of a poor labouring man of the same place. This Vincent came out of Italy, having been a soldier there, and in other foreign parts. When he was but twelve years old, a captain, that happened to pass by here with his company, took him out of this country, and at the end of other twelve years he returned hither, habited like a soldier, all gay and glorious, in a thousand

various colours, bedecked with a thousand toys of glass and chains of steel. To-day he put on one piece of finery, to-morrow another; but all false, counterfeit and worthless. The country people, who by nature are malicious, and who living in idleness are still more inclined to malice, observed this presently, and counting all his fine things, they found that indeed he had but three suits of clothes, of different colours, with the stockings and garters belonging to them; yet did he manage them with so many tricks and inventions, that if one had not counted them, one would have sworn he had above ten suits, and above twenty plumes of feathers.

Let it not seem impertinent or extravagant that I mention this particular of his clothes, since so much of the story depends upon it. Seating himself upon a bench, under a large spreading poplar-tree, which grows in our square, he used to entertain us with his exploits, while we stood gaping and listening at the wonders he recounted: there was not that country, as he said, upon the face of the earth, which he had not seen, nor battle which he had not been engaged in; he had killed more Moors, for his own share, than were in Morocco and Tunis together; and had fought more duels than Gante, Luna, Diego Garcia de Peredes, or a thousand others that he named, yet in all of them had the better, and never got a scratch, or lost a drop of blood. Then again he pretended to show us the scars of wounds he had received, which though they were not to be perceived, yet he gave us to understand they were so many musket-shots, which he had got in several skirmishes and encounters. In short, he treated all his equals with an unparalleled arrogance, and even those who knew the meanness of his birth, and he did not stick to affirm, that his own arm was his father, his actions were his pedigree, and that beyond his being a soldier, he owed nothing to the king himself.[1]

Besides these assumed accomplishments, he was somewhat

[1] "Un Cavallero se tiene por tan noble en ser *hijo dalgo* que con solo este dize *que no deve nada al Rey*."—GUARDIOLA, p. 60. The same Castilian sentiment is expressed, in almost the same words, somewhere in Lazarillo de Tormes, "Un hidalgo no deve a otro que a dios, y al Rey nada."

of a musician, and could thrum a guitar a little: but what his excellency chiefly lay in was poetry; and so fond was he of showing his parts that way, that upon every trifling occasion, he was sure to make a copy of verses a league and a half long. This soldier whom I have described, this Vincent de la Rosa, this hero, this gallant, this musician, this poet, was often seen and viewed by Leandra, from a window of her house which looked into the square; she was struck with the tinsel of his dress; she was charmed with his verses, of every one of which he would give away twenty copies; her ears were pleased with the exploits he related of himself; and in short, as the devil would have it, she fell in love with him, before ever he had the confidence to make his addresses to her; and as in all affairs of love, that is the most easily managed where the lady's affection is pre-engaged, so was it here no hard thing for Leandra and Vincent to have frequent meetings to concert their matters; and before ever any one of her many suitors had the least suspicion of her inclination, she had gratified it; and leaving her father's house, for she had no mother, had run away with this soldier, who came off with greater triumph in this enterprise, than in any of the rest he made his boast of.

The whole village was surprised at this accident, as was every one that heard it. I was amazed, Anselmo distracted, her father in tears, her relations affronted; justice was demanded; a party with officers was sent out, who traversed the roads, searched every wood, and at three days end, found the poor fond Leandra in a cave of one of the mountains, naked to her shift, and robbed of a great deal of money and jewels which she took from home. They brought and presented her to her father; upon inquiry made into the cause of her misfortune, she confessed ingenuously, that Vincent de la Rosa had deceived her, and upon promise of marriage had prevailed with her to leave her father's house, with the assurance of carrying her to the richest and most luxurious city of the world, which was Naples; that she foolishly had given credit to him, and robbing her father, had put herself into his hands the first night she was missed; that he carried her up a rugged mountain, and put her in that cave where she

was found. In fine, she said, that though he had rifled her of all she had, yet he had never attempted her honour; but leaving her in that manner, he fled. It was no easy matter to make any of us entertain a good opinion of the soldier's continence; but she affirmed it with so many asseverations, that in some measure it served to comfort her father, who valued nothing in comparison with the treasure that could not be replaced. The very same day that Leandra appeared again, she also disappeared from us, for her father immediately shut her up in a monastery, in a town not far off, in hopes that time might wear away something of his disgrace. Those who were not interested in Leandra, excused her upon account of her youth. But those who were acquainted with her wit and sense, did not attribute her miscarriage to her ignorance, but to forwardness and to the natural vanity of woman-kind.

Leandra being shut up, Anselmo's eyes could never meet with an object which could give him either ease or pleasure; I too could find nothing but what looked sad and gloomy to me in the absence of Leandra. Our melancholy increased as our patience decreased. We cursed a thousand times the soldier's finery and trinkets, and railed at the father's want of precaution: at last we agreed, Anselmo and I, to leave the village, and to retire to this valley, where, he feeding a large flock of sheep, and I as large a herd of goats, all our own, we pass our time under the trees, giving vent to our passions, singing in concert the praises or reproaches of the beauteous Leandra; or else sighing alone, make our complaints to Heaven on our misfortune.

In imitation of us, a great many more of Leandra's lovers have come hither into these steep and craggy mountains, and are alike employed; and so many there are of them, that the place seems to be turned to the old Arcadia we read of, since it is so crowded with shepherds and their cottages, that there is no part of it in which is not to be heard the name of Leandra. This man curses and calls her wanton and capricious; another calls her light and fickle; one acquits and forgives her, another condemns and reprobates her; one celebrates her beauty, another rails at her ill qualities; in short, all blame, but all adore her. Nay, so far does this extravagance

prevail, that here are those who complain of her disdain who never spoke to her; and others who are jealous of favours which she never granted to any; for, as I intimated before, her inclination was not known before her disgrace. There is not a hollow place of a rock, a bank of a brook, or a shady grove, where there is not some or other of these amorous shepherds telling their doleful stories to the air and winds. Echo, wherever it can, repeats the name of Leandra, Leandra all the hills resound, the brooks murmur Leandra, and it is Leandra that holds us all enchanted, hoping without hope, and fearing without knowing what we fear.

Of all these foolish people, the person who shows the least, and yet has the most sense, is my rival Anselmo, who, forgetting all other causes of complaint, complains only of her absence; and to his lute, which he touches to admiration, he joins his voice in verses of his own composing which declare the greatness of his genius. For my part, I take another course, I think a better, I am sure an easier, which is to say all the ill things I can of women's levity, inconstancy, their broken vows and murdered promises, and lastly their little sense in bestowing their affections. This, gentlemen, was the occasion of those words, which, at my coming hither, I addressed to this goat; which being a she, I value little, though she is the best of my herd. This is the story which I promised to tell you; if you have thought it too long, I shall endeavour to requite your patience in anything I can serve you. Hard by is my cottage, where I have some good fresh milk and excellent cheese, with several sorts of fruits, which I hope you will find agreeable both to the sight and taste.

CHAPTER LII.

Of the Combat between Don Quixote and the Goatherd; with the rare Adventure of the Penitents, which the Knight happily accomplished with the sweat of his brow.

The goatherd's story was mightily liked by the whole company, especially by the canon, who particularly minded the manner of his relating it, that had more of a scholar

and courtier, than of a rude goatherd; which made him conclude the curate had reason to say that the mountains bred scholars and men of sense. They all made large proffers of their friendship and service to Eugenio, but Don Quixote exceeded them all; and, addressing himself to him, "Were I," said he, "at this time in a capacity of undertaking any adventure, I would certainly begin from this very moment to serve you; I would soon release Leandra out of this nunnery, where undoubtedly she is detained against her will; and in spite of all the opposition that could be made by the lady abbess and all her adherents, I would return her to your hands, that you might have the sole disposal of her, so far, I mean, as is consistent with the laws of knighthood, which expressly forbid that any man should offer the least violence to a damsel; yet (I trust in heaven) that the power of a friendly magician will prevail against the force of a malicious enchanter; and whenever this shall happen, you may assure yourself of my favour and assistance, to which I am obliged by my profession that enjoins me to relieve the helpless and oppressed."

The goatherd, who till then had not taken the least notice of Don Quixote in particular, now looking earnestly on his dismal countenance and wretched habit, whispered the barber who sat next him: "Pray, sir," said he, "who is this man that talks in this manner? For I protest I never saw so strange a figure in all my life."

"Whom can you imagine it should be," replied the barber, "but the famous Don Quixote de la Mancha, the establisher of justice, the avenger of injuries, the protector of damsels, the terror of giants, and the invincible gainer of battles."—"The account you give of this person," returned the goatherd, "is much like what we read in romances and books of chivalry of those doughty Dons, who, for their mighty prowess and achievements, were called knights-errant; and therefore I dare say you do but jest, or this gentleman's brains have deserted their quarters."

"Thou art an impudent insolent varlet," cried Don Quixote, "it is thy wretched skull is full of empty rooms: I have more in me than the prostitute thy mother had about her when she carried thee in her womb."—With that,

acting on his words and snatching up a loaf that was near him, he struck the goatherd so furious a blow with it, that he almost levelled his nose with his face. The other, not accustomed to such salutations, no sooner perceived how scurvily he was treated, but without any respect to the table-cloth, napkins, or to those who were eating, he leaped furiously on Don Quixote, and grasping him by the throat with both his hands, had certainly strangled him, had not Sancho Panza come in that very nick of time, and gripping him fast behind, pulled him backwards on the table, bruising dishes, breaking glasses, spilling and overturning all that lay upon it. Don Quixote seeing himself freed, fell violently again upon the goatherd, who, all besmeared with blood, and trampled and kicked under Sancho's feet, groped here and there for some table-knife to take a fatal revenge; but the canon and curate took care to prevent his purpose, and in the meanwhile, by the barber's contrivance, the goatherd got Don Quixote under him, on whom he let fall such a tempest of blows, as caused as great a shower of blood to pour from his face as had streamed from his own.

The canon and curate were ready to burst with laughing, the officers danced and jumped at the sport, every one cried halloo! as men use to do when two dogs are snarling or fighting; Sancho Panza alone was in a desperate state, because he could not get away from one of the canon's serving-men, who kept him back from assisting his master. In short, all were exceedingly merry, except the two combatants, who had mauled one another most miserably, when on a sudden they heard the sound of a trumpet so doleful, that it made them turn to listen towards that part from whence it seemed to come; but he who was most troubled at this dismal alarm, was Don Quixote; therefore, though he lay under the goatherd, full sore against his will, and was most lamentably bruised and battered, "Friend devil," cried he to him, "for sure nothing less could have so much valour and strength as to subdue my forces, let us have a cessation of arms but for a single hour; for the dolorous sound of that trumpet which strikes on our ears appears to summon me to some new adventure."

With that the goatherd, who by this time was as weary of beating as of being beaten, immediately gave him a truce; and the knight once more getting on his feet, directed his face to the place whence the mournful sound seemed to come, and presently saw a number of men all in white, like penitents, descending from a rising ground. The real matter was this: the people had wanted rain for a whole year together, wherefore they appointed rogations, processions, and disciplines throughout all that country, to implore heaven to open its treasury, and shower down plenty upon them: and to this end, the inhabitants of a village near that place came in procession to a devout hermitage built on one of the hills which surrounded that valley.

Don Quixote, taking notice of the strange habits of the penitents, and never reminding himself that he had often seen the like before, fancied immediately it was some new adventure, and he alone was to engage in it, as he was obliged by the laws of knight-errantry; and that which the more increased his frenzy, was his mistaking an image which they carried (all covered with black) for some great lady, whom these miscreant and wicked highwaymen, he thought, were carrying away against her will. As soon as this whimsy took him in the head, he moved with what expedition he could towards Rozinante, who was feeding up and down upon the plains, and, whipping off his bridle from the pommel, and his target which hung hard by, he bridled him in an instant; then, taking his sword from Sancho, he got in a trice on Rozinante's back, where, bracing his target, and addressing himself aloud to all there present, "O valorous company," cried he, "you shall now perceive of how great importance it is to mankind, that such illustrious persons as those who profess the order of knight-errantry should exist in the world; now, I say, you shall see, by my freeing that noble lady, who is there carried away captive, whether knight-adventurers ought not to be held in the highest estimation."

So saying, he pushed Rozinante with his heels for want of spurs, and, forcing him to a hand gallop (for it was

never read in any part of this true history that Rozinante did ever run full speed), he posted to encounter the penitents, in spite of all the curate, canon, and barber could do to hinder him; much less could Sancho Panza's outcries detain him.

"Master! Sir! Don Quixote!" bawled out the poor squire, "whither are you posting? are you bewitched? does the devil drive and set you on, thus to run against the Church? ah, wretch that I am! See, sir! that is a procession of penitents, and the lady they carry is the image of the immaculate Virgin, our blessed Lady. Take heed what you do, for at this time it may be certainly said you are out of your wits!" But Sancho might as well have kept his breath for another use, for the knight was urged with so vehement a desire to encounter the white men, and release the mourning lady, that he heard not a syllable he said, or if he had, he would not have turned back, even at the king's express command. At last, being come near the procession, and stopping Rozinante, that already had a great desire to rest a little, in a dismal tone, and with a hoarse voice, "Ho!" cried he, "you there, who cover your faces, perhaps because you are ashamed of their being seen, give heed and attention to what I have to say."

The first who stopped at this alarm were those who carried the image; when one of the four priests, that sang the litanies, seeing the strange figure that Don Quixote made, and the leanness of Rozinante, with other circumstances which he observed in the knight sufficient to have forced laughter, presently made him this answer, "Good sir! if you have anything to say to us speak it quickly, for these poor men whom you see are very much tired; therefore we neither can, nor is it reasonable we should, stand thus in pain, to hear anything that cannot be delivered in two words."—"I will say it in one," replied Don Quixote, "which is this; I charge you immediately to release that beautiful lady, whose tears and looks full of sorrow evidently show you carry her away by violence, and have done her some unheard-of injury: this do, or I, who was born to punish such outrages, will

not suffer you to advance one step with her, till she is entirely possessed of that liberty she so earnestly desires, and so justly deserves." This last speech made them all conclude that the knight was certainly distracted, and caused a general laughter; but this proved like powder to Don Quixote's wrath, so that, laying his hand to his sword, without more words, he presently assaulted those who carried the image. At the same time one of them quitting his post, came to encounter our hero with a wooden fork, on which he supported the bier whenever they made a stand, and warding with it a weighty blow which Don Quixote aimed at him, the fork was cut in two; but the other, who had the remaining piece in his hand, returned the knight such a thwack across his shoulder on the left side, that, his target not being able to resist such rustic force, poor Don Quixote was struck to the ground, miserably bruised.

Sancho Panza, who had followed him as fast as his breath and legs would permit, seeing him fall, cried out to his adversary to forbear striking him, urging that he was a poor enchanted knight, and one who in his whole life had never done any man harm. But it was not Sancho's arguments that held the country fellow's hands; the only motive was, that he feared he had killed him, since he could not perceive he stirred either hand or foot: wherefore, tucking his coat up to his girdle, with all possible expedition, he scoured over the fields like a roe-buck. Meanwhile Don Quixote's companions hastened to the place where he lay, when those of the procession seeing them come running towards them, attended by the officers of the holy brotherhood with their cross-bows along with them, began to have apprehensions of some disaster from the approaching party; wherefore, drawing up in a body about the image, and pulling up their hoods, the penitents, and the clergy grasping their tapers, they expected the assault with the greatest bravery, resolving to defend themselves, and offend their enemy as long and as much as possible. But fortune had ordered the matter much better than they could hope; for while Sancho, who had thrown himself on his master's body, was lamenting his

loss, and the supposed death of so noble and generous a lord, in the most ridiculous manner that ever was heard, the curate of the knight's party was come up with another who came in the procession, and was immediately known by him, so that their acquaintance put an end to the fears which both sides were in of an engagement. Don Quixote's curate, in few words, acquainted the other with the knight's circumstances; whereupon he, and the whole squadron of penitents, went over to see whether the unfortunate knight were living or dead, and heard Sancho Panza, with tears in his eyes, saying:

"O flower of knighthood," cried he, "that with one single perilous knock art come to an untimely end! Thou honour of thy family, and glory of all La Mancha; nay, and of all the world beside, which, now it has lost thee, will be overrun by miscreants and outlaws, who will no longer fear to be punished for their misdeeds. O bountiful above all the Alexanders in the world! thou who hadst rewarded me for but eight months' service with the best island that is washed by salt water! Thou who wert humble to the proud, and haughty to the humble! Thou who didst undertake perils, and patiently endure affronts! Thou who wert in love, without cause. True patron of good men, and scourge of the wicked, sworn foe to all reprobates! and to say all at once that man can say, thou knight-errant!"

The woeful accents of the squire's voice at last recalled Don Quixote to himself: when, after a deep sigh, the first thing he thought of was his absent Dulcinea. "O charming Dulcinea," cried he, "the wretch that lingers banished from thy sight, endures far greater miseries than this!" And then looking on his faithful squire, "Good Sancho," said he, "help me once more into the enchanted car; for I am not in a condition to press the back of Rozinante; this shoulder is all broke to pieces."—"With all my heart, my good lord," replied Sancho, "and pray let me advise you to go back to our village with these gentlemen, who are your special friends. At home we may think of some other journey, that may be more profitable and honourable than this."—"With reason hast thou spoken, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "it will

become our wisdom to be inactive, till the malevolent aspects of the planets, which now reign, be over."

This resolution was highly commended by the canon, curate, and barber, who had been sufficiently diverted by Sancho Panza's simplicity. Don Quixote was placed in the wagon, as before, the processioners recovered their former order, and passed on about their business. The goat-herd took his leave of the whole company. The curate satisfied the officers for their attendance, since they cared not to stir farther. The canon desired the curate to send him an account of Don Quixote's condition from that time forward, having a mind to know whether his frenzy abated or increased; and then took his leave, to continue his journey. Thus the curate, the barber, Don Quixote, and Sancho Panza, were left together, as also the good Rozinante, that bore all these passages as patiently as his master. The wagoner then yoked his oxen, and, having set Don Quixote on a truss of hay, jogged on, after his slow accustomed pace, that way the curate had directed. In six days' time they reached the knight's village. It was about noon when they entered the town; and as it happened to be on a Sunday all the people were in the market-place, through the middle of which Don Quixote's car must of necessity pass. Everybody was curious to know what was in it; and the people were strangely surprised when they saw and knew their townsman. While they were gaping and wondering, a little boy ran to the knight's house, and gave intelligence to the housekeeper and niece, that their master and uncle was returned, very lean and pale, and stretched out at length on a bundle of hay, in a wagon, and drawn along by a team of oxen.

It was a piteous thing to hear the wailings of those two poor creatures; the reproaches which they gave themselves, with the curses and execrations they hurled against all books of chivalry, all of which were repeated when they saw Don Quixote enter the door. Upon the noise of his arrival, Sancho Panza's wife made haste thither to inquire after her good-man, for she now knew that he had gone as squire to the knight. As soon as ever she set eyes on him, the first question she asked him was, whether the ass was well? Sancho answered, he

was come back in better health than his master. "Well," said she, "heaven be praised for the good news: but hark you, my friend," continued she, "what have you got by your squireship? Have you brought me home ever a gown[1] or petticoat, or shoes for my children?"—"In troth, sweet wife," replied Sancho, "I have brought thee none of those things; but I bring things of more importance."—"Ay," said his wife, "that's well. Prythee let me see some of them fine things, for I vow I have a huge mind to see them; the sight of them will comfort my poor heart, which has been so sad and ill-content ever since thou went'st away."—"I'll show them thee when we come home," returned Sancho; "in the mean time rest satisfied, that if Heaven see good that we should once again go abroad in search of other adventures, within a little time after, at my return, thou shalt find me some earl, or the governor of some island; ay, of one of the very best in the whole world."—"I wish with all my heart this may come to pass," replied the good-wife; "for, by my troth, husband, we want it sorely. But what do you mean by that same word island? for believe me I don't understand it."—"All in good time, wife," said Sancho; "honey is not made for an ass's mouth: you shall see what it is hereafter. Thou wilt be amazed to hear all thy servants and vassals never speak a word to thee without 'An't please you, madam;' 'An't like your ladyship;' and 'Your honour.'"—"What dost thou mean, Sancho, by ladyship, islands, and vassals?" quoth Juana Panza, for so she was called, though her husband and she

[1] *Saboyana* is the word in the original, and it designates a particular species of short mantle, which the Spanish women borrowed from the costume of the Savoyards. Teresa [or Juana, as she is called in this passage] Panza addresses her husband almost in the very words of a common Spanish song,

"Comprame una Saboyana,
Marido, asi os guarda Dios!" &c.

"Now buy for me a mantle,
And a mantle all of green—
They all go on in their bravery,
How can I thus be seen?
There's ne'er a wife in all the town
Would walk abroad in such a gown," &c.

were nothing akin, only it is a custom in La Mancha that the wives are there called by their husbands' surnames. "Do not trouble thy head, Juana," said Sancho, "to know these matters all at once; it is enough, I tell thee the truth, therefore hold thy tongue.[1] Yet, of one thing I will assure thee, that nothing in the world is better for an honest man, than to be squire to a knight-errant, while he is hunting of adventures. It is true, most adventures he goes about do not answer a man's expectations so much as he could wish; for of a hundred that are met with, ninety-nine are wont to be crabbed and unlucky ones. This I know to my cost: I myself have got well blanketed in some of them, and soundly drubbed in others: yet, for all that, it is a rare sport to be a watching for strange chances, to traverse mountains, to beat up and down in woods, to scramble over rocks, to visit castles, and to take up quarters in inns at pleasure, and all the while the devil a cross to pay."

These were the discourses with which Sancho Panza and his wife Juana entertained one another, while the housekeeper and niece undressed Don Quixote, and put him into his ancient bed, where he lay looking askance on them, but could not imagine where he was. The curate charged the niece to be very careful and tender of her uncle, and to be very watchful, lest he should make another sally; telling her what had been necessary to get him home. Now the women began their outcries again: now the books of knight-errantry were again execrated, and now they begged that the authors of so many cursed bewitching chimeras and lies might be thrown down into the very centre of the abyss; for they were still almost distracted with the fear of losing their master and uncle again, so soon as ever he recovered; which indeed fell out according to their fear. But though the author of this history has been very curious and diligent in his inquiry after Don Quixote's achievements in his third expedition in quest of adventures, yet he could never find any account of them, at least from any author of credit; fame and tradition alone have preserved some particulars of them in the memoirs and antiquities of La Mancha; as, that after the knight's

[1 *Cose la boca*, sew up thy mouth.]

third sally, he was present at certain famous tilts and tournaments made in the city of Saragoza, where he met with occasions worthy the exercise of his sense and valour: but how the knight died, our author neither could, nor ever should have learned, if, by good fortune, he had not met with an ancient physician, who had a leaden box in his possession, which, as he averred, was found in the ruins of an old hermitage, as it was re-building. In this box were certain scrolls of parchment written in Gothic characters, but containing verses in the Spanish tongue, in which many of his noble acts were sung, and Dulcinea del Toboso's beauty celebrated, Rozinante's figure described, and Sancho Panza's fidelity applauded. They likewise gave an account of Don Quixote's burial, with several epitaphs and encomiums on his life and conversation. Those that could be read and transcribed, are here added by the faithful author of this new and incomparable history; desiring no other recompense or reward of the readers, for all his labour and pains, in searching all the numerous and old records of La Mancha to perfect this matchless piece, but that they will be pleased to give it as much credit as judicious men used to give to books of knight-errantry, which are nowadays so generally taking. This will be sufficient payment and satisfaction for him, and likewise encourage him to furnish them with other matter of entertainment, which, though possibly not so true as this, yet it may be as well contrived and diverting. The first words in the parchment found in the leaden box are these :—

THE ACADEMICIANS OF LA ARGAMASILLA, A VILLAGE OF LA MANCHA, ON THE LIFE AND DEATH OF THE VALOROUS DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA *HOC SCRIPSERUNT.*

MONICONGO,[1] *academician of La Argamasilla, on the tomb of Don Quixote.*

EPITAPH.

The brain distraught, that did La Mancha lend
More spoils than Jason bold to Crete did bring,
The wisdom, like a weathercock's flat wing
That shows where should be seen its pointed end;

[1] [These names have all ludicrous significations. Monicongo expresses vanity and conceit; it is rendered in Mr. Duffield's edition by "Prig."]

The arm, that so its vigour doth extend
That twixt Gaeta and Cathay 'twould swing;
The muse, most dire and yet most reasoning
That e'er on brazen page her verses penn'd;
He who made Amadises' pride succumb,
And vanquished Galeors did set at naught,
In love and valour placing all his trust;
He who the Belianises struck dumb,
And knightly tasks with Rozinante sought,
Beneath this frigid stone lies in the dust.

By PANIAGUADO,[1] *academician of La Argamasilla, in laudem Dulcineae del Toboso.*

SONNET.

She whom thou seest with features coarse and red,
With breasts protruding, vigorous of mien,
Is Dulcinea, whilom Toboso's queen,
Of whom great Quixote was enamoured.
For sake of her he either slope did tread
Of great Sierra Negra, and the scene
Of Montiel's fight, unto the levels green
Of Aranjuez, afoot and sore bestead
By Rozinante's fault. O cruel fate!
Ill-starr'd indeed was this Manchegan dame,
And this untamed knight-errant! She did quit
By death at tender age her beauteous state;
And he, though marble slabs preserve his fame
Could not escape love, wrath, and evil wit.

By CAPRICHOSO,[2] *the cleverest academician of Argamasilla, in praise of Rozinante, the steed of Don Quixote de la Mancha.*

SONNET.

Upon that haughty trunk of adamant,
Which Mars doth trample with ensanguin'd feet,
The wild Manchegan bids his ensign meet
The breeze, upheld by strength extravagant.
His arms and temper'd steel he there doth plant
Wherewith he doth destroy, cleave, raze, defeat:
New prowess his! but Art new methods meet
For this new paladin is fain to grant.
Her Amadis may be the boast of Gaul,
To whose illustrious offspring Greece hath owed
A thousand triumphs and her glory swell'd.
But Quixote now Bellona, in her hall

[1] ["Toady."] [2] ["Crotchety."]

Presiding, crowns; whereby La Mancha proud
Both Greece and Gaul in greatness hath excell'd.
Nor by Oblivion shall his fame be quell'd
Since Rozinante gallantest of steeds
E'en Brigliadoro and Bayard [1] exceeds.

By Burlador,[2] *academician of La Argamasilla to Sancho Panza.*

Sonnet.

'Tis Sancho Panza, this; in body squat
But big in courage; marvellous event!
A squire more artless and more innocent,
I swear and certify, the world had not.
Of being a count he fail'd but by a jot,
Had not an evil age's insolent
Assaults conspired his fortune to prevent—
For which no jackass pardon would have got.
On such a beast he rode, a squire most meek
(If I err not) behind as meek a steed
And Rozinante's master, as beseems.
Oh! futile are the things that people seek:
How do their hopes towards promised rest proceed
And end at last in shadow, smoke and dreams.

By Cachidiablo,[3] *academician of La Argamasilla on Don Quixote's Tomb.*

Epitaph.

Here well batter'd lies the knight,
Ill his errantry did fare,
Rozinante him did bear
This way, that way, as he might.
Sancho Panza plain and rude
Here lies also at his side;
Squire more trusty and more tried
Ne'er the squirely trade pursued.

By Tiquitoc,[4] *academician of La Argamasilla on the tomb of Dulcinea del Toboso.*

Epitaph.

Here is Dulcinea laid,
Plump in flesh she was enow,
Grim and ghastly Death has now
Dust and ashes of her made.

[1] [Brigliadoro (golden bridle) was the name of Orlando's horse; Bayardo, that of Rinaldo.]

[2] ["Scoffer."]

[3] ["Hobgoblin."]

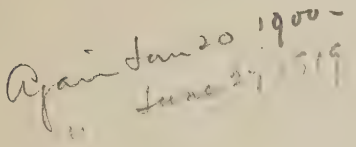
[4] [An onomatope; equivalent to "Ding Dong."]

She of virtuous stock was grown,
Bearing marks of gentle dame,
She was noble Quixote's flame,
And the glory of her town.

These were the verses that could be read: as for the rest, the characters being eaten away, they were delivered to a university student, in order that he might give us his conjectures concerning their meaning. And we are informed, that after many wakeful nights, and much pains, he has effected the work, and intends to oblige the world with it, giving us at the same time some hopes of Don Quixote's third sally.

Forsi altro cantera con miglior plectro.[1]

[1] "Another hand may touch a better string."
Orlando Furioso, Canto XXX.



END OF THE FIRST PART.

ADDITIONAL NOTES.

Note L.—The Cid (page 22).

A distinguished German critic speaks thus of the old Spanish poem on the exploits of the Cid—a production of which some curious specimens are admirably translated by Mr. Frere, at the end of Mr. Southey's Chronicle.

"The literature of Spain possesses a high advantage over that of most other nations, in its historical heroic romance of the Cid. This is exactly that species of poetry which exerts the nearest and the most powerful influence over the national feelings and character of a people. A single work, such as the Cid, is of more real value to a nation than a whole library of books, however abounding in wit or intellect, which are destitute of the spirit of nationality. Although in the shape in which it now appears the work was probably produced about the 11th century, yet the whole body of its inventions belongs to the older period antecedent to the Crusades. There is here no trace of that oriental taste for the wonderful and the fabulous which afterwards became so prominent. It breathes the pure, true-hearted, noble old Castilian spirit, and is in fact the true history of the Cid, first arranged and extended into a poetical form, very shortly, it is probable, after the age of that hero himself. I have already taken notice that the heroic poetry and mythology of almost all nations is in its essence tragical and elegiac. But there is another less serious view of the heroic life which was often represented even by the ancients themselves. Hercules and his bodily strength, and his eating, are drawn in the true colours of comedy, and the wandering adventures and lying stories of Ulysses, have been the original of all amusing romances. But, in truth, specimens of this sort of representation are to be found in the histories of almost all great heroes. However powerfully history may represent the hero's superiority in magnanimity, in bravery, and in corporeal strength, it effects its purpose by depicting him not among the poetical obscurities of a world of wonders, but surrounded by the realities of life; and it is then that we receive the strongest impression of his power, when we see it exerted in opposition, not to imaginary evils of which we have little conception, but to the every-day difficulties and troubles of the world, to which we ourselves feel that ordinary men are incapable of offering any resistance. We have many

instances of this comic sort of writing in the Spanish Cid; for example, there is the description of his rather unfair method of raising money to support his war against the Moors, by borrowing from a Jewish usurer and leaving a chest of old stones and lumber as his pledge: and the account of the insult offered to his dead body by another of that race, and the terror into which he was thrown by the Cid starting up on his bier, and drawing his sword a span's length out of the scabbard. These are touches of popular humour by no means out of place in a romance founded on popular traditions. But there is a spirit of more delicate irony in those sorrowful lamentations with which Donna Ximena is made to address the King on account of the protracted absence of her husband, as well as in the reply of the monarch." —*See Schlegel on the History of Literature*, vol. i. p. 343.

NOTE II.—BERNARDO DEL CARPIO (page 23).

In several of the old ballads, which record the real or imaginary feats of Bernardo, his royal uncle is represented as having shown but little gratitude for the great champion's services in the campaign against Charlemagne. It appears that the king had not relented in favour of Don Sancho, although he had come under some promise of that sort to his son, at the period when his (the son's) services were most necessary. The following is a translation of one of the oldest of the Spanish ballads in which this part of Carpio's story is told:—

Bernardo and Alphonso.

I.

With some good ten of his chosen men, Bernardo hath appear'd
Before them all in the palace hall, the lying King to beard;
With cap in hand and eye on ground, he came in reverend guise,
But ever and anon he frown'd, and flame broke from his eyes.

II.

"A curse upon thee," cries the King, "who comest unbid to me;
But what from traitor's blood should spring, save traitors like to thee?
His sire, Lords, had a traitor's heart; perchance our Champion brave
May think it were a pious part to share Don Sancho's grave."

III.

"Whoever told this tale the King hath rashness to repeat,"
Cries Bernard, "here my gage I fling before THE LIAR'S feet!
No treason was in Sancho's blood, no stain in mine doth lie—
Below the throne what knight will own the coward calumny?

IV.

"The blood that I like water shed, when Roland did advance,
By secret traitors hired and led, to make us slaves of France;
The life of King Alphonso I saved at Roncesval,—
Your words, Lord King, are recompense abundant for it all.

V.

"Your horse was down—your hope was flown—ye saw the falchion shine
That soon had drunk your royal blood, had I not ventured mine;
But memory soon of service done deserteth the ingrate,
And ye've thank'd the son for life and crown by the father's bloody fate.

VI.

"Ye swore upon your kingly faith, to set Don Sancho free;
But, curse upon your paltering breath, the light he ne'er did see;
He died in dungeon cold and dim, by Alphonso's base decree,
And visage blind, and mangled limb, were all they gave to me.

VII.

"The King that swerveth from his word hath stain'd his purple black;
No Spanish Lord will draw the sword behind a liar's back;
But noble vengeance shall be mine, an open hate I'll show—
The King hath injured Carpio's line, and Bernard is his foe."—

VIII.

"Seize—seize him!"—loud the King doth scream—"There are a thousand here—
Let his foul blood this instant stream,—What! caitiffs, do ye fear?
Seize—seize the traitor!"—But not one to move a finger dareth,—
Bernardo standeth by the throne, and calm his sword he bareth.

IX.

He drew the falchion from the sheath, and held it up on high,
And all the hall was still as death—cries Bernard, "Here am I,
And here is the sword that owns no lord, excepting heaven and me;
Fain would I know who dares his point—King, Condé, or Grandee."

X.

Then to his mouth the horn he drew—(it hung below his cloak)
His ten true men the signal knew, and through the ring they broke;
With helm on head, and blade in hand, the knights the circle brake,
And back the lordlings 'gan to stand, and the false King to quake.

XI.

"Ha! Bernard," quoth Alphonso, "what means this warlike guise?
Ye know full well I jested—ye know your worth I prize."—
But Bernard turn'd upon his heel, and smiling pass'd away—
Long rued Alphonso and his realm the jesting of that day.

I shall venture on inserting a translation of part of another of the many ballads founded on the story of this champion. It describes the enthusiasm excited among the Leonese, when Bernard first reared his

standard, to oppose the progress of Charlemagne. This ballad was, as might have been expected, extremely popular in Spain during the Peninsular war. It was sung frequently by the Guerillas, while on their march.

Bernardo's March.

I.

With three thousand men of Leon, from the city Bernard goes,
To protect the soil Hispanian from the spear of Frankish foes;
From the city which is planted in the midst between the seas,
To preserve the name and glory of old Pelayo's victories.

II.

The peasant hears upon his field the trumpet of the knight,
He quits his team for spear and shield, and garniture of might;
The shepherd hears it 'mid the mist—he flingeth down his crook,
And rushes from the mountain like a tempest-troubled brook.

III.

The youth who shows a maiden's chin, whose brows have ne'er been bound
The helmet's heavy ring within, gains manhood from the sound;
The hoary sire beside the fire forgets his feebleness,
Once more to feel the cap of steel a warrior's ringlets press.

IV.

As through the glen his spears did gleam, these soldiers from the hills,
They swell'd his host, as mountain-stream receives the roaring rills;
They round his banner flock'd in scorn of haughty Charlemagne,
And thus upon their swords are sworn the faithful sons of Spain.

V.

"Free were we born," 'tis thus they cry, "though to our King we owe
The homage and the fealty behind his crest to go;
By God's behest our aid he shares, but God did ne'er command,
That we should leave our children heirs of an enslaved land.

VI.

"Our breasts are not so timorous, nor are our arms so weak,
Nor are our veins so bloodless, that we our vow should break,
To sell our freedom for the fear of Prince or Paladin,—
At least we'll sell our birthright dear, no bloodless prize they'll win.

VII.

"At least King Charles, if God decrees he must be lord of Spain,
Shall witness that the Leonese were not aroused in vain;
He shall bear witness that we died, as lived our sires of old,
Nor only of Numantium's pride shall minstrel tales be told.

VIII.

"The Lion[1] that hath bathed his paws in seas of Libyan gore,
Shall he not battle for the laws and liberties of yore?
Anointed cravens may give gold to whom it likes them well,
But stedfast heart and spirit bold Alphonso ne'er shall sell."

NOTE III.—GALALON OF MAYENCE (page 24).

There is a ballad in the *Silva de Ronces* upon another base trick which this Galalon played off against Rinaldo de Montalban.

No passaron muchos dias,
Quel traydor de Galalon
Aquel traydor desleal
Embio Cartas a Aliarde
Cartas para le avisar
Que en su corte tenia
A Renaldos de Montalban, &c.
SYLVA, F. 66.

Pulci frequently mentions him: as for example,

Aldinghier grido: s'io ben ti squadro
Non se tu *Ganelon, traditor Ladro;*
Traditor doloroso, can ribaldo,
Traditor nato per tradir Rinaldo.
M. M. C. 22, 127.

NOTE IV.—BAVIECA (page 26).

The following contains some very characteristic traits.—"*El Rey aguardava al Cid*," &c.—(Depping's Sammlung Spanischer Romanzen, p. 182.)

I.

The king look'd on him kindly, as on a vassal true;
Then to the king Ruy Diaz spake after reverence due,
"O king, the thing is shameful, that any man beside
The liege lord of Castile himself should Bavieca ride:

II.

"For neither Spain nor Araby could another charger bring
So good as he, and, certes, the best befits my king.
But that you may behold him, and know him to the core,
I'll make him go as he was wont when his nostrils smelt the Moor."

III.

With that, the Cid, clad as he was in mantle furr'd and wide,
On Bavieca vaulting, put the rowel in his side;
And up and down, and round and round, so fierce was his career,
Stream'd like a pennon on the wind Ruy Diaz' minivere.

[1] The arms of Leon.

IV.

All that saw them praised them—they lauded man and horse,
As matched well, and rivalless for gallantry and force;
Ne'er had they look'd on horseman might to this knight come near,
Nor on other charger worthy of such a cavalier.

V.

Thus, to and fro a-rushing, the fierce and furious steed,
He snapt in twain his hither rein:—"God pity now the Cid,"
"God pity Diaz," cried the lords,—but when they look'd again
They saw Ruy Diaz ruling him with the fragment of his rein;
They saw him proudly ruling with gesture firm and calm,
Like a true lord commanding,—and obey'd as by a lamb.

VI.

And so he led him foaming and panting to the king,
But "No," said Don Alphonso, "it were a shameful thing
That peerless Bavieca should ever be bestrid
By any mortal but Bivar—mount, mount again, my Cid," &c.

In one of these ballads, the Cid is giving directions about his funeral; he desires that they shall place his body "in full armour upon Bavieca," and so conduct him to the church of San Pedro de Cardena.—This was done accordingly; and says another ballad—

Truxeron pues a Babieca;
Y en mirandole se puso
Tan triste como si fuera
Mas rasonable que bruto.

In the Cid's last will, mention is also made of this noble charger. "When ye bury Bavieca, dig deep," says Ruy Diaz,—"for shameful thing were it, that he should be eat by curs, who hath trampled down so much currish flesh of Moors."

NOTE V.—DON PEDRO (page 30).

The celebrity of the plain of Montiel arose from its having been the scene of one of the darkest tragedies in the early history of Spain.

The death of Don Pedro, called the Cruel, by the hands of his brother, Henry of Transtamara, is an incident more than once alluded to by Cervantes. The English reader will probably remember, that Don Pedro, King of Castile, deposed by his subjects on account of his excessive cruelty, was replaced on the throne by the assistance of our Black Prince, who, in 1366, at the battle of Nejara, defeated Henry of Transtamara, the natural brother of Pedro, who had been called to the throne by the insurgents. In 1368, when this formidable ally of Don Pedro had retired into Gascony, Henry, in his turn, came back from exile at the head of a small but gallant army, most of whom were French auxiliaries, commanded by the celebrated Bertram du Guesclin, or, as he is more commonly called, Du Guesclin. He en-

countered Don Pedro. at the head of an army six times more numerous than that which he commanded, but which consisted partly of Jews, Saracens, and Portuguese, miscellaneous auxiliaries, who gave way before the ardour of the French chivalry, so that Henry remained victorious, and Pedro was compelled to take refuge in the neighbouring castle of Montiel. The fortress was so strictly blockaded by the victorious enemy, that the king was compelled to attempt his escape by night, with only twelve persons in his retinue, Ferdinand de Castro being the person of most note among them. As they wandered in the dark, they were encountered by a body of French cavalry making the rounds, commanded by an adventurous knight, called Le Bègue de Villaines. Compelled to surrender, Don Pedro put himself under the safeguard of this officer, promising him a rich ransom if he would conceal him from the knowledge of his brother Henry. The knight, according to Froissart, promised him concealment, and conveyed him to his own quarters. But in the course of an hour, Henry was apprised that he was taken, and came with some of his followers to the tent of Allan de la Houssaye, where his unfortunate brother had been placed. In entering the chamber, he exclaimed, "Where is that whoreson and Jew, who calls himself King of Castile?"—Pedro, as proud and fearless as he was cruel, stepped instantly forward and replied, "Here I stand, the lawful son and heir of Don Alphonso, and it is thou that art but a false bastard." The rival brethren instantly grappled like lions, the French knights and Du Guesclin himself looking on. Henry drew his poniard and wounded Pedro in the face, but his body was defended by a coat of mail; and in the struggle which ensued, Henry fell across a bench, and his brother, being uppermost, had well nigh mastered him, when one of Henry's followers seizing Don Pedro by the leg, turned him over, and his master gaining the upper-hand, instantly poniarded him. Froissart calls this man the Vicomte de Roquebetyn, and others the Bastard d'Anisse. Menard, in his History of Du Guesclin, says, that while all around gazed like statues on the furious struggle of the brothers, Du Guesclin exclaimed to this attendant of Henry, "What! will you stand by and see your master placed at such a pass by a false renegade? Make forward and aid him, for well you may."

Pedro's head was cut off, and his remains were meanly buried. They were afterwards disinterred by his daughter, the wife of John of Gaunt, and deposited in Seville, with the honours due to his rank. His memory was regarded with a strange mixture of horror and compassion, which recommended him as a subject for legend and for romance. He had caused his wife Blanche de Bourbon to be assassinated—had murdered three of his brothers—banished his mother, and committed numberless cruelties upon his subjects. He had, which the age held equally scandalous, held a close intimacy with the Jews and Saracens, and had enriched himself at the expense of the church. Yet, in spite of all these crimes, his undaunted bravery and energy of character, together with the strange circumstances of his death, excited milder feelings towards his memory. There are many ballads founded on Don Pedro's history. That which Sancho afterwards quotes more than once, giving an account of his death, may be thus translated:

The Death of Don Pedro.

I.

Henry and King Pedro clasping,
Hold in straining arms each other;
Tugging hard, and closely grasping,
Brother proves his strength with brother.

II.

Harmless pastime, sport fraternal,
Blends not thus their limbs in strife;
Either aims, with rage infernal,
Naked dagger, sharpen'd knife.

III.

Close Don Henry grapples Pedro,
Pedro holds Don Henry strait,
Breathing, this, triumphant fury,
That, despair and mortal hate.

IV.

Sole spectator of the struggle,
Stands Don Henry's page afar,
In the chase who bore his bugle,
And who bore his sword in war.

V.

Down they go in deadly wrestle,
Down upon the earth they go,
Fierce King Pedro has the vantage
Stout Don Henry falls below.

VI.

Marking then the fatal crisis,
Up the page of Henry ran,
By the waist he caught Don Pedro,
Aiding thus the fallen man.

VII.

"King to place, or to depose him,
Dwelleth not in my desire,
But the duty which he owes him
To his master pays the squire."—

VIII.

Now Don Henry has the upmost,
Now King Pedro lies beneath,
In his heart his brother's poniard
Instant finds its bloody sheath.

IX.

Thus with mortal gasp and quiver,
While the blood in bubbles well'd,
Fled the fiercest soul that ever
In a Christian bosom dwell'd.

There is another old Spanish ballad on the death of Pedro, of which Depping, the German collector, speaks in terms of high commendation. As Pedro's story is so frequently alluded to by Cervantes, I shall insert a translation of this also.

The Proclamation of King Henry.

I.

At the feet of Don Henrique now King Pedro dead is lying,
Not that Henry's might was greater; but that blood to heaven was crying;
Though deep the dagger had its sheath within his brother's breast,
Firm on the frozen throat beneath Don Henry's foot is prest.

II.

So dark and sullen is the glare of Pedro's lifeless eyes,
Still half he fears what slumbers there to vengeance may arise.
So stands the brother, on his brow the mark of blood is seen,
Yet had he not been Pedro's Cain, his Cain had Pedro been.

III.

Close round the scene of cursèd strife, the armèd knights appear
Of either band, with silent thoughts of joyfulness or fear;
All for a space, in silence, the fratricide survey,
Then sudden bursts the mingling voice of triumph and dismay.

IV.

Glad shout on shout from Henry's host ascends unto the sky;
"God save King Henry—save the King—King Henry!" is their cry.
But Pedro's barons clasp their brows, in sadness stand they near,
Whate'er to others he had been, their friend lies murder'd here.

V.

The deed, say those, was justly done—a tyrant's soul is sped;
These ban and curse the traitorous blow by which a king is dead.
"Now see," cries one, "how heaven's amand asserts the people's rights;"
Another—"God will judge the hand that God's anointed smites."

VI.

"The Lord's vicegerent," quoth a priest, "is sovereign of the land,
And he rebels 'gainst Heaven's behest, that slights his king's command."
"Now Heaven be witness, if he sinn'd," thus speaks a gallant young,
"The fault was in Padilla's eye, that o'er him magic flung.

VII.

"Or if no magic be her blame, so heavenly fair is she,
The wisest, for so bright a dame, might well a sinner be.
Let none speak ill of Pedro—No Roderick hath he been,
He dearly loved fair Spain, although 'tis true he slew the Queen."

VIII.

The words he spoke they all might hear, yet none vouchsafe reply;
"God save great Henry—save the King—King Henry!" is the cry;
While Pedro's liegemen turn aside, their groans are in your ear,
"Whate'er to others he hath been, our friend lies slaughtered here!"

IX.

Nor paltry souls are wanting among King Pedro's band,
That, now their King is dead, draw near to kiss his murderer's hand;
The false cheek clothes it in a smile, and laughs the hollow eye,
And wags the traitor tongue the while with flattery's ready lie.

X.

The valour of the King that *is*—the justice of his cause—
The blindness and the tyrannies of him the king that *was*—
All—all are doubled in their speech, yet truth enough is there
To sink the spirit shivering near, in darkness of despair.

XI.

The murder of the Master,[1] the tender Infant's doom,
And blessed Blanche's thread of life snapt short in dungeon's gloom,
With tragedies yet unreveal'd, that stain'd the king's abode,
By lips his bounty should have seal'd are blazon'd black abroad.

XII.

Whom served he most at others' cost, most loud they rend the sky;
"God save great Henry—save our King—King Henry!" is the cry.
But still, amid too many foes, the grief is in your ear
Of dead King Pedro's faithful few—"Alas! our lord lies here!"

XIII.

But others' tears, and others' groans, what are they match'd with thine,
Maria de Padilla—thou fatal concubine!
Because she is King Henry's slave, the lady weepeth sore,
Because she's Pedro's widow'd love, alas! she weepeth more.

XIV.

"O Pedro! Pedro! hear her cry—how often did I say
That wicked counsel and weak trust would haste thy life away;"
She stands upon her turret-top, she looks down from on high,
Where mantled in his bloody cloak she sees her lover lie.

[1] The Master of the order of Calatrava, who was treacherously invited to a banquet, and slain by Pedro shortly before.

XV.

Low lies King Pedro in his blood, while bending down ye see
Caitiffs that trembled ere he spake, crouch'd at his murderer's knee,
They place the sceptre in his hand, and on his head the crown,
And trumpets clear are blown, and bells are merry through the town.

XVI.

The sun shines bright, and the gay rout with clamours rend the sky,
"God save great Henry—save the King—King Henry!" is the cry;
But the pale lady weeps above, with many a bitter tear:
Whate'er he was, he was her love, and he lies slaughter'd here.

XVII.

At first, in silence down her cheek the drops of sadness roll,
But rage and anger come to break the sorrow of her soul;
The triumph of her haters—the gladness of their cries,
Enkindle flames of ire and scorn within her tearful eyes.

XVIII.

In her hot cheek the blood mounts high, as she stands gazing down,
Now on proud Henry's royal state, his robe and golden crown,
And now upon the trampled cloak that hides not from her view
The slaughter'd Pedro's marble brow and lips of livid hue.

XIX.

With furious grief she twists her hands among her long black hairs,
And all from off her lovely brow the blameless locks she tears;
She tears the ringlets from her front, and scatters all the pearls
King Pedro's hand had planted among the raven curls.

XX.

"Stop, caitiff tongues!"—they hear her not—"King Pedro's love am I."
They heed her not—"God save the King—great Henry!" still they cry
She rends her hair, she wrings her hands, but none to help is near,
"God look in vengeance on their deed, my lord lies murdered here!"

XXI.

Away she flings her garments, her broider'd veil and vest,
As if they should behold her love within her lovely breast,
As if to call upon her foes the constant heart to see,
Where Pedro's form is still enshrined, and evermore shall be.

XXII.

But none on fair Maria looks, by none her breast is seen,
Save angry Heaven remembering well the murder of the Queen,
The wounds of jealous harlot rage, which virgin blood must stanch,
And all the scorn that mingled in the bitter cup of Blanche.

XXIII.

The utter coldness of neglect that haughty spirit stings,
As if a thousand fiends were there, with all their flapping wings;
She wraps the veil about her head, as if 'twere all a dream—
The love—the murder—and the wrath—and that rebellious scream;

XXIV.

For still there's shouting on the plain, and spurring far and nigh,
"God save the King—Amen! amen!—King Henry!" is the cry;
While Pedro all alone is left, upon his bloody bier,
Not one remains to cry to God, "Our lord lies murder'd here!"

The story of Blanche of Bourbon has been alluded to so frequently, that I shall venture on inserting a translation of another of these ballads, in which her murder is described.

The Death of Queen Blanche.

"Maria de Padilla, be not thus of dismal mood,
For if I twice have wedded me it all was for thy good,
But if upon Queen Blanche ye will that I some scorn should show,
For a banner to Medina my messenger shall go;
The work shall be of Blanche's tears, of Blanche's blood the ground;
Such pennon shall they weave for thee, such sacrifice be found."
Then to the Lord of Ortis, that excellent baron,
He said, "Now hear me, Ynigo, forthwith for this begone."
Then answer made Don Ynigo, "Such gift I ne'er will bring,
For he that harmeth Lady Blanche doth harm my lord the king."
Then Pedro to his chamber went, his cheek was burning red,
And to a bowman of his guard the dark command he said.
The bowman to Medina pass'd; when the queen beheld him near,
"Alas!" she said, "my maidens, he brings my death, I fear."
Then said the archer, bending low, "The king's commandment take,
And see thy soul be order'd well with God that did it make,
For lo! thine hour is come, therefrom no refuge may there be."
Then gently spake the Lady Blanche, "My friend, I pardon thee;
Do what thou wilt, so be the king hath his commandment given,
Deny me not confession—if so, forgive ye heaven."
Much grieved the bowman for her tears, and for her beauty's sake,
While thus Queen Blanche of Bourbon her last complaint did make;—
"Oh France! my noble country—oh blood of high Bourbon,
Not eighteen years have I seen out before my life is gone.
The king hath never known me; a virgin true I die.
Whate'er I've done, to proud Castile no treason e'er did I.
The crown they put upon my head was a crown of blood and sighs,
God grant me soon another crown more precious in the skies."
These words she spake, then down she knelt, and took the bowman's blow—
Her tender neck was cut in twain, and out her blood did flow.

NOTE VI.—DWARFS IN ROMANCE (page 31).

The dwarf is a personage familiar to every reader of romance; and without doubt the writers of romances took him from their own observation of actual manners. In the natural deformity, which is contemplated in these days with no feelings but those of pain and pity, it seems undeniable that even the "delicatissime donzelle" of the elder time had found much store of such mirth as suited their fancy. The readers of Ariosto, and the other wits of the old Italian school, do not need to be reminded of the more enviable parts sometimes ascribed to these "Sgrignuti monstri e contrafatti." It is only within these few years that the dwarf has ceased to be a regular piece of furniture in the saloons of the great ladies of Poland and Russia.

The expectation under which the Don approaches the imagined castle is quite in character. In the *Espejo*, P. 1, C. 86, we find that, "A un lado de la fuerte casa estava *un Enano per avisar la venida* del ladron Minapreso, *el qual sonó el cuerno*;" and in Boiardo (C. 29, v. 43), the arrival of a noble personage is announced in the same manner.

"... verso el pino il senatore andava,
Ecco sopr' una torre appare un nano
C'ha un gran corno, e forte lo sonava."

Again in the *Gyrone* (L. 15, 89),

"Ne molte stan che della torre un corno
Con horribil romor nell' aria suona,
Ecco apparir sopra un cavallo adorno
Un cavalier con lucide arme intorno."—

And in our own old Romance:

"A dwarf shall wend by her side,
Such was Launcelot's commandment;
So were the manners in that tide,
When a maid on message went."

See also Ariosto, C. 2, 48, C. 4, 15, &c.

NOTE VII.—SIR LAUNCELOT (pages 33 and 114).

The tone of the ballad referred to is considerably different from that which English readers have been accustomed to meet with in the narratives of the loves of Queen Ginevra and her knight. See Depping's Sammlung, p. 308.

Nunca fuera Cavallero, &c.

Ne'er was cavalier attended
So by damsel and by dame,
As Sir Launcelot the worthy,
When from Brittany he came.

Ladies fair attended on him,
Highborn damsels dress'd his steed,
She, the courteous Quintañona,
Pour'd herself the wine and mead.

Tell, I pray, the reason wherefore
So to him they minister'd—
Sure of lovely Queen Ginevra
Ne'er the story have you heard.

* * * * *

Once, when dark was all the valley,
To Ginevra came her knight,
By her lonely lamp he saw her—
"Ha!" quoth he, "your cheek is white!"

"If I'm pale," quoth Queen Ginevra,
"'Tis for anger, not for fear.
But yon knight had never said so,
Had my Launcelot been near.

"Words he spake might well enrage me,
Scornful words the false knight spake."—
"Ha!" quoth Launcelot—"securely
Sleeps he that to death shall wake."

Forth, ere yet the day is dawning,
Gaily rides Sir Launcelot,
Soon he meets the ribald scorner,
Yonder pine-trees mark the spot.

Underneath the verdant pine-trees,
Launcelot, his charger reigning,
Dares the knight to mortal combat,
For his words of foul disdaining.

In the first career their lances
Both are shiver'd at the thrust,
They have drawn their battle-axes,
Blood-drops rain upon the dust.

Ha! within the ribald's bosom
Quakes and droops his conscious soul
Soon the blow of rightful vengeance
Gives him in the dust to roll.

Fair Ginevra's smile was sweet,
Balmy were the words she said,
When her true-love at her feet,
Toss'd that night the caitiff's head.

The story of this ballad seems to be merely a different version of Sir Launcelot's famous battle with Sir Mador, by which Queen Ginevra was saved from expiating at the stake her supposed guilt in relation

to the death of "the Scottish knight that Queen Ganore by poison slough."

But those who are read in the old romances know how frequently gifts of "caitiffs' heads" were received with delight by fair hands, from the peerless Sir Launcelot du Lake. They know also how irresistible were the personal attractions of the cavalier to whom Don Quixote, in the text, compares himself. There is, for example, the whole adventure of the amorous young lady of the Castle of Ascalot, which is detailed with infinite naïveté in the Morte Arthur.

Launcelot wist what was her will,
Well he know by other mo,
Her brother cleped he him till,
And to her chamber gonne they go.

He set him downe for the maiden's sake,
Upon her bed, there she lay;
Courteously to her he spake,
For to comfort that fair May.

In her arms she gan him take,
And these words gan she say,
"Sir, but gif that ye it make,
Save my life no leech may."

* * * * *

"Sir, gif that your will it were,
Sith I of thee ne may have mair,
Something ye would leave me here,
To look on when me langeth sair," &c. &c.

There is no agreement among the critics of romance as to the parentage of the first history of the Achievements of Launcelot of the Lake. Mr. Ellis says, that of all the versions of that strange history, the most meritorious is that written in verse by Chretien de Troyes in the 12th century, and entitled, "La Charette." The general outline cannot be better told than in Mr. Ellis's own words.

"King Ban, whose acts of prowess we have so often witnessed, having returned in his old age to Brittany, was again attacked by his inveterate enemy Claudas; and, after a long war, saw himself reduced to the possession of a single fortress, the impregnable castle of Trible, where he was besieged by the enemy. In this extremity, he determined to solicit the assistance of Arthur, and escaped in a dark night with his infant son Lancelot and his queen Helen, leaving the castle of Trible in the hands of his seneschal, who immediately betrayed the place to Claudas. The flames of his burning citadel reached the eyes of the unfortunate monarch during his flight, and he expired with grief. The wretched Helen, abandoning for a moment the care of her infant son, flew to the assistance of her husband, and, returning after the fruitless attempt to restore his life, discovered the little Lancelot in the arms of a nymph, who, on her approach, suddenly sprung with the child into a deep lake, and instantly disappeared. This nymph

was the beautiful Vivian, the mistress of the enchanter Merlin, who thought fit to undertake the education of the infant hero at her court, which was situated within this imaginary lake; and hence her pupil was afterwards distinguished by the name of Lancelot du Lac.

"The queen, after this double loss, retired to a convent, where she was soon joined by the widow of Bohort; for this good king, on learning the death of his brother, died also of grief, leaving two infant sons, Lyonel and Bohort; who, having been for some time secreted by a faithful knight, named Farien, from the fury of Claudas, were afterwards carried off by the lady of the lake, and educated in company with their cousin Lancelot.

"The fairy, when her pupil had attained the age of eighteen, conveyed him to the court of Arthur, for the purpose of demanding his admission to the honour of knighthood; and at the first appearance of the youthful candidate, the graces of his person, which were not inferior to his courage and activity, made an instantaneous and indelible impression on the heart of Guenever, while her charms inspired him with an equally ardent and constant passion. The amours of these lovers throw a very singular colouring over the whole history of Arthur. It is for the sake of Guenever that the amorous Lancelot achieves the conquest of Northumberland; that he defeats Gallehaut, King of the Marches, who afterwards becomes his secret and most attached confidant; that he cleaves down numberless giants, and lays whole cargoes of tributary crowns at the feet of his suzerain, finding, in his stolen interviews with the queen, an ample indemnification for his various hardships and labours. But this is not all. Arthur, deceived by the artifices of the false Guenever, who was, as we have seen, the illegitimate daughter of Leodegan, declares her the partner of his throne, and dismisses his queen to a distant province; where she is immediately joined by her lover, and follows without restraint the natural bent of her inclinations. Yet Lancelot is dissatisfied; it is necessary to the dignity of his mistress, that she should still share the bed of Arthur, and that, protected in her reputation by the sword of her lover, she should lead a life of ceremonious and splendid adultery. This point is accomplished, and their intercourse continues as usual."

But the same learned and elegant critic, who followed Sir Walter Scott in believing that many of the romantic legends received their first shape from the minstrels of "the North Countrie," finds strong confirmation of his theory in the scenery amongst which the achievements of Sir Launcelot and his companions are represented to have taken place. For example, upon the authority of Knighton, he fixes the "Chateau de la joyeuse Garde," the favourite residence of Sir Launcelot, at Berwick-upon-Tweed; and adds, that at Meigle in Angus, tradition still points out the tomb of "Dame Ganore," the beautiful and lascivious Queen Guenever. For all manner of information concerning the Knight of the Lake, see Mr. Southey's Edition of the Morte Arthur, Ellis's Specimens of the Metrical Romances, vol i., and the Notes to Marmion and Sir Tristrem.

This note has run out to an unreasonable length, but it would be wrong to conclude it without quoting one of the most beautiful

passages that is to be found either in romance or in poetry—the speech of Sir Bohart, delivered over the dead body of Sir Launcelot du Lake: —"And now, I dare say, that Sir Launcelot, there thou liest, thou were never matched of none earthly knight's hands. And thou were the courtliest knight that ever bare shielde—And thou were the truest friend to thy lover that ever bestrode horse—And thou were the truest lover of a synful man that ever loved woman—And thou were the kindest man that ever stroke with swerde—And thou were the goodliest person that ever came among prece of knyghtes—And thou were the meekest man, and the gentillest, that ever eate in hall among ladies—And thou were the sternest knyghte to thy mortal foe that ever put speare in rest."—MALORY.

Long after the old romances had past into oblivion, the name of Launcelot was kept alive among our common people by ballads of the same class with those Spanish ones of which a specimen has been given above. The most popular was that which begins;

"When Arthur first in court began,
And was approved king," &c.

NOTE VIII.—THE TALE OF ABINDARRAEZ AND XARIFA (page 54).

During the reign of King Ferdinand of Arragon, while the Moorish kingdom of Granada was nodding to its fall, a gallant Spanish knight, Rodrigo de Narvaez, was named constable or governor of the Castle of Alhora, near the boundaries of the Moorish territory. As he was, according to his custom, one night making a reconnaissance at the head of several of his followers, to prevent a surprise from the enemy, he met a young Moorish cavalier splendidly armed and accoutred, who for some time defended himself valiantly against the superior force of his enemies; but was at length severely wounded, and made prisoner. The Castilian endeavoured to comfort his noble captive, and treated him so generously, that he extracted from him his story. The Moor Abindarraez had been bred up with Xarifa, daughter of the Alcayde of Coyn, under the belief that she was his sister, until he learned by chance that he was not of her blood, but descended from the renowned, but unfortunate family of the Abencerrages. Fraternal affection then gave place to a stronger passion, which Xarifa repaid with equal warmth. The meeting of the lovers could only be by night, and by stealth: for Abindarraez, after the discovery of his birth, resided no longer in her father's castle. Xarifa had assigned her lover a rendezvous upon the unfortunate night when he fell into the power of Don Rodrigo, and he was on the road to Coyn, when he encountered the Castilian knight. Don Rodrigo de Narvaez was affected by the captive's story; and on his promise to return within three days, and surrender himself to his captor at the Castle of Alhora, he gave him liberty to keep his appointment. He arrives there in safety, and Xarifa, reunited to her lover, refuses again to part with him. She returns with him to the castle of Don Rodrigo, who, charmed with their mutual love, the constancy of Xarifa, and the gallantry and faith of Abin-

darraez, restores them to liberty, and obtains the consent of the Alcayde of Coyn to their union. There are many ballads on this romantic story, of which the following may serve as a specimen.

Abindarraez and Xarifa.

I.

The bold Moor, young Abindarraez,
Nigh the castle checks his rein,
Where his love, the fair Xarifa,
Long had watch'd, and wept in vain.

II.

"Do I live to hope that coldness,
Or some brighter maiden's charms,
Keep the faithless Abindarraez
From the fond Xarifa's arms?

III.

"Yes, I hope neglect or falsehood,
Aught but perils, cause him stay;
Aught, save that the prowling Christians
Met him on his midnight way.

IV.

"'Gainst their numbers, small assistance
Sabre, lance, and targe could give;
Gone is gallant Abindarraez,
And Xarifa will not live.

V.

"Who that loves would live forsaken,
When her valiant lover fell?
Ne'er such tale of Moorish maiden
Shall a Moorish minstrel tell.'

VI.

With such plaints she toss'd at midnight
On her couch that knew not rest,
With such plaints by day lamented,
Gazing from the turret's crest.

VII.

Bold in love, the night she fear'd not,
Nor the solitude so drear;
And the voice of tempest heard not,
Howling in the mountains near.

VIII.

Long, long she kept her lofty station,
Gazed in vain on earth and sky;
And at length, her hopes renouncing,
Left it with a heavy sigh.

IX.

Then the Moorish lance gave signal,
Striking thrice upon the gate;
And Xarifa's trusty maiden
Open'd to her lover straight.

X.

O how gay and gallant show'd he,
When he sought her chamber-door,
In his tunic, loop'd with silver,
Like a brave and noble Moor.

XI.

With the plumage on his turban,
Gather'd with a golden check;
And his golden-handled sabre
Hilted with an eagle's neck.

XII.

Thus stood gallant Abindarraez,
But for rapture naught could speak;
Till, in broken exclamations,
Love and joy a passage seek.

NOTE IX.—TURPIN'S CHRONICLE (page 63).

The absurd chronicle attributed to Turpin (or Tilpin) seems to have been composed in Latin, about the end of the 11th, or beginning of the 12th century, but owed much of its celebrity to the innumerable versions and paraphrases of it, which soon after began to make their appearance—first in French, and then in Spanish, English, and all the other vulgar dialects. The original work itself was first printed in a collection, entitled "Germanicarum Rerum quatuor chronographi." Frankfort, 1566, *folio*. Stories of miracles, relics, churches founded, conversions, &c. &c., fill the far greater part of the monkish chronicle; but from the absurd thread of fiction concerning Charlemagne, on which these monastic pearls are strung, there can be no doubt that almost the whole web of the second great class of romances was spun. Those who wish to see what are the most plausible conjectures that have been formed, concerning the origin of all these extraordinary falsifications of the splendid *history* of the great Frankish Emperor, may be referred to Warton, Ellis, Leyden, and Schlegel. The opinions of these critics are so different, and the details, without which these opinions would be unintelligible, so extensive, that it would be useless and absurd to attempt giving any account of this "great controversy,"

in the shape of a note upon Don Quixote. As to the extent of these falsifications themselves, a tolerable guess may be formed from the initiatory lines of "Roland and Ferragus," a romance extant in the Auchinleck MS., which, so far as it goes, presents a pretty faithful compendium of Turpin's original *Magnum Opus*.

"*An hundred years it was and three,*
Sithan God deed upon the tree,
That Charles the king
Had all France in his hand,
Denmark and England,
Withouten any lesing;
Lorraine and Lombardie,
Gascoyne, Bayonne, and Picardie,
Was still his bidding;
And Emperor he was of Rome,
And Lord of all Christendom,
Then was he a high lordling."

Note X.—Diana of Valencia (page 67).

"When the sovereigns, Don Philip III. and Donna Margarita, were on their way back from Portugal in 1602, they halted for a night in the city of Valencia, and their host there was the Marquis de las Navas, and they were also entertained by that famous woman, Diana, whom George de Montemayor so greatly commends and celebrates in his history and verses; for, though very old, this Diana is still alive, and they say, whoever visits her may discover plainly, that in her youth she must have been exceedingly beautiful. She is the most wealthy and rich person in the town. But it was on account of her being so famous, and of the praises of George de Montemayor, that the sovereigns and all their court repaired to the house of this woman, being desirous to see her as a thing worthy of wonder and of admiration. And, indeed, she is a very sensible and well-spoken woman." Lope de Vega also alludes to the real Diana in his *Dorotea*, p. 52.

Note XI. (page 79).

Machuca (*The Pounder*).

I.

The Christians have beleaguer'd the famous walls of Xeres,
Among them are Don Alvar and Don Diego Perez,
And many other gentlemen, who, day succeeding day,
Give challenge to the Saracen and all his chivalry.

II.

When rages the hot battle before the gates of Xeres,
By trace of gore ye may explore the dauntless path of Perez.
No knight like Don Diego—no sword like his is found
In all the host, to hew the boast of Paynims to the ground.

III.

It fell one day when furiously they battled on the plain,
Diego shivered both his lance and trusty blade in twain;
The Moors that saw it shouted, for esquire none was near
To serve Diego at his need with falchion, mace, or spear.

IV.

Loud, loud he blew his bugle, sore troubled was his eye,
But by God's grace before his face there stood a tree full nigh,
An olive-tree with branches strong, close by the wall of Xeres—
"Yon goodly bough will serve, I trow," quoth Don Diego Perez.

V.

A gnarlèd branch he soon did wrench down from that olive strong,
Which o'er his head-piece brandishing, he spurs among the throng.
God wot! full many a Pagan must in his saddle reel! [feel?
What leech shall cure, what priest shall shrive, if once that weight ye

VI.

But when Don Alvar saw him thus bruising down the foe,
Quoth he, "I've seen some flail-arm'd man belabour barley so!
Sure mortal mould did ne'er enfold such mastery of power;
Let's call Diego Perez THE POUNDER from this hour."

NOTE XII.—SIR FERUMBRAS (page 96).

Mr. Ellis has given an analysis of an English unprinted metrical romance upon this story, which appears to be nothing more than a translation from the French one. According to all these authorities, Laban, Sovereign of Babylon, possessor of the renowned city of Agramore on the River Flagote, was a sore enemy of the Christians, and drove them out of the Holy Land. Not contented with this, he sent his son Sir Ferumbras after the poor Christians into Europe, where Ferumbras demeaned himself like a true son of the terrible Laban, and, among other well-authenticated exploits, took possession of Rome itself. Charlemagne forthwith sends some of his paladins to give knightly combat to this fearful Saracen, and a long series of romantic adventures ensues, in which dwarfs, giants, cavaliers, virgins, Moors, priests, and enchanters, walk through their usual paces, all more or less for the exaltation of the glory of Sir Ferumbras, the Prince-Royal of Babylon. At last, however, OLIVER meets with the hero, and then the tables are turned. The combat is long and doubtful, chiefly in consequence of two bottles of balsam which Ferumbras carries (in his holsters), a simple drop of which taken internally is sufficient to restore the continuity of the most cruelly mangled skin; of which Sir Ferumbras of course avails himself on the receipt of every blow; and, more wonderful far, of which he constantly offers a few drops to his antagonist every time he sees his own sword come back bloody from

the body on which he is exercising its edge with all the accustomed fury of a Babylonian. In the *Carlo Magno*, we have him introduced upon this occasion as using these expressions, "O Senor Olivero, O vos bolved a curer de vos llagas, o beved del balsamo que commego trago, y luego serez salvo, y assi podreys pelear y defendar vuestra vida," &c. Instead of accepting this polite offer, the fierce Oliver aims a back blow at Sir Ferumbras's saddle, the two bottles tumble into a river, and the pagan is then as easily beaten as Antæus was, when Hercules lifted him off the ground. In a word, the son of Laban, the Emperor of Babylon, gives in. "I am so hurt," says he (to give the words of the English romance),

> "I am so hurt, I may not stonde;
> I put me all in thy grace;
> My Gods beene false by water and lond;
> I reng them all here in this place;
> Baptized now will I bene," &c.

The baptized Ferumbras is forthwith created a paladin and a peer, and heads on all occasions the host of Charlemagne. His father hearing of his sudden conversion, immediately brings a huge army to fight Charlemagne and his son; but, as might be expected, they overcome him, and it is only by the intercession of Ferumbras that the head of the Emperor Laban is permitted to remain upon his royal shoulders. Charlemagne spares him, and on the instant

> "Bade them ordain a great vat,
> To baptize the Sowdan in,
> And look what he shall *hat* (be called)."

The Sowdan, unfortunately, is afflicted, on sight of this great vat, with a very impious species of hydrophobia; and after a great many vain attempts to reconcile him to baptism, Charlemagne is compelled to have recourse to immediate decapitation, as the only alternative that had occurred either to him or to any of his company. "It was done," quoth the romancer,—

> "It was done at the king's command;
> His soul was sent to hell,
> To dance in that sorry land,
> With devils that were full fell."

Sir Ferumbras, being invested with one half of the kingdom of Spain, prefers settling there to claiming the allegiance of his father's pagan subjects. He marries, and is crowned in due form; and becomes on the whole a peaceable character, but amuses himself now and then with cutting and carving both his own body and the bodies of his friends, merely for the pleasure of exhibiting the wonderful virtues of the "Balsam of Fierabras"—the recipe for concocting the which Don Quixote will give us in proper form a few pages farther on.

Note XIII. (page 173).

The Excommunication of the Cid.

I.

It was when from Spain across the main the Cid had come to Rome,
He chanced to see chairs four and three beneath Saint Peter's dome.
"Now tell, I pray, what chairs be they?"—"Seven kings do sit thereon,
As well doth suit, all at the foot of the holy father's throne.

II.

"The Pope he sitteth above them all, that they may kiss his toe,
Below the keys the Flower-de-lys doth make a gallant show;
For his great puissance, the King of France next to the Pope may sit,
The rest more low, all in a row, as doth their station fit."—

III.

"Ha!" quoth the Cid, "now God forbid! it is a shame, I wiss,
To see the Castle[1] planted below the Flower-de-lys.[2]
No harm, I hope, good father Pope—although I move thy chair."—
—In pieces small he kicked it all ('twas of the ivory fair).

IV.

The Pope's own seat he from his feet did kick it far away,
And the Spanish chair he planted upon its place that day;
Above them all he planted it, and laugh'd right bitterly,
Looks sour and bad I trow he had, as grim as grim might be.

V.

Now when the Pope was aware of this, he was an angry man,
His lips that night, with solemn rite, pronounced the awful ban;
The curse of God, who died on rood, was on that sinner's head—
To hell and woe man's soul must go if once that curse be said.

VI.

I wot, when the Cid was aware of this, a woeful man was he,
At dawn of day he came to pray at the blessed father's knee;
"Absolve me, blessed father, have pity on my prayer,
Absolve my soul, and penance I for my sin will bear."—

VII.

"Who is this sinner," quoth the Pope, "that at my foot doth kneel?"
—"I am Rodrigo Diaz—a poor Baron of Castile."—
Much marvell'd all were in the hall, when that name they heard him say:
—"Rise up, rise up," the Pope he said, "I do thy guilt away.

VIII.

"I do thy guilt away," he said—"and my curse I blot it out—
God save Rodrigo Diaz, my Christian champion stout;—
I trow, if I had known thee, my grief it had been sore,
To curse Ruy Diaz de Bivar, God's scourge upon the Moor."

[1] The arms of Castile. [2] The arms of France.

Note XIV.—Mendoza (page 207).

Mendoza composed poems of many sorts, satires, lyrics, epistles, sonnets, pastorals, and ballads; but, next to his Lazarillo de Tormes, which he wrote before he left college at Salamanca, his most celebrated work is his History of the War of Granada, which he composed towards the decline of his life, and which was not suffered to be printed until thirty years after his death, in consequence of the hardihood of some of the opinions expressed in it. With the exceptions of Machiavelli and Guicciardini, there is perhaps no modern writer who has produced anything so nearly approaching to the pure and classical character of the great historical monuments left us by the Greeks and Romans. The life of Mendoza himself was a very extraordinary one. He owed his rise to letters, and he never ceased to cultivate them during the whole of a very long life; and yet he was engaged continually in public business, and even bore the first part in many of the most important transactions of his time. He was taken from college by Charles V. soon after he had published his Lazarillo de Tormes, and sent ambassador to Venice, where he greatly distinguished himself in the management of several very difficult intrigues. He afterwards represented the person of the same monarch at the Council of Trent, and still later at the Court of Rome. In the Italian wars of those days he acquired the character of a skilful and decided commander. He was governor of Sienna; and from thence, it may almost be said he administered the whole affairs of Italy during a period of six years. After harmony was restored between the Papal See and his own prince, Mendoza was appointed to the high office of gonfalonier of the church, and in that capacity was commander-in-chief of all the ecclesiastical forces. He retired to Spain on the accession of Philip II., who does not appear to have treated him with the same confidence as his father, inasmuch as, for the most part, the rest of his life was passed in comparative privacy and literary leisure. Nevertheless, he accompanied Philip into France, and was present at the great battle of St. Quintin, in 1557. Nor had old age any power to check the fervour of his spirit, if we may put faith in some of the anecdotes commonly recorded of him: for example, we are told, that "long after his hairs were grey," he quarrelled with a nobleman who was his rival in some amour, and coming to high words one day in the presence-chamber of Philip, expressed himself with so much scorn, that his adversary laid his hand on his poniard. Mendoza, observing this, seized the man, who was far younger than himself, and flung him furiously over the balcony, into the street.—Altogether, the career of Mendoza was like that of Cervantes himself, a striking example, not only of the versatility of genius, but of the benefit which literature, in many of its finest walks, may derive from being cultivated by the active and energetic spirits of the world.

Note XV.—Orlando Furioso's Extravagance (page 239).

The beautiful passage referred to occurs in the 23rd canto of the Orlando Furioso, and it is from the adventure there narrated that the

whole poem of Ariosto takes its title. Orlando has discovered love-knots and inscriptions carved upon the trees about the fountain, and is at last convinced, that they have been executed, not only by the hand of Medoro, but by that of Angelica herself. It is then that the poet comes to what he promises at the outset of his whole performance:—

"Dirò d'Orlando . . . .
Cosa non detta in prosa mai nè in rima,
Che per amor venne in furore, e matto,
D'uom che si saggio era stimato prima."

Canto 1, 2.

The concluding stanzas of the description are as follows:—

"Tagliò lo scritto, e 'l sasso, e sino al Cielo
A volo alzar fe le minute schegge.
Infelice quell' antro, ed ogni stelo
In cui Medoro e Angelica si legge!
Così restâr quel dì, ch'ombra, nè gelo
A pastor mai non daran più, nè a gregge.
E quella fonte, già sì chiara, e pura,
Da cotanta ira fu poco sicura;

"Chè rami, e ceppi, e tronchi, e sassi, e zolle
Non cessò di gittar nelle bell' onde,
Finchè da sommo ad imo sì turbolle,
Che non furo mai più chiare, nè monde;
E stanco alfin, e alfin di sudor molle,
Poi che la lena vinta non risponde
Allo sdegno, al grave odio, all' ardente ira,
Cade sul prato, e verso il Ciel sospira.

"Afflitto, e stanco alfin cade nell' erba,
E ficca gli occhi al Cielo, e non fa motto.
Senza cibo, e dormir, così si serba,
Che 'l Sole esce tre volte, e torna sotto.
Di crescer non cessò la pena acerba,
Che fuor del senno alfin l' ebbe condotto.
Il quarto dì, da gran furor commosso,
E maglie, e piastre si stracciò di dosso.

"Quì riman l'elmo, e là riman lo scudo,
Lontan gli arnesi, e più lontan l' usbergo.
L' arme sue tutte, insomma vi concludo,
Avean pel bosco differente albergo.
E poi si squarciò i panni, e monstrò ignudo
L' ispido ventre, e tutto 'l petto, e 'l tergo;
E cominciò la gran follia sì orrenda,
Che della più non sarà mai chi intenda.

"In tanta rabbia, in tanto furor venne,
Che rimase offuscato in ogni senso.
Di tor la spada in man non gli sovvenne;
Chè fatte avria mirabil cose, penso.

Ma nè quella, nè scure, nè bipenne
Era bisogno al suo vigore immenso.
Quivi fe ben delle sue prove eccelse,
Ch' un' alto pino al primo crollo svelse.

"E svelse dopo il primo altri parecchi;
Comme fosser finochi, ebuli, o aneti;
E fe il simil di querce, e d'olmi vecchi,
Di faggi, e d'orni, e d'ilici, e d'abeti.
Quel, ch' un uccellator, che s' apparecchi
Il campo mondo, fa, per por le reti,
De' giunchi, e delle stoppie, e dell' urtiche,
Facea de'cerri, e de'altre piante antiche."

Note XVI. (page 272).

The Death of King Sancho.

("Guarte, Guarte, Rey Don Sancho," &c.).

"Beware, beware, King Sancho, for treason is begun,
A traitor base of traitorous race, the crafty Dolfos' son,
He has come forth from Zamora, and evil is his eye,
And if he comes unto the king, be sure my king shall die."
There is crying in the camp, there is crying on the green—
"The king is dead, the king is dead, the traitor who hath seen?"—
"You need not ask, you need not ask, for Vellido I saw,
With his poniard, with his poniard,—he came from Zamora."
There was crying in the camp, there was crying on the green,
But the loudest cries they did arise from Zamora at e'en;
From the streets and from the halls sounded trumpet and guitar,
And Uracca in her garden, in her garden-bower afar,
The red wine pour'd to Vellido, by the light of the evening-star.

Count Julian.

("En Ceupta esta Julian," &c.).

Count Julian stands in Ceupta, in Ceupta by the shore,
For he will send a message, a message to the Moor;
For he will send a letter, and he must find a Moor
To write it in the Arab tongue, upon the Christian shore:
He has found an old man walking on the sand beside the sea,
An ancient man, with a white beard, an old, old Moor was he;
And he hath written the letter, and the same hath Julian seal'd,
But cruel Julian dreaded the thing might be reveal'd,
And when the Moor had finish'd it, he took him by the throat,
Without remorse he strangled him, and buried him in that spot.
It was a woeful letter, that day the old Moor wrote!

* * * * * *

It was a woeful letter, for it bade the Moor king come,
And take to him the fairest realm was ever in Christendom.
O woe to thee! O woe to thee! thou famous Spanish land,
Soon on thy shore the cruel Moor with all his host shall stand,
And all thy riches they shall be in the misbeliever's hand.
O Spain! thou glorious region, among thy rivers' sand,
The mighty store of silver, of silver fair and pale,
And of the red gold, from days of old, was never known to fail.
But soon shall now be casten thy pride away from thee,
Soon thou shalt bow thee in the dust beneath Moorish mastery.
Thy cities fair beyond compare, on plain and rocky shore,
They all shall be the heritage of the misbelieving Moor.—
Our soil it is enslaved, for our sins against God and man.
And all by the black treason of accursed Julian.

* * * * * *

With a heavy heart Rodrigo rear'd the banner broad of Spain,
To give the false Moors battle as they muster'd on the plain;
Like a true king he battled, albeit his heart was sore,
But the curse of God was mighty, and the day was to the Moor.
From that day forth Rodrigo was never seen again;
They found Orelio riderless, roaming on the plain.—
Now, a curse on thee, Don Orpas, thou false bishop of Spain!
A curse on the black counsel thou gavest to the king!
O woe, beyond all measure, that I such a song should sing!
O woe, beyond all measure, that by two traitors' guile,
And for a single damsel, and her accursed smile,
God should have sent this sorrow upon the land of Spain!—
—God, look upon our misery, and be our God again!

NOTE XVII.—COSTUME IN FRANCE, SPAIN, AND ITALY (page 326).

The reader will not be displeased at seeing some picturesque notices of the costume of Spain, France, and Italy, which occur in the old English novel of "The Unfortunate Traveller, or Life of Jack Wilton," published in 1594, by the celebrated Thomas Nashe.

"What is there in France to be learned more than in England, but falsehood in friendship, perfect slovenry, and to love no man but for my pleasure? I have known some that have continued there by the space of half a dozen years, and when they came home, they have hid a little weerish lean face under a broad French hat, kept a terrible coil with the dust in the street in their long cloaks of grey paper, and spoken English strangely. Nought else have they profited by their travel, but to distinguish the true Bourdeaux grape, and know a cup of neat Gascoigne wine from wine of Orleans; yea, and peradventure this also, to esteem of the p—x as a pimple, to wear a velvet patch on their face, and walk melancholy with their arms folded.

"From Spain what bringeth our traveller? A skull-crowned hat of the fashion of an old deep porringer; a diminutive alderman's ruff with short strings, like the droppings of a man's nose; a close-bellied

doublet coming down with a peake behind, as far as the crupper, and cut off before by the breast-bone, like a partlet or neckercher; a wide pair of gascoynes, which, ungathered, would make a couple of women's riding-kirtles; huge hangers, that have half a cow-hide in them; a rapier that is lineally descended from half a dozen dukes at the least; let his cloak be as long or as short as you will; if long, it is faced with Turkey grogeran ravelled; if short, it hath a cape like a calf's tongue, and is not so deep in his whole length, nor so much cloth in it, I will justify, as only the standing cape of a Dutchman's cloak. I have not yet touched all, for he hath in either shoe as much taffaty for his tyings, as would serve for an ancient; which serveth him (if you would have the mystery of it) of the own accord for a shoe-rag. If you talk with him, he makes a dish-cloth of his own country, in comparison of Spain; but if you urge him particularly wherein it exceeds, he can give no instance, but in Spain they have better bread than any we have; when (poor hungry slaves!) they may crumble it into water well enough, and make misons with it, for they have not a good morsel of meat, except it be salt pilchers, to eat with it, all the year long; and, which is more, they are poor beggars, and lie in foul straw every night.

"Italy, the paradise of the earth, and the epicure's heaven, how doth it form our young master? It makes him to kiss his hand like an ape, cringe his neck like a starveling, and play at *Hey-pass-repass-come-aloft*, when he salutes a man; from thence he brings the art of atheism, the art of epicurizing, the art of whoring, the art of poisoning, the art of sodomitry; the only probable good thing they have to keep us from utterly condemning it is, that it maketh a man an excellent courtier, a curious carpet knight; which is, by interpretation, a fine close letcher, a glorious hypocrite; it is now a privy note amongst the better sort of men, when they would set a singular mark or brand on a notorious villain, to say he hath been in Italy."

Note XVIII.—The Great Captain (page 332.)

Gonsalvo de Cordova, illustrious even in his early youth for his services in the last war of Granada, owed his title of The Great Captain to his successful conduct of the war in Naples, from which he twice drove the French forces, commanded by the most eminent generals of the age. Brantome pretends that the success of Gonsalvo was less owing to any extraordinary genius of his own, than to the dissensions which prevailed among the French leaders opposed to him;—however this might have been, the fact is certain, that Gonsalvo's reputation stood so high, that King Ferdinand, his sovereign, was exceedingly jealous of him. The king having come to Naples, was much piqued on discovering that the name of the Great Captain was an object of much greater respect there than his own; he deprived him of his command, under pretext of desire to have him nearer his person, and they embarked in the same vessel for Spain. At the interview which took place at Savona between Ferdinand and Lewis XII., Gonsalvo was present. The French monarch received the Great Captain with all the respect imaginable, but could with difficulty

prevail on Ferdinand to permit of his being seated and covered in the royal presence. In return, the King of Spain was lavish of attentions to the Chevalier Bayard and Louis D'Ars, and addressed Louis XII. in these words: "My brother, these are two brave and faithful servants. He who has such cavaliers with him, should take especial care of them." One might have replied, that he himself had no need of any such suggestion in regard to Gonsalvo de Cordova, for he scarcely ever permitted his own brave and faithful servant to be a moment out of his sight. He carried him with him to Spain, where the Great Captain lingered out the remainder of his life in such a state of obscurity and inaction, that he was accustomed to speak of himself as an "Exile." He founded, towards the close of his life, a superb monastery in the district of the city of Granada, called *Antequerela*, and was buried in its church. His epitaph, which still remains there, is simple and grand:

GONSALVUS FERDINANDUS A CORDUBA,
DUX MAGNUS HISPANIARUM,
GALLORUM ET TURCORUM TERROR.

It was from the exploits of his mature manhood that Gonsalvo de Cordova acquired his high place in European history, and his title of the Great Captain; but the romantic incidents of his youthful campaigns against the Moors of Granada fill, without doubt, the most interesting pages of his Chronicle, and have furnished one of the best of the French novelists (Florian) with the groundwork of one of the most agreeable of his narratives. It was Gonsalvo that arranged the terms of the treaty by which the Moorish sovereign of Granada at last abdicated his Spanish throne; and the Chronicle contains the story of the unfortunate prince's flight, agreeing in almost every particular with the ancient ballad on the same subject, of which I shall insert my translation.

The Flight from Granada.

There was crying in Granada when the sun was going down;
Some calling on the Trinity, some calling on Mahoun;
Here pass'd away the Koran, there in the Cross was borne,
And here was heard the Christian bell, and there the Moorish horn;
Te Deum Laudamus! was up the Alcala sung;
Down from th' Alhambra's minarets were all the crescents flung;
The arms thereon of Arragon they with Castile's display;
One king comes in in triumph, one weeping goes away.
Thus cried the weeper, while his hands his old white beard did tear,
"Farewell, farewell, Granada! thou city without peer;
Woe, woe, thou pride of Heathendom! seven hundred years and more
Have gone since first the faithful thy royal sceptre bore.
Thou wert the happy mother of an high renowned race;
Within thee dwelt a haughty line that now go from their place,
Within thee fearless knights did dwell, who fought with mickle glee
The enemies of proud Castile, the bane of Christentie.

The mother of fair dames wert thou, of truth and beauty rare,
Into whose arms did noble knights for solace sweet repair ;—
For whose dear sakes the gallants of Afric made display
Of might in joust and battle on many a bloody day :
Here gallants held it little thing for ladies' sake to die,
Or for the Prophet's honour, and pride of Soldanry ;
For here did valour flourish, and deeds of warlike might
Ennobled lordly palaces, in which was our delight.
The gardens of thy Vega, its fields and blooming bowers—
Woe, woe ! I see their beauty gone, and scatter'd all their flowers.—
No reverence can he claim—the king that such a land hath lost,
On charger never can he ride, nor be heard among the host ;
But in some dark and dismal place, where none his face may see,
There, weeping and lamenting, alone that king should be."—
Thus spake Granada's king as he was riding to the sea,
About to cross Gibraltar's strait away to Barbary :—
Thus he in heaviness of soul unto his queen did cry.—
(He had stopp'd and ta'en her in his arms, for together they did fly.)
" Unhappy king ! whose craven soul can brook " (she 'gan reply),
" To leave behind Granada, and hast not heart to die ;
Now for the love I bore thy youth thee gladly could I slay,
For what is life to leave when such a crown is cast away ! "

The particular feat of Diego Garcia de Paredes, referred to a little lower by the innkeeper, is thus narrated in the chronicle of the Great Captain. " Diego Garcia de Paredes tomó una espada de dos manos en el hombro y se metió por la puente de Garallano que los Franceses habian echado poco antes. Y con la *espada de dos manos* se metió entre ellos, y peleando como un bravo Leon empezó de hazer tales pruevas de su persona que nunca las hiceron mayores en sus tiempos, Hector, ni Julio Cæsar, ni Alexandro Magno—pareciendo otro Horatio, en su denueda y animosidad." Chronica, cap. 106.—For authentic particulars of De Paredes, see Mariana, Book 27, chapter 15. His life, as Cervantes justly observes, is written with great modesty—greater justice being done to the achievements of his friends than to his own.

NOTE XIX.—THE STORY OF APULEIUS AND THE WINE-SKINS (p. 374).

" One night, while supping at the house of Byrrhena, Apuleius was informed that the following day being the festival of Momus, he ought to honour that divinity by some merry invention.

" Returning home somewhat intoxicated, he perceived through the dusk three large figures attacking the door of Milo with much fury. Suspecting them to be robbers, who intended to break in, he ran his sword through them in succession, and, leaving them as dead, escaped into the house. Next morning he is arrested on account of the triple homicide, and is brought to trial in a crowded and open court. The accuser is called by a herald. An old man, who acted in this capacity, pronounced an harangue, of which the duration was limited by a

clepsydra, as the old sermons were measured by hour glasses. Two women in deep mourning were introduced; one lamented the death of her husband, the other of her son, and both called loudly for vengeance on the murderer. Apuleius was found guilty of the death of three citizens; but previous to his execution it was resolved he should be put to the torture, to force a discovery of his accomplices, and the necessary preparations were accordingly completed. What had chiefly astonished Apuleius during this scene, was, that the whole court, and among others, his host Milo, were all the while convulsed with laughter. One of the women in mourning now demanded that the dead bodies, which were in court, should be uncovered, in order that, the compassion of the judges being excited, the tortures might be increased. The demand was complied with, and the task assigned to Apuleius himself. The risibility of the audience is now accounted for, as he sees, to his utter astonishment, three immense leathern bottles, which, on the preceding night, he had mistaken for robbers. The imaginary criminal is then dismissed, after being informed that this mock trial was in honour of the god Momus.

"On returning home the matter was more fully explained by Fotis, who informs Apuleius that she had been employed by her mistress to procure the hair of a young Bœotian, of whom she was enamoured, in order to prepare a charm which would bring him to her house: that having failed in obtaining this ingredient, and fearing the resentment of her mistress, she had brought her some goats' hair, which fell from the scissors of a bottle-shearer. These hairs being burned by the sorceress, with the usual incantations, had (instead of leading the Bœotian to her house), given animation to the skins to which they formerly adhered, and which being then in the form of bottles, appeared, in their desire of entrance, to assault the door of Milo."

Note XX. (page 375).

The Bull-fight at Gazul.

I.

King Almanazor of Granada, he hath bid the trumpet sound,
He hath summon'd all the Moorish lords from the hills and plains around;
From Vega and Sierra, from Betis and Xenil,
They have come with helm and cuirass of gold and twisted steel.

II.

'Tis the holy Baptist's feast they hold in royalty and state,[1]
And they have closed the spacious lists beside the Alhambra's gate;
In gowns of black with silver laced within the tented ring,
Eight Moors to fight the bull are placed, in presence of the king.

[1] The day of the Baptist is a festival among the Mussulmans as well as among Christians.

III.

Eight Moorish lords of valour tried, with stalwart arm and true,
The onset of the beasts abide, as they come rushing through;
The deeds they've done, the spoils they've won, fill all with hope and trust,
Yet, ere high in heaven appears the sun, they all have bit the dust.

IV.

Then sounds the trumpet clearly, then clangs the loud tambour,
Make room, make room for Gazul;—throw wide, throw wide the door;
Blow, blow the trumpet clearer still, more loudly strike the drum!
The Alcaydé of Algava to fight the bull doth come.

V.

And first before the King he pass'd, with reverence stooping low,
And next he bow'd him to the Queen, and the Infantas all a-rowe;
Then to his lady's grace he turn'd, and she to him did throw
A scarf from out her balcony was whiter than the snow

VI.

With the life-blood of the slaughter'd lords all slippery is the sand,
Yet proudly in the centre hath Gazul ta'en his stand;
And ladies look with heaving breast, and lords with anxious eye,
But firmly he extends his arm—his look is calm and high.

VII.

Three bulls against the knight are loosed, and two come roaring on,
He rises high in stirrup, forth stretching his rejón;
Each furious beast upon the breast he deals him such a blow,
He blindly totters and gives back across the sand to go.

VIII.

"Turn, Gazul, turn," the people cry—the third comes up behind,
Low to the sand his head holds he, his nostrils snuff the wind;—
The mountaineers that lead the steers without stand whispering low,
"Now thinks this proud Alcaydé to stun Harpado so?"

IX.

From Guadiana comes he not, he comes not from Xenil,
From Guadalarif of the plain, or Barves of the hill;
But where from out the forest burst Xarama's waters clear,
Beneath the oak-trees was he nursed, this proud and stately steer.

X.

Dark is his hide on either side, but the blood within doth boil,
And the dun hide glows, as if on fire, as he paws to the turmoil.
His eyes are jet, and they are set in crystal rings of snow;
But now they stare with one red glare of brass upon the foe.

XI.

Upon the forehead of the bull the horns stand close and near,
From out the broad and wrinkled skull, like daggers they appear;
His neck is massy, like the trunk of some old knotted tree,
Whereon the monster's shagged mane, like billows curl'd, ye see.

XII.

His legs are short, his hams are thick, his hoofs are black as night,
Like a strong flail he hold his tail in fierceness of his might;
Like something molten out of iron, or hewn from forth the rock,
Harpado of Xarama stands to abide the Alcaydé's shock.

XIII.

Now stops the drum—close, close they come—thrice meet, and thrice give back;
The white foam of Harpado lies on the charger's breast of black—
The white foam of the charger on Harpado's front of dun—
Once more advance upon his lance—once more, thou fearless one!

XIV.

Once more, once more,—in dust and gore to ruin must thou reel—
In vain, in vain thou tearest the sand with furious heel—
In vain, in vain, thou noble beast, I see, I see thee stagger,
Now keen and cold thy neck must hold the stern Alcaydé's dagger!

XV.

They have slipp'd a noose around his feet, six horses are brought in,
And away they drag Harpado with a loud and joyful din.
Now stoop thee, lady, from thy stand, and the ring of price bestow
Upon Gazul of Algava, that hath laid Harpado low.

NOTE XXI.—THE MARESCHAL DE LAUTREC (page 381).

His extraction was of the most illustrious; his father being the second son of that Jean Comte de Foix, who married Marguerite d'Albret. Lautrec was thus cousin-german to Jean de Foix, Viscount of Narbonne, who married Mary of Orleans, sister of Louis XII., and was by her father of Gaston de Foix, Duke of Nemours. He stood in the same relation to Francis Phœbus de Foix, who, in right of his mother, was King of Navarre, and who died childless; and to his sister, Catherine de Foix, who, after his brother's death, carried the crown of Navarre to her husband, Henry d'Albret,—father of Jeanne d'Albret,—mother of Henry IV. The noble house of Lautrec became extinct in the age succeeding that of the Mareschal: his own sons had no children: his brothers, almost as celebrated as himself, both died unmarried; and his sister, the famous Countess de Chateaubriant, the mistress of Francis I., never had any family. Mariana says of Lautrec, that "such was his obstinacy and pride, he would rather at any time follow the worst plan of his own devising, than the best suggested by any other person;" he adds, "that some one said something of this

sort one day to Lautrec himself, who made answer, 'What was the character of Lucullus?'" He was, in general, as I have said, unfortunate, in spite of distinguished talents, and most romantic valour; yet, in 1527, he was lucky enough to take, in a few days, Pavia, which Francis I. had vainly besieged during many months, a few years before. Francis was said to have been a little jealous of this success; but, if it were so, his jealousy must have been drowned in far different feelings, by the sad termination of Lautrec's career before Naples, in the year 1528. It has been asserted, nevertheless, that the king bore this calamity more lightly than might have been expected and said, "What could I expect of an expedition in which Lautrec commanded against Gonsalvo de Cordova?" The malicious Brantome tells this story, and adds, by way of comment, "Francis twice entrusted his armies to the guidance of Lautrec, but then he was the lover of the Countess de Chateaubriant, his sister. At the time when the Mareschal was killed before Naples, Madame de Chateaubriant had ceased to interest him so deeply."—Lautrec had two brothers, who were with him in most of his campaigns, and who were both like him brave, and like him unfortunate. The one, M. de l'Esparre, received, in a skirmish, so many blows on his helmet from a mace, that he immediately lost his sight, and died soon after. The other, the Mareschal de Foix, was at first a churchman, and had very near risen to be a cardinal, through his sister's influence; but he could not resist the natural passion of his family: he renounced, one fine morning, his title of *protonotary*, and joined his brother just as he had got on horseback, at the head of his troops. The battle of Pavia was fought in direct opposition to his advice, and he received his mortal wound there Next day, one of the Spanish generals went to see him in his tent, and found him, says Brantome, "pestant et jurant en Gascon contre l'Amiral de Bonnivet." He said, the admiral had occasioned the battle, and consequently his wound, and that his chief reason for desiring to recover, was, that he might have the pleasure of killing him. It was in such holy mood that the ex-protonotarius de Foix died. Brantome says, that he had seen the monument of the Marshal de Lautrec in the Church of Santa Maria la Nueva, at Naples; and its Latin inscription ran thus:

"To the Memory of Odet de Foix, Lord of Lautrec, and Mareschal of France, Gonsalvo Ferdinand de Cordova, Duke of Sessa, Viceroy of Naples, grandson of the great Gonsalvo, (having learned that the Remains of an illustrious Enemy of his House were interred obscurely in this Chapel,) has erected this Monument, a proper source of reflections on the Misfortunes of Humanity, and the Mutability of Fortune."

Note XXII. (page 381).

Naples.

I.

One day, the King of Arragon, from the old citadel
Look'd down upon the sea of Spain, as the billows rose and fell;
He look'd on ship and galley, some coming and some going,
With all their prize of merchandise, and all their streamers flowing.

II.

Some to Castile were sailing, and some to Barbary—
And then he look'd on Naples, that great city of the sea:
"O city!" saith the king, "how great hath been thy cost,
For thee I twenty years, my fairest years, have lost!

III.

"By thee I have lost a brother;—never Hector was more brave;
High cavaliers have dropp'd their tears upon my brother's grave:—
Much treasure hast thou cost me, and a little boy beside,
(Alas! thou woeful city!) for whom I would have died."

NOTE XXIII.—DON JUAN OF AUSTRIA (page 408).

Don Juan served his first campaign in 1570, in the kingdom of Granada, where the Moors had made a revolt. His valour was so distinguished, that the first battle he was in, those who saw him fight were continually calling out, *Es verdadero hijo del Emperador!* (*he is the true son of the Emperor*). It was he who carried into effect the designs of Philip II, in regard to the Moors and who finally expelled them from the soil of Spain. The year after this was accomplished, he was sent with a large naval armament, principally Spanish, against the Turks. A considerable number of vessels, belonging to other Christian nations, having ranged themselves beneath his flag, he attacked the Ottoman fleet off Lepanto. The fleet of the Turks was composed of two hundred and forty-four galleys; that of Don Juan consisted of two hundred and eight galleys, six galleasses, twenty-two great vessels, and forty frigates, in which were embarked eight thousand Spanish veterans, twelve thousand Italians, and about six thousand besides of German and other volunteers. The galleys and other vessels of Malta, made part of Don Juan's armament, and they were commanded by the two knights, D'Andraedo and de Romegas; while Antonio Colonna headed another formidable division, under the banners of the Papal See. Don Juan held a council of war, as to the propriety of attacking or acting on the defensive. Everybody was at first for the latter plan, excepting only Romegas and himself; but the rest were compelled to give in, and the result was the grandest triumph with which Christian arms had ever at that time been blest in combating the naval forces of the Ottoman. The Capitan Pacha was killed, and his head, exhibited on the end of a pike, inspired such terror, that no Turkish vessel durst any longer abide the attack. The Christians lost, indeed, 10,000 men, and among the rest, Justiniano Barbarigo, the illustrious general of the Venetians; but they took no less than a hundred and thirty galleys, killed 12,000 of the Turks, took 10,000 of them prisoners, and set at liberty 15,000 Christian captives, who had worked (in fetters) the oars of the Turkish fleet. Charles IX. celebrated this victory by a *Te Deum*, in every church in France. Pius V. made Antonio Colonna ride in his chariot to the Capitol, after the fashion of the old Roman triumph; but the true glory of the day

rested with Don Juan of Austria, who was ever after considered as the first general of his time. His own wish, it is said, was to sail right for Constantinople immediately from Lepanto; but this was over-ruled by his council of war. The coast of Africa became, therefore, the scene of hostilities; he reduced Tunis to submission, and established there a king, who, although a Mahometan, undertook to pay regular tribute to the crown of Spain. After these brilliant services, he repaired to the court of his brother Philip, who shortly appointed him governor of the Low Countries. He went thither in 1576, and took France in his way, but preserved in that part of his journey the strictest possible incognito. He stayed but one day in Paris, and spent the whole of it in walking about the streets and ramparts. In the evening they told him there was to be a great ball at the Louvre, and he determined to go thither in disguise, which he did accordingly, and was present through the whole of the entertainment, without being recognised by a single person there, not even by the Spanish ambassador. "On this occasion," says Brantome, "he was above all things ravished with the beauty and the fair grace of Marguerite de Valois" (wife of Henry IV., and then Queen of Navarre). Next morning he continued his journey to Flanders, where, during the space of two years, he maintained and increased, by the practice of every civil and military virtue, the reputation he brought with him from Lepanto and Barbary. He took many towns, and won many battles, the last of these being the great and decisive one which took place on the plain of Gemblours, in the spring of 1578. Don Juan of Austria died in the end of the same year, at the age of thirty-two; and the suddenness of his death gave rise to many dark suspicions among those who were well acquainted both with him and his brother. His physicians gave out that he died of an epidemic disorder, which he was supposed to have caught from his mistress, the Countess D'Havray. But the more prevalent belief was that Don Juan had been poisoned, and not a few accused King Philip of having caused him to be taken off, at the instigation of his perfidious favourite and minister, Antonio Perez. The story they told, with whatever truth, is as follows: Don Juan had a secretary of the name of Escovedo, who had formerly been in the service of Don Ruy Gomez, minister of Philip II., and husband of the beautiful and frail lady, who, after his death, became too celebrated under the name of Princess D'Eboli. This lady was the mistress of Philip, but she also carried on an intrigue with Antonio Perez, which being discovered by Escovedo, that gentleman very imprudently reproached with her levities the widow of his ancient master. The Princess D'Eboli took the revenge of a true Spaniard. She had Escovedo assassinated, and being afraid that he might have breathed his suspicions to Don Juan, she contrived to inspire some jealousy of this great general into the breast of the king, his brother; who at last consented to have him poisoned in secret. Such is the story. Don Juan of Austria was succeeded in the government of the Low Countries, by the celebrated Prince of Parma.

Note XXIV. (page 441).

Dragut.

I.

O swiftly, very swiftly, they up the straits have gone,
O swiftly flies the corsair, and swift the cross comes on,
The cross upon yon banner, that streams to the breeze,
It is the sign of victory, the cross of the Maltese.

II.

"Row, row, my slaves," quoth Dragut, "the knights, the knights are near,
Row, row, my slaves, row swiftly, the star-light is too clear,
The stars they are too bright, and he that means us well,
He harms us when he trims his light—yon Moorish sentinel."

III.

There came a wreath of smoke from out a culverine,
The corsair's poop it broke, and it sunk into the brine;
Down Moor and fettered Christian went beneath the billows' roar,
But hell had work for Dragut yet, and he swam safe ashore.

IV.

One only of the captives, a happy man is he,—
The Christian sailors see him, yet struggling in the sea;
They hear the captive praying—they hear the Christian tongue,
And swiftly from their galley a saving rope was flung.

V.

It was a Spanish knight, who had long been in Algiers,
From ladies high descended, and noble cavaliers,
But forced, for a season, a false Moor's slave to be,
Upon the shore his gardener, his galley-slave at sea.

VI.

But now his heart is dancing, he sees the Spanish land,
And all his friends advancing to meet him on the strand.—
His heart was full of gladness, albeit his eyes ran o'er,
For he wept as he stepp'd upon the Christian shore.

Note XXV. (page 474).

King Agramante's Camp. (Orl. Fur.; C. xxvii.)

The passage more immediately referred to is that beginning at Stanza 78, wherein are described the various contests which took place concerning the property of Orlando's sword Durindana, Ruggiero's horse Frontin, &c.

"Venner dalle parole alle contese,
Ai gridi, alle minacce, alla battaglia,
Che per molt' ira in più fretta s'accese,
Che s' accendesse mai per foco paglia.

Rodomonte ha l'osbergo, ed ogni arnese,
Sacripante non ha piastra, nè maglia,
Ma par (sì ben con lo schermir s' adopra)
Che tutto con la spada si ricopra.

" Non era la possanza, e la fierezza
Di Rodomonte (ancor ch'era infinita)
Più che la providenza, e la destrezza,
Con che sue forze Sacripante aita.
Non voltò rota mai con più prestezza
Il macigno sovran che 'l grano trita;
Che faccia Sacripante or mano, or piede,
Di quà, di là, dove il bisogno vede.

" Ma Ferraù, ma Serpentino arditi
Trasson le spade, e si cacciàr tra loro,
Dal Re Grandonio, da Isolier seguiti,
Da molt' altri Signor del popol Moro.
Questi erano i romori, i quali uditi
Nell' altro padiglion fur da costoro,
Quivi per accordar venuti in vano
Col Tartaro Ruggiero, e 'l Sericano.

" Venne chi la novella al Re Agramante
Riportò certa, come pel destriero
Avea con Rodomonte Sacripante
Incominciato un' aspro assalto, e fiero.
Il Re confuso di discordie tante,
Disse a Marsilio: Abbi tu qui pensiero
Che fra questi guerrier non segua peggio
Mentre all' altro disordine io provveggio.

" Rodomonte, che 'l Re suo Signor mira,
Frena l' orgoglio, e torno indietro il passo;
Nè con minor rispetto si ritira
Al venir d'Agramante il Re Circasso.
Quel domanda la causa di tant' ira
Con real viso, e parlar grave, e basso;
E cerca, poi che n' ha compreso il tutto,
Porli d' accordo; e non vi fa alcun frutto.

" Il Re Circasso il suo destrier non vuole
Ch'al Re d'Algier più lungamente resti,
Se non s'umilia tanto di parole,
Che lo venga a pregar, che glielo presti.
Rodomonte, superbo come suole,
Gli risponde: Nè 'l Ciel, nè tu faresti,
Che cosa, che per forza aver potessi,
Da altri, che da me mai conoscessi.

" Il Re chiede al Circasso, che ragione
Ha nel cavallo, e come gli fu tolto.
E quel di parte in parte il tutto espone,
Ed esponendo s' arrossisce in volto,

Quando gli narra, che 'l sottil ladrone,
Che in un' alto pensier l' aveva colto,
La sella su quattro aste gli suffolse,
E di sotto il destrier nudo gli tolse," &c.

Note XXVI. (page 483).

That famous knight Amadis de Gaul having gone forth from the "Insula de la Torre Bermeja" in quest of the adventure of the rock of the Enchantress-Damsel, daughter of the Necromancer Finetor, has ascended this rock half-way up, by a most perilous path, when he stops to contemplate a place which bears the likeness of a hermitage. Here he observes a metallic figure with a golden-plate on its breast, on which is set forth a Greek inscription, which Amadis reads without difficulty (for Amadis, it must be remembered, was a poet, a musician, an antiquarian, and a mighty linguist withal, as well as a king and a knight-errant). The inscription bore, that the adventure of the rock need not be attempted by him, being expressly reserved for his son Esplandian, the pledge of Oriana's love, and the nursling of the lioness. The adventure consisted in being able to draw from a rock an enchanted sword, and thereby gaining access to a mighty subterranean treasure; and it is thus the inscription runs: "In the time when the great island shall flourish, and shall be lorded by the mighty king, and shall bear sway over many famous kingdoms and knights, then shall be joined together the height of arms and the flower of beauty, peerless in their generation; and from them shall proceed he that shall draw forth the sword with which the order of his chivalry shall be completed, and the strong gates of the rock shall be cast open, by which the great treasure is kept fast from the eyes of men." Cap. cxxx. See also Cap. lxxii. and Cap. xcix. The mode in which Don Quixote is overpowered during his sleep is also strictly copied from the romances; thus in the Morgante Maggiore, C. 12,

"Quando piu fiso la notte dormia
Una brigata s' armar de Pagani
Ed un di questi la camera opria,
Corsongli addosso come lupi o cani.
Orlando a tempo non si risentia,
Che finalmente gli legar le mani
E fu menato subito in prigione," &c.

The "Lion" and the "Dove" are in like manner quite in character—as in the *Febo*, P. I. L. II. C. 7.

"Quando el bastardo Leon
Al marte Galo enfranara con freno
Entonces," &c. &c.

It is necessary to keep in mind here, and indeed throughout, that Don Quixote, when he believes in prophecies, and talks about "the shining stars," "divine prognostications," and the like, furnishes by no means so unequivocal signs of madness as on other occasions escape from

him. I cannot better enforce this than by quoting the words of an author, to whose elegant and philosophical researches our own age and literature have been very deeply indebted.

"This and the succeeding age were the times of omens and meteors, prognostics and providences—of 'day-fatality,' or, the superstition of fortunate and unfortunate days, and the combined powers of astrology and magic. It was only at the close of the century of James I. that Bayle wrote a treatise on comets, to prove that they had no influence in the cabinets of princes: this was, however, done with all the precaution imaginable. The greatest minds were then sinking under such popular superstitions; and whoever has read much of the private history of this age will have smiled at their ludicrous terrors and bewildered reasonings. The most ordinary events were attributed to an interposition of Providence. In the unpublished memoirs of that learned antiquary, Sir Symond D'Ewes, such frequently occur. When a comet appeared, and D'Ewes, for exercise at college, had been ringing the great bell, and entangled himself in the rope, which had nearly strangled him, he resolves not to ring while the comet is in the heavens. When a fire happened at the Six Clerks' Office, of whom his father was one, he inquires into the most prominent sins of the six clerks: these were the love of the world, and doing business on Sundays; and it seems they thought so themselves; for, after the fire, the office-door was fast closed on the Sabbath. When the Thames had an unusual ebb and flow, it was observed, that it had never happened in their recollection, but just before the rising of the Earl of Essex in Elizabeth's reign,—and Sir Symond became uneasy at the political aspect of affairs.

"All the historians of these times are very particular in marking the bearded beams of blazing stars; and the first public event that occurs is always connected with its radiant course. Arthur Wilson describes one which preceded the death of the simple queen of James I. It was generally imagined, that 'this great light in the heaven was sent as a flambeau to her funeral;' but the historian discovers, while 'this blaze was burning, the fire of war broke out in Bohemia.' It was found difficult to decide between the two opinions: since Rushworth, who wrote long afterwards, carefully chronicles both.

"The truth is, the greatest geniuses of the age of James I. were as deeply concerned in these investigations as his majesty. Had the great Verulam emancipated himself from all the dreams of his age? He speaks indeed cautiously of witchcraft, but does not deny its occult agency; and of astrology he is rather for the improvement than the rejection. The bold spirit of Rawleigh contended with the superstitions of the times; but how feeble is the contest, where we fear to strike! Even Rawleigh is prodigal of his praise to James for the king's chapter on magic. The great mind of Rawleigh perceived how much men are formed and changed by *education;* but, were this principle admitted to its extent, the *stars* would lose their influence. In pleading for the free agency of man, he would escape from the pernicious tendency of predestination, or the astral influence, which yet he allows. To extricate himself from the dilemma, he invents an analogical reasoning of a royal power of dispensing with the laws in

extreme cases; so that, though he does not deny 'the binding of the stars,' he declares they are controllable by the will of the Creator. In this manner, fettered by prevalent opinions, he satisfies the superstitions of an astrological age, and the penetration of his own genius. At a much later period Dr. Henry More, a writer of great genius, confirmed the ghost and demon creed, by a number of facts, as marvellously pleasant as any his own poetical fancy could have invented. Other great authors have not less distinguished themselves. When has there appeared a single genius, who at once could free himself of the prejudices of his contemporaries; nay, of his own party? Genius, in its advancement beyond the intelligence of its own age, is but progressive: it is fancifully said to soar, but it only climbs. Yet the minds of some authors of this age are often discovered to be superior to their work; because the mind is impelled by its own inherent powers, but the work usually originates in the age. James I. once acutely observed, how 'the author may be wise, but the work foolish.'"—*See* D'Israeli's *Character of James I.*

Note XXVII.—Lancelot du Lac (page 484).

"The knight, almost frantic with rage, proceeded on foot with as much speed as his heavy armour would permit, and at length overtook a cart driven by a very deformed dwarf; who, on being questioned concerning the route of the fugitives, professed to have seen them, and promised, if the hero would mount his cart, that he would soon put him into the proper road.

"It seems that carts were at this time extremely scarce. One was thought sufficient for a moderate town; because they were only used for the purpose of carrying out filth, or of conveying criminals to the place of execution. Lancelot was perhaps ignorant of this, or perhaps indifferent about the mode of conveyance, provided he had a chance of overtaking his mistress: he therefore placed himself as commodiously as he could in this uncouth equipage, and only lamented that, after much jolting, he made little progress. In the mean time, the road which Gawain followed had insensibly led him into that of Lancelot. He met the dwarf; to whom, without noticing his friend, he put the same questions, and received the same answer: but being on horseback, he, of course, declined the proposition; and, having then recognised the other knight, strongly, but ineffectually, represented to him the indecorum of such a mode of travelling.

"At night-fall they arrived at a castle, the lady of which immediately came out at the head of her damsels to welcome Sir Gawain, but was with difficulty induced to admit within her walls his companion, whom she supposed to be a criminal, or at least a prisoner. At supper, Sir Lancelot was on the point of being consigned to the kitchen, and only admitted to the lady's table at the earnest solicitation of Sir Gawain. But no entreaties could persuade the damsels to prepare a bed for the reputed felon. He seized the first which he found unoccupied, and slept quietly till morning.

"The windows of the castle commanded an extensive view of the country: and Lancelot, having observed at some distance on the plain

a procession accompanying a lady in a veil, in whom he recognised a likeness to the fair Guenever, suddenly fell down in a swoon: an accident very usual with amorous knights, but always productive of wonder and curiosity in the bystanders. The lady of the castle imputed it to shame and vexation at the recollection of the disgraceful cart; but Gawain, on his friend's recovery, thought his suspicion very probable, and became equally eager to depart. Their fair hostess supplied Lancelot with a horse and spear," &c.

Note XXVIII. (page 506).

Count Fernan Gonsalez.

I.

They have carried afar into Navarre the great Count of Castile,
And they have bound him sorely, they have bound him hand and heel;
The tidings up the mountains go, and down among the valleys,
"To the rescue! to the rescue, ho! they have ta'en Fernan Gonsalez."—

II.

A pilgrim knight of Normandy was riding through Navarre,
For Christ his hope he came to cope with the Moorish scymitar;
To the Alcaydé of the Tower, in secret thus said he,
"These bezaunts fair with thee I'll share, so I this lord may see."

III.

The Alcaydé was full joyful, he took the gold full soon,
And he brought him to the dungeon, ere the rising of the moon;
He let him out at morning, at the gray light of the prime,
But many words between these lords had pass'd within that time.

IV.

The Norman knight rides swiftly, for he hath made him bowne
To a king that is full joyous, and to a feastful town;
For there is joy and feasting, because that lord is ta'en,—
King Garci in his dungeon holds the doughtiest lord in Spain.

V.

The Norman feasts among the guests, but at the evening tide
He speaks to Garci's daughter, within her bower, aside;
"Now God forgive us, lady, and God his mother dear,
For on a day of sorrow we have been blithe of cheer.

VI.

"The Moors may well be joyful, but great should be our grief,
For Spain has lost her guardian, when Castile has lost her chief;
The Moorish host is pouring like a river o'er the land,
Curse on the Christian fetters that bind Gonsalez' hand!

VII.

"Gonsalez loves thee, lady, he loved thee long ago,
But little is the kindness that for his love you show;
The curse that lies on Cava's head, it may be shared by thee—
Arise, let love with love be paid, and set Gonsalez free."

VIII.

The lady answer'd little, but at the mirk of night,
When all her maids are sleeping, she hath risen and ta'en her flight;
She hath tempted the Alcaydé with her jewels and her gold,
And unto her his prisoner that jailer false hath sold.

IX.

She took Gonsalez by the hand at the dawning of the day,
She said, "Upon the heath you stand, before you lies your way
But if I to my father go, alas! what must I do?
My father will be angry—I fain would go with you."

X.

He hath kissed the Infanta, he hath kiss'd her, brow and cheek,
And lovingly together the forest-path they seek;
Till in the greenwood hunting they met a lordly priest,
With his bugle at his girdle, and his hawk upon his wrist.

XI.

"Now, stop! now stop!" the priest he said (he knew them both right well),
"Now stop, and pay your ransom, or I your flight will tell;
Now stop, thou fair Infanta, for if my words you scorn,
I'll give warning to the foresters with the blowing of my horn.

XII.

* * * * *
* * * * *
* * * * *
* * * * *

XIII.

The base priest's word Gonsalez heard, "Now, by the rood!" quoth he,
"A hundred deaths I'll suffer, or ere this thing shall be."—
But in his ear she whisper'd, she whisper'd soft and slow,
And to the priest she beckon'd within the wood to go.

XIV.

It was ill with Count Gonsalez, the fetters press'd his knees,
Yet as he could he follow'd within the shady trees—
"For help, for help, Gonsalez!—for help," he hears her cry,
"God aiding, fast I'll hold thee, until my lord come nigh."

XV.

He has come within the thicket, there lay they on the green,
And he has pluck'd from off the grass the false priest's javelin;
Firm by the throat she held him bound, down went the weapon sheer,
Down through his body to the ground, even as the boar ye spear.

XVI.

* * * * *
* * * * *
* * * * *
* * * * *

XVII.

They wrapp'd him in his mantle, and left him there to bleed,
And all that day they held their way; his palfrey served their need;—
Till to their ears a sound did come, might fill their hearts with dread,
A steady whisper on the breeze, and horsemen's heavy tread.

XVIII.

The Infanta trembled in the wood, but forth the Count did go,
And gazing wide, a troop descried upon the bridge below;
"Gramercy!" quoth Gonsalez—"or else my sight is gone,
Methinks I know the pennon yon sun is shining on.

XIX.

"Come forth, come forth, Infanta, mine own true men they be,
Come forth, and see my banner, and cry *Castile!* with me;
My merry men draw near me, I see my pennon shine,
Their swords shine bright, Infanta, and every blade is thine."

Note XXIX. (page 507).

Don Garci Perez de Vargas.

I.

King Ferdinand alone did stand one day upon the hill,
Surveying all his leaguer, and the ramparts of Seville;
The sight was grand when Ferdinand by proud Seville was lying,
O'er tower and tree far off to see the Christian banners flying.

II.

Down chanced the King his eye to fling, where far the camp below
Two gentlemen along the glen were riding soft and slow;
As void of fear each cavalier seem'd to be riding there,
As some strong hound may pace around the roebuck's thicket lair.

III.

It was Don Garci Perez, and he would breathe the air,
And he had ta'en a knight with him that as lief had been elsewhere;
For soon this knight to Garci said, "Ride, ride we, or we're lost!
I see the glance of helm and lance—it is the Moorish host."

IV.

The Lord of Vargas turn'd him round, his trusty squire was near,
The helmet on his brow he bound, his gauntlet grasp'd the spear;
With that upon his saddle-tree he planted him right steady,
"Now come," quoth he, "whoe'er they be, I trow they'll find us ready.'

V.

By this the knight who rode with him had turn'd his horse's head,
And up the glen in fearful trim unto the camp had fled.
"Ha! Gone?" quoth Garci Perez;—he smiled, and said no more,
But slowly with his esquire rode as he rode before.

VI.

It was the Count Lorenzo, just then it happen'd so,
He took his stand by Ferdinand, and with him gazed below;
"My liege," quoth he, "seven Moors I see a-coming from the wood,
Now bring they all the blows they may, I trow they'll find as good,
But it is Don Garci Perez, if his cognizance they know,
I guess it will be little pain to give them blow for blow."

VII.

The Moors from forth the greenwood came riding one by one,
A gallant troop with armour resplendent in the sun;
Full haughty was their bearing, as o'er the sward they came,
While the calm Lord of Vargas his march was still the same.

VIII.

They stood drawn up in order, while past them all rode he,
For when upon his shield they saw the sable blazonry,
And the wings of the Black Eagle, that o'er his crest were spread,
They knew Don Garci Perez, and never word they said.

IX.

He took the casque from off his head, and gave it to the squire,
My friend," quoth he, "no need I see why I my brows should tire."
But as he doff'd the helmet, he saw his scarf was gone,
"I've dropt it sure," quoth Garci, "when I put my helmet on."

X.

He look'd around and saw the scarf, for still the Moors were near,
And they had pick'd it from the sward, and loop'd it on a spear;
"These Moors," quoth Garci Perez, "uncourteous Moors they be—
"Now, by my soul, the scarf they've stole, yet durst not question me!

XI.

"Now, reach once more my helmet."—The esquire said him nay,
"For a silken string why should ye fling perchance your life away?"
—"I had it from my lady," quoth Garci, "long ago,
And never Moor that scarf be sure in proud Seville shall show."

XII.

But when the Moslem saw him, they stood in firm array,
—He rode among their armed throng, he rode right furiously;
—"Stand, stand, ye thieves and robbers, lay down my lady's pledge!"
He cried, and ever as he cried they felt his faulchion's edge.

XIII.

That day when the Lord of Vargas came to the camp alone,
The scarf, his lady's largess, around his breast was thrown;
Bare was his head, his sword was red, and from his pommel strung
Seven turbans green, sore hack'd I ween, before Don Garci hung.

The story of the above ballad is told by Mariana, who adds, that when Don Garci Perez came back to the camp, he was met by Ferdinand, whose first question was, "What is the name of the knight that fled and deserted thee?"—"My liege," replied Garci Perez, "ask anything else, and it shall be done as I am commanded. This man is already sufficiently punished."

NOTE XXX.—THE HISTORY OF GUERINO MESCHINO (p. 509).

"Guerin was son of Millon, King of Albania, a monarch descended from the house of Burgundy. The young prince's birth was the epoch of the commencement of his parents' misfortunes. His father and mother were dethroned and imprisoned by an usurper, who would also have slain their heir had not his nurse embarked with him in a vessel for Constantinople. She unfortunately died during the voyage, but the child was taken care of, and afterwards educated, by a Greek merchant, who happened to be in the vessel, under the name of Meschino, an appellation derived from the unhappy circumstances of his childhood. When he grew up he attracted the notice, and passed into the service, of the son of the Greek emperor, with whom he acted as Grand Carver. At Constantinople he fell in love with the Princess Elizena, his master's sister. There, too, he distinguished himself by his dexterity in tournaments, and also by his exploits in the course of a war, in which the empire was at that time engaged.

"In spite of his love, his merit, and services, Guerin had, on one occasion, been called Turk by the Princess Elizena, a term equivalent to slave or villain. To wipe away this reproach, he determined on setting out to ascertain who were his parents, as they had hitherto been unknown to him. Concerning this expedition the emperor consulted the court astrologers, who, after due examination of the stars, were unanimously of opinion that Guerin could learn nothing of his parentage, except from the Trees of the sun and moon, which grew at the eastern extremity of the world.

* * * * * * *

"Guerin, in the course of his journey through India, saw great variety of monsters, and heard of dog-headed tribes, and nations with feet so large that they carried them over-head as umbrellas. At length he arrived at the extremity of India, where he found the Trees

of the sun and moon, who informed him that his name is not Meschino, which he had been hitherto called, but Guerin. He is also told, that he is the son of a king, but that, if he wished farther information, he must take the trouble of visiting the western extremity of the globe.

"On his way back, Guerin re-established the Princess of Persepolis in her dominions, of which she had been deprived by the Turks. As a mutual attachment arose between her and Guerin, a marriage would have taken place, had it not been for the recent information given by the solar trees. The indulgent princess allowed her lover ten years to discover his parents, and he promised to return at the end of that period.

"Guerin next visited Jerusalem. paid his devotions at the holy sepulchre, and thence passed on a pilgrimage to Mount Sinai. From the Holy Land he penetrated into Ethiopia, and arrived at the states of Prester John. This Ecclesiastical emperor was at war with a savage people, who had a giant at their head. Guerin assumed the command of Prester's army, and was eminently successful.

* * * * * * * *

"After this, Guerin having heard that in the mountains of Calabria there lived a sibyl, who had predicted the birth of our Saviour, he resolved to interrogate her concerning his parents.

* * * * * * * *

"Guerin now entered the palace of the prophetess, who appeared surrounded by beautiful attendants, and was as fresh as if she had been eleven hundred and eighty years younger than she was in reality. A splendid supper was served up, and she informed Guerin in the course of the conversation which arose after the repast, that she enjoyed the benefits of long life and unfading beauty, in consequence of having predicted the birth of our Saviour; nevertheless, she confessed that she was not a Christian, but remained firmly attached to Apollo, whose priestess she had been at Delphos, and to whom she was indebted for the gift of prophecy; her last abode had been Cumae, whence she had retired to the palace which she now inhabited.

"Hitherto the conversation of the sibyl had not been such as was expected from her endowments. It had been more retrospective than premonitory; and, however communicative as to her personal history, she had been extremely reserved on the subject of her guest's. At length, however, she informed him of the names of his parents. and all the circumstances of his birth. She farther promised to acquaint him, on some other occasion, with the place of their residence, and to give him some insight into his future destiny.

"At night the sibyl conducted Guerin to the chamber prepared for his repose, and he soon perceived that she was determined to give him considerable disturbance, as she began to ogle him, and then proceeded to the narrowest scrutiny. The wood of the cross, however, which he had received from the Greek Empress, and an occasional prayer, procured his present manumission from the sibyl. who was obliged to postpone her designs till the morrow, and thence to defer them for the five following days, owing to the repulsive influence of the same relic.

"The prophetess, who seems in her old age to have changed the

conduct which procured from Virgil the appellation of Casta Sibylla, still refrained from informing her guest of the residence of his parents, in order that, by detaining him in her palace, she might grasp an opportunity of finally accomplishing her intentions. One Saturday she unluckily could not prevent the knight from being witness to an unfortunate and inevitable metamorphose. Fairies, it seems, and those connected with fairies, are on that day invariably converted into hideous animals, and remain in this guise until the ensuing Monday. Guerin, who had hitherto seen the palace inhabited only by fine ladies and gentlemen, was surprised to find himself in the midst of a *menagerie*, and to behold the sibyl herself contorted into a snake. When she had recovered her charms, Guerin upbraided her with the spiral form into which she had been lately wreathed. He now positively demanded his leave, which having obtained, he forthwith repaired to Rome, and though he had extricated himself from the den in the most Christian manner, he deemed it necessary to demand the indulgence of the holy father, for having consulted a sibyl who was at once a sorceress, a pagan, and a serpent. The pope imposed on him, as a penance, that he should visit the shrine of St. James in Galicia, and afterwards the purgatory of St. Patrick in Ireland, at the same time giving him hopes that in the latter place he might hear intelligence of his parents.

"Guerin met with nothing remarkable during the first part of his expiatory pilgrimage. The account, however, of Saint Patrick's purgatory is full of wonders. When St. Patrick went to preach in Ireland, the honest Hibernians refused to believe the articles of his creed, unless they received ocular demonstration of their truth, so that the saint was obliged to set up a purgatory for their satisfaction.[1] On arriving in Ireland, Guerin waited on the archbishop, who, after having vainly attempted to dissuade him from this perilous expedition, gave him letters of introduction to the abbot of the Holy Island, which was the vestibule of purgatory. With the connivance of the abbot, Guerin descended into a well, at the bottom of which he found a subterraneous meadow. There he received instructions from two men clothed in white garments, who lived in an edifice built in form of a church. He was thence carried away by two demons, who escorted him from cavern to cavern, to witness the torments of purgatory. Each cavern, he found, was appropriated for the chastisement of a particular vice. Thus, in one, the *gourmands* were tantalised with the appearance and flavour of dressed dishes, and exquisite beverage, which eluded their grasp; while, at the same time, they were troubled with all the colics and indigestions to which their intemperance had subjected them during life.

"After Guerin had witnessed the pains of purgatory, he had a display of hell itself, which, in this work, is divided into circles, precisely on the plan laid out in Dante's Inferno.

* * * * * * * *

[1] One of Calderon's plays turns on the establishment of the purgatory of St. Patrick. That saint being shipwrecked in Ireland, conducted the infidel monarch of the country to the mouth of a cavern which led to purgatory. The king threw himself in blaspheming, as was his custom, and by an adroit stratagem of the saint, instead of reaching purgatory, he fell headlong into hell. This immediately effected the conversion of his subjects.

"His infernal *Ciceroni* made frequent efforts to add him to the number of the condemned, but were at length reluctantly obliged to give him up to Enoch and Elijah, who pointed out to him Paradise, about as near as Moses saw the Promised Land. These celestial guides, after telling him that he will hear of his parents in Italy, showed him the way back to earth, where he at last arrived, having passed thirty days without sleep or sustenance."

NOTE XXXI.—THE SAINT GREAL (page 509).

"From the extract given by M. Barbazan, of the poetical Sangreal, it appears to commence with the genealogy of our Saviour, and to detail the whole of the Sacred History. The prose romance does not go far back. It begins with Joseph of Arimathea, who was long believed in this country to have existed for many centuries after the crucifixion. Matthew Paris informs us, that an Armenian bishop who came to England in his time, related that this Jewish senator had dined at his table before he left the east. At the end of every century he fell into a fit of ecstasy, and when he recovered he returned to the same state of youth in which he was when his Master suffered.

"The author of the Sangreal has availed himself of this popular tradition;—he in the first place relates, that, on the day of the crucifixion, Joseph of Arimathea obtained possession of the *Hanap*, or cup, from which his master had on the preceding evening drunk with his apostles. Before he interred the body of our Saviour, he filled the vessel with the blood which flowed from his wounds; but the exasperated Jews soon after deprived him of this holy relic, and sent him to a prison in the neighbourhood of Jerusalem. Here his departed master appeared to him, and comforted him in his captivity, by restoring the sacred *Hanap*. At length, in the forty-second year of his confinement, he was freed from prison by Titus, the Roman Emperor. After his deliverance he proceeded to preach the gospel in this country, and on his way converted to Christianity Enelach, King of Sarraz, who was thus enabled to conquer the Egyptians, with whom he was at war. After the arrival of Joseph with the sacred cup in Britain, the romance is chiefly occupied with the miracles accomplished by the Sangreal;—the preparation of the Round Table by Arthur, who left a place vacant for this relic; and, finally, the achievements performed by his knights to recover this treasure, which had fallen into the possession of King Pecheur, so called from his celebrity as an angler, or his notoriety as a sinner. The author of the romance has enlivened his story with some curious adventures, which happened to the knights of the Round Table, during the period of this quest; but the incidents related are, I think, on the whole, less interesting than those generally contained in the class of fictions with which we are at present engaged.

"The history of the Sangreal is the commencement of a series of romances, in which the acquisition of that relic is a leading object. Its quest and attainment is continued in the Perceval, Lancelot du Lac, and other romances of the Round Table of Arthur."—*See* DUNLOP, *vol. I.* p. 222.

Note XXXII.—Juan de Melo (page 510)

De Melo was one of those gentlemen who figured at the famous *passage of arms* of Suero de Quiñones, in 1434, of which Don Quixote takes notice a little below. He was a great favourite with King Juan II., who, we are told by Higuera, appointed him alcayde of Alcala la Real, on the frontiers of Grenada, on the following occasion:—There was a dispute at Escalona (the seat of the prime minister, Don Alvaro de Luna, to whose household De Melo was at that time attached), upon that truly interesting question, whether Hector or Achilles was the braver warrior. The king was present, but, nevertheless, the dispute grew exceedingly hot, and at last the famous Marques de Villena (a singular genius, whose mathematical studies gave him in his own day the reputation of a necromancer), espousing fervently the cause of Hector, called out in a voice of thunder, "Let us see whether the Achilleans can fight as well as speak?" He stamped on the ground at the same moment, and there appeared of a sudden, in the midst of the assembly, "a gigantic phantasm breathing flame," who re-echoed the challenge of Villena, "Quién de vosotros osra decir que Achilles fue mas fuerte que Hector?" Every one shrunk and trembled, except only Juan De Melo, who immediately drew his sword, wrapt his cloak round his arm by way of target, and leaping from his place, stationed himself right before the royal chair, "as if to defend the King Don Juan even from hell." This is, of course, a mere monkish story—one of the many such that were current concerning the Marques de Villena, and collected "pro edificatione fidelium," by the Dominican Higuera. It is certain, however, that De Melo was appointed Alcayde of Alcala, in consequence of some brave action displayed in the king's presence. But it is no less true, that he soon lost the situation. His command was on the frontier, and although there was peace with the Moors, De Melo was, it appears, too much of the same way of thinking with our own old unfortunate Borderer, Johnny Armstrong, namely, that there was no dishonesty in ordering it so that his neighbours might

> ——"serve him baith wi' meat and maut,
> Though he should live for fifty year."

In short, De Melo was too much of the knight-errant to make a good Warden of the Marches.—See the *Chronica de Don Alvaro de Luna*; and also the *Chronica de Henrique IV.*

Note XXXIII.—Suero de Quiñones del Passo (page 511).

In the spring of 1434, this gentleman came into the presence of the king (Juan II.) to request, in a formal manner, permission to hold a passage of arms on the bridge of Orbigo, which request was delivered in writing, and couched in these very singular terms:—"Just and reasonable is the desire with which those that are captives desire to have liberty: now I, your vassal and born servant, having been now for a long space held in captivity by a certain lady (in sign of which

captivity behold a ring of iron, which every Thursday I, in obedience to her command, wear around my throat), all which is well known both in this realm and elsewhere, by reason of the heralds that have from me made proclamation of this my servitude—I have come hither, most mighty lord, in the name of the apostle St. James, to make known to you my desire and earnest prayer: which is, that by thirty lances broken by me, and by these knights that are here present with me in harness of war (every drawing of blood being reckoned for a broken shaft), I may be permitted to purchase my freedom, and to ransom myself from out of this my servitude and captivity. And this I purpose to do forthwith, my lord consenting, on the most patent road that leads to the sepulchre of the blessed apostle, to which I pray earnestly that all knights will come speedily, resting well assured that such harness and horses shall be provided for them as may not disgrace us, or do injury to their prowess, and such lances as shall not be broken by any small thrust or weak blow; and let it be notorious to every lady who comes by that road, that she must leave the glove of her right hand, if so be she bring not with her some cavalier or gentleman that will break a lance in her honour; but the lady whose I am, she must, if she come that way, come gloveless, for I am he that will break lances for her, and none other shall do so while I am alive." Such is this curious relic of the days of tournaments. The royal consent was given, and the Lord of Quiñones, with De Melo, and other eight cavaliers, held the bridge against all comers for six-and-thirty days, overthrowing, in that time, no less than seventy-eight knights of Spain and France, who were attracted to the spot by the challenge circulated as above described. The monk Higuera has a story of De Quiñones also: he says, that he told De Villena one day at table, he had long had a strong desire to see the devil. "That desire you shall soon gratify," replied the necromantic Marquis; and immediately "there appeared in the chamber the very devil of hell, who stood with a reverent countenance, and poured out wine to the Marquis and De Quiñones until they were done with supper, officiating in all things as chief butler to that most unhappy lord." A full and particular account of the passage of arms of Suero de Quiñones is appended to the chronicle of Don Alvaro de Luna, already quoted. The other adventures referred to in the next sentence, appear to have been of the same description, and to have occurred about the same period.

END OF VOLUME I.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY WILLIAM CLOWES AND SONS, LIMITED,
STAMFORD STREET AND CHARING CROSS.

UNIFORM WITH THE PRESENT VOLUME.

CERVANTES' GALATEA.

Translated by G. W. J. GYLL. Price 3s. 6*d*.

CERVANTES' EXEMPLARY NOVELS.

Translated by W. K. KELLY. Price 3s. 6*d*.

LONDON: GEORGE BELL AND SONS.

A CATALOGUE

OF

SELECTED WORKS

Including an Alphabetical List

of Bohn's Libraries

PUBLISHED BY

GEORGE BELL & SONS

LONDON: YORK ST., COVENT GARDEN

NEW YORK: 66 FIFTH AVENUE; & BOMBAY

CAMBRIDGE: DEIGHTON, BELL & CO.

1899.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
POETRY	3
THE ALDINE POETS	7
BIOGRAPHY AND HISTORY	8
STANDARD BOOKS	11
DICTIONARIES AND BOOKS OF REFERENCE	14
DRAMA AND THE STAGE	16
ART AND ARCHÆOLOGY	16
THEOLOGY	20
NAVAL AND MILITARY	23
ROYAL NAVY HANDBOOKS	24
BOTANY AND GARDENING	25
PHILOSOPHY	25
BOOKS FOR THE YOUNG	26
CAPT. MARRYAT'S BOOKS FOR BOYS	27
MRS. EWING'S BOOKS	27
SPORTS AND GAMES	28
ALL-ENGLAND SERIES	29
BELL'S CATHEDRAL SERIES	30
NEW VOLUMES OF BOHN'S LIBRARIES	31

London, January 1899.

MESSRS. BELL'S CLASSIFIED CATALOGUE OF SELECTED WORKS.

*** *Messrs. Bell will be glad to send their Complete Catalogue Catalogue of Bohn's Libraries, or Educational Catalogue, to any address, post free.*

POETRY.

Aidé (Hamilton). Songs without Music. 3rd edition. With additional Pieces. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

Aldine Edition of the Poets. *See List, page* 7.

Barry Cornwall. English Songs and Lyrics. 2nd edition. Fcap. 8vo. 6*s.*

Bridges (R.) Shorter Poems. 4th edition. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.* net.

——— Eros and Psyche: A Poem in Twelve Measures. The Story done into English from the Latin of Apuleius. 2nd edition revised Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.* net.

——— Prometheus the Firegiver. [*Out of print.*

——— A Series of Plays. Fcap. 4to. printed on hand-made paper, double columns, paper wrappers, each 2*s.* 6*d.* net (except No. 8). The eight Plays are paged consecutively, and are intended to form a Volume:—

1. NERO. The First Part. [*Out of print.*
2. PALICIO.
3. THE RETURN OF ULYSSES.
4. THE CHRISTIAN CAPTIVES.
5. ACHILLES IN SCYROS.
6. THE HUMOURS OF THE COURT.
7. THE FEAST OF BACCHUS.
8. NERO. Part II. 3*s.* net, with general title-page, &c., for the vol.

——— Achilles in Scyros. New Edition. Fcp. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.* net.

——— Eden. A Cantata in Three Acts, set to music by C. Villiers Stanford. Words only, by Robert Bridges. 2*s.* net.

Browning's Strafford. With Notes by E. H. Hickey, and an Introduction by S. R. Gardiner, LL.D. 2nd edition. Crown 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

Handbook to Robert Browning's Works. By Mrs. Sutherland Orr. 7th edition, with bibliography. Fcap. 8vo. 6*s.*

Browning (Mrs.) Sonnets from the Portuguese. Printed at the Chiswick Press, with decorated borders and initials. Royal 16mo. 2*s.* 6*d.* net

Calverley (C. S.) Works by the late C. S. Calverley, M.A., late Fellow of Christ's College, Cambridge.

New and Cheaper uniform Edition in 4 vols. Crown 8vo. 5s. each.

Vol. I. LITERARY REMAINS, with Portrait and Memoir. Edited by Sir Walter J. Sendall, K.C.M.G.

Vol. II. VERSES AND FLY LEAVES.

Vol. III. TRANSLATIONS into English and Latin.

Vol. IV. THEOCRITUS, in English Verse.

——— **Fly Leaves.** 17th Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

——— Verses and Translations. 15th Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

De Vere (Sir Aubrey). Mary Tudor: an Historical Drama, in Two Parts. By the late Sir Aubrey De Vere. New edition. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

De Vere (Sir Stephen). Translations from Horace. By Sir Stephen E. De Vere, Bart. 3rd edition enlarged. Imperial 16mo. 7s. 6d. net.

Endymion Series (The). Post 8vo.

Poems by John Keats. Illustrated and decorated by Robert Anning Bell. With Introduction by Walter Raleigh, M.A. 7s. 6d.

Poems by Robert Browning. Illustrated and decorated by Byam Shaw. With Introduction by Richard Garnett, LL.D., C.B. 7s. 6d.

English Lyrics, from Spenser to Milton. Illustrated by R. Anning Bell. Selected, with Introduction, by John Dennis. 6s.

Milton's Minor Poems. Illustrated by Alfred Garth Jones. 6*s.*

Fanshawe (R.) Two Lives. A Poem. By Reginald Fanshawe, M.A. 4s. 6d. net.

Ferguson (Sir S.) Congal: A Poem in Five Books. By the late Sir Samuel Ferguson, Knt., Q.C., LL.D., P.R.I.A. Fcap. 8vo. 2s.

——— Poems. Demy 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Field (Michael). Underneath the Bough. A Book of Verses. 2nd edition. Royal 16mo. 4s. 6d. net.

——— Callirrhoë, Fair Rosamund. 2nd edition. Crown 8vo. 6s.

——— Canute the Great; a Cup of Water. Two Plays. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

——— The Father's Tragedy; William Rufus; Loyalty or Love? Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

——— The Tragic Mary. On hand-made paper, bound in brown boards, with Design by Selwyn Image, imperial 16mo. 7s. 6d. net.

Keats (John). The Sonnets of John Keats. Printed at the Chiswick Press, with decorated borders and initials by Christopher Dean. Royal 16mo. 2s. 6d. net.

Lang (Andrew). Helen of Troy. A Poem. 5th edition. Wide fcap. 8vo. cloth, 2s. 6d. net.

Omar Khayyam, the Stanzas of. Translated by John Leslie Garner. 2nd Edition, with Introduction and Notes. Printed at the Chiswick Press; Royal 16mo. 3s. 6d. net.

Patmore (Coventry). Poems. Collective Edition in 2 vols. 5th edition. Fcap. 8vo. 9*s*.

——— The Unknown Eros, and other Poems. 3rd edition. Fcap. 8vo. 2*s*. 6*d*.

——— The Angel in the House. 7th edition. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Procter (A. A.) Legends and Lyrics. By Adelaide Anne Procter. With Introduction by Charles Dickens. New edition, printed on hand-made paper. 2 vols. pott 8vo., extra binding, 10*s*.

ORIGINAL EDITION. First Series. 69th thousand. 2*s*. 6*d*. Second Series. 61st thousand. 2*s*. 6*d*.

CROWN 8VO EDITION. New Issue, with additional Poems, and 10 Illustrations by Ida Lovering. 19th thousand. Post 8vo. cloth, gilt edges, 5*s*.

CHEAP EDITION, with 18 Illustrations, double columns. 2 Series. 30th thousand. Fcap. 4to. paper cover, 1*s*. each; or in 1 vol. cloth, 3*s*.

The Procter Birthday Book. Demy 16mo. 1*s*. 6*d*.

Rickards (M. S. C.) Lyrics and Elegiacs. By Marcus S. C. Rickards. Crown 8vo. 4*s*. net.

——— Poems of Life and Death. Crown 8vo. 4*s*. 6*d*. net.

——— The Exiles: A Romance of Life. Crown 8vo. 4*s*. 6*d*. net.

Sweetman (E.) The Footsteps of the Gods, and other Poems. Crown 8vo. 6*s*. net.

Tennyson (Lord). A Key to Tennyson's 'In Memoriam.' By Alfred Gatty, D.D., Vicar of Ecclesfield and Sub-Dean of York. Fourth edition, with Portrait of Arthur Hallam, 3*s*. 6*d*.

Handbook to Lord Tennyson's Works. By Morton Luce. With Bibliography. 2nd edition. Fcap. 8vo. 6*s*.

Trevelyan (Sir G. O.) The Ladies in Parliament, and other Pieces. Republished, with Additions and Annotations. By Sir George Otto Trevelyan. Crown 8vo. 1*s*. 6*d*.

Waddington (S.) A Century of Sonnets. Fcap. 4to. 4*s*. 6*d*.

——— Poems. Fcap. 8vo. 4*s*.

Beaumont and Fletcher, their finest Scenes, Lyrics, and other Beauties (selected), with Notes and Introduction by Leigh Hunt. Small post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Butler's Hudibras, with Variorum Notes, a Biography, and a General Index, a Portrait of Butler, and 28 Illustrations. Small post 8vo. 5*s*.

Chaucer's Poetical Works. With Poems formerly printed with his or attributed to him. Edited, with a Memoir, Introduction, Notes, and a Glossary, by Robert Bell. Revised, with a Preliminary Essay by Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. With Portrait. 4 vols. small post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*. each.

Greene, Marlowe, and Ben Jonson, Poems of. Edited, with Critical and Historical Notes and Memoirs, by Robert Bell. Small post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Milton's Poetical Works. With a Memoir and Critical Remarks by James Montgomery, an Index to Paradise Lost, Todd's Verbal Index to all the Poems, and a Selection of Explanatory Notes by Henry G. Bohn. Illustrated with 120 Wood Engravings by Thompson, Williams, O. Smith, and Linton, from Drawings by W. Harvey. 2 vols. small post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*. each

Pope's Poetical Works. Edited, with copious Notes, by Robert Carruthers. 2 vols. with numerous Illustrations, small post 8vo. 10s.

——— **Homer's Iliad and Odyssey.** With Introduction and Notes by the Rev. J. S. Watson, M.A. Illustrated by the entire Series of Flaxman's Designs. 2 vols. small post 8vo. 5s. each.

Sheridan's Dramatic Works. Complete. With Life by G. G. S., and Portrait, after Reynolds. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Shakespeare. Entirely New Edition of Shakespeare's Works. Each Play in a single Volume. Edited, with Introduction Notes, by John Dennis. With Illustrations by Byam Shaw. Pott 8vo.

HAMLET | MERCHANT OF VENICE.

Others to follow at short intervals.

——— **Dramatic Works.** Edited by S. W. Singer. With a Life of Shakespeare by W. W. Lloyd. 10 vols. fcap. 8vo. cloth, 2s. 6d. each.

——— **Plays and Poems.** With Notes and Life by Charles Knight. Royal 8vo. 10s. 6d.

——— **Pocket Volume Edition.** Comprising all his Plays and Poems. Edited from the First Folio Edition by T. Keightley. 13 vols. royal 32mo. in a cloth box, price 21s.

Critical Essays on the Plays. By W. W. Lloyd. 2s. 6d.

Lectures on Shakespeare. By Bernhard ten Brink. Translated by Julia Franklin. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Shakespeare's Dramatic Art. The History and Character of Shakespeare's Plays. By Dr. Hermann Ulrici. Translated by L. Dora Schmitz. 2 vols. sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Shakespeare: A Literary Biography by Karl Elze, Ph. D., LL.D. Translated by L. Dora Schmitz. Sm. post 8vo. 5s.

Coleridge's Lectures on Shakespeare, &c. Edited by T. Ashe. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Hazlitt's Lectures on the Characters of Shakespeare's Plays Sm. post 8vo. 1s.

Lamb's Specimens of English Dramatic Poets of the Time of Elizabeth. With Notes, together with the Extracts from the Garrick Plays. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Ballads and Songs of the Peasantry of England, taken down from oral recitation, and transcribed from private manuscripts, rare broadsides, and scarce publications. Edited by Robert Bell. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Percy's Reliques of Ancient English Poetry. Collected by Thomas Percy, Lord Bishop of Dromore. With an Essay on Ancient Minstrels, and a Glossary. A new edition by J. V. Prichard, A.M. 2 vols. Sm. post 8vo. 7s.6d.

English Sonnets by Living Writers. Selected and arranged, with a Note on the History of the Sonnet, by S. Waddington. 2nd edition, enlarged. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

English Sonnets by Poets of the Past. Selected and arranged by S. Waddington. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

Who Wrote It? A Dictionary of Common Poetical Quotations in the English Language. 4th edition. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

Bohn's Dictionary of Quotations from the English Poets, arranged according to subjects. 4th edition. Post 8vo. 6s.

New Editions, fcap. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.* each net.

THE ALDINE EDITION

OF THE

BRITISH POETS.

'This excellent edition of the English classics, with their complete texts and scholarly introductions, are something very different from the cheap volumes of extracts which are just now so much too common.'—*St. James's Gazette.*

'An excellent series. Small, handy, and complete.'—*Saturday Review.*

Akenside. Edited by Rev. A. Dyce.

Beattie. Edited by Rev. A. Dyce.

***Blake.** Edited by W. M. Rossetti.

***Burns.** Edited by G. A. Aitken. 3 vols.

Butler. Edited by R. B. Johnson. 2 vols.

Campbell. Edited by His Son-in-law, the Rev. A. W. Hill. With Memoir by W. Allingham.

Chatterton. Edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 2 vols.

Chaucer. Edited by Dr. R. Morris, with Memoir by Sir H. Nicolas. 6 vols.

Churchill. Edited by Jas. Hannay. 2 vols.

***Coleridge.** Edited by T. Ashe, B.A. 2 vols.

Collins. Edited by W. Moy Thomas.

Cowper. Edited by John Bruce, F.S.A. 3 vols.

Dryden. Edited by the Rev. R. Hooper, M.A. 5 vols.

Falconer. Edited by the Rev. J. Mitford.

Goldsmith. Revised Edition by Austin Dobson. With Portrait.

***Gray.** Edited by J. Bradshaw, LL.D.

Herbert. Edited by the Rev. A. B. Grosart.

***Herrick.** Edited by George Saintsbury. 2 vols.

***Keats.** Edited by the late Lord Houghton.

Kirke White. Edited, with a Memoir, by Sir H. Nicolas.

Milton. Edited by Dr. Bradshaw. 2 vols.

Parnell. Edited by G. A. Aitken.

Pope. Edited by G. R. Dennis. With Memoir by John Dennis. 3 vols.

Prior. Edited by R. B. Johnson. 2 vols.

Raleigh and Wotton. With Selections from the Writings of other COURTLY POETS from 1540 to 1650. Edited by Ven. Archdeacon Hannah, D.C.L.

Rogers. Edited by Edward Bell, M.A.

Scott. Edited by John Dennis. 5 vols.

Shakespeare's Poems. Edited by Rev. A. Dyce.

Shelley. Edited by H. Buxton Forman. 5 vols.

Spenser. Edited by J. Payne Collier. 5 vols.

Surrey. Edited by J. Yeowell.

Swift. Edited by the Rev. J. Mitford. 3 vols.

Thomson. Edited by the Rev. D. C. Tovey. 2 vols.

Vaughan. Sacred Poems and Pious Ejaculations. Edited by the Rev. H. Lyte.

Wordsworth. Edited by Prof. Dowden. 7 vols.

Wyatt. Edited by J. Yeowell.

Young. 2 vols. Edited by the Rev. J. Mitford.

* These volumes may also be had bound in Irish linen, with design in gold on side and back by Gleeson White, and gilt top, 3*s.* 6*d.* each net.

BIOGRAPHY AND HISTORY.

Memoir of Edward Craven Hawtrey, D.D., Headmaster, and afterwards Provost, of Eton. By F. St. John Thackeray, M.A. With Portrait and 3 Coloured Illustrations. Small crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

François Severin Marceau. A Biography. By Captain T. G. Johnson. With Portraits and Maps. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

Robert Schumann. His Life and Works. By August Reissmann. Translated by A. L. Alger. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Schumann's Early Letters. Translated by May Herbert. With a Preface by Sir George Grove, D.C.L. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

William Shakespeare. A Literary Biography by Karl Elze, Ph.D., LL.D. Translated by L. Dora Schmitz. Sm. post 8vo. 5*s.*

Boswell's Life of Johnson, with the Tour in the Hebrides, and Johnsoniana. Edited by the Rev. Alexander Napier, M.A. 6 vols. sm. post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

Johnson's Lives of the Poets. Edited, with Notes, by Mrs. Alexander Napier, and an Introduction by Professor J. W. Hales, M.A. 3 vols. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

North's Lives of the Norths: Right Hon. Francis North, Baron Guildford, the Hon. Sir Dudley North, and the Hon. and Rev. Dr. John North. Edited by A. Jessopp, D.D. With 3 Portraits. 3 vols. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

Vasari's Lives of the most Eminent Painters, Sculptors, and Architects. Translated by Mrs. J. Foster, with Notes. 6 vols. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

Walton's Lives of Donne, Hooker, &c. New edition, revised by A. H. Bullen. With numerous illustrations. Sm. post 8vo. 5*s.*

Helps (Sir Arthur). The Life and Labours of the late Thomas Brassey. 7th edition. Sm. post 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.*

——— **The Life of Hernando Cortes, and the Conquest of Mexico.** Dedicated to Thomas Carlyle. 2 vols. Small post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

——— **The Life of Christopher Columbus,** the Discoverer of America. 10th edition. Small post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

——— **The Life of Pizarro.** With some Account of his Associates in the Conquest of Peru. 3rd edition. Small post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

——— **The Life of Las Casas, the Apostle of the Indies. 5th edition.** Small post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Irving (Washington). Life of Oliver Goldsmith. 1*s.*

——— **Life and Voyages of Columbus and his Companions.** 2 vols. With Portraits. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

——— **Life of Mahomet and His Successors.** With Portrait. 3*s.* 6*d.*

——— **Life of George Washington.** 4 vols. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

Life and Letters of Washington Irving. By his nephew, Pierre E. Irving. With Portrait. 2 vols. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

Lockhart's Life of Burns. Revised and corrected with Notes and Appendices, by William Scott Douglas. With Portrait. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Southey's Life of Nelson. With Additional Notes, Index, Portraits, Plans, and upwards of 50 Engravings. Sm. post 8vo. 5*s*.

——— Life of Wesley, and the Rise and Progress of Methodism. With Portrait. Sm. post 8vo. 5*s*.

Life of Wellington. By 'An Old Soldier.' From the materials of Maxwell. With 18 Steel Engravings. Sm. post. 8vo. 5*s*.

Life of Burke. By Sir James Prior. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Life and Letters of Locke. By Lord King. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Life of Pope. By Robert Carruthers. Illustrated. Sm. post. 8vo. 5*s*.

Cellini's Memoirs. Translated by T. Roscoe. With Portrait. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Memoirs of the Life of Colonel Hutchinson. By his Widow. With Portrait. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Memorials and Letters of Charles Lamb. Talfourd's edition, revised. By W. Carew Hazlitt. 2 vols. Sm. post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*. each.

Robert Southey: The Story of his Life Written in his Letters. With an Introduction. Edited by John Dennis. Small post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Letters and Works of Lady Mary Wortley Montagu. Edited, with Memoir, by W. Moy Thomas. Revised edition, with 5 Portraits. 2 vols. small post 8vo. 5*s*. each.

Memoirs of Philip de Commines. Translated by A. R. Scoble. With Portraits. 2 vols. small post 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*. each.

The Diary of Samuel Pepys. Transcribed from the Shorthand MS. by the Rev. Mynors Bright, M.A. With Lord Braybrooke's Notes. Edited, with Additions, by Henry B. Wheatley, F.S.A. 10 vols. demy 8vo. with Portraits and other Illustrations, 10*s*. 6*d*. each.

*** The only complete edition.

Evelyn's Diary and Correspondence. Edited by W. Bray, F.S.A. With 45 Engravings. 4 vols. small post 8vo. 20*s*.

Pepys' Diary and Correspondence. With Life and Notes by Lord Braybrooke, and 31 Engravings. 4 vols. small post 8vo. 20*s*.

The Early Diary of Frances Burney, 1768-1778. With a Selection from her Correspondence and from the Journals of her Sisters, Susan and Charlotte Burney. Edited by Annie Raine Ellis. 2 vols. demy 8vo. 32*s*.

The Diary and Letters of Madame D'Arblay. As edited by her Niece, Charlotte Barrett. With Portraits. 4 vols. demy 8vo. 30*s*.

Handbooks of English Literature. Edited by J. W. Hales, M.A., Fellow of Christ's College, Cambridge, Professor of English Literature at King's College, London. Crown 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*. each.

The Age of Milton. By J. Bass Mullinger, M.A., and the Rev. J. H. B. Masterman.

The Age of Dryden. 2nd edition. By R. Garnett, LL.D.

The Age of Pope. 2nd edition. By John Dennis.

The Age of Wordsworth. 2nd edition. By Prof. C. H. Herford, Litt.D.

Handbooks of English Literature (*continued*).

The Age of Tennyson. 2nd edition. By Professor Hugh Walker.

PREPARING.

The Age of Alfred. By H. Frank Heath, Ph.D.

The Age of Chaucer. By Professor Hales.

The Age of Shakespeare. By Professor Hales.

The Age of Johnson. By Thomas Seccombe.

Ten Brink's History of Early English Literature. 3 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each. Vol. I.—(To Wiclif). Translated by Horace M. Kennedy. Vol. II. — (Wiclif, Chaucer, Earliest Drama, Renaissance). Translated by W. Clarke Robinson, Ph.D. Vol. III.—(To the Death of Surrey). Edited by Professor Alois Brandl. Translated by L. Dora Schmitz.

Reviews and Essays in English Literature. By the Rev. D. C. Tovey, M.A., Clark Lecturer at Trinity College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo. 5s. net.

History of Germany in the Middle Ages. By E. F. Henderson, Ph.D. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

England in the Fifteenth Century. By the late Rev. W. Denton, M.A., Worcester College, Oxford. Demy 8vo. 12s.

History of Modern Europe, from the Taking of Constantinople to the Establishment of the German Empire, A.D. 1453–1871. By the late Dr. T. H. Dyer. A new edition. 5 vols. 2l. 12s. 6d.

Lives of the Queens of England. From the Norman Conquest to the reign of Queen Anne. By Agnes Strickland. Library edition. With Portraits, Autographs, and Vignettes. 8 vols. demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. each. Also a Cheaper Edition in 6 vols. with 6 Portraits, small post 8vo. 30s.

Life of Mary Queen of Scots. By Agnes Strickland. With Index and 2 Portraits of Mary. 2 vols. small post 8vo. 10s.

Lives of the Tudor and Stuart Princesses. By Agnes Strickland. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 5s.

The Works of Flavius Josephus. Whiston's Translation. Thoroughly revised by Rev. A. R. Shilleto, M.A. With Topographical and Geographical Notes by Sir C. W. Wilson, K.C.B. 5 vols. small post 8vo. 17s. 6d.

Coxe's Memoirs of the Duke of Marlborough. 3 vols. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

*** ATLAS OF THE PLANS OF MARLBOROUGH'S CAMPAIGNS. 4to. 10s. 6d.

——— **History of the House of Austria.** 4 vols. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Gibbon's Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire. Complete and Unabridged, with Variorum Notes. With Index, Maps, and Portrait. 7 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Gregorovius's History of the City of Rome in the Middle Ages. Translated by Annie Hamilton. Crown 8vo. Vols. I., II., and III., each 6s. net. Vols. IV., V., and VI., each in 2 parts, 4s. 6d. net each part.

Guizot's History of Civilisation. Translated by W. Hazlitt. 3 vols. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Lamartine's History of the Girondists. 3 vols. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Machiavelli's History of Florence, the Prince, and other Works. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Martineau's (Harriet) History of England, from 1800–1815. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

——— **History of the Thirty Years' Peace,** A.D. 1815–46. 4 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Menzel's History of Germany. With Portraits. 3 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Michelet's Luther's Autobiography. Translated by William Hazlitt. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

——— **History of the French Revolution** from its earliest indications to the flight of the King in 1791. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Mignet's History of the French Revolution, from 1789 to 1814. With Portrait of Napoleon as First Consul. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Motley's Rise of the Dutch Republic. A new Edition, with Introduction by Moncure D. Conway. 3 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Ranke's History of the Popes. Translated by E. Foster. 3 vols. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

STANDARD BOOKS.

(*See also* '*Biography and History*,' '*Poetry*,' '*Fiction*,' *&c.*)

Addison's Works. With the Notes of Bishop Hurd. Edited by H. G. Bohn. 6 vols. With Portrait and Plates. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Bacon's Essays, and Moral and Historical Works. Edited by J. Devey. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Browne (Sir Thomas). Religio Medici. By Sir Thomas Browne. New Edition, printed in large type on hand-made paper at the Chiswick Press, and bound in half-vellum. With Portrait, and a Reproduction of the Original Frontispiece. Small crown 4to. 10s. 6d. net.

——— **Works.** 3 vols. Edited by Simon Wilkin. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Burke's Works and Speeches. 8 vols. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy. Edited, with Notes, by the Rev. A. R. Shilleto, M.A., and an Introduction by A. H. Bullen. 3 vols. Demy 8vo. with binding designed by Gleeson White, 31s. 6d. net. Also a Cheap Edition, in 3 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Burton's Personal Narrative of a Pilgrimage to Al-Madinah and Meccah. By Captain Sir Richard F. Burton, K.C.M.G., &c. With an Introduction by Stanley Lane-Poole, and all the original Illustrations. 2 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

Carlyle's Sartor Resartus. Illustrated by E. J. Sullivan. Cr. 8vo. 6s.

Coleridge's Prose Works. Edited by T. Ashe. 6 vols. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Defoe's Novels and Miscellaneous Works. 7 vols. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Dunlop's History of Prose Fiction. Revised by Henry Wilson. 2 vols. Small post 8vo. 5s. each.

Emerson's Works. 3 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Goldsmith's (O.) Works. Edited by J. W. M. Gibbs. 5 vols. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Gray's Letters. New Edition, by the Rev. D. C. Tovey, M.A. [*In the press.*

Hazlitt (William). Lectures and Essays. 7 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Irving (Washington). Complete Works. 15 vols. With Portraits, &c. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Kinglake's Eothen. By Alexander W. Kinglake. Reprinted from the First Edition, with an Introduction by the Rev. W. Tuckwell. With Phototype Reproductions of the Original Illustrations, a Map of the Author's Route, and Index. Pott 8vo. hand-made paper, 4s. net.

Lamb's Essays of Elia and Eliana. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Locke (John). Philosophical Works. Edited by J. A. St. John. 2 vols. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Mill (John Stuart). Essays. Collected from various sources by J. W. M. Gibbs. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Milton's Prose Works. Edited by J. A. St. John. 5 vols. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Prout's (Father) Reliques. By Rev. F. Mahony. Copyright edition. With Etchings by Maclise. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Swift (Jonathan). Prose Works. Edited by Temple Scott. With Introduction by W. E. H. Lecky, M.P. In 10 volumes. Small post 8vo 3s. 6d. each.

Vol. I.—'A Tale of a Tub,' 'The Battle of the Books,' and other early works. Edited by Temple Scott. With Biographical Introduction by W. E. H. Lecky, M.P. With Portrait and Facsimile.

Vol. II.—'The Journal to Stella.' Edited by F. Ryland, M.A. With a Facsimile Letter and two Portraits of Stella.

Vols. III. and IV.—Writings on Religion and the Church. Edited by Temple Scott. With 2 portraits in photogravure after Bindon.

Vol. V.—Historical and Political Writings (English). Edited by Temple Scott. [*In the press.*

Walton's (Izaak) Angler. Edited by Edward Jesse. With 229 Engravings on Wood and Steel. Small post 8vo. 5s.

White's Natural History of Selborne. Edited by Edward Jesse. With 40 Portraits and Coloured Plates. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Young (Arthur). Travels in France during the Years 1787-89. Edited by M. Betham-Edwards. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

——— Tour in Ireland during the years 1776-9. Edited by A. W. Hutton, Librarian, National Liberal Club. With Bibliography by J. P. Anderson. Index and Map. 2 vols. Small post 8vo., 3s. 6d. each.

Hugo (Victor). Dramatic Works. Hernani—Ruy Blas—The King's Diversion. Translated by Mrs. Newton Crosland and F. L. Slous. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

——— Poems, chiefly Lyrical. Translated by various Writers, collected by J. H. L. Williams. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Molière's Dramatic Works. Translated by C. H. Wall. 3 vols. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Montaigne's Essays. Cotton's Translation. Edited by W. C. Hazlitt. 3 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Montesquieu's Spirit of Laws. Translated by Dr. Nugent. Revised by J. V. Prichard. 2 vols. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Pascal's Thoughts. Translated by C. Kegan Paul. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Racine's Tragedies. Translated by R. Bruce Boswell. 2 vols. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Goethe's Works. Including his Autobiography and Annals, Dramatic Works, Poems and Ballads, Novels and Tales, Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship and Travels, Tour in Italy, Miscellaneous Travels, Early and Miscellaneous Letters, Correspondence with Schiller and Zelter, and Conversations with Eckermann and Soret. Translated by J. Oxenford, Anna Swanwick, R. D. Boylan, E. A. Bowring, Sir Walter Scott, Edward Bell, L. Dora Schmitz, A. D. Coleridge, and A. Rogers. 16 vols. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

——— Faust. German Text with Hayward's Prose Translation and Notes. Revised with Introduction by Dr. C. A. Buchheim. Sm. post 8vo. 5s.

Heine's Poems. Translated by E. A. Bowring. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

——— Travel-Pictures. Translated by Francis Storr. With Map. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Lessing's Dramatic Works. Edited by Ernest Bell. 2 vols. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

——— Laokoon, Dramatic Notes, &c. Translated by E. C. Beesley and Helen Zimmern. Edited by Edward Bell. With Frontispiece. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Nibelungenlied.—The Lay of the Nibelungs. Metrically translated from the old German Text by Alice Horton, and Edited by Edward Bell, M.A. To which is prefixed the Essay on the 'Nibelungen Lied' by Thomas Carlyle. 5s.

Richter (Jean Paul). Levana. Translated. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

——— Flower, Fruit, and Thorn Pieces (Siebenkäs). Translated by Lieut.-Col. A. Ewing. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Schiller's Works. Including the History of the Seven Years' War, Revolt in the Netherlands, &c., Dramatic and Poetical Works, and Aesthetical and Philosophical Essays. Translated by Rev. A. J. W. Morrison, A. Lodge, E. A. Bowring, J. Churchill, S. T. Coleridge, Sir Theodore Martin, and others. 7 vols. With Portraits. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

F. Schlegel's Lectures, and other Works. 5 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

A. W. Schlegel's Lectures on Dramatic Art and Literature. Translated by the Rev. A. J. W. Morrison. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Alfieri's Tragedies. Translated by E. A. Bowring. 2 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Ariosto's Orlando Furioso, &c. Translated by W. S. Rose. 2 vols. With Portrait and 24 Steel Engravings. Small post 8vo. 5s. each.

Dante. Translated by Rev. H. F. Cary. With Portrait. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

——— Translated by I. C. Wright. With Flaxman's Illustrations. Small post 8vo. 5s.

——— The Italian Text, with English Translation. The Inferno. By Dr. Carlyle. The Purgatorio. By W. S. Dugdale. Sm. post 8vo. 5s. each.

Petrarch's Sonnets, and other Poems. Translated by various hands. With Life by Thomas Campbell, and Portrait and 15 Steel Engravings. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Tasso's Jerusalem Delivered. Translated into English Spenserian Verse by J. H. Wiffen. With Woodcuts and 8 Steel Engravings. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Camoëns' Lusiad. Mickle's Translation revised by E. R. Hodges. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Antoninus (Marcus Aurelius). The Thoughts of. Translated literally, with Notes. Biographical Sketch, Introductory Essay on the Philosophy, and Index. By George Long, M.A. New edition. Printed at the Chiswick Press, on hand-made paper, and bound in buckram. Pott 8vo. 6s. (Or in *Bohn's Classical Library*, 3s. 6d.)

Epictetus. The Discourses of, with the Encheiridion and Fragments. Translated, with Notes and Introduction, by George Long, M.A. New edition, printed at the Chiswick Press, on hand-made paper, and bound in buckram. 2 vols. Pott 8vo. 10s. 6d. (Or in *Bohn's Classical Library*, 1 vol., 5s.)

Plato's Dialogues, referring to the Trial and Death of Socrates, Euthyphro, The Apology, Crito and Phædo. Translated by the late William Whewell, D.D. Printed at the Chiswick Press on hand-made paper, and bound in buckram. Pott 8vo., 4s. 6d.

Horace. The Odes and Carmen Saeculare. Translated into English Verse by the late John Conington, M.A. 11th edition. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

——— The Satires and Epistles. Translated into English Verse by John Conington, M.A. 8th edition. 3s. 6d.

Dictionaries and Books of Reference.

Webster's International Dictionary of the English Language, being the authentic edition of Webster's Unabridged Dictionary, comprising the issues of 1847, 1864, and 1880, now thoroughly revised and enlarged under the supervision of Noah Porter, D.D., LL.D., of Yale University, with Valuable Literary Appendices. Medium 4to. 2118 pages, 3500 Woodcuts. Cloth, 1*l.* 11*s.* 6*d.*; half calf, 2*l.* 2*s.*; half russia, 2*l.* 5*s.*; full calf, 2*l.* 8*s.* Also in 2 vols. cloth, 1*l.* 14*s.*

The Standard in the Postal Telegraph Department of the British Isles.
The Standard in the United States Government Printing Office.
Prospectuses with specimen pages sent free on application.

Webster's Brief International Dictionary. A Pronouncing Dictionary of the English Language. Abridged from Webster's International Dictionary. With 800 Illustrations. Demy 8vo. 3s.

A Dictionary of Slang, Jargon, and Cant. By A. Barrère and C. G. Leland. 2 vols. Medium 8vo. 7s. 6d. each.

A Biographical and Critical Dictionary of Painters and Engravers. With a List of Ciphers, Monograms, and Marks. By Michael Bryan. Imperial 8vo. New edition, thoroughly revised and enlarged by R. E. Graves (of the British Museum) and Walter Armstrong. 2 vols. Imperial 8vo. buckram, 3*l.* 3s.

A Biographical Dictionary. Containing Concise Notices (upwards of 15,000) of Eminent Persons of all Ages and Countries, and more particularly of Distinguished Natives of Great Britain and Ireland. By Thompson Cooper, F.S.A. With a new Supplement, bringing the work down to 1883. 2 vols. Crown 8vo. 5s. each.

Kluge's Etymological Dictionary of the German Language. Translated by J. F. Davis, D.Lit., M.A. Cheap Edition. Crown 4to. 7s. 6d.

Grimm's Teutonic Mythology. Translated from the 4th edition, with Notes and Appendix, by James Stephen Stallybrass. Demy 8vo. 4 Vols. 3*l.* 3s.; Vols. I. to III. 15s. each; Vol. IV. (containing Additional Notes and References, and completing the Work), 18s.

French and English Dictionary. By F. E. A. Gasc. 8th edition, reset and considerably enlarged. Large 8vo. half-buckram, 12s. 6d.

Student's French Dictionary. Post 8vo. 5s.

A Pocket Dictionary. 16mo. 57th Thousand. 2s. 6d.

Synonyms and Antonyms of the English Language. Collected and Contrasted. By the late Ven. C. J. Smith, M.A. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Synonyms Discriminated. A Dictionary of Synonymous Words in the English Language, showing the accurate signification of words of similar meaning. Illustrated with Quotations from Standard Writers. By Ven. C. J. Smith, M.A. Edited by the Rev. H. Percy Smith, M.A., of Balliol College, Oxford. Demy 8vo. 14s.

A History of Roman Literature. By Professor W. S. Teuffel. 5th edition, revised, with considerable Additions, by Professor L. Schwabe. Translated by G. C. W. Warr, M.A., Professor of Classical Literature at King's College, London. 2 vols. Medium 8vo. 15s. each.

Corpus Poetarum Latinorum, a se aliisque denuo recognitorum et brevi lectionum varietate instructorum, edidit Johannes Percival Postgate. Vol. I. Large post 4to. 21s. net. Or in 2 parts, paper wrappers, 9s. each net.
[*Vol. II. preparing.*

Lowndes' Bibliographer's Manual of English Literature. Enlarged edition, by H. G. Bohn. 6 vols. Small post 8vo. 5s. each.

A Dictionary of Roman Coins, Republican and Imperial. Commenced by the late Seth W. Stevenson, F.S.A., revised in part by C. Roach Smith, F.S.A., and completed by F. W. Madden, M.R.A.S. With upwards of 700 engravings on wood. 8vo. 2*l.* 2s.

Henfrey's Guide to English Coins, from the Conquest to the present time. New and revised edition. By C. F. Keary, M.A., F.S.A. With an Historical Introduction by the Editor. Small post 8vo. 6s.

Humphreys' Coin Collector's Manual. By H. N. Humphreys. With Index and upwards of 140 Illustrations on Wood and Steel. 2 vols. Small post 8vo. 5s. each.

Clark's Introduction to Heraldry. 18th edition. Revised and Enlarged by J. R. Planché, Rouge Croix. With nearly 1000 Illustrations. Small post 8vo. 5s.; or with the Illustrations Coloured, half-morocco, roxburgh, 15s.

DRAMA AND THE STAGE.

Hiatt (Ch.) Ellen Terry and Her Impersonations. An Appreciation. By Charles Hiatt. With 32 Illustrations reproduced from Photographs, and binding designed by Gordon Craig. Crown 8vo. 5s. net.

Jameson (Mrs.) Shakespeare's Heroines. By Mrs. Jameson. Illustrated with 25 Collotype Reproductions of Portraits of celebrated Actresses in the various characters; and Photogravure Frontispiece, Miss Ellen Terry as Lady Macbeth, by John Sargent, R.A. (by kind permission of Sir Henry Irving). Post 8vo. 6s.

Whyte (F.) Actors of the Century. A Play-lover's Gleanings from Theatrical Annals. By Frederic Whyte, Translator of 'The English Stage' by Augustin Filon. With 150 Portraits in Collotype and Half-tone, representing in characteristic parts all the most popular actors and actresses during the last 100 years. Imperial 8vo. 21s. net.

ART AND ARCHÆOLOGY.

Sir Edward Burne-Jones, Bart. A Record and Review. By Malcolm Bell. Illustrated with over 100 Reproductions from the works of the Artist. 4th edition, entirely revised, with many new Illustrations. Large post 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

Albert Moore: his Life and Works. By A. Lys Baldry. Illustrated with 10 Photogravures and about 70 other Reproductions. Small Colombier 8vo. with binding by Gleeson White. 21s. net.

Frederic, Lord Leighton, P.R.A. An Illustrated Chronicle. By Ernest Rhys. Illustrated with 12 Photogravures and 83 other Reproductions. New and Cheaper Edition. Small Colombier 8vo. 21s. net.

William Morris: his Art, his Writings, and his Public Life. By Aymer Vallance, M.A., F.S.A. With 40 Reproductions in half-tone of designs by William Morris, and a Coloured Frontispiece and Portrait. Imperial 8vo. 25s. net.

Thomas Gainsborough: his Life and Works. By Mrs. Arthur Bell (N. D'Anvers). With numerous Illustrations in photogravure and half-tone. Small Colombier 8vo. 25s. net.

The Art of Velasquez. A Critical Study. By R. A. M. Stevenson. With 20 Photogravures and 50 other Illustrations. Small royal 4to. 21. 5s net.

Raphael's Madonnas, and other Great Pictures. Reproduced from the Original Paintings. With a Life of Raphael, and an Account of his Chief Works. By Karl Károly. With 54 Illustrations, including 9 Photogravures. Small Colombier 8vo. 21s. net.

The Glasgow School of Painting. By David Martin. With Introduction by Francis Newbury. With Reproductions of paintings by W. Y. Macgregor, James Guthrie, James Lavery, E. A. Walton, E. A. Hornel, and many others. Royal 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

Masterpieces of the Great Artists A.D. 1400–1700. By Mrs. Arthur Bell (N. D'Anvers). With 43 full-page Illustrations, including 8 Photogravures. Small Colombier 8vo. 21s. net.

Bate (Percy H.) The Pre-Raphaelite School. By Percy H. Bate. With about 80 Reproductions in Collotype after Dante Gabriel Rossetti, Sir J. E. Millais, Sir E. Burne-Jones, C. Alston Collins, W. L. Windus, Ford Madox Brown, Frederic Sandys, W. Holman Hunt, Henry Wallis, John Brett, R.A., Spencer Stanhope, Simeon Solomon, M. J. Lawless, W. S. Burton, Evelyn Pickering, Walter Crane, and others. Small Colombier 8vo. 2*l.* 2*s.* net.

Bayliss (Sir Wyke). Rex Regum: a Painter's Study of the Likeness of Christ from the Time of the Apostles to the Present Day. By Sir Wyke Bayliss, F.S.A., President of the Royal Society of British Artists. With numerous Illustrations. Reproduced from the Original Paintings. Post 8vo. 6*s.* net.

Bell (Sir C.) The Anatomy and Philosophy of Expression as Connected with the Fine Arts. By Sir Charles Bell, K.H. 7th edition, revised. Small post 8vo. 5*s.*

Bell's Cathedral Series. A new Series of Handbooks on the great Cathedrals. Edited by Gleeson White and E. F. Strange. Well illustrated. Cloth, 1*s.* 6*d.* each. *See Page* 35.

Blomfield (R.) A History of Renaissance Architecture in England. A.D. 1500–1800. By Reginald Blomfield, M.A. With 150 Illustrations drawn by the Author, and 90 Plates from Photographs and Old Prints and Drawings. Imperial 8vo. 2 vols. 50*s.* net.

Bloxam (M. H.) The Principles of Gothic Ecclesiastical Architecture. By M. H. Bloxam. With numerous Woodcuts by Jewitt. 11th edition. Crown 8vo. 2 vols. 15*s.* Companion Volume on CHURCH VESTMENTS. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Bryan's Biographical and Critical Dictionary of Painters and Engravers. With a List of Cyphers, Monograms, and Marks. By Michael Bryan. New edition, thoroughly revised and enlarged by R. E. Graves, of the British Museum, and Walter Armstrong, R.A. 2 vols. imperial 8vo. buckram, 3*l.* 3*s.*

Burn (R.) Ancient Rome and its Neighbourhood. An Illustrated Handbook to the Ruins in the City and the Campagna. By Robert Burn, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, Author of 'Rome and the Campagna,' &c. With numerous Illustrations. 7*s.* 6*d.*

*** This volume is also issued in limp red cloth, with Map Pocket, for the convenience of Travellers.

Connoisseur Series. Edited by Gleeson White. Demy 8vo.

Hiatt (C.) Picture Posters. A Handbook on the History of the Illustrated Placard. With 150 Illustrations. By Charles Hiatt. 12*s.* 6*d.* net.

Strange (E. F.) Japanese Illustration. By Edward F. Strange, M.J.S. With 8 Coloured Plates and 88 other Illustrations. 12*s.* 6*d.* net.

Watson (R. M.) The Art of the House. By Rosamund Marriott Watson. Illustrated. 6*s.* net.

Wheatley (H. B.) British Historical Portraits. Some Notes on the Painted Portraits of Celebrated Characters. By H. B. Wheatley. With 71 Illustrations. 10*s.* 6*d.* net.

Williamson (G. C.) Portrait Miniatures, from the time of Holbein (1531) to that of Sir William Ross (1890). A Handbook for Collectors By G. C. Williamson, Litt. D. With 104 Illustrations. 12*s.* 6*d.* net.

Crane (W.). The Bases of Design. By Walter Crane. With 200 Illustrations. Medium 8vo. 18*s.* net.

——— Decorative Illustration of Books. *See* Ex-Libris Series.

Cunningham's Lives of the Most Eminent British Painters. A new edition, with Notes and Sixteen fresh Lives. By Mrs. Heaton. 3 vols. small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Demmin's Illustrated History of Arms and Armour, from the Earliest Period. By Auguste Demmin. Translated by C. C. Black, M.A. With nearly 2000 Illustrations. Small post 8vo. 7s. 6d.

Didron's Christian Iconography. A History of Christian Art in the Middle Ages. Translated from the French, with additions, &c., by Margaret Stokes. 2 vols. small post 8vo. 5s. each.

Endymion Series of Poets. Illustrated by R. Anning Bell, Byam Shaw, &c. *See* page 4.

Ex-Libris Series. Edited by Gleeson White.

English Book-Plates (Ancient and Modern). By Egerton Castle, M.A., F.S.A. With 203 Illustrations. 3rd edition. 10s. 6d. net.

French Book-Plates. By Walter Hamilton. With 180 Illustrations. 2nd edition, revised and enlarged. 8s. 6d. net.

American Book-Plates. By Charles Dexter Allen. With Bibliography by Eben Newell Hewins, and 177 Illustrations. 12s .6d. net.

Ladies' Book-Plates. By Norna Labouchere. With 204 Illustrations. 8s. 6d. net.

Decorative Heraldry. By G. W. Eve. With 202 Illustrations, including 4 in colour and 1 copperplate. 10s. 6d. net.

The Decorative Illustration of Books. By Walter Crane. With 164 Illustrations. 10s. 6d. net.

Modern Book Illustration. By Joseph Pennell. With 171 Illustrations. 10s. 6d. net.

The Bayeux Tapestry. Reproduced in 79 Half-tone Plates from photographs of the work originally taken for the Department of Science and Art. With a Historical Description and Commentary by Frank Rede Fowke, of that Department. 10s. 6d. net.

Bookbindings, Old and New. By Brander Matthews. With 98 Illustrations. 7s. 6d. net.

Fairholt's Costume in England. A History of Dress to the end of the Eighteenth Century. 3rd edition. Revised by Viscount Dillon, P.S.A. Illustrated with above 700 Engravings. 2 vols. sm. post 8vo. 5s. each.

Flaxman. Lectures on Sculpture, as delivered before the President and Members of the Royal Academy. By J. Flaxman, R.A. With 53 Plates. New edition. Small post 8vo. 6s.

Heaton (Mrs.) A Concise History of Painting. By Mrs. Charles Heaton. New edition, revised, by Cosmo Monkhouse. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Holbein's Dance of Death. Printed from the Original Woodblocks of Bonner and Byfield. With an Introductory Note by Austin Dodson. 32mo. cloth, half parchment, gilt top, 2s. 6d. net. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Law (E.) A Short History of Hampton Court. By Ernest Law, B.A. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

Leonardo da Vinci's Treatise on Painting. With a Life of Leonardo. New edition, revised, with numerous Plates. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Moody (F. W.) Lectures and Lessons on Art. By the late F. W. Moody, Instructor in Decorative Art at South Kensington Museum. With Diagrams. 5th edition. Demy 8vo. sewed, 4*s.* 6*d.*

Patmore (C.) Principle in Art. By Coventry Patmore. 2nd edition. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

Petit (J. T.) Architectural Studies in France. By the late Rev. J. T. Petit, F.S.A. New edition, revised by Edward Bell, M.A., F.S.A. Fcap. 4to. with 260 Illustrations, 15*s.* net.

Planché's History of British Costume, from the Earliest Time to the close of the Eighteenth Century. By J. R. Planché, Somerset Herald. With Index and upwards of 400 Illustrations. Small post 8vo. 5*s.*

Practical Designing Series. Crown 8vo.

Practical Designing. A Handbook on the Preparation of Working Drawings, showing the technical method of preparing designs for the manufacturer, and the limitation imposed on the artist by the material and its treatment. Freely Illustrated. Edited by Gleeson White. 4th edition. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

Alphabets. A Handbook of Lettering compiled for the use of Artists, Designers, Handicraftsmen, and Students. With Complete Historical and Practical Descriptions. By E. F. Strange. With 215 Illustrations. 3rd edition. 5*s.*

Modern Illustration: Its Methods and Present Condition. By Joseph Pennell. With 171 Illustrations. Students' Edition, 7*s.* 6*d.*

Prior (E. S.) History of Gothic Art in England. By E. S. Prior. Illustrated by G. C. Horsley and others. Imperial 8vo.

Renton (E.) Intaglio Engraving, Past and Present. By Edward Renton. With numerous Illustrations from Gems and Seals. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Roberts (W.) Memorials of Christie's. By W. Roberts. With 64 Collotype Reproductions and Coloured Frontispiece. 2 vols. 8vo. 25*s.* net.

Stokes (Margaret). Three Months in the Forests of France. A Pilgrimage in Search of Vestiges of the Irish Saints in France. With numerous Illustrations. By Margaret Stokes, Hon. M.R.I.A. Fcap. 4to. 12*s.* net.

Vasari's Lives. A Selection of Seventy of the Lives. Edited and annotated in the light of modern discoveries by E. H. and E. W. Blashfield and A. A. Hopkins. Illustrated. 4 vols. pott 4to. 36*s.* net.

Way (T. R.) Later Reliques of Old London. Drawn in lithography by T. R. Way. With Introduction and Explanatory Letterpress by H. B. Wheatley, F.S.A. Demy 4to. 21*s.* net.

——— Suburban Reliques of Old London. By the same artist and editor. Demy 4to. 21*s.* net.

Wedmore (F.) Etching in England. By Frederick Wedmore. With numerous Illustrations. Small 4to. 8*s.* 6*d.* net.

Westminster Abbey: Its History and Architecture. Historical Text by H. J. Feasey, accompanied by an Architectural Account of the Abbey Buildings by J. T. Micklethwaite, F.S.A., Architect to the Dean and Chapter, and an Appendix on the Earlier Sepulchral Monuments. With about 100 large Collotype Plates from recent photographs, many of which have been taken especially for the work. Edition limited to 250 copies. 5*l.* 5*s.* net.

Whitman (Alfred). Masters of Mezzotint: The Men and their Work. By Alfred Whitman, of the Department of Prints and Drawings, British Museum. With 60 Selected Specimens reproduced in Collotype from important and perfect impressions. Small Colombier 8vo. 2*l.* 2*s.* net.

THEOLOGY.

À Kempis. On the Imitation of Christ. A New Translation. By the Rt. Rev. H. Goodwin, D.D. 3rd edition. With fine Steel Engraving after Guido, 3s. 6d.; without the Engraving, 2s. 6d. Cheap edition, 1s. cloth; 6d. sewed.

Alford (Dean). The Greek Testament. With a critically revised Text; a Digest of various Readings; Marginal References to Verbal and Idiomatic Usage; Prolegomena; and a Critical and Exegetical Commentary. For the Use of Theological Students and Ministers. By the late Henry Alford, D.D., Dean of Canterbury. 4 vols. 8vo. 5l. 2s. Sold separately.

——— The New Testament for English Readers. Containing the Authorised Version, with additional Corrections of Readings and Renderings, Marginal References, and a Critical and Explanatory Commentary. In 4 Parts, 2l. 14s. 6d. Sold separately.

Asplen (L. O.). A Thousand Years of English Church History. By the Rev. L. O. Asplen, late Foundation Scholar of Emmanuel College, Cambridge; Assistant Priest at the Parish Church, Weston-super-Mare. Crown 8vo. 4s. net.

Augustine (St.): De Civitate Dei. Books XI. and XII. By the Rev. Henry Gee, B.D., F.S.A. I. Text only, 2s. II. Introduction, Literal Translation, and Notes, 3s.

——— In Joannis Evangelium Tractatus. XXIV.-XXVII. Edited by the Rev. Henry Gee, B.D., F.S.A., 1s. 6d. Also the Translation by the late Rev. Canon H. Brown, 1s. 6d.

Barrett (A. C.) Companion to the Greek Testament. For the Use of Theological Students and the Upper Forms in Schools. By A. C. Barrett, M.A., Caius College. 5th edition, revised. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

Barry (Dr.) Notes on the Catechism. For the Use of Schools. By the Rev. Canon Barry, D.D., Principal of King's College, London. 10th edition. Fcap. 2s.

Bede's Ecclesiastical History, and the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle. Edited by Rev. Dr. Giles. With Map. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Birks (T. R.) Horæ Evangelicæ, or the Internal Evidence of the Gospel History. By the Rev. T. R. Birks, M.A., late Hon. Canon of Ely. Edited by the Rev. H. A. Birks, M.A. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d.

Bleek (F.) An Introduction to the Old Testament. By Friedrich Bleek. Edited by Johann Bleek and Adolf Kamphausen. Translated from the Second Edition of the German by G. H. Venables, under the supervision of the Rev. E. Venables, Residentiary Canon of Lincoln. 2nd edition, with Corrections. With Index. 2 vols. 10s.

Burbidge (Rev. E.) Liturgies and Offices of the Church for the use of English Readers, in illustration of the Growth and Devotional value of the Book of Common Prayer, with a Catalogue of the remains of the Library of Archbishop Cranmer. By Edward Burbidge, M.A., Prebendary of Wells. Cr. 8vo. 9s.

——— The Parish Priest's Book of Offices and Instructions for the Sick: with Appendix of Readings and Occasional Offices. 4th edition, thoroughly revised, with much additional matter. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Burgon (Dean). The Traditional Text of the Holy Gospels Vindicated and Established. By the late John William Burgon, B.D., Dean of Chichester. Arranged, Completed, and Edited by Edward Miller, M.A., Wykehamical Prebendary of Chichester. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

Burgon (Dean). The Causes of the Corruption of the Traditional Text of the Holy Gospels. Edited by the Rev. Edward Miller, M.A. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

Denton (W.) A Commentary on the Gospels and Epistles for the Sundays and other Holy Days of the Christian Year, and on the Acts of the Apostles. By the Rev. W. Denton, M.A., Worcester College, Oxford, and Incumbent of St. Bartholomew's, Cripplegate. In 7 vols. each 9s.

Eusebius' Ecclesiastical History. Translated by Rev. C. F. Cruse. *5s.*

Garnier (T. P.) Church or Dissent? An Appeal to Holy Scripture, addressed to Dissenters. By T. P. Garnier, late Fellow of All Souls' College, Oxford. 2nd edition. Crown 8vo. 2s.; in stiff paper cover for distribution, 1s.

Hardwick (C.) History of the Articles of Religion. By Charles Hardwick. 3rd edition revised. 5s.

Hawkins (Canon). Family Prayers:—Containing Psalms, Lessons, and Prayers, for every Morning and Evening in the Week. By the late Rev. Ernest Hawkins, B.D., Prebendary of St. Paul's. 20th edition. Fcap. 8vo. 1s.

Hook (W. F.) Short Meditations for Every Day in the Year. Edited by the late Very Rev W. F. Hook, D.D., Dean of Chichester. Revised edition. 2 vols. Fcap. 8vo. Large type. 7s. Also 2 vols. 32mo. Cloth, 5s.; calf, gilt edges, 9s.

——— The Christian Taught by the Church's Services. Revised edition. Fcap. 8vo. Large type, 3s. 6d. Royal 32mo. Cloth, 2s. 6d. calf, gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

——— Holy Thoughts and Prayers, arranged for Daily Use on each Day of the Week. 8th edition. 16mo. 2s. Cheap edition, 3d.

Humphry (W. G.) An Historical and Explanatory Treatise on the Book of Common Prayer. By W. G. Humphry, B.D. 6th edition. Fcap. 8vo. 1s.

Latham (H.) Pastor Pastorum; or, the Schooling of the Apostles by our Lord. By the Rev. Henry Latham, M.A., Master of Trinity Hall, Cambridge. 3rd edition. Crown 8vo. 6s. 6d.

——— The Risen Master. A Sequel to Pastor Pastorum.

——— A Service of Angels. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

Lewin (T.) The Life and Epistles of St. Paul. By Thomas Lewin, M.A., F.S.A. 5th edition. With Illustrations, Maps, and Plans. 2 vols. Demy 4to. 2l. 2s.

Miller (E.) Guide to the Textual Criticism of the New Testament. By Rev. E. Millar, M.A. Oxon, Rector of Bucknell, Bicester. Crown 8vo. 4s.

Monsell (Dr.) Watches by the Cross. Short Meditations, Hymns, and Litanies on the Last Seven Words of our Lord. 4th edition. 1s.

——— Near Home at Last. A Poem. 10th thousand. Imp. 32mo. 2s. 6d.

——— Our New Vicar; or, Plain Words about Ritual and Parish Work. Fcap. 8vo. 11th edition, 2s. 6d.

——— The Winton Church Catechism. Questions and Answers on the Teaching of the Church Catechism. 4th edition. 32mo. cloth, 3s.

Pascal. The Thoughts of Blaise Pascal. Translated from the Text of M. Auguste Molinier by C. Kegan Paul. 3s. 6d.

Perowne (Bp.) The Book of Psalms: a New Translation, with Introductions and Notes, Critical and Explanatory. By the Right Rev. J. J. Stewart Perowne, D.D., Bishop of Worcester. 8vo. Vol. I. 8th edition, revised, 18s. Vol. II. 8th edition, revised, 16s.

——— The Book of Psalms. An abridged Edition for Schools and Private Students. Crown 8vo. 10th edition, revised, 5s.

Pearson (Bp.) Exposition of the Creed. Edited by E. Walford, M.A. 5s.

Prudentius. Selected Passages, with Verse Translations on the opposite pages. By the Rev. F. St. John Thackeray, late Assistant Master, Eton College. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

Sadler (M. F.) The Gospel of St. Matthew. By the Rev. M. F. Sadler, Rector of Honiton and Prebendary of Wells. With Notes, Critical and Practical, and Two Maps. 7th edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— The Gospel of St. Mark. 6th edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— The Gospel of St. Luke. 4th edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— The Gospel of St. John. 6th edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— The Acts of the Apostles. 5th edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans. 3rd edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— St. Paul's Epistles to the Corinthians. 2nd edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— St. Paul's Epistles to the Galatians, Ephesians, and Philippians. 4th edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— St. Paul's Epistles to the Colossians, Thessalonians, and Timothy. 2nd edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— St. Paul's Epistles to Titus, Philemon, and the Hebrews. 3rd edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— The Epistles of SS. James, Peter, John, and Jude. 2nd edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— The Revelation of St. John the Divine. With Notes Critical and Practical, and Introduction. 3rd edition. 4s. 6d.

——— Sermon Outlines for the Clergy and Lay Preachers, arranged to accord with the Church's Year. 2nd edition. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— Church Doctrine—Bible Truth. 51st thousand. Fcap. 8vo. 2s.

——— The Church Teacher's Manual of Christian Instruction. Being the Church Catechism expanded and explained in Question and Answer, for the use of Clergymen, Parents, and Teachers. 46th thousand. Fcap. 8vo. 2s.

——— Confirmation. An Extract from the Church Teacher's Manual. 70th thousand. 1d.

——— The One Offering. A Treatise on the Sacrificial Nature of the Eucharist. Fcap. 8vo. 11th thousand, 2s. 6d.

——— The Second Adam and the New Birth; or, the Doctrine of Baptism as contained in Holy Scripture. 12th edition. Fcap. 8vo. 4s. 6d.

——— Justification of Life: its Nature, Antecedents, and Results. 2nd edition, revised. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

Sadler (M. F.) The Sacrament of Responsibility; or, Testimony of the Scripture to the Teaching of the Church on Holy Baptism. 9th thousand, 6d. On fine paper, bound in cloth, 7th edition, 2s. 6d.

——— Scripture Truths. A Series of Ten Tracts on Holy Baptism, The Holy Communion, Ordination, &c. 9d. per set. Sold separately.

——— The Communicant's Manual; being a Book of Self-examination, Prayer, Praise, and Thanksgiving. Royal 32mo. 114th thousand. Cloth, 1s. 6d.; roan, gilt edges, 2s. 6d.; padded calf, 5s. A Cheap edition in limp cloth, 8d.

——— ——— A Larger Edition on fine paper, red rubics. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

Scrivener (Dr.) Novum Testamentum Græce Textus Stephanici, A.D. 1550. Accedunt variæ lectiones editionum Bezæ, Elzeviri, Lachmanni, Tischendorfii, Tregellesii, curante F. H. Scrivener, A.M., D.C.L., LL.D. 16mo. 4s. 6d.—Editio Major. Small post 8vo. 2nd edition. 7s. 6d.—An Edition with wide Margin for Notes. 4to. half bound, 12s.

——— A Plain Introduction to the Criticism of the New Testament. For the Use of Biblical Students. 4th edition, revised and enlarged by the Rev. E. Miller, M.A., formerly Fellow and Tutor of New College, Oxford. With Portrait and numerous Lithographed Facsimiles of MSS. Demy 8vo. 2 vols. 32s.

Socrates' and Sozomen's Ecclesiastical Histories. Translated from the Greek. 2 vols. 5s. each.

Steere (E.) Notes of Sermons, arranged in Accordance with the Church's Year. Edited by Rev. R. M. Heanley, M.A. Oxon. With Introduction by the Bishop of Lincoln. Crown 8vo. 3rd Series, 7s 6d.

Theodoret and Evagrius. Histories of the Church. Translated from the Greek. 5s.

Young (Rev. P.) Daily Readings for a Year on the Life of Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. By the Rev. Peter Young, M.A. 6th edition. 2 vols. 8vo. 11. 1s.

NAVAL AND MILITARY.

The British Fleet: the Growth, Achievements, and Duties of the Navy of the Empire. By Commander Charles N. Robinson, R.N. With 150 Illustrations. Cheaper edition. Crown 8vo. 6s.

Royal Navy Handbooks. Edited by Commander Charles N. Robinson, R.N. Crown 8vo. Illustrated, 5s. each. *For List see page* 24.

Allen's Battles of the British Navy. Revised edition, with Indexes of Names and Events, 57 Steel Engravings, and Plans of all the Chief Battles. 2 vols. small post 8vo. 10s.

Achievements of Cavalry. By General Sir Evelyn Wood, V.C., G.C.B., G.C.M.G. Crown 8vo. with Maps and Plans. 7s. 6d. net.

The Campaign of Sedan: The Downfall of the Second Empire, August-September 1870. By George Hooper. With General Map and Six Plans of Battles. New edition. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Waterloo: The Downfall of the First Napoleon. A History of the Campaign of 1815. By George Hooper. With Maps and Plans. New edition, revised. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

History of the Irish Rebellion in 1798. By W. H. Maxwell. Illustrated by George Cruikshank. 13th edition. 7*s.* 6*d.*

The War of the Succession in Spain during the Reign of Queen Anne, 1702-1711. Based on Original Manuscripts and Contemporary Records. By Col. the Hon. Arthur Parnell, R.E. Demy 8vo. 14*s.* With Map, &c.

The Revolutionary Movements of 1848-9 in Italy, Austria, Hungary, and Germany. With some Examination of the previous Thirty-three Years. By C. Edmund Maurice. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo. 16*s.*

ROYAL NAVY HANDBOOKS.

EDITED BY

COMMANDER C. N. ROBINSON, R.N.

Profusely Illustrated. Crown 8vo. 5*s.* each.

Now Ready.

1. NAVAL ADMINISTRATION. By Admiral Sir R. Vesey Hamilton, G.C.B. With Portraits and other Illustrations.
2. THE MECHANISM OF MEN-OF-WAR. By Fleet-Engineer Reginald C. Oldknow, R.N. With 61 Illustrations.
3. TORPEDOES AND TORPEDO-VESSELS. By Lieutenant G. E. Armstrong, late R.N. With 53 Illustrations.
4. NAVAL GUNNERY, a Description and History of the Fighting Equipment of a Man-of-War. By Captain H. Garbett, R.N. With 125 Illustrations.

Other Volumes are in preparation.

PRESS OPINIONS.

'Commander Robinson, whose able work, "The British Fleet," was reviewed in these columns in November, 1894, has now undertaken the editing of a series of handbooks, each of which will deal with one particular subject connected with that great creation, the Royal Navy. Our national literature has certainly lacked much in this respect. Such books as have heretofore been produced have almost invariably been of a character too scientific and technical to be of much use to the general public. The series now being issued is intended to obviate this defect, and when completed will form a description, both historical and actual, of the Royal Navy, which will not only be of use to the professional student, but also be of interest to all who are concerned in the maintenance and efficiency of the Navy.'—*Broad Arrow.*

'The series of naval handbooks edited by Commander Robinson has made a most hopefu beginning, and may be counted upon to supply the growing popular demand for information in regard to the Navy, on which the national existence depends.'—*Times.*

'Messrs. Bell's series of "Royal Navy Handbooks" promises to be a very successful enterprise. They are practical and definitely informative, and, though meant for the use of persons closely acquainted with their subjects, they are not so discouragingly technical as to be useless to the lay seeker after knowledge.'—*Bookman*

BOTANY AND GARDENING.

English Botany. Containing a Description and Life-size Drawing of every British Plant. Edited by T. Boswell (formerly Syme), LL.D., F.L.S., &c. The Figures by J. C. Sowerby, F.L.S., J. De C. Sowerby F.L.S., J. W. Salter, A.L.S., F.G.S., and J. E. Sowerby. 3rd edition, entirely revised, with descriptions of all the species by the Editor, and 1937 full-page Coloured Plates. In 12 vols. 24*l.* 3s. cloth; 27*l.* 15s. half morocco; and 31*l.* 13s. whole morocco. Also in 89 parts, 5s. each, except part 89, containing an Index to the whole work, 7s. 6d. Volumes sold separately.

*** A Supplement to the third edition is now in preparation. Vol. I. (Vol. XIII. of the complete work) containing orders I. to XL., by N. E. Brown, of the Royal Herbarium, Kew, now ready, 17s. Or in three parts, 5s. each.

Elementary Botany. By Percy Groom, M.A. (Cantab. et Oxon.). F.L.S., Examiner in Botany to the University of Oxford. With 275 Illustrations. 2nd edition, Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Johnson's Gardener's Dictionary. Describing the Plants, Fruits, and Vegetables desirable for the Garden, and explaining the Terms and Operations employed in their cultivation. New edition (1893–4), revised by C. H. Wright, F.R.M.S., and D. Dewar, Curator of the Botanic Gardens, Glasgow. Demy 8vo. 9s. net.

British Fungus-Flora. A Classified Text-book of Mycology. By George Massee. With numerous Illustrations. 4 vols. Post 8vo. 7s. 6d. each.

Botanist's Pocket-Book. By W. R. Hayward. Containing the botanical name, common name, soil or situation, colour, growth, and time of flowering of all plants, arranged in a tabulated form. 8th edition, revised, with a new Appendix. Fcap. 8vo. 4s. 6d.

Index of British Plants, according to the London Catalogue (8th edition), including the Synonyms used by the principal authors, an alphabetical list of English names; also references to the illustrations of Syme's 'English Botany' and Bentham's 'British Flora.' By Robert Turnbull. Paper, 2s. 6d.; cloth, 3s.

The London Catalogue of British Plants. Part I., containing the British Phaenogamia, Filices, Equisetaceae, Lycopodiaceae, Selaginellaceae, Marsileaceae, and Characeae. 9th edition. Demy 8vo. 6d.; interleaved, in limp cloth, 1s.

PHILOSOPHY.

Bacon's Novum Organum and Advancement of Learning. Edited, with Notes, by J. Devey, M.A. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Bax's Manual of the History of Philosophy, for the use of Students. By E. Belfort Bax, Editor of Kant's 'Prolegomena.' Small post 8vo. 5s.

Berkeley's (George) Works. Edited by George Sampson. With a Biographical Introduction by the Right Hon. A. J. Balfour, M.P. 3 vols. Small post 8vo. 5s. each.

Comte's Positive Philosophy. Translated and Condensed by Harriet Martineau. With Introduction by Frederic Harrison. 3 vols. Small post 8vo. 5s. each.

——— **Philosophy of the Sciences,** being an Exposition of the Principles of the 'Cours de Philosophie Positive.' By G. H. Lewes. With Index. Small post 8vo. 5s.

Draper's (J. W.) A History of the Intellectual Development of Europe. By John William Draper, M.D., LL.D. A new edition, thoroughly revised by the Author, with Index. 2 vols. Small post 8vo. 5s. each.

Falckenberg's History of Modern Philosophy. Translated by Professor A. C. Armstrong. Demy 8vo. 16*s.*

Hegel's Philosophy of Right (Grundlinien der Philosophie des Rechts). Translated by Samuel W. Dyde, M.A., D.Sc., Professor of Mental Philosophy in Queen's University, Kingston, Canada. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Kant's Critique of Pure Reason. Translated by J. M. D. Meiklejohn. Small post 8vo. 5*s.*

——— **Prolegomena and Metaphysical Foundations of Natural Science.** Translated, with Biography and Introduction, by E. Belfort Bax. Small post 8vo. 5*s.*

Plotinus, Select Works of. Translated from the Greek by Thomas Taylor. With an Introduction containing the substance of Porphyry's Plotinus. Edited by G. R. S. Mead, B.A., M.R.A.S. Small post 8vo. 5*s.*

Ryland (F.) Psychology: an Introductory Manual. Designed chiefly for the London B.A. and B.Sc. By F. Ryland, M.A., late Scholar of St. John's College, Cambridge. Cloth. 7th edition, rewritten and reset. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

——— **Ethics: An Introductory Manual for the use of University Students.** Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

——— **Logic: An Introductory Manual.** Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Schopenhauer. On the Fourfold Root of the Principle of Sufficient Reason, and on the Will in Nature. Translated by Madame Hillebrand. Small post 8vo. 5*s.*

——— **Essays.** Selected and Translated, with a Biographical Introduction and Sketch of his Philosophy, by E. Belfort Bax. Small post 8vo. 5*s.*

Spinoza's Chief Works. Translated, with Introduction, by R. H. M. Elwes. 2 vols. Small post 8vo. 5*s.* each.

BOOKS FOR THE YOUNG.

Andersen (Hans Christian). Fairy Tales and Sketches. Translated by C. C. Peachey, H. Ward, A. Plesner, &c. With numerous Illustrations by Otto Speckter and others. 7th thousand. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

——— **Tales for Children.** With 48 full-page Illustrations by Wehnert, and 57 small Engravings on Wood by W. Thomas. 13th thousand. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

——— **Danish Legends and Fairy Tales.** Translated from the Original by Caroline Peachey. With a Short Life of the Author, and 120 Wood Engravings, chiefly by Foreign Artists. Small post 8vo. 5*s.*

——— Translated by Caroline Peachey. Illustrated. Fcap. 4to. 1*s.*

Edgeworth's Stories for Children. With 8 Illustrations by L. Speed. Small post 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Gatty's Parables from Nature. With numerous Illustrations by W. Holman Hunt, E. Burne Jones, J. Tenniel, J. Wolf, and other eminent artists. Complete edition. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

POCKET VOLUME EDITION. 2 vols. Imp. 32mo. 5*s.*

CHEAP EDITION. Illustrated. 2 vols. Fcap. 4to. paper covers, 1*s.* each; or bound in 1 vol. cloth, 3*s.*

Grimm's Gammer Grethel; or, German Fairy Tales and Popular Stories, containing 42 Fairy Tales. Translated by Edgar Taylor. With numerous Woodcuts after George Cruikshank and Ludwig Grimm. 3s. 6d.

——— **Tales.** With the Notes of the Original. Translated by Mrs. A. Hunt. With Introduction by Andrew Lang, M.A. 2 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

Harald the Viking. A Book for Boys. By Capt. Charles Young. With Illustrations by J. Williamson. Crown 8vo. 5s.

Stowe's Uncle Tom's Cabin; or, Life among the Lowly. With 8 full-page Illustrations. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

The Wide, Wide World. A Story. By Elizabeth Wetherell. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

CAPT. MARRYAT'S BOOKS FOR BOYS.

Uniform Illustrated Edition. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Poor Jack.
The Mission; or, Scenes in Africa.
The Pirate, and Three Cutters.
Peter Simple
The Settlers in Canada.
The Privateersman.
Masterman Ready.
Midshipman Easy.

MRS. EWING'S BOOKS.

Uniform Edition, in 9 vols.

We and The World. A Story for Boys. By the late Juliana Horatio Ewing. With 7 Illustrations by W. L. Jones. 5th edition. 3s.

A Flat Iron for a Farthing; or, Some Passages in the Life of an Only Son. With 12 Illustrations by H. Allingham. 16th edition. 3s.

Mrs. Overtheway's Remembrances. Illustrated with 9 fine full-page Engravings by Pasquier, and Frontispiece by Wolf. 6th edition. 3s.

Six to Sixteen: A Story for Girls. With 10 Illustrations by Mrs. Allingham. 8th edition. 3s.

Jan of the Windmill: a Story of the Plains. With 11 Illustrations by Mrs. Allingham. 5th edition. 3s.

A Great Emergency. A very Ill-tempered Family—Our Field—Madame Liberality. With 4 Illustrations. 3rd edition. 3s.

Melchior's Dream. The Blackbird's Nest—Friedrich's Ballad—A Bit of Green—Monsieur the Viscount's Friend—The Yew Lane Ghosts—A Bad Habit—A Happy Family. With 8 Illustrations by Gordon Browne. 7th edition. 3s.

Lob-Lie-by-the-Fire, or the Luck of Lingborough; and other Tales. With 3 Illustrations by George Cruikshank. 4th edition. Imp. 16mo. 3s. 6d.

The Brownies. The Land of Lost Toys—Three Christmas-trees—An Idyl of the Wood—Christmas Crackers—Amelia and the Dwarfs—Timothy's Shoes—Benjy in Beastland. Illustrated by George Cruikshank. 8th edition. Imp. 16mo. 3s. 6d.

*** *The above, with the exception of 'Lob-Lie-by-the-Fire,' are also to be had Fcap. 4to. double columns, Illustrated, 1s. each.*

SPORTS AND GAMES.

Bohn's Handbooks of Athletic Sports. In 8 vols. Sm. post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Vol. I.—Cricket, by Hon. and Rev. E. Lyttelton. Lawn Tennis, by H. W. W. Wilberforce. Tennis, Rackets, and Fives, by Julian Marshall, Major Spens, and Rev. J. A. Tait. Golf, by W. T. Linskill. Hockey, by F. S. Creswell.

Vol. II.—Rowing and Sculling, by W. B. Woodgate. Sailing, by E. F. Knight. Swimming, by M. and J. R. Cobbett.

Vol. III.—Boxing, by R. G. Allanson-Winn. Broadsword and Single Stick, with chapters on Quarterstaff, Bayonet, Cudgel, Shillalah, Walking-Stick, and Umbrella, by R. G. Allanson-Winn and C. Phillipps-Wolley. Wrestling, by Walter Armstrong. Fencing, by H. A. Colmore Dunn.

Vol. IV.—Rugby Football, by Harry Vassall. Association Football, by C. W. Alcock. Baseball, by Newton Crane. Rounders, Bowls, Quoits, Curling, Skittles, &c., by C. C. Mott and J. M. Walker.

Vol. V.—Cycling and Athletics, by H. H. Griffin. Skating, by Douglas Adams.

Vol. VI.—Practical Horsemanship, including Riding for Ladies, by W. A. Kerr, V.C.

Vol. VII.—Camping Out, by A. A. Macdonald. Canoeing, by Dr. J. D. Hayward.

Vol. VIII.—Gymnastics, by A. F. Jenkin. Clubs, by G. T. B. Cobbett and A. F Jenkin.

Bohn's Handbooks of Games. New edition. In 2 vols. Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. each.

Vol. I.—Table Games: Billiards, with Pool, Pyramids, and Snooker, by Major-General A. W. Drayson, F.R.A.S., with a preface by W. J. Peall. Bagatelle, by 'Berkeley.' Chess, by R. F. Green. Draughts, Backgammon, Dominoes, Solitaire, Reversi, Go-Bang, Rouge et Noir, Roulette, E.O., Hazard, Faro, by 'Berkeley.'

Vol. II.—Card Games: Whist, by Dr. William Pole, F.R.S., Author of 'The Philosophy of Whist,' &c. Solo Whist, by R. F. Green. Piquet, Ecarté, Euchre, Bézique, and Cribbage, by 'Berkeley.' Poker, Loo, Vingt-et-un, Napoleon, Newmarket, Pope Joan, Speculation, &c. &c., by Baxter-Wray.

Morphy's Games of Chess. With short Memoir and Portrait of Morphy. Sm. post 8vo. 5s.

Staunton's Chess-Player's Handbook. A Popular and Scientific Introduction to the Game. With numerous diagrams. 5s.

——— **Chess Praxis.** A Supplement to the Chess-player's Handbook. Small post 8vo. 5s.

——— **Chess-Player's Companion.** Comprising a Treatise on Odds, Collection of Match Games, and a Selection of Original Problems. 5s.

Chess Studies and End-Games. In Two Parts. Part I. Chess Studies. Part II. Miscellaneous End-Games. By B. Horwitz and J. Kling. 2nd edition, revised by the Rev. W. Wayte, M.A. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d.

Hints on Billiards. By J. P. Buchanan. Illustrated with 36 Diagrams. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Sturges's Guide to the Game of Draughts. With Critical Situations. Revised, with Additional Play on the Modern Openings, by J. A. Kear. 2nd Edition. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Hints on Driving. By Captain C. Morley Knight, R.A. Illustrated by G. H. A. White, Royal Artillery. 2nd edition. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Golf, in Theory and Practice. Hints to beginners. By H. S. C. Everard, St. Andrew's. With 22 Illustrations. 2nd Edition. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

Schools and Masters of Fence, from the Middle Ages to the Eighteenth Century. By Egerton Castle, M.A. With numerous Illustrations 2nd edition. Small post 8vo. 6s.

Dancing as an Art and Pastime. With 40 full-page illustrations from life. By Edward Scott. Crown 8vo. 6s.

THE ALL-ENGLAND SERIES.

HANDBOOKS OF ATHLETIC GAMES.

The only Series issued at a moderate price, by Writers who are in the first rank in their respective departments.

'The best instruction on games and sports by the best authorities, at the lowest prices.'—*Oxford Magazine.*

Small 8vo. cloth, Illustrated. Price 1s. each.

Cricket. By the Hon. and Rev. E. LYTTELTON.

Lawn Tennis. By H. W. W. WILBERFORCE. With a Chapter for Ladies, by MRS. HILLYARD.

Tennis and Rackets and Fives. By JULIAN MARSHALL, Major J. SPENS, and Rev. J. A. ARNAN TAIT.

Golf. By W. T. LINSKILL.

Rowing and Sculling. By W. B. WOODGATE.

Sailing. By E. F. KNIGHT, dbl. vol. 2s.

Swimming. By MARTIN and J. RACSTER COBBETT.

Camping out. By A. A. MACDONELL. Double vol. 2s.

Canoeing. By Dr. J. D. HAYWARD. Double vol. 2s.

Mountaineering. By Dr. CLAUDE WILSON. Double vol. 2s.

Athletics. By H. H. GRIFFIN.

Riding. By W. A. KERR, V.C. Double vol. 2s.

Ladies' Riding. By W. A. KERR, V.C.

Boxing. By R. G. ALLANSON-WINN. With Prefatory Note by Bat Mullins.

Cycling. By H. H. GRIFFIN, L.A.C., N.C.U., C.T.C. With a Chapter for Ladies, by Miss AGNES WOOD.

Fencing. By H. A. COLMORE DUNN.

Wrestling. By WALTER ARMSTRONG ('Cross-buttocker').

Broadsword and Singlestick. By R. G. ALLANSON-WINN and C. PHILLIPPS-WOLLEY.

Gymnastics. By A. F. JENKIN. Double vol. 2s.

Gymnastic Competition and Display Exercises. Compiled by F. GRAF.

Indian Clubs. By G. T. B. COBBETT and A. F. JENKIN.

Dumb-bells. By F. GRAF.

Football — Rugby Game. By HARRY VASSALL.

Football—Association Game. By C. W. ALCOCK. Revised Edition.

Hockey. By F. S. CRESWELL. (In Paper Cover, 6d.)

Skating. By DOUGLAS ADAMS. With a Chapter for Ladies, by Miss L. CHEETHAM, and a Chapter on Speed Skating, by a Fen Skater. Dbl. vol. 2s.

Baseball. By NEWTON CRANE.

Rounders, Fieldball, Bowls, Quoits, Curling, Skittles, &c. By J. M. WALKER and C. C. MOTT.

Dancing. By EDWARD SCOTT. Double vol. 2s.

THE CLUB SERIES OF CARD AND TABLE GAMES.

No well-regulated club or country house should be without this useful series of books. Small 8vo. cloth, Illustrated. Price 1s. each. *Globe.*

Whist. By Dr. WM. POLE, F.R.S.

Solo Whist. By ROBERT F. GREEN.

Billiards. With Chapters on Pool, Pyramids, and Snooker. By Major-Gen. A. W. DRAYSON, F.R.A.S. With a Preface by W. J. Peall.

Chess. By ROBERT F. GREEN.

The Two-Move Chess Problem. By B. G. LAWS.

Chess Openings. By I. GUNSBERG.

Draughts and Backgammon. By 'BERKELEY.'

Reversi and Go Bang. By 'BERKELEY.'

Dominoes and Solitaire. By 'BERKELEY.'

Bézique and Cribbage. By 'BERKELEY.'

Écarté and Euchre. By 'BERKELEY.'

Piquet and Rubicon Piquet By 'BERKELEY.'

Skat. By LOUIS DIEHL.

*** A Skat Scoring-book. 1s.

Round Games, including Poker, Napoleon, Loo, Vingt-et-un, &c. By BAXTER-WRAY.

Parlour and Playground Games. By MRS. LAURENCE GOMME.

BELL'S CATHEDRAL SERIES.

Illustrated Monographs in Handy Size.

EDITED BY

GLEESON WHITE AND E. F. STRANGE.

In specially designed cloth cover, crown 8vo. 1s. 6d. each.

Already Published.

CANTERBURY. By HARTLEY WITHERS. 2nd Edition, revised. 36 Illustrations.

SALISBURY. By GLEESON WHITE. 2nd Edition, revised. 50 Illustrations.

CHESTER. By CHARLES HIATT. 24 Illustrations.

ROCHESTER. By G. H. PALMER, B.A. 38 Illustrations.

OXFORD. By Rev. PERCY DEARMER, M.A. 34 Illustrations.

EXETER. By PERCY ADDLESHAW, B.A. 35 Illustrations.

WINCHESTER. By P. W. SERGEANT. 50 Illustrations.

NORWICH. By C. H. B. QUENNELL. 38 Illustrations.

LICHFIELD. By A. B. CLIFTON. 42 Illustrations.

PETERBOROUGH. By Rev. W. D. SWEETING, M.A. 51 Illustrations.

HEREFORD. By A. HUGH FISHER, A.R.E. 34 Illustrations.

LINCOLN. By A. F. KENDRICK, B.A. 46 Illustrations.

WELLS. By Rev. PERCY DEARMER, M.A. 43 Illustrations.

SOUTHWELL. By Rev. ARTHUR DIMOCK, M.A. 38 Illustrations.

GLOUCESTER. By H. J. L. J. MASSÉ, M.A. 49 Illustrations.

YORK. By A. CLUTTON-BROCK. 41 Illustrations.

In the Press.—DURHAM. By J. E. BYGATE.

Preparing.

ELY. By T. D. ATKINSON, A.R.I.B.A. ST. DAVID'S. By PHILIP ROBSON.
WORCESTER. By E. F. STRANGE. ST. PAUL'S. By Rev. ARTHUR DIMOCK, M.A.
CHICHESTER. By H. C. CORLETT, A.R.I.B.A. CARLISLE. By C. K. ELEY.
WESTMINSTER. By CHARLES HIATT. BRISTOL. By H. J. L. J. MASSÉ, M.A.
ST. ALBANS. By Rev. W. D. SWEETING, M.A. RIPON.

Uniform with above Series. Now ready.

ST. MARTIN'S CHURCH, CANTERBURY. By the Rev. CANON ROUTLEDGE.
BEVERLEY MINSTER. By CHARLES HIATT.

'The volumes are handy in size, moderate in price, well illustrated, and written in a scholarly spirit, The history of cathedral and city is intelligently set forth and accompanied by a descriptive survey of the building in all its detail. The illustrations are copious and well selected, and the series bids fair to become an indispensable companion to the cathedral tourist in England.'—*Times.*

'We have so frequently in these columns urged the want of cheap, well-illustrated and well-written handbooks to our cathedrals, to take the place of the out-of-date publications of local booksellers, that we are glad to hear that they have been taken in hand by Messrs. George Bell & Sons.'—*St. James's Gazette.*

'For the purpose at which they aim they are admirably done, and there are few visitants to any of our noble shrines who will not enjoy their visit the better for being furnished with one of these delightful books, which can be slipped into the pocket and carried with ease, and yet is distinct and legible.'—*Notes and Queries.*

NEW AND FORTHCOMING VOLUMES OF

BOHN'S LIBRARIES.

DETAILED CATALOGUE OF BOHN'S LIBRARIES (CONTAINING 773 VOLUMES) ON APPLICATION.

BURTON'S PERSONAL NARRATIVE OF A PILGRIMAGE TO AL-MADINAH AND MECCAH. With an Introduction by Stanley Lane Poole, and all the original Illustrations. Copyright edition. 2 vols. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

THE PROSE WORKS OF JONATHAN SWIFT. A New Edition, edited by Temple Scott, with an Introduction by the Right Hon. W. E. H. LECKY, M.P. In about ten volumes. 3*s.* 6*d.* each.

'An adequate edition of Swift—the whole of Swift, and nothing but Swift—has long been one of the pressing needs of students of English literature. . . . . Mr. Temple Scott may well be congratulated on his skill and judgment as a commentator.'—*Athenæum.*

'From the specimen now before us we may safely predict that Mr. Temple Scott will easily distance both Roscoe and Scott. He deserves the gratitude of all lovers of literature for enabling Swift again to make his bow to the world in so satisfactory and complete a garb.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

'The re-issue is a worthy addition to Bohn's Libraries, and promises to be by far the most valuable edition of Swift's works yet published.'—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

Vol. I.—A Tale of a Tub, The Battle of the Books, and other early works. Edited by Temple Scott. With Biographical Introduction by W. E. H. Lecky, M.P. With Portrait and Facsimile.

Vol. II.—The Journal to Stella. Edited by F. Ryland, M.A. With a Facsimile Letter and two Portraits of Stella.

Vols. III. and IV.—Writings on Religion and the Church. Edited by Temple Scott. With a portrait in photogravure after Bindon. [*Ready.*

Vol. V.—Historical and Political Writings (English). [*In the press.*

THE WORKS OF GEORGE BERKELEY, Bishop of Cloyne. Edited by GEORGE SAMPSON. With a Biographical Introduction by the Right Hon. A. J. Balfour, M.P. 3 vols. 5*s.* each.

THE LAY OF THE NIBELUNGS. Metrically translated from the Old German Text by Alice Horton, and Edited by Edward Bell, M.A. To which is prefixed the Essay on the Nibelungen Lied, by Thomas Carlyle. 5*s.*

CICERO'S LETTERS. Translated by EVELYN S. SHUCKBURGH, M.A. 4 vols. [*Vol. I. in the press.*

LELAND'S ITINERARY. Edited by LAURENCE GOMME, F.S.A. In several volumes. [*Preparing.*

GASPARY'S HISTORY OF ITALIAN LITERATURE. Translated by Hermann Oelsner, Ph.D. Vol. I. [*Preparing.*

THE CAMPAIGN OF SEDAN: The Downfall of the Second Empire, August–September, 1870. By George Hooper, Author of 'Waterloo; the Downfall of the First Napoleon: a History of the Campaign of 1815.' With General Map and Six Plans of Battle. New Edition. 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE ONLY AUTHORISED AND COMPLETE 'WEBSTER.'

WEBSTER'S
INTERNATIONAL DICTIONARY.

Medium 4to. 2118 *pages,* 3500 *illustrations.*

Prices: Cloth, £1 11s. 6d.; half-calf, £2 2s.; half-russia, £2 5s.; full-calf, £2 8s.; full-russia, £2 12s.; half-morocco, with Patent Marginal Index, £2 8s.

Also in 2 vols. cloth, £1 14s.; half-calf, £2 12s.; half-russia, £2 18s. full-calf, £3 3s.

In addition to the Dictionary of Words, with their pronunciation, etymology, alternative spellings, and various meanings, illustrated by quotations and numerous woodcuts, there are several valuable appendices, comprising a Pronouncing Gazetteer of the World; Vocabularies of Scripture, Greek, Latin, and English Proper Names; a Dictionary of the noted Names of Fiction; a Brief History of the English Language; a Dictionary of Foreign Quotations, Words, Phrases, Proverbs, &c.; a Biographical Dictionary with 10,000 Names, &c.

SOME PRESS OPINIONS ON THE NEW EDITION.

'We believe that, all things considered, this will be found to be the best existing English dictionary in one volume. We do not know of any work similar in size and price which can approach it in completeness of vocabulary, variety of information, and general usefulness.'—*Guardian.*

'A magnificent edition of Webster's immortal Dictionary.'—*Daily Telegraph.*

Prospectuses, with Specimen Pages, on application.

WEBSTER'S
BRIEF INTERNATIONAL DICTIONARY.

With 800 *Illustrations. Demy* 8*vo.*, 3*s.*

A Pronouncing Dictionary of the English Language, Abridged from Webster's International Dictionary.

With a Treatise on Pronunciation, List of Prefixes and Suffixes, Rules for Spelling, a Pronouncing Vocabulary of Proper Names in History, Geography and Mythology, and Tables of English and Indian Money, Weights, and Measures.

LONDON: GEORGE BELL & SONS, YORK STREET, COVENT GARDEN.